

UNIVERSITY OF TORONTO



3 1761 00581584 0

SEAWARD'S

NARRATIVE OF HIS SHIPWRECK



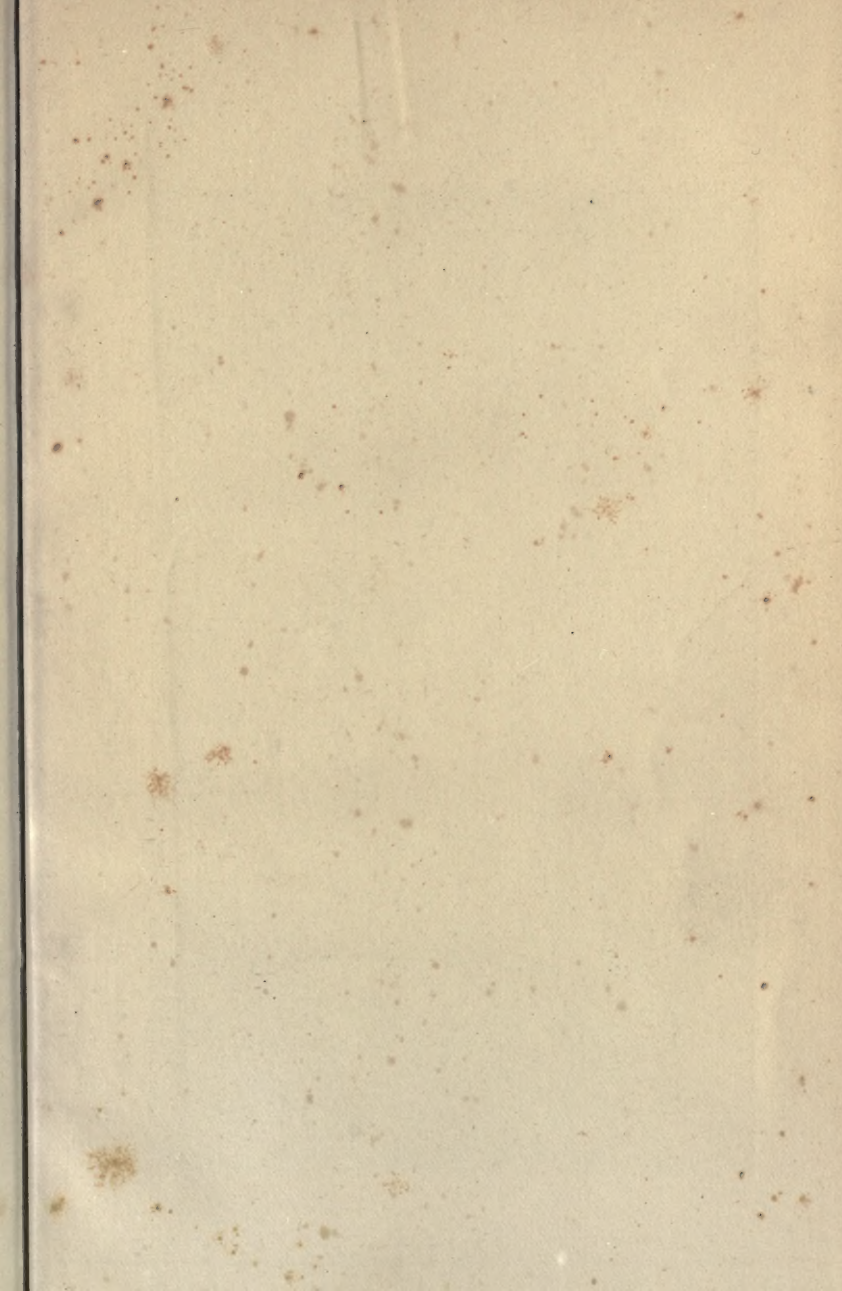
AND DISCOVERIES

IN THE CARIBBEAN SEA

BY JANE PORTER









MAKING FOR SHELTER.—SEAWARD'S NARRATIVE.

(Frontispiece.)



SIR EDWARD SEAWARD'S
NARRATIVE OF HIS SHIPWRECK

AND

Discovery of Certain Islands in the Caribbean Sea

WITH A DETAIL OF MANY

*EXTRAORDINARY AND HIGHLY INTERESTING
EVENTS IN HIS LIFE, FROM THE
YEAR 1733 TO 1749*

BY JANE PORTER

AUTHOR OF 'THE SCOTTISH CHIEFS,' 'THADDEUS OF WARSAW,' ETC.

WILLIAM P. NIMMO
LONDON AND EDINBURGH

1878

PR
5189
P555

MURRAY AND GIBB, EDINBURGH,
PRINTERS TO HER MAJESTY'S STATIONERY OFFICE.





CONTENTS.

CHAPTER I.

| | PAGE |
|--|------|
| Parentage and boyhood of Sir Edward Seaward.—He sails for Virginia.—Returns to England.—A proposal to go to the Bay of Honduras.—Revisits his home.—Eliza Goldsmith—her affection for Seaward, and the dawn of her peculiar excellency of character.—His uncle at Bristol.—The marriage at Awbury.—Seaward and his Eliza, with an attached little dog, quit their native village, 1733 | 9 |

CHAPTER II.

| | |
|--|----|
| They sail from Bristol.—Banks of the Avon.—Appearances of the Island of Jamaica.—Port Royal.—Kingston.—Prepares for his voyage to the Bay of Honduras.—Sunday negro market.—He sails from Kingston—encounters a hurricane—the brig is wrecked—he, with his wife and dog, preserved | 21 |
|--|----|

CHAPTER III.

| | |
|---|----|
| Their emotions on making the shore.—How they proceed—apprehension of savages—they venture from the vessel—discover a fountain of water—an alarm—preservation of the surviving live stock, etc., they had brought from Jamaica | 31 |
|---|----|

CHAPTER IV.

| | |
|---|--|
| Their first Sabbath on the island.—Seaward's subsequent occupations.—A cavern discovered in the promontory.—He sows various seeds.—Sees mullet near the rocky point.— | |
|---|--|

| | PAGE |
|---|------|
| A variety of incidents.—Penetrates into a wooded region.—Discoveries.—Begins building a house with planks from the ship.—Subsequent proceedings.—Seaward and his Eliza seem to exist like our first parents in Paradise.—Discover an eligible situation for erecting a permanent dwelling.—See a magnificent silk-cotton tree.—An interesting scene with a turtle.—Some casuistry on killing a large fish.—They explore the isthmus to its northern extremity.—Resumes his labour . | 41 |

CHAPTER V.

| | |
|--|----|
| Various arrangements on board the vessel.—Their exultation on seating themselves in their wooden palace on shore.—He occupies himself in providing for the future.—A sudden tempest—their conduct on the awful occasion.—A return of boisterous weather—their employments on board—the sky clears—they revisit the shore | 62 |
|--|----|

CHAPTER VI.

| | |
|---|----|
| The rising sun.—The beach covered with deposits from the late storms.—He takes a large cray-fish—removes all their live stock from the vessel to the shore—plants yams and cocos, melon and pumpkin seeds—lays out a plantation near the silk-cotton tree.—They are sick from eating the cray-fish—what medicine they took.—He brings the remainder of their fruits on shore, stows them in the plant-house—goes to work at the cotton-tree plantation daily—his reflections on shade and sunshine, connected with his places of occupation—discovers the chocolate-nut near the cavern—finds an old military belt there. | 69 |
|---|----|

CHAPTER VII.

| | |
|--|----|
| An unsuccessful effort to gain the summit of the promontory.—Attempts to construct a boat.—Catches mullet.—He and his wife on the verge of a quarrel.—Young goats.—A contrivance to get at the cocoa-nuts without cutting down the trees.—Eliza tries to make a basket.—A project <i>sine die</i> .—An apologue, illustrative of the necessity of employment to the maintenance of happiness.—He contrives to form a fish-pot.—Another trial to reach the top of the promontory.—Takes a strange animal.—Some welcome domestic news.—They catch mullet by torch-light.—Sand-flies.—Armadillo tamed.—Fine shells.—Rod-fishing by Eliza and her dog.—Seaward drinks too much wine—is ill in consequence—how he is recovered—goes to work again | 84 |
|--|----|

CHAPTER VIII.

| | |
|--|--|
| They project an expedition of discovery—encounter a herd of fierce animals—a conflict—how they dispose of the slain, and | |
|--|--|

treat their wounded dog.—Seaward explores a hidden cave—
scruples about appropriating what is found.—They ascend the
promontory to look out for a sail.—His reflections on the
present state of his mind and feelings.—Projects new under-
takings—works at them daily 124

CHAPTER IX.

They descry a canoe approaching the island—how they act on the
occasion—incidents attendant on their first intercourse with
the strangers—a party of negroes—their sympathy and useful-
ness—how the negroes spent their first Sabbath on the island.
—Their visit to a second island just opposite—they accomplish
the circuit of the first island.—A turtle feast.—Harvest—the
product of Seaward's labours got in.—May rains.—Cabbage
plants.—The negroes make some progress in Christian
knowledge.—Seaward begins to build a good house at the
silk-cotton tree plantation 147

CHAPTER X.

Description of the grounds under cultivation.—The negroes' story
of themselves, and escape from shipwreck.—Many excellent
reflections.—Negroes' harvest got in.—A storm on the first of
September (1734).—Eliza's birth-day celebrated.—Seaward
remarks, it was then he began to write his Diary.—The new
mansion finished—their first night there they call it Planta-
tion House.—Eliza resumes her English attire—the negroes
properly clothed.—Seaward arranges his firearms—account of
his library.—A place stoccadoed off for the live stock.—
Christmas-day.—The negroes circumnavigate the second or
western island.—Hurricane.—Guns heard in the offing.—
Seaward puts up a flag-staff on the promontory, hoists the
English colours, and takes possession of the islands in the name
of the King of England—calls them Seaward Islands . . . 173

CHAPTER XI.

An important event occurs.—They frighten a Spanish *guarda
costa*.—A Virginian schooner comes in—the captain's story.—
They reconnoitre the Spaniard—fear an attack.—A night
rencontre with an armed boat from the *guarda costa*.—Two
Bermudian blacks taken.—Seaward secures his treasure—talks
with the Virginian captain concerning a passage to Jamaica.—
A slight survey of the island's channel.—The schooner
repaired.—Seaward bargains with him to take him and his
wife to Jamaica 189

CHAPTER XII.

Preparations for departure.—Seaward would not allow the vessel
to sail on the Sabbath day.—Certificates of freedom given

| | PAGE |
|--|------|
| to the persons left behind.—A marriage solemnized—some clerical scruples.—Embarks his treasure.—He and his wife part kindly from the people.—He notes the landmarks while sailing out of the harbour.—Latitude observed at noon.—The schooner off the northern point of the islands next day.—Observations with respect to the reefs and appearances of the land—puts the schooner's head to the north for Jamaica, and takes a temporary leave of the islands | 205 |

CHAPTER XIII.

| | |
|--|-----|
| Seaward and his wife arrive at Kingston, Jamaica.—Lands his treasure.—Takes leave of the Virginian captain.—Lodges at a <i>brown lady's</i> .—A new-fashioned dress, necessary for going into society.—He orders masts and sails, to refit the wrecked brig at the islands.—Measures to send a large portion of his wealth to England.—Visits Port Royal.—The Solebay frigate.—Engages a crew for the brig.—A wife for one of his faithful blacks.—A fine lugger-boat and a schooner purchased.—A cargo for Seaward Islands.—Commission as their Captain-commandant.—A slave mart.—Francis Drake takes the command of the schooner, called the <i>Porghee</i> .—Seaward and his wife discourse on their great possessions.—Final arrangements for returning to the islands | 213 |
|--|-----|

CHAPTER XIV.

| | |
|--|-----|
| Difficulty of approach to the islands.—Reception on their arrival.—A cannon mounted on the promontory.—The wreck refitted sails for Honduras.—Subsequent occurrences.—How the people are employed during the May rains.—Fair weather.—A plantation commenced on the western island.—Drake makes a survey and chart of both.—Pleasant excursion to the new plantation.—Description of the plantation bay.—Drake's scheme for taking turtle to the Kingston market.—Sheep-pasture bay.—Suggestion of Mrs. Seaward, to draw some of their English relatives to the settlement.—She names the two islands, calling that on which they first landed St. George's Island, and the other Edward's Island.—The <i>Porghee</i> ready for sea.—Drake's commission, with the earnings of the people | 244 |
|--|-----|

CHAPTER XV.

| | |
|---|-----|
| The <i>Porghee</i> sails for Jamaica.—Active proceedings at the settlement.—Lots given on Edward's Island.—Drake returns.—Brings letters, and new negroes.—Seaward suspected to be a pirate.—Buildings commenced at the <i>Peccaries' Field</i> .—Last encounter with the old inhabitants.—Seaward and Eliza visit the Cocoa-nut Grove.—Her appeal to his feelings on a subject of humanity | 268 |
|---|-----|

CHAPTER XVI.

An English brig seen off the southern channel.—Meeting with Seaward's brother and Eliza's sister, who come out married.—Stores sent to Seaward by his uncle at Bristol.—His surmises as to the source of his nephew's riches.—The English brig departs for Honduras.—Seaward takes his brother over parts of the settlement.—A Spanish schooner arrives.—Seaward puts on a show of importance.—Drake sails to Jamaica for artisans, etc.—Peccary Field House finished.—First child born in the islands.—Anxiety for the safety of Drake and his schooner 280

CHAPTER XVII.

The Porghee, with a multitude of people on board.—Embarrassment to lodge them.—Woodcutters employed in clearing lands.—A retreat for the wild pigeons.—Marriages and baptism.—Military training.—Practical ideas on slavery.—A Spanish merchantman.—Seaward gives up trading to his brother, Mr. James Seaward, and makes him a present of Peccary Field House.—A Spanish schooner and another vessel arrive.—Parade on the occasion.—Interview with the Spanish commander.—An aqueduct and several improvements planned.—Seaward determines to visit England.—Arrangements with this object.—Embarks for Jamaica, with his wife and little dog 299

CHAPTER XVIII.

Arrive at Kingston.—Sail for London.—The Thames.—The Custom-house.—Osborne's hotel.—A banker's wife.—Seaward and his wife dress *à la mode*.—A young Frenchwoman.—Mr. Perry, the head of the banking firm.—A dinner party.—Seaward engaged in his affairs.—Attempt to persuade Mrs. Seaward to enter fashionable life.—Seaward and Sir Robert Walpole.—The Minister's secretary.—Extraordinary disclosures.—Seaward disappointed is about quitting London.—Visit from a court lady induces him to delay.—Lady Sundon.—Mrs. Seaward to be presented to the Queen.—Seaward's second audience with Sir Robert Walpole.—Change in aspects.—Mr. Powis.—Various important incidents.—Presentations at court.—Seaward receives the honour of knighthood.—Grant of the two islands, with the rank of Governor and Commandant.—Visit to the Tower of London.—Private anecdotes of the family and court of George II.—Sir Edward and Lady Seaward prepare to leave London for Gloucestershire 321

CHAPTER XIX.

Farewell visit to St. James's.—Journey.—Oxford.—Blenheim.—Cheltenham.—Gloucester.—Their native village.—Meeting with their relations and friends.—The old tree.—The parish

| | PAGE |
|---|------|
| church.—Visit to Bristol.—Seaward's uncle.—Mademoiselle Rosalie.—Treaty with a Scotch medical man.—Dines at the Mayor of Bristol's.—Ladies' splendid dresses.—Statue of William III.—Return to Awbury.—Letters from the Queen and the Secretary of State.—Germans to be sent to Seaward Islands | 377 |

CHAPTER XX.

| | |
|--|-----|
| Christmas at Awbury.—Sir Edward purchases the Hartland estate.—Correspondence with the Queen on the escape of his Majesty.—Germans sail for the islands.—Seaward receives his iron treasure-chest from London.—A clergyman engaged for the settlement.—His account of John Wesley.—Sir Edward's generous arrangements at Awbury and Hartland.—Settles his affairs at Bristol.—Embarks with his lady and his sister Maria, with others, in the Hero for Jamaica | 396 |
|--|-----|

CHAPTER XXI.

| | |
|--|-----|
| Reflections on shipboard.—Madeira.—Antigua.—Arrive at Jamaica.—Meet Drake and his crew.—Visit Governor Trelawney.—Commodore Gunman.—The old seaman's conversation with Lady Seaward.—Spanish Town.—Sir Charles Price.—The Porghee made a King's ship.—Drake's commission as a lieutenant in the Royal Navy.—Visit to Commodore Gunman.—The Decoy.—Letters to the Queen, the Minister, and Lord Harrington.—Kingston church on a Sunday.—Sir Edward and his suite sail from Jamaica, in company with the Shark sloop of war.—Arrive off Seaward Islands | 410 |
|--|-----|

CHAPTER XXII.

| | |
|--|-----|
| Reception of the Porghee and sloop of war on entering the island harbour.—Diego's <i>exposé</i> on the state of the settlement.—Rota's account to her lady of affairs during her absence.—The two old negroes' desire of distinction.—Adjutant-General Craig, and his army of <i>three</i> .—Visits of ceremony between the governor of the islands and the captain of the Shark sloop of war.—A great dinner at Peccary Field House.—Drake and Otway make a survey of the islands.—Seaward and his lady visit the Germans.—His fine speech to them—how much of it they understood.—Military muster, and a great feast to the people.—Sir Edward's commission read to them.—The captain of the Shark's reflections on what he witnessed.—He and his sloop depart | 430 |
|--|-----|

CHAPTER XXIII.

| | |
|---|--|
| Affairs of the Settlement.—Mr. Seaward sails for Jamaica.—The German colony.—Plan for educating the children.—Dr. | |
|---|--|

Gordon.—Buildings projected.—Gordon's choice of a site for his house.—Plan for cutting a pass between German Town and Peccary Field.—A Dutch galliot arrives—ill consequences among the Germans.—The Porghee fitted as a vessel of war.—Drake sails for the Mosquito shore.—Returns with Indian chiefs, asses, and mules—sails for Jamaica with the chiefs.—Small-pox appears in the settlement—method of treating it.—The Porghee returns, bringing deer and turkeys from the Mosquito shore.—A fête champêtre at the Cocoa-nut Grove . 445

CHAPTER XXIV.

Three vessels arrive.—Sir Edward Seaward ordered to Porto Bello—goes in the Porghee, accompanied by a king's cutter—touch at St. Andero—arrive at Porto Bello—conduct of the Spanish governor.—Important information received on board the English vessels.—Sail from Porto Bello—attack a tower, and rescue certain prisoners.—Van Kempen.—Return to Seaward Islands.—Sir Edward broods over the occurrences at Porto Bello.—Van Kempen's commercial projects.—Concise view of the state of the colony.—Captain Drake and Maria Seaward—their marriage.—Reception of the Porto Bello affair in England.—Sir Edward and Lady Seaward take a cruise to Jamaica, St. Domingo, and Curaçoa.—Dutch governor's dinner and ball.—Return to Seaward Islands.—Produce, manufactures, commerce, and prosperity.—Reflections on the rise and progress of the settlement.—Christmas-day—pastimes, etc. 466

CHAPTER XXV.

Emigrants from Carolina.—A Spanish *guarda costa* enters the harbour.—Military display at Fort George.—Spaniards' magnificent present to Captain Drake.—Sir Edward and Lady Seaward's travelling *progress* throughout the two islands.—Rainy season.—Harvest.—Happy leisure at the Plantation House 495

CHAPTER XXVI.

A sloop of war from Jamaica.—Sir Edward Seaward to go to Porto Bello with apologies from the British Government—his indignation.—Lady Seaward insists on accompanying him—sail in consort with the sloop of war.—Mission to Carthagena—reconnoitre the coast—make Porto Bello—difficulties before entering the harbour—Sir Edward Seaward's and Captain Knight's reception—altercation with the Spanish governor—their arrest and confinement—Lady Seaward makes her way to the prison.—Various interesting events and perilous adventures, till the party are rescued by the taking of Porto Bello by the British Admiral Vernon.—Sir Edward Seaward's interview with the Admiral.—The Spanish governor's apology.—Sir Edward's gratitude to his liberator.—Return to Seaward Islands—the people coming out in boats to meet their governor 508

CHAPTER XXVII.

Seaward and Eliza restored to their happy island home.—Much colonial business.—Sir Edward and Lady Seaward fall sick.—Dr. Gordon's medical skill.—Recovery.—New settlers.—A superb dinner at the governor's mansion.—The Porghee returns from Porto Bello.—Dreadful storm.—A strange vessel on the reef—the captain declares himself to be a Kingston privateer.—Drake sails for Jamaica—Captain of the wrecked vessel discovered to be a pirate—battle between his crew and the Seaward people—captain and crew taken prisoners.—Subsequent measures for general safety, etc. 528

CHAPTER XXVIII.

Van Kempen's voyage to Porto Bello.—An officer of engineers arrives in the Porghee—he visits the different fort-positions in the islands.—Useful suggestions.—He sails with Drake to join Admiral Vernon.—Sir Edward puts the engineer's suggestions into practice.—Guns brought.—Fortifications erected.—Fate of the pirate captain and his crew.—Various interesting occurrences.—Trading expedition to Honduras.—The first keel laid down on the islands.—A fine fountain made.—Anniversary of the King's birthday.—A bag of emeralds.—Freeing a bondman.—Rainy season, etc. 551

CHAPTER XXIX.

The Porghee and merchant vessels put to sea.—John Reynolds—his history.—Vernon and Wentworth at Carthagera.—Seaward Islands threatened by the Spaniards.—Privateers rendezvous at the islands—the consequences.—First year of jubilee in the islands.—Several negroes receive freedom 572

CHAPTER XXX.

The Sea Horse frigate arrives—Captain Limeburner its commander—his hospitable reception by Sir Edward Seaward and Captain Drake.—Congregation under the great silk-cotton tree.—The Sea Horse and Porghee sail for the Spanish main.—Woodland region cleared for extending the village.—Porghee returns.—Drake's account of the Island of Rattan.—Letter from Lord Harrington 579

CHAPTER XXXI.

A squadron of Spanish men-of-war off the islands.—Preparations for the expected attack.—Lady Seaward's feminine heroism.—The enemy's boats attempt a landing—repulsed by the Porghee and Avon.—The frigates try to enter the harbour.—Action within the harbour—attack on the land.—The Spaniards

| | |
|---|-------------|
| beaten—prisoners.—Spanish commander, his bravery.— Noble conduct of Sir Edward.—A flag of truce arrives, and takes away the Spanish prisoners | PAGE 588 |
|---|-------------|

CHAPTER XXXII.

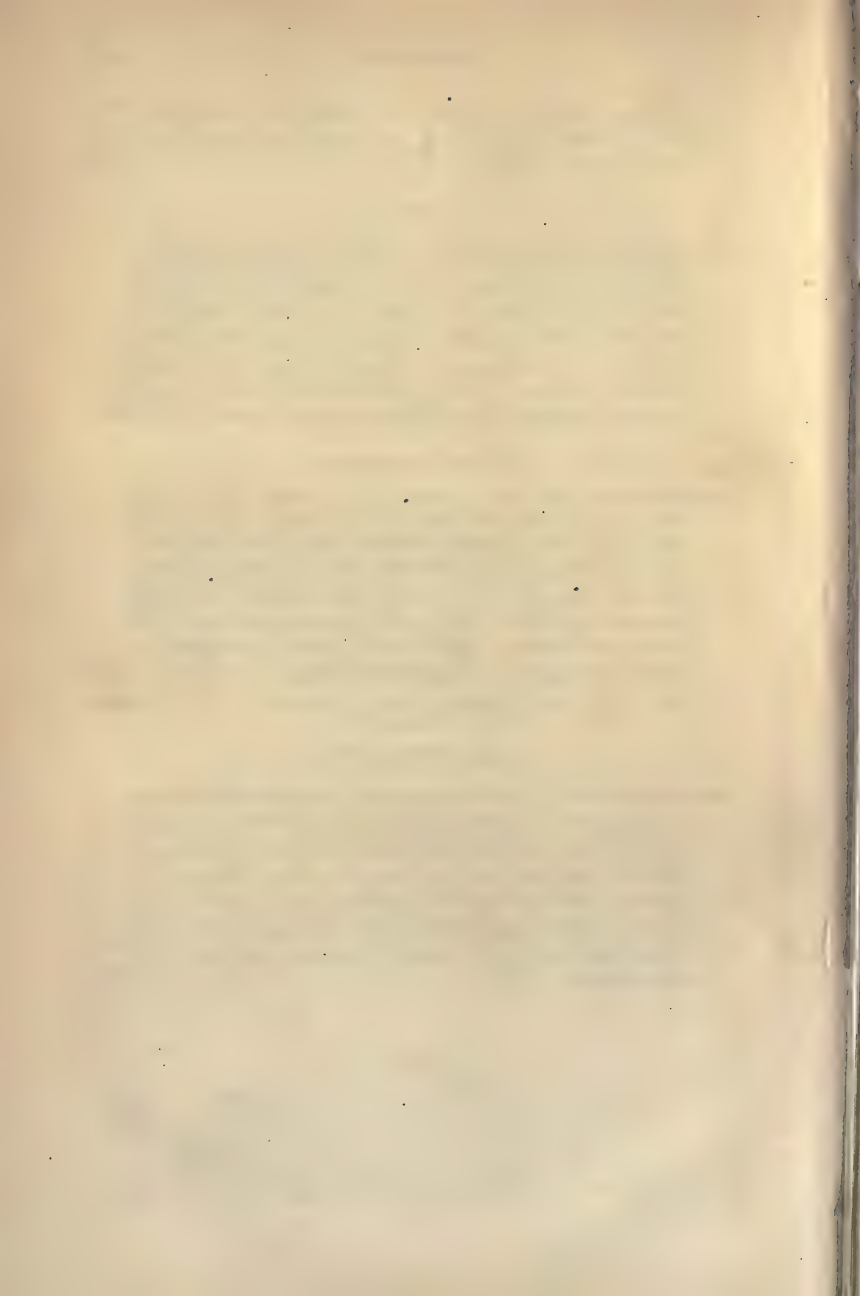
| | |
|--|-----|
| Joy at the settlement on the final departure of the Spaniards.— Built a church in the village.—Colony in great prosperity.— Approach of the stormy season.—A Spanish fleet suddenly surrounds the islands—Sir Edward and Drake reconnoitre it.—General consternation.—A fast is held for deliverance. —The tempest.—Wrecks of the Spanish ships of war.— Despatches from Jamaica.—Several families arrive from England.—Sickness in Seaward Islands.—Deaths.—Lady Seaward recovers slowly.—Christmas-day at the new church | 611 |
|--|-----|

CHAPTER XXXIII.

| | |
|---|-----|
| Sir Edward thinks of returning to England.—Settles his accounts with the authorities and people of his islands.—He and his lady visit all the settlements therein.—The generous conduct. —Sir Edward's final arrangements with Drake—gives him a commission as Lieutenant-Governor of Seaward Islands.— Farewell dinner at the mansion.—Sir Edward and Lady Seaward take leave of the people.—Embark on board the Porghee for Jamaica.—Lady Seaward's pathetic expression on taking her last look of the 'shadowy land.'—Make the island of Jamaica.—Takes a passage in the Severn for Bristol.— Sails.—The Gulf of Florida.—Cape Canoveral | 620 |
|---|-----|

CHAPTER XXXIV.

| | |
|--|-----|
| Dialogue between Sir Edward Seaward and the Duke of Newcastle, about surrendering Seaward Islands to the Crown of Spain.— A visit from the Earl of Harrington.—George II.'s declaration on the subject.—Seaward stipulates for conditions.—A com- missioner sent out from the Minister and Sir Edward, to Seaward Islands, to put the measure into execution.—Sir Edward Seaward's feelings on the occasion.—His amiable wife, still his comforter under all circumstances, soothes his regrets, and proposes 'to return to Hartland, and finish his days in peace' | 629 |
|--|-----|



SIR EDWARD SEAWARD'S NARRATIVE.

CHAPTER I.

BORN of loyal and honest parents, whose means were just sufficient to give a common education to their children, I have neither to boast of pedigree nor of learning; yet they bequeathed to me a better inheritance—a stout constitution, a peaceable disposition, and a proper sense of what is due to my superiors and equals: for such an inheritance I am grateful to God, and to them.

I had not left school long when I felt an inclination to see foreign parts, and under this impression I desired earnestly to go to sea; but my poor dear mother would not hear of it, and I could not find it in my heart to grieve her, even for a moment; so I yielded up my inclination to my duty, and during two years was content to assist my father in the management of his little farm; taking the diversions of fishing and shooting, in their seasons, by way of amusement and recreation. At the expiration of this time, my paternal uncle sent for me to Bristol, and placed me in his counting-house. Within a year from this event, I lost my dear mother; on which occasion I returned to my paternal roof, to console my remaining parent, with whom I remained a few months. During my stay on this melancholy occasion, I took some little part in the farm business; but having many unoccupied hours, I passed most of them with our benevolent pastor, my former kind schoolmaster, the Reverend Mr William Goldsmith: between whose amiable family and my father's there had existed the kindest feeling from our infancy: and these additional happy hours improved it on my part and on theirs.

One morning, as my father and I were talking over my future prospects in life, I received a letter from my uncle, in which he stated that he wanted me to go to Virginia in one of

his vessels as supercargo. I was delighted with the proposal ; to which my dear father made no objection, as he might hope soon to see me again. In a few days I took leave of our friends at the parsonage, and of my own family. At parting, my father gave me his blessing and my mother's Bible ; and with these much valued gifts, I left the village of my education and nativity.

My uncle received me kindly, and took much pains to instruct me in the business which he had appointed me to manage. I was delighted with everything connected with my preparation for the voyage, and I sailed on the 5th of April, 1733, in the *Mary brig*, for America, with an assortment of goods.

We arrived in the Chesapeake Bay on the 2nd of June, which was considered a good passage, and on the following day proceeded up the river to Baltimore. On my arrival, our correspondent was civil to me, but that was all. He did not like a supercargo being sent in the vessel, and therefore threw many obstacles in the way of my disposing of the cargo, and of purchasing tobaccos to advantage ; but owing to the friendship of a Scotch merchant, of whom our correspondent in consequence became jealous, I experienced in a short time that conduct from him which he should have observed to me at first. I did not, however, resent his former behaviour, but received the assistance he was disposed to render me in perfect good humour, and thanked him for each instance of his attention and kind offices. My cargo was at length completed to my satisfaction, and our correspondent gave me reason to think I had gained his esteem before we parted. He made me a present of a Virginia nightingale ; a beautiful red bird, about the size of a thrush, with a feathery crest. "This," said I to myself, "is for my aunt." I should have liked to have procured another for Eliza Goldsmith ; but as I could not bring one for each of her sisters and my own also, I prudently gave up the wish. But I got some capital tobacco seed, which, with a few heads of Indian corn, and a few pumpkin seeds, I put up ; intended for my poor dear father to try them on his farm, as I thought those plants might perhaps thrive well in England.

On the 8th of August I took leave of my friends at Baltimore : and after a stormy passage, but with a fair wind generally, we arrived at the port of Bristol on the 15th of September ; to the great surprise and delight of my uncle, who did not expect the brig at least for a month to come. I was much elated by the novelty and success of my voyage, and hastened to the

town as soon as we dropped anchor in Kingroad. Quick as my movements were, he had received notice of my coming, so that he met me at the door of his house. A crape on his hat arrested my attention. I cast my subdued eye, heart-struck, on it, then, looking at him earnestly, said, "Have I lost my father?" Without answering, he turned and went into the house, and I followed him. "God's will be done, Ned!" said he to me; "how many hogsheads of tobacco have you brought home?"—"My dear uncle," I replied, "my heart is too full to speak on business at present; let me retire for a few minutes, or go and see my aunt, and after that I will give you every information you desire." Saying this, I left him in the passage, and went into the parlour, where I found my aunt; who always had been kind to me, but now she was doubly so; she wiped the tear from my eye, and endeavoured to stay my grief by every comforting expression that goodness could suggest: but nature would pay the tribute of sorrowing, in spite of every attempt to prevent it. My aunt, perhaps now tired of saying the same thing over and over again, left me alone. In a short time I began to feel myself composed, and my aunt returning, told me the particulars of my dear old father's illness and death; which had taken place a month before. Tea was brought in, and my uncle followed it. He took me by the hand, saying, "Poor Ned! thou hast a tender heart; poor boy!—but thy father was a good father, Ned, and it is honest and creditable to thee to show decent sorrow for the loss of such a parent: but he hasn't left thee anything, Ned; what little he had, he has bequeathed to thy brother and sisters; they are young, thou knowest: he thought thee might get thy own bread——" "And he thought right, I hope, dear uncle," I replied; "he did righteously; and I revere his memory the more for taking care of the most helpless."—"But how many hogsheads of tobacco didst thou bring home, Ned?"—"Three hundred, sir; but if you will allow me till after tea, I will then go with you into the counting-house, and give you every information you require respecting the cargo and the voyage."—"Wouldst like to go again, Ned?"—"Yes, sir, certainly, if it be your wish: after I have made a short visit to my brother and sisters, I should be very glad to make a second voyage."—"I don't think thee'll go to Virginia again, Ned; here is a letter for thee from my son Tom, at the Bay of Honduras, and I think thee will find a proposal there more to thy mind." I thought it right to do as he wished, and instantly read the letter, which, although from a near kinsman, was quite a letter of business; proposing that I

should join him at Honduras, and that he would give me a share of the profits, if I would reside there, and allow him to return to England: he would take the part in England his father had been doing, and I should step into his shoes there, as his father wished to retire. I required time to consider of it; and soon after going with my uncle to the counting-house, entered into a detail on the subject of my recent voyage. Throughout he was well-satisfied, and frequently said, I was "no fool;" which expression, from him, meant no ordinary compliment.

On the next day he asked me if I had made up my mind on the proposal of going to Honduras. I said, I had been turning the subject over in my mind, and found that I could say nothing about it. "What dost mean by that?" exclaimed my uncle, testily. "I mean, sir," said I, "that as I neither have money, nor any thing else, but what I derive from you, that it does not become me to say any thing about it, further than I am ready to do whatever you may think me qualified to undertake, and that may be for my welfare."—"That'll do, Ned," said my uncle; "I'll guide thee right, my boy: and Tom is no churl, he will not grudge thee a good outfit, and thy fair earnings. But if he were, am I not thy uncle, and his father? and the staff is in my own hand; I will make no difference between him and thee; thou art a good boy, Ned, and I loved thy father; and thou hast shown thy willingness to lean on me, and be guided by me, and I will not disappoint thee in thy desire: go into the country, and visit thy brother and sisters; and when thou returnest, the brig shall be ready to sail with an investment for Jamaica and the Bay."

The Virginia nightingale had been brought on shore while I was closeted with my uncle. I had not said any thing about it to my aunt, for fear of some accident happening to it; but I came into the parlour as she was admiring it. "La! what a pretty bird, dear Edward: who have you brought that pretty bird for?" cried she. "For you, aunt, to be sure; for whom else could I bring it?"—"Well, I thought so, dear Edward, but I was not quite sure: for young people do behave themselves so ungraciously now-a-days to their elder relatives, that I did almost wrong thee, my dear boy."—"Nay, aunt; you have always been kind to me, and I am indeed happy in this opportunity of showing you that I remembered my aunt, when a wide sea divided me from her."—"So you have, Edward; and you know I love you as a son. Will the bird talk, Edward—what do you call it, Edward?"—"It is a Virginia nightingale, dear

aunt.”—“ Oh ! then, it is a singing bird ? ”—“ Yes, aunt, it sings a little ; but not so sweetly as our nightingale : it has received a larger share of beauty from the hand of its Maker than the nightingale of England, but our nightingale far exceeds it in melody.”—“ That is as it should be, Edward,—one handsome, another clever : to one riches are given ; to another health ; and so forth. God is wise and just, dear Edward ; but you have been taught to know all such things from your good mother, and Parson Goldsmith.”—“ I hope so, aunt,” I replied ; “ but have you any commands to Awbury (for so was then called the obscure village of my birth) ; I am going there as soon as I have settled accounts with my uncle as to what I have been doing in America.”—“ I will trouble you,” said she, “ with a little parcel for the girls, and my love ; and if canst borrow a pillion, I should have no objection to go behind thee, and see what they are all about.”—This last part of my aunt’s speech rather embarrassed me. Much as I loved my aunt, I confess I felt no desire to ride a pillion horse on this occasion. But she was only jesting ; so that I had no reason to fear either vexation or detention from this source.

In a few days I finished with my uncle, and then made arrangements for paying the intended visit to my friends. I set out on horseback, with feelings of a very sober kind ; and being alone, had much time for meditation as I rode on slowly. I looked back on the happy days of my boyhood ; played with my fellows, in memory, on the green before the school-house ; and called to mind some of the old people, and, among others, my honoured father, sitting beneath the venerable elm there, in its full maturity of three hundred years. I believed then that the world could not boast such a man, nor such a tree. I thought also, with pleasure, on my revered pastor and school-master, who was meek and kindhearted to all, and who managed to make his boys scholars without using either the birch or the ferula. He was, indeed, more anxious to teach us our duty than our Latin ; but he contrived to teach us both. The kindness of his nature seemed to kindle a kindred feeling throughout the school, so that we felt disposed to help each other, and did so, and lost nothing, but gained much, in the brotherly task : he loved my father ; and his family and ours were like one. The nearer I approached the village, the more impatient I became to arrive ; I thought on my sisters, and their friends his daughters, every moment with increasing emotion ; I gave Dobbin the spur, and gradually quickening my pace, came up to our gate at a brisk canter. My sisters received me most

affectionately, and quickly sent for my brother, who happened to be out. He came, and the meeting was affecting ; we saw ourselves all together, but our parents were no more with their children ; we looked on the place where they were wont to sit, and wept.

By degrees my brother entered on family affairs ; and I soon mentioned to him my uncle's intention of settling me at Honduras as a merchant, and I expressed a hope that fortune would favour me so that I might be able to provide for my sisters. This kind sentiment towards them was as kindly received by them ; but the youngest said she would not wait the event of fortune-making, but would go with me. "I will send for you, dear Maria," said I, "when I am fairly settled, if you then should like to come."—"I will go with you, Edward," she replied, "unless you can prevail on Eliza Goldsmith to be your guardian angel." Though she said this playfully, and perhaps a little apprehensively, I felt as if electrified by the unexpected appeal : certainly I had always been sensible to a sentiment of a peculiar character for Eliza Goldsmith ; I felt that it was not exactly like that which I bore to my sister Maria, though it seemed to connect their images in my thoughts. I had seen several beautiful and amiable women abroad, but they could not bear comparison with Eliza Goldsmith ; Eliza's sweet smile was, in truth, always playing around me, and doubtless it was the memory of what that sweet smile so faithfully expressed which had unconsciously fixed my affection. Thus I had been calm, almost happy, during my absence from Eliza ; for nothing had occurred to make me discover what lay hidden in my heart ; but now the tumult of my feelings awakened my suspicions, and my agitated answer confirmed Maria's : "Eliza Goldsmith," I said, "leave her happy home for me ! leave father, sisters, for me !" and I believe I said the last words in a way that would have shown a child my adoring affection ; then I added, in an altered tone, "Eliza Goldsmith would never think of Edward Seaward, as you seem to wish, Maria."

I sighed deeply ; Maria smiled : but she soon grew serious, and said, "You know, Edward, that Eliza is sincerity itself ; indeed, she has not a feeling that she need be ashamed to own. From the hour that she became sensible to your decided preference for her,—your love, I will say,—she never tried to hide her great affection for you."

"Become sensible to my preference !—my love !—Maria,—I never thought,—never dared,—surely I never could have said anything——"

"Never purposely, I daresay, Edward," replied Maria; "nor anything that would be directly understood by other people; but Eliza could not remain blind to what we all saw. It was plain to every one of us, that when Eliza was present, you never missed any other creature; that you were even more proud of her approbation than of dear Mr Goldsmith's; that you were always imagining how you could give her a pleasure. When she was sick, don't you remember how you watched everybody's looks in the house, and how kind and affectionate you were to her after her illness? It was not long after her recovery, just when you went to Virginia, that she told me she would die single, unless Heaven should bless her by making her your wife."

"Maria! my dearest Maria," I said, and embraced her, not being able to complete what I wished to say.—While I kept silent, for I was wholly overcome with the suddenness and sweetness of this surprise, my sister went on telling me several things, which were doubly grateful to my feelings, as giving me fresh proofs of Eliza's attachment, and of her superiority over all other women in that frankness which is only to be found in generous and noble characters.

At last I recovered my ordinary powers, and thanking my sister for the kindness of showing me where I might find a treasure beyond valuation, I said, "If it be really so, Maria, Edward Seaward is the happiest of happy men; but to ask Eliza Goldsmith to go with me to such a climate! to marry Eliza, and bury her amongst people that would not comprehend her; no! I cannot be so selfish. Did I not refuse to take you with me, my dear sister, because I love you? and ought I not to let the same motive prevail against my wish for such a dear companion as Eliza? I must not think of it; I will act as becomes the pupil of her excellent father."

"Well, well, this is all very fine," said my elder sister; "but I think, before you make rash resolutions, you had better come with us to the parsonage, and see how you feel about it in Eliza's company."

This remark set us all on foot; and it being now nearly sunset, we went forth to visit the dearest friends of our earliest years. How happy was my old master to see me, how rejoiced the girls! Eliza only was silent; but as I took her hand there was something in its tremor, and in her shaded eyes, that showed there was an anxious feeling at her heart, which prevented her from entirely sharing her sisters' joy, or from welcoming me with the cheerful kindness they did; They

talked, she was silent ; I was surprised, disappointed, bewildered ; it was not the reception I had foolishly expected ; yet I endeavoured to keep my spirits elate ; but soon found I could not continue conversation ; first I became silent, then serious, then depressed. I now found that although I had not been six hours in the village, the Goldsmiths already knew of my intended residence in America, and the subject was accordingly brought forward by them, and variously commented on. Each member of the family had a hope, a fear, or a solicitude to express. One sought to encourage me, another to dissuade me from accepting my uncle's offer. Eliza remained silent ; I wished to know her opinion, but I had not the courage to say so. I suppose my looks asked for it ; for at length she said—

“Edward, the providence of God is with you, whether in England or in the solitary desert ; be not dissuaded from doing that which in your own mind you may think right.”

There was a noble firmness in her voice as she said this, although her eyes had tears in them. On meeting those sweet eyes, I got up from the place where I was sitting, between my dear sister and Miss Goldsmith, and, seating myself beside Eliza, took her hand, and, turning towards her, would have spoken, but could not ; her hand trembled a little, yet she looked on me with a sweet and settled composure, which gradually shed a calm over my agitated feelings.

I cannot now repeat what we said to each other about my removal to a distant land, having no distinct remembrance of it, we were both so deeply moved ; all I am sure of is, that I did not speak of love. Our hearts, indeed, were already united ; and I think Eliza felt, as I did, that after this evening they never could be separated.

The tea called us round the table, over which we conversed on past times with great delight.

“Do you remember,” said Eliza, “when you taught me through this window how to know the moon to be in its increase or in its wane ?”

“I do remember it, dear Eliza,” I replied ; “it was the young moon, a simple curved line, showing itself nearly where the sun had set ; and I remember—yes, I well remember, the words you then said to me, as we looked upon it ; but I may not repeat them.”—“O repeat them ! repeat them !” every one exclaimed ; “surely you cannot be ashamed of anything Eliza said.”—I looked at her,—the bright colour heightened on her cheeks, but she was not confused. “I will repeat them myself,

Edward," said she, "as they must be told : I said, 'You are my sun, dear Edward, and I thy faithful moon, watching thee in the west.'"—"That was precisely it, my dear Eliza," I rejoined ; "and may it be prophetic !" In these few ardent words, I had avowed my attachment, and finished the cruel struggle between my desire of having her the consoling partner of my exile, and my unwillingness to take her from a peaceful home. She was silent for a moment or two ; but her eyes spoke the while most eloquently ; she turned them alternately from her father to me, and resting them at last on me, said in a very low yet still firm voice, "I have long believed in your love for me, Edward Seaward ; now you assure me of it : to-morrow you leave Awbury ; I cannot conceal what I feel at the possibility of another separation.—My father ! my sisters !—you know his worth, you will not think hardly of your poor Eliza's delicacy if now, before you all, I confess my deep affection. Edward, dear Edward, I should pine and die were you to go alone to the dreadful country you are destined for : may it now be our fate to live or die together." Before she finished I drew near her, and, snatching her hand, pressed it to my lips ; a hallowed tear, seen only by the eye of Him who looks into the heart, dropt on the hand : it was the seal of Edward's faith—it was not unperceived. I kissed that dear hand again and again, with difficulty articulating a few words of devoted affection, and sat down by her, with a delightful consciousness that she was mine.

The feelings of all present were highly excited ; tears flowed apace, or stood in the eye of each, and my dear sister Maria kissed us both, weeping tears of joy. Mr Goldsmith sat the while without speaking, but with a serious gravity which somewhat awed me ; yet his habitual kindness prevented his presence, or even his demeanour, being a check upon the honest sentiments of our united families on such an occasion ; and he knew the character of his youngest daughter too well, to impute her conduct to anything but innate dignity and innocence. It was now his turn to add a word :—"My children," said he, "we will sleep on this, and talk it over to-morrow."—I passed the rest of the evening in conversing with Eliza. I told her that she only had possession of my heart from my earliest years ; but that I did confess I had not been conscious of the extent and power of my affection until this very day, for that I did not dare to think of it as a motive to action. I could not venture to propose to myself taking her from safety into danger, and perhaps from happiness to misery ; but the honest avowal

of her sentiments had at once decided me ; and on my return to my uncle I would tell him frankly that without her I would not go to Honduras. This was well ; it was something like herself—frank, undissembling, and explicit : and flowing from the same pure source of an unfeigned attachment. With these and such like conversations we passed the time, until our departure for the farm ; and our returning walk was even more happy than when going thence, under the exhilarating influence of high anticipation.

On the morrow we again visited our friends at the parsonage, and spent the day with them,—a long and happy day, embracing the past, the present, and the future. I cannot trust myself to venture recounting the circumstances of our delightful intercourse ; and a few days more, like to the last in sweetness but not intensity, completed my present visit to my native village. I had arranged everything with my revered tutor and pastor, and he promised to confide to me his beloved daughter.

I left them early in the morning of the 26th of September, with a promise quickly to return. My horse went lazily home, and I felt no disposition to hurry him ; my thoughts took an opposite direction to that which occupied them when on my way to revisit those from whom I was now receding. I had my hopes and fears as to the future. The past was for the time blotted from my memory, if I except the happy days so lately passed at Awbury ; but those days seemed to constitute my present existence.

I arrived late in the evening at my uncle's, and was glad that he had gone to the club ; so, after taking tea quietly with my aunt, I retired to rest. In the morning we met at breakfast : the old gentleman was happy to see me, talked over the business at Honduras, told me the brig was getting ready, that we were to touch at Jamaica, land some of the cargo there, and take in lumber, with some other articles, for the Bay ; and that his correspondent at Kingston would put me in the way to obtain a few useful things for my better accommodation at St George's Key ; where his son had resided for nearly a year, in little better than a negro hut ; and so forth. I heard him with a courteous attention, and then thought it right for the purpose now nearest my heart to say, " Dear uncle, may I ask you one or two questions ?"—" Certainly, Ned ! certainly ! a hundred, if you like, so they be short ones."—" Then, first, uncle, how long do you suppose I may have to stay there ?"—" Till you make so much money, Ned, that you cannot spend it without coming to England : keep that in mind, boy : so make haste in your call-

ing."—"Well but, sir, that may not be accomplished as long as I live."—"Oh yes, Ned, I don't think thee hast a great stomach for wealth."—"But, sir, you wished my questions to be short; will you make the answers so? May I be five, or six, or seven, or ten years at St George's Key?"—"Yes, perhaps you may; not less than five or six years certainly."—"Then, my dear uncle, I should not like to live there a bachelor, and perhaps get into immoral connections that would degrade me in my own eyes, and in the opinion of those I love."—"The old gentleman laughed immoderately, stood up, held his sides, and laughed and coughed, exclaiming at intervals, "Ned, you will be the death of me!" I knew not what to think of this; but my aunt made him sit down, saying, "Mr Seaward, our nephew is right; I like his sentiments."—"He is an ass, and you are a fool!" he replied, looking morosely at her: "I don't want any of your prudery and nonsense; I will talk to him." The old lady walked out, and left us together. My heart sunk within me. In imagination I had already beheld my dear Eliza living with me in ease and affluence, enjoying the bright sunshine of my prosperity, under the patronage of my uncle. A cloud now hung over me, which I expected to burst with a thunder-storm the minute my aunt quitted the room. But my uncle was a wag in his way: he began to laugh immoderately again; then recovering himself, said, "It's better to marry than burn; eh, Ned?" and continued his laughing fit. He was then able to resume: "That's it, Ned, eh? but where is the wife to be had at so short a notice? We can't give an order for her—Bale, No. 1, marked E. S., Ned, eh?" He then took another hearty laugh to himself, and became quiet. I was now at ease, being convinced there was no surly humour on his part, but the contrary, and thought this was my auspicious moment. I at once told him the whole affair of my engagement to Eliza Goldsmith. He heard me out, in a business-like manner; and after some pause said, "Well, Ned, it's your affair, not mine; and if you are bent on it, I'll do my part. How the speculation will turn out, thee don't know and I can't tell thee: these sort of articles, that we take for better for worse, not being allowed to try the sample, don't always answer expectation; but thee may'st be more fortunate than some other people; and, as there is no time to lose, get thy business done; and, if thee likes, we will put her and thee in the manifest." He finished by shaking me by the hand, kindly and warmly, saying, "Ned! married or single, I will always be as a father to thee, boy." I hope I thanked him as I

ought : I am sure if I thanked him as I wished, I did thank him as I ought. He desired me to return the next day to Awbury, and finish my business.

On the morning of the next day, on wishing me a prosperous journey, he put a little parcel into my hand for my bride, which I had the happiness to deliver before night : it was a hundred-pound bank note, a very acceptable wedding present. Time pressed hard ; there was no leisure for calling in church : I must return to Bristol, to employ a proctor to procure a licence. My uncle, on seeing me, and learning the cause of my being back so soon, was rather testy about loss of time ; it being of great importance to get the brig off, as the month of October was advancing. I could not obtain the licence under ten days ; but, that we might make the most of the interval, I requested my dear uncle and aunt, to invite my sister Maria and Eliza Goldsmith to Bristol, to have the opportunity of seeing their niece and my intended ; and, moreover, I considered that the two young gentlewomen, in paying this visit, would be enabled to make a good use of my uncle's kind present for Eliza's outfit. My request was instantly complied with, and the invitation joyously accepted.

My uncle was equally delighted with his niece and with her friend ; but Eliza was evidently my aunt's favourite : she went with her every where, chose every thing, bought every thing while the dear girl received with thankfulness the attentions of the old lady.

The important paper was at length obtained ; and my worthy uncle, with his spouse, proposed to accompany us to Awbury. We set off, a happy party. Mr Goldsmith received us with his usual kindness : the wedding followed ; my uncle was in high spirits, which often burst forth in boisterous joy. He brought some " Bristol man's milk " with him, as he called it—old sherry wine, bought of Mr Sheriff Glisson—and with this he made merry, and plied my good father-in-law beyond what he could well carry ; but it was a wedding merry-making ; and he gave a hogshead of beer to the villagers, and made it a happy day. On the morrow we took an affectionate leave of our dear friends : our feelings were deep and various ; there was little said at parting, but much expressed by that natural language, which the overflowing heart never fails to manifest. My aunt and uncle first stepped into the coach that was to convey us ; I then handed in my dear Eliza ; she had scarcely taken her seat when an unexpected volunteer sprang in after her. " Who are you ? " cried my uncle. " Ah, poor Fidele," said Eliza,

"I had overlooked you in taking leave of my friends." She patted him kindly, and was handing him out to the servant, when the dog (a beautiful little spaniel of King Charles's breed) turned back his head, to look once more on his favourite mistress, and whined so piteously that my uncle, who observed it, exclaimed, "No, no!" and stretching himself forward, so as to be heard by the group without, "let the little fellow go with her; he has a warm heart towards her, and a good one too. Dogs never change, though men sometimes do: no allusion to you, Ned."—"Take him, Eliza," they all said, and I more emphatically than all the rest. I was affected in witnessing the attachment of this dumb creature to the one to whom I myself was so devotedly attached. My sister Maria and I then got into the carriage; and, with many adieus from the windows, we set forward; and after a pleasing journey of a few hours, arrived at the door of my uncle.

Next day we went soberly and diligently to work, to prepare for our departure. However, there was yet much to do. I had frequent conferences with my uncle at the counting-house; and at length he gave me my instructions in writing, with letters to Mr Dickinson at Kingston, and letters for my cousin at Honduras.

CHAPTER II.

WE sailed from Bristol on the 30th of October, 1733, with a fine breeze from the eastward. On going down the river Avon in a boat, to join the brig at Kingroad, Eliza was charmed by the scenery on each side of the banks. St Vincent's rocks presented a sublime object on the right side; and those on the left, covered with wood from the water's edge to their summits, rivalled, by their beauty, the sublimity of the perpendicular precipices opposite. "I shall never forget this scene," she observed, "it is so impressive." She did not then know that a time was not far distant when her abode would be under such a rock; equally precipitous, but more gigantic.

The wind was fair; we sailed down the Bristol Channel, with fine weather and smooth water. It blew fresh from the north-west after passing Lundy Island; and for ten days we proceeded jocundly; but a long continuance of contrary wind, with rain soon after, as emblematic of human life, altered our condition and our feelings. Eliza was very sick, and the captain was in bad humour; so that we were far from comfort-

able : but the wind changed again, and with it returned our lively sense of present happiness, if I may so express it. Such are the events that modify earthly enjoyment. In three weeks we got into the trade winds : here, with studding sails, low, and aloft, the vessel glided along smoothly and delightfully. In little more than five weeks we passed through the Mona passage, between Porto Rico and Hispaniola ; and on the day six weeks of quitting the Bristol Channel, we made the east end of Jamaica. The high blue mountains presented a most magnificent spectacle ; and when we approached near enough to discern the trees and plantations, we were charmed by the superb face of the whole country. The sky was brilliant and cloudless, the breeze fair and refreshing : our spirits were proportionally buoyant ; and as the vessel ran along shore for Port Royal, all the next day our delight was kept alive by the newness and vastness of the scenery which lay upon our right. The grand expanse of ocean was no novelty now to us, or we might have turned our back upon the shore to gaze upon it, as a suitable accompaniment to the sublime and beautiful landscape which so totally absorbed us.

A negro pilot came on board, as we neared Port Royal. Eliza was a good deal struck by his appearance, and his manner, and way of speaking, which, being nothing new to me, I hardly noticed : I had seen such in Virginia, but to her there was much to interest ; he was to her mind's eye, at the moment, the representative of the whole negro population ; which drew from her some observations alike creditable to her head and her heart. We soon hauled round Port Royal point ; the sandy foundation of a small town of little importance, but many years ago, on the space we now sailed over, its ancestor had stood, a place of great wealth and elegance ; and they say, like Sodom and Gomorrah, it became the seat of all licentiousness, and was swallowed up by an earthquake in 1692.

We had nothing to do at Port Royal, therefore did not drop anchor, but worked up to Kingston against the sea breeze ; and came to, off the town, just as the breeze was dying away. Mr Dickinson, my uncle's friend, was absent in the country at his penn ; we therefore determined to remain on board all night, and did so. About nine o'clock next morning, we received a visit from him, and much courtesy ; he insisting that we should take up our residence at his penn during our stay in the island ; which we gladly accepted, and accordingly accompanied him on shore ; and after I had delivered my letters to him, and made some arrangements with respect to the cargo, he drove

myself and wife out into the country, where we were agreeably entertained by the hospitality of our friend, and the novelty of all we saw.

I returned with him in the morning to Kingston, to business, leaving my dear wife at the penn ; and this was our daily practice, going back a little before supper time. The part of the cargo for the Jamaica market was landed. American lumber, as planks, shingles, &c., together with American flour in barrels, some maize or Indian corn, together with island produce, as coffee, sugar, rum, &c., recompleted the cargo for Honduras. Mr Dickinson gave me an appalling account of the place we were bound to : he said, St George's Key, where my cousin resided, was nothing better than a large sand-bank ; and that the town of Belize, on the mainland, consisted of a few wretched houses on the south side of the river of that name ; and that the whole country, for nearly a hundred miles in every direction, was little better than a swamp covered with mangroves ; that there was neither beef nor mutton to be had ; that the inhabitants passed most of their time up the country, cutting logwood and mahogany ; that they lived on Irish salted provisions, American flour, and maize ; and looked to their fish and turtle, as their only resource for fresh provisions. This was a sad prospect. "No wonder," said I, "that my cousin Tom desires to return to England." I must confess, the account from Mr Dickinson disheartened me not a little, and I thought it right not to conceal what I had heard from Eliza. "Well," said she, "but we shall be together, Edward ; happiness is not meat nor drink, but peace and contentment ; and under privations we may be induced to seek that happiness where alone it can be found." My heart owed the support it had received ; I was again at ease, and attended to the completion of our cargo with cheerfulness.

All being ready on Saturday the 22d of December, the captain determined to sail the next day, viz., Sunday the 23d, on which holy day, for some fanciful reason or superstition, sailors like to put to sea. By Mr Dickinson's advice, I was to buy two or three goats ; and as many fowls and ducks, and Guinea-fowl, as the coops would hold, for stock on our arrival at St George's Key ; the probability being that I should find "a plentiful scarcity," as he expressed it, of such things at my cousin's residence ; who, he said, lived like a Bay-man, on salt provisions and turtle. I was therefore to go into the negro market on Sunday morning, the market day of Jamaica. I told Eliza of my object, and she desired to accompany me ; yet not

without passing a just but severe censure on such an unchristian usage in a Christian colony. The market was held in a large street, and we saw it full of negroes, male and female, with all sorts of fruits and vegetables and poultry; it was a grotesque scene, and, although I had been on this side of the Atlantic before, was perfectly novel to me. We bought two goats with kid, a dozen fowls, as many Muscovy-ducks, and half-a-dozen Guinea-fowl, a great quantity of yams and plantains, and coccos (a sort of potatoe), some shaddocks and oranges, and limes, and a few pumpkins, and water-melons, half a dozen fine pine apples, and as many musk-melons, some capsicums and bird-peppers, and two large sugar-canes.

Mr Dickinson's negroes took our stock on board, which, when the captain saw, he exclaimed, "What are we to do with all this? we shall be only five or six days on the passage."—"It is stock, captain, for St George's Key," I replied, "where I shall be happy to see you take some of it, when we arrive."—"Oh! very well," cried he; "you may keep poultry there, if you carry a good stock of maize for them; but nothing will grow there that you have brought on board, except the pumpkins and water-melons; unless you could take some good soil with you; and I don't think that would pay freight."

The brig was under weigh at eleven o'clock, and we ran down to Port Royal, a distance of eight or nine miles, in little more than an hour. With the same fine breeze, we stood out to sea, and shaped our course to the southward, to keep clear of the Pedro shoals, which, by the way, was not our proper route. We should have kept between those shoals and the island of Jamaica; but it was the captain's obstinacy or fate not to do so. In the evening we were becalmed, Portland Point being just discoverable from deck, and during the night we made little or no way through the water. About three o'clock in the morning (Monday, 24th), the wind off the land reached us, which carried the brig a few leagues farther to the southward. Early in the forenoon the trade-wind set in, very fresh, from the E.N.E., when the captain, considering himself clear of the Pedro shoals, edged away a little to the westward, and finding, by observation at noon, that he was well to the southward, the brig was kept away west, the trade-wind continuing to blow steadily from the eastward, but sometimes freshening almost into a gale. We found by our reckoning, on Tuesday at noon, that we must have run nearly two hundred miles during the last twenty-four hours.

The gale began now to slacken, and the wind veered to the

N.E. and N.N.E. in squalls, looking sometimes very black to windward, so that from time to time we were under the necessity of taking in sail. But the sea had got up, and the motion of the vessel had become very uneasy; therefore it was necessary to lash and secure the hen-coops on deck, and everything in the cabin and state rooms, as safely as possible. Towards evening the weather became still more unsettled; sometimes perfectly calm, yet the sea much agitated; sometimes blowing a fine steady breeze from the eastward, which induced the captain again to set the topgallant sails; then suddenly chopping round with a heavy squall from the N.W., obliged us to clew up all sail. I requested the captain, as night was coming on, to hand the mainsail and topgallant sails, and close-reef the topsails, and, being made snug, to lay to under easy sail till daylight, as we were now approaching the mainland, where the shoals and rocks were numerous, and not accurately laid down on the chart; but he would not consent to heave the vessel to, although he made her snug. He would keep his course, to get in under the island of Rattan in the morning, if possible, and I was obliged to yield to his determination. One of the men said we should have a hurricane. "The hurricane months are over, you blackguard," replied the captain, angrily. The man, however, appeared to know what he was talking about, and I, for one, believed him; but the captain laughed at him, after his choler had subsided. I then thought it quite time to insist on the dead lights being put in, to secure the cabin windows against the violence of the sea, if it should break up against them, and well it was that I had been firm to have it done, for the windows were scarcely secured by their wooden outside shutters when it began to thunder and rain in torrents. It was one cascade of water from the heavens. My poor dear wife had gone below into the cabin a little before the storm came on. She had been induced to descend by the awful blackness that totally overspread the sky, which until then had been cheerfully bright in some one quarter or other, and, although I did not remain five minutes after her, I was thoroughly wetted to the skin before I could get off deck, and run down the ladder. I had scarcely entered the cabin when the wind arose suddenly, and with such violence that the brig in an instant seemed on her beam ends. At this moment I thought I heard some one fall down the companion ladder. The hurricane had blown the sails to ribands, but the crew had succeeded in getting her before the wind. The vessel being a little steady, I went to see who or what it was that had made the unlucky

tumble, and found my two goats, which, in the bustle and confusion, had probably attempted to take refuge in the companion, or some one had thrown them there purposely out of the way, as the door was immediately closed down after them, to keep the sea from rolling from the deck into the steerage passage and cabin. This circumstance, which at the time did not appear worthy of much notice, was nevertheless important, the hand of Providence having directed it.

I now endeavoured to console my wife, whose strength of mind and kindness of heart bestowed reciprocal consolations on myself. "God will preserve us, my honoured love!" said she; "I feel that we are safe, notwithstanding this dreadful hurricane; but," added she, pressing my hand and moving it to her lips, "if we should be drowned, we shall die together, and we shall not be separated: we shall meet where we can part no more." Her feelings now overpowered her, and she fell on my neck and wept. I kissed away the tears from her eyes, saying, "We will trust in the Almighty."

I wanted to go on deck, but was not able to effect it. The companion door would not move, and the sea was dashing over the quarter-deck. I, however, got the people there to open one of the side doors a little, and I peeped out. The wind howled horribly, and the sea was all in a foam. The brig was running before the wind, sometimes on one point of the compass, sometimes on another, just as the gale happened to chop round, which it sometimes did, and then the sea broke over the brig while she was veering to the wind. Two of the hands and the yawl had been washed overboard. We continued to be driven by the storm for eight or ten hours, I cannot tell in what direction; but about two or three o'clock in the morning they called out, "Breakers, breakers!—land!—breakers!" I was below with my wife in the cabin. Being no seaman, I could do no good on deck; but, hearing this, I got up the ladder to the companion door. All was again fast down, and they would not open it; in fact, all hands were too much absorbed by the awfulness of their situation. In a few minutes the vessel struck, and we, who were below, were thrown violently on the cabin floor. The poor dog, our faithful Fidele, howled mournfully as he was driven to the further end of the cabin. This, at such a moment, had a powerful effect on us. "We are indeed lost!" said my wife, as she recovered a little from the fall she had just received. I did not now wait to console her by my words. I renewed my efforts to force the companion door and get upon deck, but it was perfect darkness where we were, and I could

not find anything to add to my own ineffectual strength, nor could I make any one on deck attend to me. They could not hear me for the noise made by the howling of the wind and the breaking of the sea ; yet I sometimes heard them, and could discover that they were cutting away the wreck of the main-mast, which lay over the side, making ready to get the long boat over the gunwale, to escape, if possible, from the perishing vessel. I now became frantic. I knocked with my hands, and hallooed with all my power, but to no purpose. By accident I stumbled over an empty stone bottle at the foot of the ladder, with the bottom of which I struck the companion door so violently that I succeeded in arresting the attention of the captain. He unbolted it, telling me, at the same time, "We are all lost !" but that the men were trying to launch the long boat, our only chance ; for, although it was likely she would swamp in the breakers, it was quite certain the brig would go to pieces in a few minutes, and if Mrs Seward and I chose to go we must be up in a second ; for "look there !" said he, crying out at the same time, "another shove, lads, and she's all our own !"—the long boat was launched, and I returned down the ladder with all speed. The brig was lying on her starboard side, the seab reaking over her bow and fore-chains ; but, from the position of a rocky island to windward, she was pretty quiet abaft and to leeward, so that a boat might live under her lee, and I expected the captain would wait for us there a little. The moment I rejoined my dear wife, I urged her instantly to accompany me to the deck, telling her our situation. "No !" said she, "I will not stir, and you will not stir ; they must all perish ; a boat cannot endure this storm. Let us trust in God, Edward," continued she, "and if we die, we die together."—"It is done," I replied ; "we will not stir."—"Then tell them so," cried she, hastily ; "and if you can lay your hand on the bread bag in your way, it may be useful to them, if they survive this hour." I hastened to ascend, at which moment the brig seemed to right, and I was struck back by a column of water rushing down the companion, followed by the shutting to of its doors. The brig had swung off the point of the reef, and the sea then broke over the main chains, the vessel being upright. I now easily succeeded in getting on deck, but no boat was to be seen ; yet now and then I thought I heard the voices of the miserable crew at some distance on the brig's quarter, and sometimes I fancied I saw them, when the strong lightning's glare lighted up everything around for an instant, leaving the immediate darkness greater. The brig soon took the ground

again, on a reef within, and heeled over as before, which threw me down the ladder, the companion doors fortunately slamming to after me, as the sea instantly broke over the vessel fore and aft. My ever kind wife hastened to my assistance, but was herself thrown to the other side of the cabin. I was not hurt, so that in a little time I reached the place where she lay, and we crawled up together to windward, where we endeavoured to secure ourselves. More than an hour passed away with us thus, in dismal darkness below ; but we enjoyed the light of God's presence, offering up prayer to Him, in short but emphatical ejaculations, and He heard us. We felt the influence of His peace, and were resigned to His will.

Our situation was awful ; in all human probability, within one short hour we should be engulfed by an overwhelming sea. With arms folded round each other, we sat, endeavouring to keep our position, and so remained till the heaving motion of the vessel gradually subsided, and at length became scarcely perceptible ; but she continued to lie over, nearly on her beam ends. I now again thought it right to reach the deck, and as the ladder had been lashed to its situation, it was not displaced, notwithstanding all the shocks the vessel had sustained. On ascending the ladder, I pushed open the lee half of the companion door, when a gleam of joy rushed upon me, on perceiving that the day had dawned, and that the water to leeward was quite smooth. The brig now lying on the innermost part of the reef, I discovered high land ahead and astern, and a fine sandy beach abreast of us, little more than a mile off. I hastened below to my dear wife, into the dark cabin, exclaiming, "Come to me, my love ; come on deck ; it is daylight !" Without a word, she made her way to me, and ascended the ladder. On emerging from darkness into light, her feelings overcame her, and she poured forth her heart to God. After a few moments of abstraction, she crept down to the lee gunwale of the quarter-deck : "Where is the boat and our poor companions ?" she exclaimed ; "I do not see them !"—"Perhaps," I replied, "they are safely landed on yon beach, and will soon return to take us out of the vessel." I now looked earnestly around me : the mainmast was gone, but the stump was standing ; the wreck of it had been cleared away : the foremast remained, but the fore-topmast had gone, and was hanging by its rigging forward : the booms were gone, the boats were gone, the gabbosc for cooking gone, the binnacle gone : the hen-coops alone remained in their places ; but all the fowls and Guinea-fowls that were in the coop to leeward were

drowned : the ducks which were in the other coop survived, and also four fowls ; yet these seemed more dead than alive. All was desolation on deck and aloft ; but the day had dawned, and the morning smiled serenely on us, while a gentle calm spread itself over the ocean all around.

The land astern of the brig to the northward seemed high and well wooded ; but our eyes were attracted by the smooth sandy shore, where we wished and hoped to be ; and thus gazing, our attention became gradually riveted on a promontory, which terminates the sandy beach to the southward, distant about three miles. The rising sun shone directly upon it, and it was then that it arrested our particular notice, indeed admiration, notwithstanding our critical situation. When these almost happy emotions had a little subsided, we looked in every direction for the boat, but looked in vain ; and then sad misgivings for the fate of the crew crossed our mind, which, even in spite of our consciousness to the late mercy, extended itself to ourselves ; for although we felt an honest anxiety for the lives of our captain and his crew, yet we depended on them as a means, and, indeed, the only probable means, of our own escape from this unknown shore. In these contemplations and suspense we continued for some hours, during which time I fortunately thought I would try the pumps : the brake of the starboard pump had been shipped, but its bolt was twisted by some violence, so that it would not work : I could not find the other brake ; and with great difficulty, after much hard exertion, I got the brake out, and shipped it with the bolt in the lee pump. I then went to work, and there was plenty to do ; I kept pumping till I was quite exhausted, and the water still came up as abundantly as ever. I concluded the brig's bottom must be stove in, so that if we should beat off the reef into deep water, we must sink and go down.

About ten o'clock in the forenoon, the breeze began to set in from the sea, nearly E.N.E., and the brig worked fore and aft. I told my wife what my fears were, and that if it so happened, we must endeavour to get up the fore-rigging, as the water in-shore of us could not be very deep, and take the chance from thence of any escape that might offer. She pressed my hand, and looked like an angel in my face, but spoke not a word.

The sea-breeze freshened, and the sea beat a little on the weather side of the brig. In half an hour her stern swung off into deep water, and she hung by the bow. We now righted, that is to say, the vessel became upright in the water, and,

although no seaman, I had sailed enough to know something about it; I therefore immediately went to the tiller to see if the rudder was gone, which I had every reason to expect, but it was not, and at this discovery I rejoiced greatly, exclaiming, "The rudder is safe; that's well!" My wife did not precisely understand this, but she felt security in my look, and she thanked and blessed God for His goodness. The sea-breeze blew more freshly, but we hung by the fore-foot on the edge of the reef, which no doubt was higher than astern. At length the brig broke adrift, having most likely torn off her false keel forward, and perhaps some of the coral rock which had held her. I was now all amaze; I did not know what to do. "We must be patient, Edward," said my dear wife; "we shall go quietly on the sand." The brig continued to drift in upon a point of rock, close to which we saw a little rivulet. On this rock I expected to be dashed in pieces, but the current which was setting us on that point, also directed us past it to the southward, so that the brig drifted between the reef to the eastward, and the long beach to the westward, down towards the perpendicular mountainous height, which we had so attentively fixed our eyes on early in the morning, as forming the southern extremity of the sandy extension. I was desirous to get the brig under some command: there was something dragging astern; but finding the fore-staysail yet untorn, although the sheet had been carried away, I got the weather sheet over, and was able to set the sail: the vessel's head now paid off, and she would steer. I therefore made up my mind to keep on as far as I could with safety, hoping to see some inlet, as the current proved there must be a passage somewhere, but if I could not discover one, to bump her on the sandy beach. She went along cleverly for a vessel almost a wreck; that is, she was not at all water-logged, and consequently in no danger of sinking, hence on that score my great fear was removed. I soon approached the mountainous promontory, which seemed to stand up before me like a vast giant to obstruct my further progress: I therefore determined to bump her on shore. The wind, by striking against the high land, blew directly from east, which favoured my intention. I then put the helm up, and that, together with the fore-staysail, brought her head west, and I ran for the beach close under the promontory. How great my joy when I discovered an inlet, not twice the vessel's breadth. I pushed into it, and in a few minutes found myself at the end of a little cove, with rocks and fragments of rocks on my larboard side, and a fine sandy beach on my right, with

the same ahead. Here the brig struck, and stuck fast with her bow; the shock threw myself and my wife forward with great violence, and we were both more bruised by this happy event than by all the tossings and tumblings we had experienced during the hurricane. "Blessed be God!" cried I, getting up and shaking myself; but my dear Eliza was stunned, and it was some time before she recovered her senses. Eventful as our situation was, I thought of nothing but her; I sat down by her, and rubbed her hands between mine; she looked up and smiled, then raising her arm over my neck, and kissing my forehead, as she was often wont to do, said, "I thank God you are safe, my Edward!"

CHAPTER III.

WE saw ourselves at length delivered from the perils of the ocean, and placed in a state of security: we raised our hearts to the fountain of mercy, and blessed God in thankfulness. It was, however, some time before we could collect ourselves: we looked back upon the ocean, and the reef, and the rocky islands, from whose horrors we so lately had escaped, with strong emotions, still partaking of terror, although now in safety; and this feeling was somewhat increased by the immediate sight of the immense cliffs, which towered over the masthead of the brig, as if ready to fall upon us. But it was not long before our self-possession completely returned: we were in a snug place, and the sea all on this side of the reef, to far beyond us, perfectly smooth: our fears, therefore, gradually dissipated: we felt ourselves under God's protection, and were at ease.

"Poor Fidele!" suddenly exclaimed my wife. "It is only now that I remember thee! I will go down into the cabin, and see what has become of my faithful little dog."—"Yes, my Eliza," replied I, "we will go down together; and as we are in a safe place here, where the sea cannot break in upon the vessel, I will get out the dead lights, and let the cheerful day, and fresh air, into the cabin by opening the windows: we shall then see what we are about." The poor dog was overjoyed by the first admission of light, and by our presence: he could not contain himself: to use a homely but expressive phrase, he seemed as if he would jump out of his skin; his caresses were incessant, and he could only be restrained by his mistress taking him on her knee. I soon succeeded in getting all the dead lights out; we then saw the devastation that had taken place

below ; tables, chairs, swinging lamp, chests, trunks, and many other things, huddled together, and some smashed to pieces. How the dog escaped without broken bones I cannot divine ; but we also had escaped ; and a sparrow falleth not to the ground without the permission of our heavenly Father.

We now felt and acknowledged our exhaustion ; so that I earnestly wished to get something to refresh my dear wife ; but I could not find any bread, nor, indeed, anything else, at the instant. Soon, however, I laid my hand on an unbroken bottle of wine jammed up in one of the berths, and forcing in the cork, we each took a small quantity ; then reclining on the after-lockers, to repose ourselves a little, we both fell asleep. I suppose I slept some hours : for when I awoke, I looked up, and saw my Eliza sitting by me, with Fidele at her side ; she had been watching me in my sleep. "Dear Edward," said she, "you have taken a sweet rest : how delightfully the breeze blows in upon us, through the cabin windows ! I should now be very comfortable if we could find the boat with our companions." I arose, and set about hunting for some biscuit, and found the bag I had intended to throw into the long boat : it was hanging on a nail behind the ladder ; and there at my feet I saw our two goats, huddled together behind a hammock some one had stowed away in that place the preceding day. I brought the bag along with me joyfully, and we began to eat of it with thankfulness ; taking a little sup of the wine now and then from the bottle, which, in our exhausted state, was great refreshment and support to us. I told Eliza I had seen the goats, and that they were alive. We now went upon deck, taking Fidele with us : in passing, I handled the poor animals, as they lay in the nook under the ladder : one of them, I was sorry to find, had its hinder leg broke : we felt pity for the poor creature, but could not at that instant attend to it ; for it occurred to me that the bow of the vessel should be immediately secured by ropes to the rocks, as another hurricane might come, and blow us out of the creek in which the good providence of God had havened us. There was plenty of rope on deck, sheets and halliards of the wreck : with some of these I quickly got on shore, the larboard side of the brig being close to the rock, and set about making them fast round large blocks of cliff on our larboard bow ; then rested content, after three or four hours' great exertion, with what I had done.

While I was thus employed, my wife had taken the dead fowls from the coops, and broken some biscuit in small pieces, with which she fed the remaining live ones. "We can eat one

of the drowned fowls," observed I; "it will be a good dinner for us, and we want it."—"I am not hungry," she replied; "yet you must be so: but how can we make a fire?" Here I was at a stand. There were fire-arms in the cabin, unloaded, and consequently useless: I had pistols in a trunk, blocked up in the state-room by an accumulation of things against the door, and which, therefore, I could not get at. I then bethought myself of the ship's spy-glass, and found it hanging safely in its bracket. "This will do," said I; "the great lens is a burning-glass; I will step on shore with it and kindle a fire: you and Fidele shall go with me."

We put up a couple of the dead fowls into our bag, with the remains of the biscuit, and the bottle of wine, and, by a little help, my dear wife and her faithful dog, both overjoyed, once more trod the welcome earth again. We looked on the vessel with deep emotion, and on the strange land we were now for the first time treading together—the probable residence of our future life, whether long or short. We did not proceed far along the sand under the rocks, among the fragments of which were thorny bushes, without picking up some dry branches and dead leaves; but being under the shadow of a high precipice standing directly south, (and therefore intercepting the sun's rays to a considerable distance, nearly from his rising, even until his setting, at this season of the year,) I carried some of my fuel to a place where the sun shone, then unscrewing the top of the spy-glass, took out the large lens, with which in a short time converging his rays, I ignited the leaves, and thus a fire was instantly kindled. My dear helpmate set to work plucking the fowls, while I removed the fire closer to the rock, into the shade, and, by the aid of plenty of dry sticks, made a large blaze there, on the embers of which the fowls were to be dressed. "We have no water," she said, "and I am indeed very thirsty." I did not know where to find water on board the brig, and therefore proposed to walk along under the rocks, and look for a spring. She did not like me to go out of her sight, fearing I should be surprised by savages, who might be somewhere about, although we had not seen any. This idea had never yet crossed my mind, but now it was suggested, I confess it made me very uneasy: but the apprehension regarded her, not myself. In consequence, we agreed to dress the fowls as fast as we could, and return on board to eat them, where, perhaps, I might obtain some water. To hasten this project, I stopped her in the process of plucking them, and taking my penknife from my pocket, contrived to skin them with great

despatch, and in half an hour they were both broiled. The poor dog, being half famished, ate up the liver and gizzards with great avidity ; while the cooking necessary to our stomachs, under our present feelings, seemed to go on but slowly. As soon, however, as we thought them eatable, I put them into the bag with the biscuit, and retraced our steps hastily to the brig, fearing every moment to be surprised by some of the natives.

On our return into the cabin, I was fortunate in finding water in a tea-kettle, which had slid into a corner to leeward, under some other things, without having been upset. This was a great boon in our present straits, and we drank of it greedily, and then partook of our proposed dinner with thankfulness.

My first attention was directed to repel any attack from the natives, and I lost no time in getting down the three muskets which had hung securely in their fastening. I knew where the captain kept the ball cartridges in his state-room, which, being on the weather side when the vessel struck upon the rocks, was not blocked up at the door. I tried the flints, and loaded the muskets, and placed them on the after-lockers in the cabin : with this preparation for our defence, I was at present satisfied.

We now set to work to put the wreck of furniture, and other things, in their places, which were heaped up in one corner of the cabin, close to our state-room door. I say we, for my delicate little Eliza put out all her strength to help me. We very soon accomplished our task ; and I was glad to find that there was little damage done to the things, so tossed together. Before evening, the cabin looked much as it used to do : and the vessel being in a perfectly safe and quiet inlet, we felt much comfort in the possession of so desirable an asylum.

We again went upon deck, to look around for the boat and our companions : but they were not to be seen. To have a more extended view, I went up the fore-rigging, and had not ascended far when I was enabled to see over the sandy beach, which seemed about half a mile broad, and I was delighted to behold an extensive lake or fine harbour, surrounded by land, immediately on the further side. Eliza had followed me to the fore-castle, to be my guardian angel, as I went on this, to her mind, perilous expedition. At the first moment of seeing over the sandy isthmus, I made some exclamation of surprise, and then endeavoured to explain what I saw. A confused idea crossed my mind that we were somewhere on the Spanish Main ; and, on coming down, I told her what I thought. " Well, be it as it may," said she, " we have felt that God is gracious, and we will rest entirely upon His providence." I

wished her to land again, as I had fire arms, saying, we would walk under the rocks, to the further side of the isthmus. "I will do so, if you wish it," she replied: "but I think it were better to defer it until the morning, and in the meantime we can do something for the poor goat that has broken its leg, and make some other arrangements here, for which there is much need." I instantly acquiesced, perceiving at once the reasonableness of the suggestion; for I had been impelled to make the proposal by some indescribable curiosity, and nothing more.

I got the poor goat upon deck, and bound up its broken leg in the best way I could; then, bringing up the other, gave them half a dozen plantains, which they ate eagerly. All our vegetable stock, brought from Kingston, had been put into the steerage in hampers: into this place there was a door from under the companion ladder, but there was also a small hatch over the steerage, which had been battened down during the gale, and I was obliged to remove it before I could make my way to anything below. Here were the sailors' berths, and chests, and a few yams and plantains, which they had provided to eat with their salt meat: they also kept a bag here for biscuits, and supplied it at their pleasure. Our former discovery of biscuit was nearly exhausted, but on finding this new store, we gave the remainder in our bag, which was almost dust, to the few fowls and ducks that had survived the storm: their feathers were now dry, and they looked quite cheery. The sun being set, the evening came on apace: we therefore retired to our cabin, closing the companion door after us. Hitherto we had been satisfied with occasional bursts of gratitude to our heavenly Father for His providential care of us; but now we went upon our knees, and with our whole souls rendered to Him the due sacrifice of praise and prayer.

We lay down in peace and thankfulness; but notwithstanding this happy frame of mind, our slumbers were disturbed by the noises of the preceding night yet ringing in our ears. We arose with the dawn, the cool freshness of which was truly delightful: a couple of oranges, with biscuit, was our breakfast, and, still finding water in the tea-kettle, we drank some of it, mixed with a little wine. "Now, my Eliza," said I, "will you venture on shore, and let us explore the other side of the isthmus?"—"Yes," she replied, "I will go cheerfully now." I took two of the muskets, and gave to her a boarding-pike to carry as a staff, and to have recourse to for defence, if necessary; and, with our faithful little dog, we descended at one step from the brig's side

to the rock. I shouldered both the muskets, and keeping up as yet the good old fashion of England, she took my right arm with her left, but holding in the other her spear-pointed staff.

We thus proceeded to cross the isthmus, close under the precipitous promontory ; when, after walking about two hundred yards, or rather more, I observed a chasm, or falling back of the rock, in the recess of which our eyes were delighted with the sight of many acacias and some other small trees. Having gained the summit of the sand-hills, we suddenly had a distinct view of the fine sheet of water beyond, with land on every side of it. The sea breeze was faint, and the water but gently stirring with the breeze. It was a charming scene ; we stopped a few minutes to gaze on it, then proceeded to gain the margin of the lake. The rocks continued stupendous, but less precipitous ; being wooded high up, more or less, with palmettos and some other small trees. When we came within about two hundred yards of the beach, they terminated abruptly, presenting a high front to the west ; opposite to which lay a low black rock, that stretched itself into the lake nearly one hundred yards ; and between these rocky opposites the sand of the isthmus seemed still to spread. When we came to this point, we looked round the face of the promontory that now appeared before us, and had the inexpressible delight to see at no great distance a spring of water, gushing forth in an ample stream clear as crystal. We instantly made towards it, and simultaneously thought of the Israelites in the desert, and we blessed their God and ours ; both of us feeling that the gracious words of His mercy were literally verified unto us, giving us "rivers of water in a dry place, and the shadow of a great rock in a weary land."

Fidele was the first to taste the pleasant stream : we quickly joined him, and with the palms of our hands partook of the cool and delicious water with great eagerness. This was a discovery that promised us lasting comfort : we took our seat on a piece of rock close to its source, and felt as if we never could tire in gazing on it as it flowed from its stony bed, running in a clear little stream among some trees that grew between it and the lake.

As we sat in a sort of ecstatic reverie, the dog barked : I seized one of the guns, which lay by me : Eliza looked earnestly at me, but with full self-possession : we were on our feet in a moment : she took up the other gun, holding it in one hand, with the boarding pike in the other, ready to give me either as occasion might require. Fidele continued to bark, keeping his

head towards the rock a little beyond us. We listened, but could hear nothing: I looked up and all around; nothing appeared. We fully expected a surprise from some of the natives: at last I heard a noise just above us; Fidele scrambled towards it; I cocked the gun—I feared a something,—a wild beast perhaps; I knew not what; we did not see our enemy. I had no share in the fight; Fidele killed him in an instant; I heard him squeak; but what he was, I had no idea. I clambered up into the brushwood, where the encounter had taken place, and there saw a large iguana; which, in superstitious times, might have been exhibited as a dragon. I drew him forth with our pike; and as we looked on him with much curiosity, the brave little dog wagged his tail, showing he sought that commendation which was and is ever due to valour; and we liberally bestowed it on him. I took up the iguana, for I had learned in Jamaica the creature was esteemed a great delicacy, eating like chicken.

Trifling as the incident may appear, our nerves had received a little shock during this adventure; but we again rested on the rock, and then returned by the way we came to our ship. I deposited the iguana; and after much persuasion, Eliza allowed me to go, accompanied by Fidele and a musket, back to the fountain for a supply of water: I did so, and quickly returned, without any accident. The loss of the gabbose during the hurricane we did not know how to remedy; we were afraid to light a fire on board, without a fire-place, lest we should burn the ship; and we felt unwilling to trust ourselves on shore to cook our victuals: but the last was the least dangerous alternative, and being armed, we resolved not to allow our late groundless panic to prevent us from adopting it. I made up a fit place of stones among the rocks, a little beyond the brig's bow, and there kindled a fire in the same way I had done on the day before; while my wife got out some tea and sugar, and the metal tea-pot, and a couple of tin mugs, that had resisted the smashing effects of the hurricane. I boiled the kettle, (first reserving two or three quarts of water for other purposes,) then roasted a couple of plantains, and in half an hour we sat down to the most comfortable repast I ever enjoyed. We were thankful to the Author of all bounty; which sense of gratitude to Him is not the least of His best gifts.

During my absence at the fire, Eliza had not neglected to dispense some of the water I had reserved amongst our thirsty ducks and fowls; the former of which were in great want of it; and as she had discovered the bread-locker nearly half full of

biscuit, and a bag in it, with Indian corn, that had been brought on board to feed the poultry with, she gave the poor things a good meal. Those which had been drowned were now becoming putrid; so that I thought it best to throw them overboard, and I did so. This was a foolish act, for it drew some sharks into the creek next day: they soon devoured the dead poultry, but continued to haunt us for a good while, to our terror, as by some accident we might possibly fall between the vessel's side and the rocks, some time or other in passing; and then their jaws would speedily become our executioners.

We sat below for a few hours, in the heat of the day, and took a survey of our situation: the discussion was too various to admit of being noted down here, but I proceeded to act upon the decisions we made. It appeared to me, that as the vessel had taken the ground fore and aft where she lay, there was no hazard of her sinking from any leak in the bottom; but, nevertheless, if the water were not pumped out, it would continue to rise within her to the level of the sea, and thereby spoil much of the cargo; to which we looked in a great degree for our future subsistence and comfort. I therefore fell to in the evening, and pumped for an hour; of which there was much need, for the water came up as fast as the pump would go. I resolved to pursue this every day, but instead of doing it in the evening, to make it my first occupation at break of day, when I was fresh, and the air cool. While I worked at the pump, my wife drew forth part of the fruits and vegetables from the steerage, and dried and aired them on the quarter-deck. I thought the empty coop a good place to put them in, and she arranged them there. The goats took care of themselves, as she was thus employed; even limpy had not lost her appetite from the fracture. One of the water-melons that had been bruised was set aside for our refreshment, which we found cool and pleasant; but we only indulged in part of it, and collecting the seeds with much care, reserved the remainder of its fruit for to-morrow. Not being accustomed to labour, we were sufficiently fatigued to remain quietly on deck until it was time to go to rest. The eventide is delightful in tropical climates: we sat on one of the hen-coops, until the stars appeared, enjoying the cool stillness of the air, and the varied prospect that surrounded us: we then retired to our devotions and to bed.

I arose with the dawn, and performed my task at the pump. I would gladly have bathed in the sea after it, to refresh myself; but I saw a couple of sharks, and I thought no more of the wished-for luxury. My kind helpmate did not slumber in

bed after I arose, but got up, and searching all the lockers, found where the saucepans were kept, and many other things, as the salt, pepper, butter, &c., &c., which had been placed there for present use. She also discovered the harness cask, with the salt beef and pork in it, for the ship's company: it had been hid from me in the steerage passage by the ship's awning, that was thrown over it. I now took the tea-kettle, also a large tin cooking vessel with an arched handle, and, accompanied by my two faithful companions, not forgetting a musket, marched to the fountain and brought back a supply of water. We soon got a tea breakfast, so congenial to our former habits.

It had been determined that one of our first objects should be to get some of the seeds of our fruits, and some of the roots, as our yams and coccos, into the ground, the late rains having rendered the soil favourable for their reception; but the spades, and shovels, and hoes were all among the cargo; and how to approach them I could not devise, with nothing but my own strength: to move the bulky casks, and other things that filled the hold of the brig, were an herculean task: they had been shipped in England, and were therefore under what was taken in at Jamaica; but being articles likely to suffer by pressure, on account of their shafts, I concluded they must be immediately below the lumber; however, there was nothing for it but to go to work with perseverance and a good will; so, after breakfast, I opened the main hatchway, and saw the boards and shingles stowed close up to the deck. I pulled out a great quantity of the shingles, throwing them on deck, and then got hold of some of the long planks, four of which I succeeded to hoist on deck. I placed these planks over the starboard gunwale of the brig; one end of each resting there, the other on the sandy beach, which was close to her side: along these planks I slid all the boards down upon the beach as fast as I could get them up; and at intervals amused myself by throwing the shingles (small pieces of wood used in the West Indies instead of slates) as far as I could beyond the boards let down by the slope. I worked hard till twelve o'clock, and was heartily tired.

My wife had kept up the fire on the rocks on the other side, and had made free with a shingle or two to help it: she had put some coccos on to boil, and a couple of plantains to roast, and so far had endeavoured to provide a dinner for us. I was pleased with her care and industry; "but we will eat the iguana, dear," said I; "it is very good."—"I do not think I could taste it," she replied; "it looks so hideous; yet, if you eat of it, I will certainly try to do so." I soon prepared the animal,

which was not much bigger than a rabbit, and, getting a saucepan out of the locker, cut the creature in pieces, and, mixing a little pepper, salt, butter, and flour into small balls, stewed it excellently. We sat down to our iguana and vegetables; and she, as well as myself, admired my unexpected talent at cookery, while we found the dish even exquisite. After our repast we retired below for a few hours; and, in talking over matters, I lamented not knowing where the water-casks had been deposited. My wife thought they must be in the hold, if there were any; and asked me if I did not recollect that a large one, filled with water, had stood on the deck, and which, no doubt, had been washed overboard in the hurricane; but probably, though the voyage was expected to be short, and many might not have been brought, yet some must be discovered after a search. I hoped so; for the fact is, I was desirous of putting my hand on water on board for our culinary purposes, without going for it across the isthmus, having so much other labour before me. In the afternoon I went down into the hold; and, having cleared away a considerable quantity of the lumber, I was enabled to discover what I wanted, and got at the water-casks; which, as Eliza suggested, were few, only two in number. I forced the bung out of one of them, and contrived to get the hand-pump into it; a great point gained, under our present circumstances. I pumped a bucket full of the water, and, bringing it up, poured some out for the poultry. As they hurried to drink, I was glad to observe, on reconnoitring them attentively, that they were rightly assorted,—one gallant cock, poor fellow, now but in shabby attire, with three hens, looking little better. There were also two or three drakes among the ducks; and I was pleased in having thus assured myself of a prospect of their multiplication when we could trust them on shore to enjoy their liberty. We regaled ourselves at even with the remainder of the water melon; and, as we had not yet entered upon a rigid economy of our delicacies, we boiled our kettle, and finished the day with tea.

Our rest this night was sound and refreshing; the noises of the storm had died away upon our ears; we had purchased sleep by the laborious exertions of the day, and were only awakened by the crowing of the cock.

This day was occupied much as the former—in pumping out the ship, and in getting the shingles and deals, and some small squared timber, out of the hold upon the beach. My dear wife reminded me that the next day would be the Sabbath, and as such we must keep it. I blessed God for the consecration of

that day, and thanked her for telling me of it, as I was not aware that the week had so nearly expired. We boiled a piece of salt beef and salt pork to serve us until Monday, and finished the day in thankfulness.

CHAPTER IV.

SUNDAY, 30th December.—We arose with the dawn, and both expressed an earnest desire to bathe in the sea, for we felt that such a bath would be not only grateful, but highly useful to us, our laborious occupation during the last four days requiring for us complete ablution; but we were deterred from plunging into the transparent wave, that so powerfully invited us, by having seen the sharks; and therefore contented ourselves, for the present, with a good washing.

The sun arose in splendid majesty, and for a few minutes shone resplendently into the cabin windows; but he had not risen half a degree above the horizon, before he was veiled by the high rocky island, which lay astern of us, distant about half a mile. After prayer, we went upon deck to enjoy the calm coolness of the morning: all was beauty and freshness around: we blessed God for the profusion of His bounties, and felt the situation in which His providence had placed us as the place of our rest: we thought upon the storm we had survived with adoring gratitude, lamenting the fate of our rash companions, who, trusting to their own might alone, had distrusted the compassion of the Almighty.

Eliza had brought the prayer-book upon deck, and, opening it, she read,—“O come, let us give thanks unto the Lord, for He is gracious. The sea roared, and the stormy winds lifted up the waves thereof: we were carried up as it were to heaven, and then down again into the deep: our souls melted within us. Then cried we unto thee, O Lord, and Thou didst deliver us out of our distress. Blessed be Thy name who didst not despise the prayer of Thy servants, but didst hear our cry and hast saved us. Thou didst send forth Thy commandment, and the windy storm ceased and was turned into a calm. Thou, Lord, hast made us glad through the operation of Thy hands, and we will triumph in Thy praise. Blessed be the Lord God, even the Lord God, who only doeth wondrous things, and blessed be the name of His Majesty for ever!” Then we both said, in the fulness of our hearts, Amen! Amen!—and throwing ourselves on the neck of each other, wept tears of joy and gratitude.

About the time the ascending sun looked over the rock upon the vessel's deck, the sea-breeze set in, which blowing into the cabin windows, rendered it more agreeable below than on deck. We therefore descended ; and after breakfast determined to show our respect to the day by dressing ourselves in better attire. The trunks were opened, and my beloved wife dressed herself as she would have done at Awbury on a Sunday ; and I followed her example ; we then sat down quietly, and I went through the morning service, she reading the lessons for the day. After this proper and consolatory exercise, we talked to each other about those dear friends we had left behind in England, and often with grateful tenderness reverted to the father of Eliza, to whom both of us were much indebted for the peace we now enjoyed ; being separated from all the gaieties of life, but having for our portion God and ourselves.

It being the winter solstice, or a few days after, and the sea-breeze blowing fresh, we did not find it unpleasantly hot upon deck ; for although it was now near to noon, the vessel was completely in shadow of the promontory. We therefore enjoyed ourselves sitting arm in arm on the quarter-deck, feeling an internal happiness that scarcely could have been anticipated in such a situation : it was that peace which the world cannot give nor take away, and with which the stranger intermeddleth not. At one o'clock we went below, and took a slight repast by way of dinner ; and, as soon as the high rock which overtowered our vessel extended its protecting shadow to some distance over the isthmus, my dear wife put on her gipsy hat, and we prepared to go on shore to take a walk. Yet we were somewhat afraid, although we had not seen any traces of natives nor other inhabitants ; neither had we heard the howlings of wild beasts : still we did not deem it prudent to venture without some defence. As it was Sunday, I did not choose to carry a gun ; so I bethought me to go to one of my trunks and take out my pistols, which I did, and fastened them to a belt made of a silk pocket handkerchief ; then taking a boarding-pike in my hand, and giving Eliza another, to serve at once for a pilgrim's staff and a weapon,—thus accoutred, with our faithful little dog, we stepped on shore.

I had observed a grove of cocoa-nut trees towards the centre of the isthmus, bearing about north of us ; or I should rather say I saw the tops of them, for the sand-banks appeared unusually high between them and the eastern beach. We now proposed to direct our steps to that place, and proceeded for some distance under shadow of the promontory, during which

it was very pleasant ; but after we emerged from that friendly shield, the heat became intense, which, adding to the disagreeableness of the deep loose sand getting into our shoes, disposed us to return. I, however, perceived we could avoid the latter inconvenience by edging down to the sea-side, which we did, and, by keeping close to the water's edge, found the footing firm and the walking pleasant. Thus feeling ourselves quite at ease along the margin of the beach, we often stopped to contemplate the reef on which the brig had struck ; and, observing now the surf break over it, we felt a renewed spirit of gratitude to God, who had delivered us from a watery grave.

After proceeding about half a mile, we picked up many beautiful shells, which were admirable for their high polish. I put them in my pocket one by one, as they presented themselves to us ; until finding myself rather heavily laden, I said, "Eliza, we will leave some for our next walk." My dear companion instantly comprehended the cause of my remark, and desired to share the burden : but it was not already one, although it would have soon become so, had we not ceased to yield to our desire of collecting these beauties of the ocean. By this amusement, and the frequent contemplation of objects around us, the evening had imperceptibly crept upon us, so that the sun was setting just as we reached the eminence behind which stood the grove of cocoa-nuts : from that point we had a full view of the bright orb of day, making his slow descent over the land that bounds the lake upon the west. The sight filled us with admiration : and, as his radiance streamed along the sky, we raised our hearts to Him who made so glorious a creature—so glorious, indeed, that men have worshipped him for his and their Creator, as if, dazzled by his beams, the light of their understanding had been put out, not to see that light or darkness, heaven or earth, all, are but creatures, the work of Thy hands, O God, self-existing, unseen by the eye of man, yet everywhere visible in Thy works, giving life and motion to all created things, and in whom and by whom we live, and move, and have our being.

We returned by the western beach, and, keeping close to the water's edge, walked with a good pace, and soon arrived at the point beyond which the gushing fountain pours out its refreshing water : and, it being now nearly dark, we could not stop to drink, but hastened across the isthmus, and got on board. After resting a little we took some wine and biscuit, and, being refreshed, gave prayer and praise to the Father of mercies.

Thus having spent our first Sabbath in the land of our solitude, we retired with repose of spirit to sleep.

Monday, 31st.—The dawn of the next day found me at the pump, which, after a quarter of an hour's work, began to throw out the water slowly, and to my great joy and relief, before half an hour had expired, it sucked, that is, no more water remained within its reach ; so that on ceasing to work it, the air rushed in from above. I now went into the hold, and searched about for the boxes that contained the spades, hoes, axes, &c., and at last found them stowed athwart-ships, close to the after bulk-head. I got a maul and large chisel from the carpenter's chest in the steerage, and forced open their lids. I took out a spade, a hatchet, a felling axe, and a couple of hoes ; then hastened to the cabin to show my dear wife the proofs of my success, and to inform her of a cessation from my morning's toil at the pump. She was alive to every incident that concerned me, and she expressed the pleasing emotion she felt by a kind word, and a kinder smile, when I showed her the spade, and told her I had cleared the vessel of the leakage. We now had breakfast ; after which I thought it right to cover up the main-hatchway loosely, not requiring to work any more at the cargo for the present. I had cleared away all the lumber amidships, but there was still a good deal more forward in the vessel. We cut up a pumpkin with a piece of pork, which I stewed together for our dinner. Then, as before, we took care of the pumpkin seeds ; and on all future occasions we never omitted to gather up the seeds of our fruits as we used them.

In the afternoon we went on shore to look about for spots of favourable ground to plant some of the seeds of the water-melon which we had eaten a few days ago, and also of the pumpkin we had just cut up, but of which at least one half yet remained, for it was very large. I put the hatchet into my belt, and, taking a musket and my spade in each hand, set forth, my guardian angel carrying her pike, while brisk Fidele led the way. I knew that the water-melon required much sun, but the pumpkin less : the former would only grow in hot climates ; the latter would come to perfection even in the south of England. I also knew that a sandy soil was favourable to both these plants. I therefore felt I should not seek long without finding proper situations for them ; but it must be on the other side of the isthmus, beyond the termination of the promontory, somewhere near the spring of water.

When we had advanced a couple of hundred yards under the precipitous rock, we came to that part which receded ; in

the recess of which some thorny acacias, and some other trees, were growing. As we stopped to look among them, the dog made his way through the thicket, and in a minute or two he began barking; when, to our startling surprise, we presently heard him answered, we thought, by some other dog, accompanied by strange and loud noises from the same quarter; but as they appeared rather at a distance, we took courage, and called Fidele to us. We repeated our call over and over again, yet he did not come, but continued to bark. I then, by the still corresponding sound, guessed it to be an echo, and exclaimed to my wife, "O! he has got another iguana, I suppose." I then observed to her, "There must be a passage through the thicket to some distance, for his barking seems a great way off." While we were talking, his uproarious little voice drew nearer, and immediately out brushed an iguana, with his main erect, dragging his long tail after him like a great snake attached to his posteriors; looking more ugly, if not more horrible, than any other creature in the world. Fidele was soon after him, and killed him, without any fight, after a run of twenty or thirty yards. I praised our little dog, and patted him; and left the iguana where he lay, for the present. "I should like to penetrate through this thicket," I exclaimed: "there may be some issue to the other side of the promontory." I returned instantly on board, for a table knife, which I sharpened on a stone; and with it and a hatchet, I cleared a narrow path forward; throwing the small trunks and branches, I had occasion to cut away, out upon the sand. After working about two hours, I advanced through the opening I had made, and found myself close to the mouth of a cavern, into which I looked; but instead of being a dark recess, as such places generally are, I saw a light shining in to it, as if from above, with considerable brilliancy. While cutting away the trees, my wife had remained without the thicket, and kept Fidele by her side; I now called to her to come forward; and with some difficulty (owing to the inconvenience of her English dress) she got through the thorn-beset avenue. I took her hand, and we stepped into the cavern together: the mouth appeared as large as a small gateway; and thence we saw the sun's rays coming in from an opening opposite, about three or four feet in diameter, and, perhaps, thirty feet above us. By this opening at the back of the cave, it was clear that the further end of the cavern was close to the further side of the promontory, at least at this point. We now gazed around us, and saw we were in an extensive natural excavation; the floor of which was

covered by the dung of birds ; the summit thickly hung with pendulous stalactites ; and the sides incrustated with shelving masses and nodules of the same. We were now sure the noises we had heard, when our dog barked, was that bark reverberated, and, perhaps, the flight of birds making their escape through the natural window above. We lingered and looked about a little, but without being able to make any further observations worth notice ; and so we squeezed our way back through the slender avenue I had made in the brushwood, being a distance of nearly thirty yards.

We now proceeded round the west end of the promontory to the spring, and crossed over its little run of water, by stepping on some small fragments of rock in its bed, without even wetting our shoes. The ground was clear of wood for a few yards, but beyond were large trees, free from underwood. We walked under this umbrageous foliage towards the lake for the space of a hundred yards ; which brought us out on the south side of the rock's point, that separated this wooded region from the sandy isthmus : we observed that this point, which extended a considerable distance into the lake, was a bare rock ; and that there was nothing but sand, mixed with a little earth, between it and the foot of the promontory whence the spring gushed. Having ascertained these objects, we retraced our steps ; and I fixed upon a piece of ground between the spring and the southern part of the rock, clear of the shade of trees, for putting in the seeds. On this spot there were reeds, and grasses, and some other slender plants growing ; and, from the late rain and contiguity to the little brook, they were somewhat rank—I should say, with more propriety of diction, luxuriant. I fell to work with my spade, and turned up the earth here and there in patches of about a yard square ; and put a couple of melon seeds into some, and as many pumpkin seeds into others. As my sowing finished, the sun was setting, which warned us to return ; but just at this moment our attention was arrested by the leaping of fish all round the point. Some appeared so near us, I could see they were mullet, such as we had eaten in Jamaica at Mr Dickinson's table, who then told us a curious fact,—that these fish are often enticed to spring into the fisherman's boats, attracted by his carrying a lighted torch during his night work. We now saw them leaping, probably towards the last rays of the sun. That we had no boat to attempt catching any of them caused me a little regret, and I expressed it to Eliza. "Are we not fed from heaven ?" she replied ; "my Edward, why would you tempt God ? Remember

the Israelites and the quails." I deserved the reproof. "Thank you, my own better part," said I; "the heart is ever ready to turn against Heaven with impious gratitude." As we talked we moved homeward, for as yet our vessel was our home: we took a look at the thicket, and passed a reflection or two on the cavern in our way; while we stopped for a minute there, Fidele put us in mind of the iguana, by running to the spot where it lay, and kept guard over his prize until I came and took it up. I confess I was outrageously hungry after the exertions of the day, and as soon as we got on board I demolished all the stew that had been left at dinner, while my wife prepared our little board for tea. Gentlefolk often wonder how servants and other working people can eat so much; if I had ever entertained such a wonder, it was now no longer to me a mystery. While at tea, among other subjects now of high concern to us, that of some unsuitable parts of our dress came under consideration: the most pressing occasion for remedy was the sand filling our shoes. After some deliberation it was resolved to make canvas gaiters, to come half-way up the leg, and be sewed on to our shoes, of which we had a good stock; besides there being a great supply on board, part of the investment of the cargo. I was to substitute a sailor's jacket for my flapping coat, and Eliza a short bed-gown for her long wide dress. We finished the day by putting the cabin in order; and, having said our prayers, retired to rest.

Tuesday, 1st January, 1734.—Early in the morning I set about cutting away pieces of the torn sails, some of which were hanging about the fore-rigging. I foresaw there would be much use for all the pieces of canvas I could collect; but my present object was a slip for our boots; and, in getting that, I improved the opportunity to obtain some very large pieces, indeed as much as I could carry at three times, which I brought all aft, and laid on the quarter deck. After breakfast we shaped out our boot legs; I say we, because it required our united ingenuity to accomplish it. I got some sewing twine from the sail-maker's box, also a couple of his needles, and his palm (a sort of thimble that fits by a strap to the palm of the hand, and which, by that way, gives more power to push the huge needle through the canvas). With this palm I undertook to sew the canvas gaiters on to the shoes, if my wife would previously run them up stoutly behind with one of her largest needles and some strong thread. She immediately set about her part of the task, and, after sitting by her a little while to see the work fairly begun, I proposed taking the goats on shore,

and placing them in the cavern, with a few plantains and some Indian corn, to use them to the spot. As they were very tame, I did not think it probable they would stray away, and as there was a good deal of herbage about the thicket, they would soon learn to subsist themselves, without drawing further on our little imported stock of grain. We now thought my pistols security enough ; I put them in my belt, leaving the guns on board, and having but a short distance to go, I concluded my dear companion would remain on board, but she preferred accompanying me, and taking her station with her work under the shadow of the rock, while I was bringing the goats from the brig to the cavern. I took the lame animal up in my arms, and brought her on shore : the other jumped after me. I then led the lame one along by the horns, and when we arrived at the spot where my wife and her little dog had disposed themselves, they got up and joined the party.

As soon as we entered the avenue of the thicket the goats begun to browse ; however, I drove them forward into the cave, where their bleating gave us an opportunity of seeing a great many pigeons take wing from the sides of the cavern, and fly out at its aperture on the opposite side. Although the dung of the birds was thickly spread on the floor, particularly towards the sides, yet the floor of the cave, and every part of it, appeared quite dry. We found it cool and airy, and pronounced it no bad lodgings for shipwrecked persons in such a climate.

When we left the cave, the goats followed us out of it, but they stayed behind in the thicket to browse : observing this, and seeing there was plenty of herbage, we did not think it necessary to bring them any more provisions from the ship. Having thus begun to move our live stock, our next essay was to transplant the cock and hens to the same place, and put food and water for them in the cave, it being clear they would never breed in the coop : with respect to the ducks, we determined to keep them where they were for the present, lest they might take to the water and swim away. Having decided on these weighty matters in our little commonwealth, we retraced our steps to the vessel, and, putting the four fowls in a bag, and some bruised corn in another, returned to the cave, where, after throwing some of the corn on the floor, we let them out, and were glad to see them picking up the corn without any signs of fear, or even disturbance. This was a bold measure, and of so much importance to us in its consequences that we were not ashamed to ask of God His blessing upon this, as well as every other thing we undertook. I then brought some water

in a bucket, that they might not be induced to stray away to seek for drink. Our goats were enjoying themselves among the bushes ; and we left this little colony with some little anxiety, notwithstanding the security of their situation.

We returned on board, and refreshed ourselves with a couple of the oranges, which we found fully ripe and delicious, but now took care of the seeds which we had neglected to do when we ate them before, at a time when we were less collected in mind. My wife then set to work in earnest on the gaiters, and I made up the fire on shore, to prepare our dinner. When the provisions were done, I brought them on board. By that time she had completed one pair of our sand defences ; we therefore sat down comfortably to our fare, and she now made no scruple of eating the iguana, but acknowledged it to be a great delicacy. On this occasion, it being new-year's day, we treated ourselves to a glass of wine ; having discovered not a few bottles, perfectly safe, in one of the after-lockers. This little feast being finished, we sat down to resume our work together, with great delight. She begun upon the other pair of legs ; while I, with the sail-maker's palm and some of his twine, got on cleverly, closing in the tops of her shoes with the canvas gaiters she had prepared. "Edward," said she, after a short pause between us ; "as you have frequent occasion to go to and fro from the vessel to the other side of the isthmus, and you know I am never happy when you are out of my sight, could you not contrive a temporary tent on the ridge of the isthmus, whence I could always see you when on these excursions ? And besides, it would be a place to keep an eye over our goats and poultry ; and the cave being near, which we thought so pleasant, we might take some useful things there, and occasionally make our fire, and dine. We should not then be far from the spring ; and if you were at work either at the vessel or by the spring, we should always be sufficiently near both, and you would not have far to come to rest yourself." I thought the arrangement good, and we decided to put it in execution on the morrow.

Thus by degrees we felt our wants, and had reason to be thankful that it was within our power gradually to provide for them : we were not insensible to the mercy and bounty of our heavenly Father : how could we be so ? for it was but one week to that day since we hung in awful jeopardy on the reef, amidst thunder and lightning, and a fierce tempest of wind with an overwhelming sea. All these things were commented on during our work : and one reflection occurred to both

which seemed very unaccountable ; viz., that those seven days appeared, on retrospection, like so many months ; while some weeks in our lives had passed away, which on looking back to the day week, for instance from one Sunday to another, had seemed but a point in time. But this last week, although the minutes and hours sped quickly by, yet from the multitude of the objects, and the important events it had produced, appeared to have embraced even a year's duration.

We sat close at our work until nearly sunset, and then went ashore to visit our live stock at the cave. We found them all within : the goats lying on the floor, at some little distance from its mouth ; the poultry perched up on one of the stalactitic ledges about three feet above them. The interior of the cave was still quite light, which allowed us to see some bluish-coloured pigeons on the lower ledge of the window aperture. They did not fly on our coming in, and we took care not to make any noise to scare them. I had brought the kettles with me for a supply from the spring, and proceeded there, for the water on board was a very unpleasant beverage. We deposited our vessels at the fountain : and now, having little apprehension of wild beasts or savages, arm in arm, penetrated a little further into the wooded region : we proceeded about half a mile, passing several palm trees, which I was glad to see, and at last came to an immense silk cotton tree,—a tree such as we had seen in Jamaica, at Mr Dickinson's penn ; and which, in magnitude, reminded us of our native elm, bringing back recollections dear to our minds. At this place the ground appeared clear for a quarter of a mile, with the exception of some Indian figs and aloes here and there : beyond which, the trees spread again in great luxuriance ; the mountain cabbage palm being among them. The clear ground seemed to be rocky, the cause, no doubt, that large trees did not grow on it. We stood awhile under the cotton tree, and looked upon the open space, having the lake before us, with some notions of its eligibility for a permanent dwelling. Pleased with this discovery, we returned, and on our way again saw the mullet leaping about the point. We filled our kettles with the cool and clear water, and soon found ourselves safe on board, to close the evening as usual with a light repast, prayers, and rest.

Wednesday, 2d.—In the morning I was cheered by the crowing of the cock on shore, to whom I soon made a visit, by carrying some of the planks up to the intended site of the tent, to lay over the sand for a floor. While thus employed, it struck me, that, having plenty of them, it would be as well,

and better, to construct the tent of planks entirely, rather than to erect uprights, and cover them with the ship's awning ; which I had first intended, reflecting that we might yet have more storms of wind and rain at this season of the year. I repeated my idea to my Eliza at breakfast, who approved it, but with this observation, that she feared my plan would be too laborious for my strength. During the hot noon I resumed my task at the boots, and by dinner time had closed in the second pair ; then after a new ablution of our feet from the sand (of which hitherto we never had been free), we put on the guards, and our cold dinner being despatched, I set to my carrying labour again. My anxious wife wanted to assist me ; but I told her that was far beyond the power of her tender frame ; and desired her to go and sit under the shade of the promontory, upon the boards I had already carried there, and cheer me with her presence. She took a couple of plantains for the goats, and some more corn for the fowls ; and I was pleased to see the goats, who were browsing round the exterior of the thicket, come to her and eat the plantains from her hand.

I marked out a spot for the tent, about forty feet clear of the steep side of the promontory, and twelve or fourteen feet beyond the cave and its avenue. I wished to erect the shed in the simplest way possible, and with as few nails or carpentry as might be practicable, intending it for only a temporary purpose ; but as the timber must be carried from the beach, and placed somewhere in a mass, it might as well be disposed of in this form as in any other. The planks I used were twelve feet long, and twelve inches broad, and two inches thick. I levelled rather more than twelve feet square of the ridge, and laid on twelve planks side by side ; which, being done, formed a square of twelve feet. I then crossed the ends of these planks with others ; which were again crossed, and so on after the manner of making the log-houses in America. I contrived the door, which was made opposite to the rock, by sawing some of the planks in two, cutting a bit off from each, the use for which will instantly appear, and placing these half-planks instead of whole ones on either side, supported by upright planks for doorposts, the little cut-off pieces were placed between the ends of the half-planks, to keep them duly asunder ; and in this way I made the windows also. As the planks were two inches thick, the building at the sides (independent of the door and of the windows, which were small,) was an alternation

of two inches of plank and two inches of air ; but the corners were solid ; and the walls being a foot thick, had the appearance of a solid mass, unless when you looked in a straight line between the planks. The structure, when finished, was ten feet square within the walls, and eight feet high. The roof was flat, made by a covering of the planks. It took nearly two hundred planks to construct this small building ; and it cost me the labour of four hours every day for a week. I have found some difficulty in describing this wooden palace, for such it was to us ; and, to avoid greater obscurity in the picture, I have departed from my diary way of writing, as far as regards it : but perhaps, after all, the description I have given may not convey a correct notion of what is intended to be portrayed ; but they who have seen a log-house in America will easily comprehend my meaning. I shall now return to the details of the day on which I began our plank palace, or shed, or tent, or whatever you would like to call it. After having cleared the spot, and laid the foundation planks, the evening closed in, and we retired to our vessel, and to rest.

Thursday, 3d.—I took the dawn of the morning for two hours' work at the plank house ; and, being now in sight, my wife contentedly remained on board : she employed herself in getting up the shaddocks, and oranges, and limes, and pine-apples with the vegetable roots, to air upon deck : they were yet all in good preservation, excepting one pine-apple, which was beginning to decay, from having been bruised and over-ripe. The whole store I found spread upon deck when I returned from my morning's work. The sight was glorious : I saw future trees, bearing delicious fruit, hid in the precious heap. I blessed God for His providence, in the provision He had thus made for man,—“the herb bearing seed,” to be perpetuated for his use. We did not keep the ripe pine-apple for dessert, as great people do, but we ate it for breakfast with our tea and biscuit : however, before it was cut, I twisted the top out of it very gradually, so as to bring with it a deep cone of fibres ; having learned at Jamaica that the top of the pine-apple so taken out would grow, and become prolific. After breakfast we trudged over the isthmus to the spring, to plant the pine-top near to the melons ; and I took a hoe in my hand as well as the spade, and hoed up the ground all round the seeds I had sown, so that the grass and weeds might be scorched, if not destroyed, by the sun. I then

chose a spot, far from any shade, in which to plant the pine-top; and, having done so, placed some split shingles round it for security. The day was then at the hottest, and we therefore determined to make another excursion into the wooded region; but we could not pass the fountain without stopping to drink; and our little faithful companion seemed to take equal pleasure in lapping the clear water, nay, even lying down in the stream, to enjoy its coolness in every limb. We delighted in seeing his delight; yet rather envied him a luxury, which hitherto fear of the sharks had compelled us to deny to ourselves. "How much I should like to bathe," exclaimed Eliza, as Fidele rolled and gladdened in the water: "I wish there were no sharks," continued she; "how comfortable it would be to us, could we refresh ourselves every morning in the sea."—"I think ~~my~~ love," said I, "that I could stoccado in a place from the sea with staves, large enough to afford you that enjoyment without danger. When your wooden tent is finished, I will attempt the bath."—"My dear Edward," she sweetly replied, "you never lose an opportunity of showing me the immeasurable kindness of my husband." I took her by the hand, and pressed it to my lips, but my heart was too full to speak. I gently raised her from the stone on which we had sat down, near the stream-head, and turned together into the wood. We proceeded through the welcome shade, till we arrived at the head of the dell, close under the silk cotton tree. During our walk we saw several birds, but observed that none of them sung. There was, however, a dove in the cotton tree, which attracted our attention by her plaintive note; and, on looking down on the ground before us, we perceived several other doves pecking happily about, but they fled at our approach. We also heard the screams of paroquets in the woods beyond; but they were indistinct; therefore must be distant. We now again surveyed this place with a wistful kind of inspection; and the more we contemplated it, the more we became satisfied that it might be an eligible spot for our permanent residence. We thought we discovered ground enough, in a little dell between the great tree and the lake, for our cultivation, though there were parts beyond us barren of soil and rocky. The situation would be near enough to the spring and to the ship, for the supplies we should require from those sources: and withal, it seemed to be secure and sequestered.

On our return, I lodged the spade and hoe in the cave; and

we were pleased to see our goats and fowls well and contented. We threw out some more bruised corn from the bag that we had lodged there; and could not help remarking, that either the fowls had acquired extraordinary appetites, or that the goats had helped them off with the corn thrown out yesterday. We got on board about two o'clock, and made a cold dinner on salt beef and roasted yams.

As we had now given up all hope of ever seeing our captain and his crew again, I thought there would be no indelicacy in rumaging the captain's cabin, if not his chest; and there I found his quadrant, a spare compass, (the one on deck had been demolished, with the binnacle, by the hurricane,) a case of hollands, a little empty keg called a canteen, made to contain about two quarts, with a string to sling it over the shoulder, and a mouth-piece, with a cork, so that a person could drink out of the keg when the cork was withdrawn. I also found several other desirable things, among which was a large box of Havannah cigars. Of all these acquisitions, the keg-canteen presented itself as most immediately important. "This will be a little fountain in the wilderness to us, my Eliza," said I, "when we go to visit the cocoa-nut grove; or, perhaps, when we venture to explore beyond the northern extremity of the sandy isthmus." She smiled in the way she always did when she saw anything particularly pleased me; and then assisted me in transporting the lighter parts of our bedding upon deck to air. I then left her to arrange our several just discovered comforts; and, stepping on shore again, employed myself for two hours at the plank house. Before evening closed, I had resumed my seat by her dear side; and night found us, as usual, grateful and happy.

Friday, 4th.—On going upon deck at daylight, I saw a large turtle, apparently asleep, close under the stern of the brig. This was the first turtle I had seen excepting at the turtle-market in Jamaica. I looked earnestly at the creature, feeling a strong desire to attempt taking such a prize; but I could not swim, and I had no boat, nor any means of getting at it. I was cogitating on the possibility of bestriding a plank, and, with a shingle for a paddle, making an essay, with a coil of very small rope, to secure it by one of the fins; but while I thus planned, it began to move, and come in towards the beach. I then went down, and brought Eliza on deck to see it; but first shut in Fidele below for fear he might bark and frighten

the turtle. We watched it approach the beach, on which it clambered up a little way with some difficulty ; and after it had rested awhile, we perceived it begin to scrape a hole with one of its fore fins. I suspected it was going to deposit eggs there, and I was right: my intended prize had not got above a couple of yards beyond the water, and I feared it might yet escape me. I looked well about to see if there were any sharks in sight ; and finding the coast clear, after some remonstrance from my dear wife, manfully set about the achievement. I landed on the rocks, taking a small piece of rope in my hand, with a noose at one end, and crouching down under the bank and the vessel's bows, came round on the other side unobserved, and got between the turtle and the water. It allowed me to draw near without its making any movement, it being at that moment in the act of depositing its eggs. I slipped the noose over one of its fore fins, and then it instantly started back, and soon made a violent effort, by which it would have dragged me, with itself, into the sea, had I not fortunately leaped to the side opposite to the fin round which the noose was drawn, and just as the creature reached the water's edge, by strongly jerking the rope, I turned it over on its back. I was then its master ; but it struggled resolutely to recover its position. I then sat down deliberately on its belly, and, in spite of all its flapping, kept it on its back. My wife, who is ever my helpmate, was quickly at my side to give every assistance in her power. I despatched her to bring a longer and stronger rope from the vessel, which she did ; and having secured it to the other fin, I desired her to take it and fasten it round as many of the planks and pieces of timber which lay on the beach as she could. She accomplished this very well ; and I recommenced my exploit by trying to haul our captive up the bank : but it proved too heavy ; and, in my making the attempt, it recovered its position from the back, and succeeded in dragging down the planks a few feet. It was now close to the water. I left it, and ran up to the planks, heaping one upon another over the rope, until I opposed a force sufficient to again hold the turtle. I thought it would be best now to kill it ; but I no sooner decided so, than it drew in its head (the neck of which is the only vulnerable part), and I could not venture a stroke. The idea of wounding or maiming the creature, without killing it, was revolting to my feelings. I knew it was now safe, and I therefore had time to go systema-

tically to work. I got a double-block purchase from the ship, and making a rope fast round all the timber on shore, I fixed one end of the purchase on the bight of that rope, and the other to the rope fixed to the fin; and, although the turtle seemed to be quite two hundredweight, I boused it up high and dry some yards upon the beach in less than half an hour. I had now secured my prize; but what was to be done with it? We surveyed it some time silently; "I do not like that you should kill the poor animal," said my kind-hearted Eliza; "we have provision enough, and we can subsist very well without taking its life."—"We will discuss that, dearest," said I, "by and by; now let us go on board and get some breakfast, for I am heartily fatigued." At breakfast we talked the matter over. She pleaded sweetly for the poor thing, and I could not but respect the sentiment; yet, although we had indeed plenty of food, it was not of the kind most wholesome to subsist entirely upon; our health required fresh provisions; and we could not expect Fidele would bring us an iguana every day; nor durst we think of deriving any help from the live stock for some time to come—they must breed, and the young ones grow. I urged all these practical arguments against her tender persuasions; and, at last, after a few moments' silence, she said, "Well, then, I suppose it ought to be killed; but, Edward, I have my doubts about your doing it."—"O yes," answered I, "I will see to that presently." I went to find a large dinner knife; and having sharpened it well, for the purpose of cutting off its head, left my wife on board, and proceeded resolutely to the place where the turtle lay. When I tucked up my shirt sleeves, to prevent the blood from staining them, and brandished the knife, as the creature's head lay stretched forth from its shell, I felt so like an assassin about to commit his first crime, that nature recoiled within me: my hand trembled, my blood crept, and a cold dampness came out on my forehead, and in the palms of my hands. I could not have cut off the head of the poor animal, at that moment, for the universe: a guilty shame seemed to hang over me; and after a little contention with it, I retraced my steps to the vessel. Eliza never saw me look as I then did—no doubt like a thief taken in the act; or perhaps not unlike a condemned criminal. "You repent then, Edward, I see," said she, "having killed the poor beast?"—"No, my blessed angel," I replied, putting down

the knife, "I could not do it! I never took the life of anything in such a way : the best feelings of my nature interposed, and thy kind spirit! We will let the creature go." She took me at my word; and, with Fidele, we hastened to the beach, unbound the noose, and gladly watched the poor turtle make its way, though with fear and precipitation, into the sea. "Now, my honoured husband," said she, "you are doubly dear to me! God will bless you for this act of forbearance."—"Indeed, indeed," I replied, "I feel equally guilty as if I had killed it: I had every inclination to do so."—"Yes," she replied, "it was reason that prompted you to kill it, but feeling forbade you: it is well for once that feeling has been right; for most frequently reason is the just judge, and feeling the offender." We contemplated our released prisoner, until it was nearly out of sight; and then returned on board, with a delight at heart which could not have been imparted by the finest turtle feast in the universe.

Although fatigued, I resolved to do penance for my iniquity, and fell to my task of carrying the planks as usual. By our dining time I was fairly done up, but, happily, had not worked away my appetite: so, after making a good salt-beef dinner, sat down quietly for a couple of hours to rest myself. Meanwhile, my Eliza wished to make me a little amends for all my lost trouble about the turtle (for she secretly believed I had spared it on her account), and, while I was reposing on the lockers abaft, she prepared me a dessert with some wine, and, with a blissful look, and the kindest accent, she woke me from a slight slumber into which I had fallen, to come and partake of the treat she had provided. I was charmed by the messenger and the message, and we sat down, enjoying the delicious fruit and refreshing beverage with feelings that might be envied by the richest in dear old England. In the cool of the evening, I proposed that we should transfer a few more of our creatures from our ark to the shore; and begin with a duck and a drake, to locate them (though at a risk) with our fowls. They were speedily put from the coop into a bag for the purpose, which my Eliza undertook to execute. And while I was pursuing my afternoon's task at the plank-house, she came occasionally out of the thicket to tell me all our little colony was safe, and that when she threw corn on the floor of the cave, four or five pigeons flew down and fed with the poultry. This explained the mystery of the fowls' great appetites. She had taken the rind of a shaddock with her to give to the goats, which, although very bitter, they eat greedily from her hand,

outside the thicket; they had followed her from the interior. I was pleased to see she was delighted in her occupation, surveying her dumb companions with so much satisfaction and complacency. As evening closed in, I was too tired to propose a walk; we therefore retired on board, and, at the usual hour, betook ourselves to rest.

Saturday, 5th.—In the morning early I went down to the beach, where the scene with the turtle had taken place, to look for some of the eggs. They had all been crushed in the conflict, except four, and these I brought on board: they seemed filled with yolk, covered by a semitransparent skin. I presented them to my wife, who immediately decided on making a pudding for dinner, there being plenty of flour and raisins in our ship's store. I liked her proposal, and did justice to the dear old English dish when it was set before us. Meanwhile, I had employed myself in some necessary arrangements on board, until the afternoon again called me forth to my building labours, when she and Fidele, as before, amused themselves at the thicket while I worked. After I had done for the day, we went with our kettles to the spring for water, the morrow being the Sabbath, and observing something near the shore, to the northward of the black rock, where the receding beach makes a little inlet, we walked down, and perceived a large fish, about the size of a cod, close in, pursuing some small fry. I instantly caught the boarding pike from my wife's hand (which she always carried when on our rambles), and, in the same instant, transfixed the fish with it between the shoulders, and turned it out of the water upon the sand in a moment; we both rejoiced at our good fortune, and, pushing the pike through the gills, I carried it over my shoulder in triumph. We took up the kettles of water in our delighted march back to the vessel, Fidele leaping gaily after us, and laid our prize down on the deck. It seemed something like a cod-fish, yet was certainly a different fish; however, I had no doubt of its being good for food. While thus examining it, I could not help observing to my wife, "How is it, dear Eliza, that we have killed this fish without any compunction? nay, on the contrary, rejoice in the achievement? and yet we could not find in our hearts to take the life of the turtle!"—"I do not know," replied she; "but surely there are nice points of feeling which regulate our conduct in a way we cannot always detect or explain. I think the one looked so like a deliberate murder, that our hearts recoiled at the contemplation of the act."—"I believe," rejoined I, "you have solved the difficulty, for really, as far as

the fish and the turtle are concerned, the last had as much right to his life and liberty as the first." Now arose a little hesitation about cooking it on the morrow, it being Sunday; but, as the fish would not keep in this climate for two days, and as our dear friends in England did not demur about preparing their roast beef on that day, we thought we should not do very wrong to boil our fish on the Sabbath, under existing circumstances.

Sunday, 6th.—We performed our ablutions with the rising sun, and went to prayer. It was the Lord's day, and we desired to dedicate it to Him as perfectly as creatures in the body could prevail on themselves to do; we also liked to honour it a little in our appearance by putting on better apparel, which we did; but our canvas-legged boots could not, without inconvenience to our comfort, yield place again to shoes and large buckles. I, however, put on a coat; and Eliza gave a graceful appearance to the short dimity bed-gown she wore, by throwing a long shawl scarf over one shoulder, which was passed round the waist, with the ends hanging down a little before. She remarked it were in vain to endeavour at saving her complexion in this climate; and, finding the sides of the hat in her way among the trees and bushes, she had made up a turban with some muslin and a strip of red bunting, which gave her quite an Asiatic cast. Thus habited, after breakfast we visited our colony at the cave, and returned to our Sabbath morning devotions, by reading the service of the church. In the second lesson we were struck with the truth and simplicity of our blessed Saviour's words, "The kingdom of heaven cometh not by observation; it is in every man's breast."—"Yes, my dear Edward," said she, "that is when our spirit bears witness with His Spirit, that we are the children of God." Our devotions being finished, I proceeded to boil our fish, my scruples of conscience having been laid at rest on the subject. Our prize was large enough to dine a dozen; and I believe a dozen eat of it; Fidele played his part, and the remainder was given to the ducks in the coop, who eat it greedily. Seeing the ducks gobble up the fish, reminded me of having heard that poultry on shipboard often become sick and die for want of a little animal food; it being true that both ducks and fowls devour snails and worms, and all pieces of any animal substance they can find, when at their liberty.

In the afternoon we proposed a long walk to the southern extremity of the isthmus, if we could accomplish it; so, slinging the captain's canteen over my shoulder, and placing my

pistols in my belt, with my pike in my hand, and my wife with hers, followed by Fidele, we first proceeded to the fountain to fill the canteen with water, and then shaped our course along the western side of the isthmus by the side of the lake. Thanks to the security of our canvas gaiters, we got on without being incommoded by sand in our shoes; and, as we did not here see any shells to arrest our attention, we went forward without interruption. Finding ourselves soon parallel with the cocoa-nut grove, we turned up from the beach to take a second view of it. The trees were lofty, and many thickly hung with fruit. Some of the nuts lay among the sand, a few of which had burst in the outer shell; and showed a vigorous shoot coming forth from a small aperture at one end of the solid nut. "I will collect some of these another day," said I, "to plant at our end of the isthmus; and then I shall endeavour to get you a few of the young nuts from the tree; for we must not eat any of the old ones, their kernels being hard and indigestible." Looking round me, I observed that, by the process of time on the wild vegetation, the soil had become pretty good about the cocoa-nut grove; so we decided on putting in some of our seeds there in a day or two. We again descended to the beach, and bent our course observingly along to the northward, skirting the sandy isthmus on the west. Not far from its termination we arrived at a low sandy point, to the right of which, as we stood on it, with our faces to the lake, was a small bay, at the bottom of which rose a steep rock, projecting into the water, with a bold front directly opposite to us. The west side of this bay curved out also into a rocky point at the extremity, while its gradual slope, beautifully wooded down to the water's edge, rose somewhat abruptly at a little distance from the shore, exhibiting from thence a thick forest, covering the lofty hills that formed the remote back ground. We stood awhile admiring this new scenery, rendered more interesting by the evolutions of a flock of sea-gulls (those inhabitants of every sea!) in pursuit of the small fish, leaping and sparkling in the bay even close to the beach. It was but a short walk to the bold rock in the bosom of the bay; and we proceeded to it, much amused with Fidele trying to catch the sprats or anchovies, or whatever they were, that swarmed upon the coast. We soon reached the rock, which appeared to be forty or fifty feet high, but, as it projected perpendicularly into deep water, there was no passing it, so we sat down upon a large stone near its base, glad to rest ourselves. When a little cooled from our exercise, we took a draught of water from our

canteen, which we found grateful and refreshing. Our eyes now were instantly arrested by our own noble promontory, which stood right over against us, distant about three miles to the south. We both exclaimed at once, "What a magnificent object it is!" The loftiest summit, immediately over our vessel, appeared to be at least three hundred or four hundred feet high, while the lower part to the westward, where the cave is situated, looked like a rugged chasm. Beyond that, further again to the west, the cliff rose in a conical form to at least two hundred and fifty feet. The highest summit seemed entirely naked of trees. But this hill was wooded to the top, and, by its figure and verdure, associated with the image of the cool spring at its foot, and the commanding aspect of its more barren neighbour, altogether presented a picture of great grandeur and beauty.

After resting a reasonable time, we determined to cross the isthmus (and return by the eastern beach), which extended about half a mile to a projecting low rocky point—the very point on which the brig nearly struck, soon after her release from the reef! We recognised it by its relative situation to the reef beyond it; and then called to mind that we had seen a rivulet on what was then its further side. When recommencing our walk, we observed that the sand in our immediate direction produced some vegetation; and that further back to the northward there were bushes and then trees. We kept on the edge of the fertile ground, having found our steps impeded by the shrubs and other plants; and in about a quarter of an hour we were on the eastern side of the isthmus, having had a beautiful sylvan bank all the way on our left. On surveying the spot, I could not but reflect how fit a place it was for such seeds as required a full tropical sun free from all shade, and made the remark to my wife. "That may be, dear Edward!" replied she, anxiously, "but you have only one pair of hands, and have already chalked out so much work for yourself, that I really am afraid you will fall sick from fatigue. I wish," added she, tenderly pressing my arm, "I had never thought of the tent on the ridge! making it is so very laborious, and takes up so much time which might be employed in the seeds, that I think you had better desist from finishing it for the present." I thanked her affectionately for her solicitude; but told her I did not like vacillating, and that I would not delay completing my work, as it was already in far progress. Thus we talked, and, in full enjoyment of peace, youth, and health, we proceeded homewards, only stopping now and then to pick up a

beautiful shell which lay in our way, till we arrived at the vessel a little after sunset. Too tired to make tea, we regaled ourselves with a little wine and water and some biscuit; and then kneeling down in the presence of God, rendered to Him that which is justly due—the sacrifice of praise, and prayer, and thanksgiving; and retired to rest.

Monday, 7th.—I set to work hard upon the plank house; and, having before carried all the materials to the spot, was now occupied entirely in its construction. I kept at my task nearly the whole day, with my wife and Fidele beside me; and as the promontory threw us into the shadow, the air was by no means unpleasantly hot at any part of the time.

Tuesday, 8th.—We kept close at our work upon the ridge, and both were delighted to see it drawing to a close. On Wednesday the 9th, I got the roof on; and before sunset had the satisfaction to see the tent completed. My dear wife had brought a bottle of wine from the vessel, and with beef and biscuit for our dinner, and our canteen replenished from the spring, we sat down on the floor of our wooden palace, and regaled ourselves cheerily. Fidele and the goats were of the party, he eating of our general fare, the goats coming in now and then for a piece of biscuit, which they took kindly from the hand. We, however, kept them on the outside of our palace door not wishing to give them the habit of coming in. I was overjoyed at the achievement of my task, which I had found much more laborious than we had first expected. My dear wife thanked me over and over again for what I had done, as it had been undertaken at her suggestion; and thus well repaid for all my labour, although much fatigued, I retired with even a jocund step to our ship; and, after our constant custom of kneeling to prayer, retired to enjoy the sweets of well-earned sleep.

CHAPTER V.

THURSDAY, 10th January, 1734.—I employed part of this morning in arranging matters on board; but before I secured the main hatchway, I got up some half-inch board and a plank to make a table, at my leisure, for the tent. We talked over our intended operations at breakfast, and it was resolved to put some seeds and roots into the ground without loss of time, by which we hoped to be able to propagate every vegetable we had, excepting the plantain, for in it we found no seeds. As a preliminary step, we looked over our store of fruit and roots,

and saw all sound, save one musk melon, which had been a little bruised, and was beginning to spoil. Having stowed all away again, after airing them on the deck, I proposed going on shore, and, taking a couple of chairs from the cabin, and our musk melon, we marched up to the plank-house. I felt myself not a little important, I believe, when the two chairs were placed in the new building. There was a manifest exultation felt by us both at the moment; gratulatory and smiling, we sat ourselves down, for the first time, in our chairs, under the roof of a building made with my own hands. After a brief period in our new situation, Eliza went to the cave to feed the poultry, and I got thence the spade and hoe. The fowls were there, but we could not see either ducks or goats. I confess we were agitated, if not alarmed, and I more especially, thinking they were lost. "Don't fear, dear Edward," said she; "we shall find them. The poor things are only gone to seek something to drink. You perceive there is no water in the bucket." I approved her suggestion, and hastened with her to the spring, where we found the stragglers, and were thus relieved from our anxiety. We first thought of driving them directly back to the thicket, but, as I was to be gardening near during the best part of the day, they were allowed to remain and feed where they were. My wife, meanwhile, supplied the fowls in the cave with water; but, as we did not undertake to provide for all the wild pigeons in the place, she strewed her corn on the path leading from the cavern to the outside of the thicket, and thus drew the fowls out after her. When I came up from my work to take my dinner at the plank-house, which she had spread there, I saw them feeding near the door, and, as we sat at our meal, we threw them small pieces of biscuit, which they picked up piece by piece, the cock generally getting hold of each crumb first, then calling the hens to receive it from him.

By sunset, I had put in several melon seeds of both sorts, and also seeds of the pumpkin, and had turned up and hoed a nice spot of ground in the neighbourhood of the spring; but I could not but perceive that this place was too shady for anything but pumpkins and Indian corn. However, as we had plenty of seeds, I remarked, "Little could be lost but the labour." We were glad to see the pine-top look well, and I gave it water, after putting some more good earth round it. We now drove the goats and ducks up to the cave, and in this operation Fidele took a conspicuous part, which pleased us much, as we foresaw the use our little friend and companion might be to us, in bringing "our flocks and herds home at eventide."

The sun did not set with its usual beauty this evening; the western horizon was overcast, and there had been little sea breeze all day. We loitered some time in the vicinity of our new habitation, treating the goats with the rind of our musk melon, and in other domestic trifling. The sky, in the meanwhile, became completely overcast; the goats suddenly deserted us, uttering an unusual cry, and ran into the thicket. We looked up, and, apprehending rain, hastened towards our vessel, but we had scarcely set forth before it came on, pouring down on us in torrents, so that we were wet to the skin in two minutes. At this time there was not a breath of wind, and it had suddenly become quite dark. We got on board with difficulty, not only drenched, but fatigued, and with poor Fidele, like a drowned rat, following us. As we descended into the cabin, I pulled the top of the companion over, but there was already much water below, in the steerage passage. It was quite dark in the cabin, and, from our being very wet, the want of light made us doubly uncomfortable. I drew the charge from one of my pistols, and struck fire in the pan, so as to ignite some paper I placed on a plate upon the table, and, keeping the flame up with a few torn pieces for a minute or two, my wife brought a candle from the locker, which we lighted, and then joyfully proceeded to change ourselves; the rain, meanwhile, continued to fall in a deluge over our heads upon the deck, as if the very sky was coming down. We took off our dripping clothes, and put on our light night things. It was not cold, yet we felt chilly after our wetting. I now thought of the captain's case of hollands, and, without saying a word to Eliza, I brought out a bottle, and set her an example by taking a sup of it, and made her do the same. Having done this, we only said, "God preserve us!" and went to bed, leaving the candle burning in a candlestick, standing on the plate. We could not sleep, the falling of the rain beat so heavily on the deck, but there was no wind. "Edward," said she, "we shall have another hurricane! let us put in the dead-lights."—"There can be no occasion for them, my love," I replied. "We have no sea to encounter here; we are in a secure and protected harbour."—"Oh! I know," resumed she, tremblingly, "that it will soon begin to thunder and lighten, and blow a tempest, and it will be dreadful!"—"Well, but my own!" replied I, "we are safe, and you express more fear than when we really were in danger!" She sobbed. "You weep, Eliza," cried I. "What is the matter?"—"We have gone to bed, Edward," exclaimed she, "when most called upon, without praying to

that God who hitherto has been to us a Father." I felt the justice of the remark, and, embracing her with respondent tears, we rose upon our knees, and implored forgiveness and protection. We then lay down in peace. The rain continued to pour in torrents, and soon we heard the howling of the wind, but, as it did not come in at the cabin windows, I concluded it was from the westward. Still, as the companion doors were open, and the cabin windows open, there was a thorough draught, and the rain beat through the cabin with the wind, and the candle was blown out. I got up and drew down all the windows in the cabin, and shut the door, and struck a light again with some difficulty, and, having relit our candle, I placed it on the floor, near to the cabin bulkhead, out of the way of the draught. I then lay down, but could not sleep. The wind howled tremendously; and I now feared every moment that the brig would break adrift, as it blew right ahead, and the ropes by which she was fastened to the rocks were very slender. At last, I could no longer continue in bed, therefore got up, and went forth to look out at the companion door, but the wind and rain drove so furiously in my face, and besides, it was so dark withal that I could see nothing. In this attempt, however, I was completely wet, and, as I could not be more so, I determined to keep my station at the top of the companion ladder, until I had shut both the half-doors. That done, on coming down, I perceived we were all afloat in the steerage passage. Still I gained by having closed the doors, for, by excluding some of the noise from the storm above, our situation became more comfortable. I lost no time in putting on a dry garment, and sat down on a chair beside my wife's bed, in the state-room, the door of which opened into the cabin; and, by its position with respect to the companion door, we had not felt either the wind or the rain, excepting in their terrific sounds. "Edward," said she, "you have again been sadly wet; take a little more hollands." I did not reject her advice, but took a second small dose of the captain's cordial, which I found very comforting. At length the rain ceased, but the wind, if we could judge by its roaring noise, blew more violently. I listened attentively to every sound, to distinguish, if possible, whether the ropes were giving way, and I got up from my seat several times, to endeavour to see from the cabin windows whether we were yet close in our harbour. I threw one of them open, to enable me the better to discover our situation, but I could discern nothing but the water, covered with a sort of phosphorescent light; it could not be from anything else, for the heavens were all darkness

above. No rest visited our eyelids, and during this suspense—I may say agony—we remained till daylight, the dawn of which was indeed gladness to our hearts: it released us from all dark apprehensions of jeopardy, and our ease was completed by discovering that we remained unmoved from our safe situation. The wind lulled, but the rain continued to pour down unceasingly. I was glad, however, to throw open the cabin windows, for it had become very close and oppressive. On looking out, I could see little change in the usual scene around us. The wind had blown from the northward and westward, and, as we lay under the lee of the sand banks, the water was quite smooth beyond us, and nothing seen floating on it. My first business was to get a swab and an empty bucket, and swab up into it all the wet in the steerage passage and cabin. The rain had now ceased; I therefore set open the companion doors, and the windows of the cabin being already so, the thorough draught soon dried all below. When I went into the state-room to my wife, to tell her it was comfortable again, I found her sound asleep, and happy I was to see her so sweetly rest, after our anxious night. I watched by her, but she soon opened her fine mild eyes, and smiled on me. I kissed her serene forehead, and then both those sweet eyes, one after the other, and, taking her by the hand, said, “Rise, my love, and let us pour out our gratitude to Heaven.”

The weather continued unsettled, and, as we foresaw more squalls of wind, with rain, my Eliza remained in the vessel to prepare us a cold breakfast, and I set forth to see the state of our live stock on shore, and, with much apprehension for its fate, to reconnoitre the plank-house that had cost me so much labour. I took some corn with me, and was glad to find the goats and fowls in the cave, and the ducks safe on its outside, there being a sort of ledge before it which they could not ascend. I scattered some of the corn about, and in an instant a whole flock of pigeons flew down from the interior of the cave, and began to feed among the goats and poultry, the fowls now and then startling them from their feast by pecking them; but, as no hostile hand had ever been raised against them, they evinced no more fear of me than of the animals, and as they were older possessors of the island, I did not grudge them, on this occasion, a little share of what was going. I then turned my steps to examine the plank-house. I was rejoiced to find it standing unmoved, excepting only two of the planks on the eastern part of the roof, which had been blown off, and were lying on the sand near to it. I did not stop to walk over to the

western shore of the isthmus, on which the wind had blown with violence during the night, but hastened back to the vessel, lest my dear wife should be uneasy. I told her that all was well, but that it looked black around, so that we might expect more bad weather. She was feeding the ducks in the coop when I came on board, and Fidele, her faithful squire, was helping her in the best way he could, by eating the bigger pieces of biscuit, such as he thought might choke the poultry. We now went down to our own breakfast, after which, we considered how to employ our time to the best purpose on board, as the weather would preclude our doing anything on shore. However, I thought it right to inspect the ropes, fastened from the brig to the rocks, and gladly found they had not been stranded in any part; the fact being that the vessel was hard and fast in the sand, fore and aft, and was therefore immovable. I next thought it well to take a spell at the pumps, and it was an hour before the pumps sucked, so that I perceived I must not neglect this operation, but now and then pump as a duty. I then took the boards into the cabin, and, having the carpenter's chest at my command, I resolved on employing myself in making the small table for the plank-house, while my wife occupied herself with her needle on a new pair of boot legs.

During these home labours, the rain came on again in torrents, sometimes with squalls of wind, and at other times with thunder, after which the water fell like a cascade from the heavens: but we now felt our security, so that we worked and talked cheerfully: we discussed our prospects, and all we planned to do; and it seemed as if our minds at this time were altogether engrossed with "bettering ourselves in life,"—that principle of action which follows man even into solitude. To dig, and to plant, and to sow, was the object now most prominent in our view, the ground being well soaked with rain. This induced me to talk over how and where I would put in the yams and cocos, sow the Indian corn, plant the fruit-seeds, and so forth; but, alas! one individual could accomplish but little of all this; yet resolution, and a good heart for my work, enabled me to perform more than could have been expected. My table needed not to be very elegant, so I got on apace with it, while Eliza worked as briskly at the boot-legs; and being only interrupted by our short refreshment, and now and then in listening to the storm, we kept on industriously till night, and finished our tasks together.

I took a look upon deck, before it was dark, between the rains, and saw the sky still more threatening. I shut the com-

panion close, and returned below. We knelt down to prayer, and retired to our state-room to rest, which we were so happy as to find, notwithstanding the increasing of the storm : during which we slept soundly, and arose at dawn perfectly refreshed.

Saturday, 12th.—This morning I again visited our stock, and plank-house, and found all well. We employed ourselves during the greater part of this day, the weather continuing bad, in various useful operations. Of necessity we had become our own boot-makers, tailors, sempstresses ; but another occupation was now forced on our consideration, the contemplation of which was certainly not quite so agreeable, viz., washing our linen ! Eliza had never washed even a lawn cap, though some young gentlewomen, more dainty about their head-dress without, than what they put within it, consume no small time with starch and pinner ; but my little wife had left all that to the maids ; and, indeed, her delicate hands were quite unfit for the employment. I offered to manage the whole for her, but she said, "It was woman's work, and therefore her duty."—"Nay," answered I, "we may here make customs for ourselves ! We will then superintend together, and I will make two washer-women, which you and I shall cause to do all the labour."—"Indeed !" said she, smiling, "if you accomplish this, I shall tell it as a real tale of the tub !" I laughed at her allusion to the dean's allegory ; and instantly, without explaining myself farther, set about planning my two wooden domestics. I kept in my mind's eye a battle-door, and cutting one of board, then shaped another of the same material, rather less. When finished, I put the small one into her hand, holding the other in my own. "I will show you," said I, "how, on a smooth stone in the run of the spring, we can cause these wooden-headed damsels to beat our clothes as clean and cleverly as if they were the best laundresses in Bristol ; and we shall then bleach and dry them in the sun."—"Excellent, dear Edward !" cried she ; "I never should have thought on such an expedient."—"Nor I, perhaps," I replied, "if I had not heard that the people, in most hot countries, wash in this manner."

Towards evening it cleared up, and we were delighted to see a bright and tranquil sky. I hastened to make a fire on shore, that we might boil our tea-kettle. Eliza set the tea-things on my newly-made table, as a compliment to me ; and I felt the attention kind, trifle as it may appear ; but such are the pivots on which the happiness of married life depend. She saw I was pleased with what she had done, and with this little additional excite-

ment to an habitual happy feeling, we sat down to our refreshing meal, and then disembarked, with Fidele.

The sand was firm everywhere, from the rain, so that we could have walked pleasantly without our boots. We looked at the stock, and passed over to the other side of the isthmus. The fountain was gushing impetuously into the brook it formed, whence it now ran like a small river into the lake. The ground I had turned up, and sown, appeared as I had left it, only, like all around, was well soaked with the rain. The pine-apple top had been a little disturbed by the wind, but that I soon rectified. There was a good deal of sea-weed, such as sailors call gulf-weed, thrown on the beach, together with sea-fans, coarse sponges, reeds, and some shells; but we did not stop to gather any of them. I filled the canteen with fresh water from the spring, and taking a look at the cave, and its inmates, and also at the plank-house, we returned on board the vessel to rest.

CHAPTER VI.

SUNDAY, 13th Jan., 1734.—The dawn of day was auspicious, and we hastened on deck to greet the rising sun, whose glowing chariot rested on the wave, in all the gorgeous vision of diffusive radiance: his spreading rays lighting up the sky around; his bright beams, but newly born, gleaming on the waters; his cheering warmth, of which we had been some days bereft, gladdening our hearts. We watched him, slowly emerging from the sea, with joy and admiration: then raising our thoughts from this sublime image, to the mighty God who had created it, we gave praise and thanksgiving to the only object of worship, for all the wonderful bounties of His providence.

We dressed ourselves as usual for the Sabbath, and read the morning service. When we went out to walk, we were amused with the various deposits on the beach, which the waves had thrown up during the tempest. Fidele, also, was busy at the water's edge, knocking about among the drift-weed and other things, and we observed him attempt to lay hold of something stirring there, but quickly jump away, and bark, and then return to the assault again. I took the pike from Eliza's hand, and moving some of the weed, descried an immense crayfish; perhaps I should call it a lobster. It was in the act of devouring a fish that had been stranded by the storm. I thrust the end of my pike into the claw, which the creature held up as if in defence, no doubt against the menaces of the dog; and happy

for him the crayfish did not catch him by the nose, for it instantly clutched the iron point of my weapon, and kept hold so firmly, that by it I dragged my prize out of the water, safe upon the beach. This creature was well defended with spinous projections from its back and sides, and two large horns growing from its head; besides having two great claws, like those of a lobster, which crayfish ordinarily want. Fidele would have attacked this formidable enemy again, but my wife wisely caught the little Nimrod by the ear, and held him fast, while I secured our captive, by tying its claws with my handkerchief. We then returned to our ship not a little pleased with our good fortune, and passed the remainder of the day in devotional exercises, and innocent amusements.

Monday, 14th.—The morning proved fine, and the weather appeared settled. We agreed now to land all the ducks, so we took them, eight in number, male and female, in two bags, up to the cave, where they were greeted by their two-feathered kindred, with loud and continued quacking. I left my wife there, to throw some corn to the stock, while I went back to the vessel for the table I had made for our wooden palace; and taking advantage of it to stand on, I replaced the two planks that had been blown from the roof by the storm. We then returned to the vessel, and while my wife got breakfast, I selected half a dozen yams, and two dozen cocos, which I put into a sack, and with my spade and an axe, set out to the cocoa-nut grove, my dear helpmate carrying a little basket with provisions, and her boarding-pike; Fidele following. The sand was firm, and the walking good all the way, so that we reached the spot in about half an hour, notwithstanding the burdens we carried, and the heat of the day, which, out of the shade, was rather too great to be agreeable. We set down our things under the shade of three cocoa-nut trees, that stood close together under the rocky part of the ridge, and on a ledge of it we found a nice convenient seat. My first operation was to select, for cutting down, one of the trees on the south side of the grove, which were all laden with fruit of different sizes, and I chose the one that seemed most in the way of my plantation, for the quantity of fit ground at this place was very small. My axe being new I soon felled the tree, and as soon as it dropped, Eliza was at my side. I cut off the cocoa-nuts, twenty-eight in number, which she undertook to carry one by one to the ledge, where our basket had been deposited. I now put off my jacket, and went to work with the spade, and was glad to find the soil tolerably good. I dug along the south side of the grove.

the ground being best there, and clear of shade. In the course of my labour, I had to take up several young trees, from two to six feet high, and was pretty well fatigued by a couple of such hours' work. My poor dear wife had not carried above half the cocoa nuts, before she was heartily tired too, and seating herself down on the ledge, under shadow of the rock, she spread out our frugal meal, and called me to it. I joined her at her summons, and after eating a little of what she had prepared, I split the husk off a couple of young cocoa nuts, then piercing the nuts at the top, emptied their delicious milk into a tin cup she had brought in the basket. I tasted it, and handed it to her. As she drank, she every now and then exclaimed, "How nice! how cool! how delicious!" But she did not drink quite half, being anxious that I also should taste it, which I did, and quickly finished the remainder. I now cut the tops off the nuts, and found a soft agreeable substance adhering to the sides, which we scooped out and eat.

After these dainties, we had no desire for more of our salt beef and yam; so, being content for the present with what we had taken, I proposed lying down on the rock, to repose for a while during the hottest part of the day. Eliza turned the yams and cocoas out of the sack, and placing it under my head, I soon fell asleep, while she and Fidele kept sentry over me. I awoke much refreshed, and looked up with delight on the sweet eyes that were watching me as I slept. It was not time yet to go to work; the sun continued too intense; but the yams were to be slit in pieces, as we cut potatoes for planting; and while I was employed in doing this, my dear guardian angel and Fidele took their comfortable nap beside me. After the heat of the day had passed I went to my spade again, and before evening had turned up a long narrow strip of tolerable ground, on the southern margin of the grove, and had put in the cuttings of the yams in one part, and the cocoas whole in the other. My wife also had brought melon and pumpkin seeds with her, and diligently sowed them wherever I directed as a fit spot. We thus finished the task we had appointed to be done, and were glad. But grateful satisfaction gave a further stimulus to exertion, and I set to cleaving the outer husks of half a dozen cocoa nuts, putting the nuts into our sack. I emptied the canteen, on the spots where the musk-melon seeds were put in; and, not choosing to lose any of our labour, bundled up some of the young cocoa-nut trees I had uprooted, and also gathering together the fragments of our provisions, trudged back to the plank-house, where we arrived a little before sunset. I was certainly very tired, but I would not

go on board until I had planted four of the trees round our palace—one at each end to the east and west ; and two behind, viz., to the north. The stars were out, when this last achievement was completed ; and so wearied were we, that, without looking at our stock, we crawled on board, leaving all our burdens in the plank-house. We took a cup of wine and water each when snugly housed in our cabin, and with a short but fervent prayer, retired to rest.

Tuesday, 15th.—I was very stiff in the morning, and my dear wife also acknowledged the effects of her fatigue, but we got up, and went upon deck, and with only as much covering as modesty required underwent a good sluicing with sea-water, drawn up by a bucket, by which operation we were greatly refreshed, and instantly relieved from the stiffness produced by the labour of the preceding day. I dried myself and dressed on deck, while she went below and did the same. We walked up to the plank-house before breakfast, and intended visiting our stock, but we found it chiefly outside of the thicket, ready to greet us ; and as there were neither doors nor windows to close the house from their entrance, the goats and fowls had made free with the yams and biscuit left there in the basket last night. I could not now feel that my building was perfected, until I remedied this evil ; therefore, when we returned on board to breakfast, and while my wife prepared it, I opened the main hatchway, and got up some laths ; then taking the door off the captain's state-room, laid all in order for carrying them on shore, which we did soon after, neither Eliza nor myself making long meals. I nailed the laths outside the plank-house across the windows, at the distance of about four inches asunder, which piece of work I completed in less than an hour ; and I then endeavoured to fit in the door, but it was neither high enough nor broad enough, so I was obliged to place a board erect, joined to one of the side-posts, by which means I narrowed the before open portal to exactly the size of the door. The hinges I nailed to the post, and then filled up the vacant space above the door, with another slip of wood. This was all done by two o'clock ; and my wife was as much surprised as she was pleased to see our palace now a castle into which nothing could intrude. Having so greatly improved our land residence, I felt disposed to do still more ; and after dinner I put up a couple of boards for shelves within the house, on the side opposite the door, and I was myself surprised to find that this was effected in a few minutes ; for I had only to push the ends between two of the planks that formed the eastern and western walls, and

there was the shelf, projecting twelve inches, firm and steady. I placed the two shelves eighteen inches one above the other, the lowest four feet from the ground, which made the upper one five feet and a half in height. I was more pleased with this unexpected facility than I can describe; and I now proceeded to make what would prove a seat, a settee, a bed, or a dresser; and this was accomplished as quickly as the shelves. I chose the west end of the building as best suited for the purpose, because the sea-breeze blew in at the opposite quarter; so, taking three planks, I thrust them through between the planks from north to south, in a parallel direction, side by side, and thus formed a seat, or whatever else it might be used for, under the western window, in less time than I take to record it. The point upon which this great facility turned, was the planks being all of the same length, width, and thickness. I still went on, and laid six of similar dimensions, lengthways along the front of the building, which gave us a boarded front the whole width of the house. I fastened these planks in their place, by driving wooden wedges into the sand at their extremities, and along the side of the outer plank. I had finished all this before sunset, and was quite triumphant at what I had accomplished. My wife meanwhile made several trips to the vessel, and brought up many things from the lockers, for kitchen and table use; and in her rummage, she fortunately found the tinder box, with steel and flint, together with some matches and a roll of brimstone, all in a small canvas bag. This was a great acquisition indeed. She had stumbled over the crayfish in the steerage passage, where I had put it on bringing it on board, and which both she and I had forgot in the hurry and bustle of yesterday and to-day's operations; but she placed it in the basket on discovering it, and brought it on shore, where it was soon consigned to the pot, to be in readiness for our supper. We next mustered the stock, and found them all present. After closing our palace, we returned to the vessel, taking out the crayfish from the pot on our way down; we eat but a small portion of it at supper, finding it rather strong while hot; however, we were otherwise well supplied, at least to our satisfaction; so, after returning thanks, we retired to rest.

Wednesday, 16th.—I employed the early part of the morning in placing some fragments of rock together, resting them against the foot of the promontory, so as to make a cooking place a little to leeward of the plank-house. Having accomplished it, I cut up some of the sticks and branches taken from the thicket, when clearing the avenue to the cave, struck a light with the

tinder-box, and kindled a fire. My burning glass and gunpowder were henceforth released from that duty ; I therefore replaced the large lens in the spy-glass, and hung it up in the plank-house. The goats and poultry were moving about between our habitation and the thicket ; and my wife threw some corn ; it was very pleasing to us, as we sat at breakfast, to see them thus domesticated ; enjoying themselves close to our door. The lamed goat seemed quite recovered from her accident, which induced me to undo the bandage, and take off the splints by which we had secured the broken bone. They had been nothing but two bits of flat stick we picked up on the cabin floor. Her ladyship appeared very big ; and as goats go only five months with kid, we might soon expect an increase to our family.

I now put my pistols into my belt, and with spade and hatchet, accompanied by my Eliza and her dog, set out for the clear land beyond the silk-cotton tree, to make a plantation there ; for, as none of the situations near to our abode were very good, I thought it advisable not to confine our roots and seeds to one place. My dear wife, as usual, took a basket with provisions, and with her pike for a pilgrim's staff, we proceeded on our way. While filling our canteen at the fountain, our always momentary halting spot, Fidele started an iguana, and presently killed it. This was an acceptable feat on the part of our little friend, for a fresh meal was a fresh spring of health. I deposited the creature under a fragment of the rock, and went on through the wood. On our way we observed several sorts of trees, all strangers to me, many of which were magnificent ; others, less stately, but whose wide-spreading branches cast a delightful shade over our path. There were also many shrubs in flower ; and we were delighted by the appearance of a beautiful little bird on vibratory wing, sucking the nectar from the bottom of one of them. As we approached the silk-cotton-tree grounds, the Indian fig, or prickly pear, as it is called in Jamaica, grew in great abundance ; the fruit of which appeared quite ripe, some being yellow, and some of a bright crimson colour. I was much disposed to taste them, but on attempting to peel, or even to pull them, the spines or prickles with which they are thickly beset, forced me to desist. These figs grow round a projecting point of the promontory, that partially separates the woodland region from the silk-cotton-tree grounds.

From this spot we soon arrived at the great tree, and laid down our burdens at its foot, betwixt two of the large spurs which extend from the trunk in such a way as to divide the

space round it into compartments, separated by these spurs ; some of which may rise four or five feet on the stem ; gradually sloping down, as they diverge from it. Each was a snug corner, if I may so express it, for us to haven in : and we chose that for the present which faced the open ground to the south. I stripped off my jacket, and fell to digging where I found the ground good, and not very shallow. Thus I continued for a couple of hours ; but the sun by that time having full power, I ceased awhile to rest and cool myself. I now became aware that all my work here must be done early in the morning ; seeing that the sun would shine upon the place until he set. I therefore gave up the idea of any more spade husbandry this day, and contented myself with putting in some pumpkin and melon seeds, where I had dug ; and also the pips of oranges and limes, in spots here and there, on the skirts of the wooded region.

About one o'clock, we shifted our position to the north side of the cotton tree ; the shade there being complete : then, spreading forth the contents of our basket, we did great justice to the crayfish, by the help of a lime and a few capsciums. After we had dined, I felt unusually indisposed for exertion ; and was not quite pleased with myself for the bad arrangements I had made for the day. My dear wife consoled me by saying a thousand agreeable things ; and reminded me of my great exploit yesterday, and hard toil the day before ; then she sung me my favourite little air, "Oh ! how sweet the shady bower." The words were few, but the air and voice spoke of paradise ; and in a moment I was cheerful and alert. "Thank you, beloved !" I said, "we will now return to the plank house, and pick up the iguana on our way." But spying a couple of oranges she had brought in her basket, I proposed eating them then, feeling very thirsty. The fruit was grateful to us both ; and, not to lose time, I put in the seeds we had just acquired, on the north-east corner of the open space, at some distance to the eastward. I worked an hour ; hoping one day to see the spot an orange grove. This done, we returned to the silk-cotton tree, to gather together our implements, and returned by the fountain to the plank house : not forgetting to take up the iguana by the way. We found the goats and ducks near the spring ; but they were not in the least disturbed by our approach.

Although I had actually laboured but little to-day, I was glad to throw myself down on the settee of boards, with which I had enriched our wooden palace. The sea-breeze was blow-

ing pleasantly through the interstices of the planks that formed the walls, and I felt much enjoyment in the position I had taken. My wife and her little dog were soon beside me ; there was plenty of room for us all. She, poor child, complained of a weight at her stomach ; and I also now began to think we had both eaten too much of the crayfish ; so, under this impression, I got up, and made a visit to the captain's state-room on board, and brought a case-bottle of his hollands on shore. I prevailed on my wife to take a couple of table-spoonfuls of it ; and I doubled the dose for myself ; after which medicine we felt better. As I did not intend to make a custom of this sort of cure, I set the case-bottle on the top shelf. "There, Eliza," said I, jocosely, "neither you nor Fidele can reach so high, therefore it is safe." She looked archly at Fidele, and smiled.

Towards the afternoon we went on board, but I was not idle ; I nearly filled a large bag with yams and cocos for planting, which I took on shore, and deposited under the plank settee. On my return to the ship, she had got all the fruit upon deck ; and in two or three more trips, that also was transferred to the house ; my dear wife carrying what she cou'd. "I will now show you," said she, "how safe your cordial is ;" so, moving a chair, she stood on it, and taking up the bottle, pushed it quite into a corner, and smiled, saying, "Now hand me up the fruits, that I may place them all along the shelf, to keep guard over the prisoner." This was immediately done ; and the pine-apples, the shaddocks, the musk and water-melons, together with a great store of oranges and limes, made a goodly show above our heads ; and, generally, they were yet in very fair condition.

I employed the remainder of the evening in preparing more yams for planting. Tea was our great refreshment at this hour ; besides, it reminded us of our English home ; and we did not hesitate to use it freely, as there was a good store of it in the cargo ; as well as an abundance of sugar and coffee, nothing being required but a little labour to possess myself of these agreeable delicacies. After this reviving and consolatory beverage, the sun being set, we fastened up the house, and retired to our cabin on board, to finish the day in prayer, and the night in repose.

Thursday, 17th—We set out at daylight in the morning from the vessel, and, calling at the plank house, I accoutred myself as on the day before for my work. The goats and poultry were up, and out as early as ourselves, the cock crowing manfully at our approach ; we threw them corn, and proceeded to

the woodland plantation. On the way we were surprised and delighted by the cooing of doves, and the sweet notes of a bird like those of the nightingale: hitherto we had never been beyond the fountain so early in the morning, therefore could not have heard such before; but now we anticipated the pleasure we should derive from this lovely concert, could we ever be able to erect a residence near the silk-cotton tree. Our burdens were deposited at the foot of that gigantic tree, and I went to work heartily. The air was cool and pleasant, the birds continued singing, and the doves cooing, all around us: at a distance, beyond the open ground, the intervening part of which is somewhat elevated, we heard paroquets making a less melodious noise. My dear wife, now bold in enterprise, set out with Fidele to the summit of the rising ground, in hopes of seeing some of them; and when there, she could discern several, with green plumage, busily picking the fruit which hung clustering from the tops of the palm trees far beyond her. I remained at my labour, without interruption, for a couple of hours; during which Eliza and her dog skirted the wood opposite, and returned by the margin of the lake, without accident or adventure. She described it to me as clear and smooth, and altogether beautiful: she saw several fish close to the shore, swimming to and fro, and a few water-fowl, sea-gulls, cormorants, and divers. On her return, we were both ready for breakfast; after which I dug between the cotton tree and the lake, in a little dell, for another hour; and then, seeing I had ground enough prepared for my yam cuttings, put them in by eleven o'clock. Fatigue and the heat of the day then admonished me to desist.

We now sat down under the shade of the noble tree to rest. I had by this time learned from experience, and observation, that in the mornings at this season of the year, the silk-cotton-tree plantation was thrown into shade during three or four hours after sunrise; and that from eight o'clock A.M. until nearly five in the afternoon we were in shade at the plank house; and between it and the vessel, close under the precipice, it was all shade nearly from sunrise to sunset. But the shadows were gradually shortening; and it was obvious that, as the summer advanced, these cool situations would become less and less so. The sun, by the middle of May, would be in the zenith at noon, casting no shadow all day, excepting to the west or to the east, as he passed through the heavens. Since our arrival on the island, the sun had not risen before seven o'clock, and had set between five and six in the afternoon: he would then

rise between five and six, and not set until seven, which would be a long and hot summer's day. These were my reflections then, and they proved, as the seasons rolled over my head, to be nearly correct. I therefore had resolved to make the best use of my time when almost every place to which I had occasion to direct my labour was shaded from the sun at some period of the day; and as this was the propitious season for agricultural operations, I was the more induced to profit by my experience and reflections; but my dear wife perceived I was working beyond my strength, and often pleaded with me to economise it, and take more care of my health, by avoiding such over-exertion. She now talked to me on the subject, and said I had already planted enough for future supplies; that we yet had a good stock of vegetable roots and fruits, and that the vessel contained flour and biscuit in abundance. I began to feel the necessity of yielding to her wishes, for I had already become thin and rather weak, so that I at last resolved to take my labour easy, and make a pleasure rather than a toil of my occupations. Indeed, we both had become sensible that two or three hours of absolute rest in the middle of the day would be necessary for the preservation of health in this climate; for although we were tolerably well, yet she as well as I had lost plumpness; and we were often languid (what I called "done up") from over-exertion. In this frame of mind, we were quite disposed to stay where we were awhile, and repose a few hours after our return to the plank-house.

After this indulgence, we visited the thicket and the cave. It was on this occasion that I discovered a few curious trees, about ten or twelve feet high, growing among the acacias. Large dry pods of a dark colour, not less than a full grown cucumber, adhering to their branches, attracted my attention: some of these had burst, the seeds of which were scattered on the ground. I picked up one of them, and, having bruised it with my teeth, was surprised to perceive that it was the cacao or chocolate nut. I collected as many as I could obtain, which might altogether amount to a quart. They were much smaller than any I had seen either in England or Jamaica; and I concluded this must arise either from their being uncultivated, or from the close shaded situation in which they grew. I, however, hoped to find some in more perfection in the woodland region. Our live stock were outside, so we had the cave to ourselves: it was quite light within, but we could not see any pigeons. "I will go and fetch the spade," said I, "and dig up some of the good soil which the birds have

deposited ; it will dress the roots of our young cocoa-nut trees. The sand in which they are planted round our palace is too poor for even their hardy nature to thrive in." Eliza sat down in the cave, while I soon filled and carried out a couple of baskets-full for each tree ; but in clearing away the manure near to the mouth of the cave, I dug up part of a soldier's belt, with a brass plate on it. This surprised us ; I rubbed the plate with some sand, and thought I made it out to be Spanish. The discovery induced me to dig for an hour or two longer ; but I found nothing more. However, I had collected a good deal of rich soil, which I shovelled into a corner, and we left the place. When returned to the plank-house, I put the belt carefully away, for some future examination ; but meanwhile my wife and I ventured various conjectures about how it might have got in the secluded spot where we found it ; many were extravagant enough, and all, perhaps, wide from the fact ; but one thing was evident, from its state, that it must have lain there a long time ; perhaps a century. We now turned our thoughts to the more valuable discovery of the chocolate nuts, which my Eliza proposed trying for our breakfast on the ensuing morning ; and she accordingly employed herself in pounding the nuts on a stone with the back of a hatchet, laying a piece of canvas beneath, to catch the fragments. My occupation the while was applying my pigeon-soil to my plantation at our palace. My young trees had drooped very little, the sand being yet damp at the depth they were planted. I exulted in giving them this excellent manure ; and added a thorough watering, when I had so bedded them. It was now time for our evening repast ; and we sat down on the wooden platform between the plank-house and the rock, with our table between us, each on a commodious chair, and our dear little dog in front of us, to our comfortable tea, in peace and quietness ; perhaps, experiencing more real enjoyment than the world's society, with all its blandishments, could bestow ! If we were deprived of its pleasures, we were exempted from its vexations also ; for is it not true, that nine-tenths of the evils of this life proceed from the conduct of the various persons with whom we are brought in contact ? We reasoned thus on this subject, and felt the importance of the proposition I have stated : yet we had a sigh and a tear for those we loved, and had left behind in our native village : but there was no poignancy in our regrets ; we still hoped some day to meet and embrace them again, through the mercy of that God whom we desired to serve in spirit and in truth. In this way we com-

muned with each other, till the time for retiring drew near ; when fastening up our palace, and seeing our dumb companions repair to their retreat, we too, serenely and happily, bent our steps towards the brig.

Friday, 18th.—All alert for our husbandry, we set off by day-break for the silk-cotton-tree plantation ; our implements, bags of yams, cocos, and seeds, being my burden. My wife brought some of the pounded chocolate, to prepare for our morning's meal, while I dug up a rich piece of ground I had discovered in the dell between the cotton tree and the lake. Having performed this part of my task, we sat down to our breakfast, which we much enjoyed : and therefore felt some little regret that we had not been able to find any cacao trees in our way through the woodland, though our eyes had sought them in every direction. "Edward," observed my Eliza, "there seems much confusion in this name of *cocoa* ! For the great nuts with the milk are called *cocoa*-nuts ; and the roots here, so like a potato, which you are going to plant, are also called *cocos* ; and the nut from which we made this chocolate yesterday, is in England called *cocoa*. I cannot comprehend how it should happen, that so many dissimilar things should receive the same name !"—"I can perhaps solve the difficulty, dear Eliza," replied I ; "for I know the chocolate nut is not spelt *cocoa*, but *cacao* ; and the root is spelt *cocco*. I suppose them to be all Spanish appellations, and if properly pronounced might be sufficiently distinctive." But being more intent on my planting, than the discussion of philological questions, "Tell me, dear," said I, giving a practical turn to the conversation, "did not we bring two large sugar-canes from Jamaica ? What has become of them ? They are not lost, I hope ! for they would grow well where I have been just digging ; and although there is plenty of sugar on board, yet I should like to make two or three cuttings from the canes, and put them into this ground. They might prove useful to others, if not to ourselves." She approved my intention ; and, after our talk, I again went to work with my spade ; during which she cut the yams : and before noon-tide, we had planted a good space with both yams and cocos ; and not a few pumpkin and melon seeds were put in in various directions.

On our return home, I stopped at the fountain to wash the basket, that had been soiled by its employment last evening ; and, as it was our only one, I was sorry to perceive it rather worn by the hard duty I had made it perform. "Never mind, dear Edward," cried my wife ; "I am neither a king nor a

queen, but I think I shall be able to show you that I can be a basket-maker ; and I will soon replace it.”—“ Heaven’s best gift ! ” I exclaimed : then taking her arm in mine, we proceeded to our deeply-shaded wooden palace ; and there we reposed in the Spanish style for an hour or two, during the heat of the day ; after which we amused ourselves, while sitting on the platform, with observing the happy liberty of our dumb companions ; the cock and hens dusting themselves opposite to us, almost burying themselves as they knocked up the sand with their feet and wings. At length I roused myself from this pleasant trifling. In truth, the mind as well as body becomes gradually subject to lassitude, and can only entertain itself then by what gives it least trouble. I, however, got up, and Eliza with me. Fidele was always on the alert when we moved. And now, reminding ourselves about the sugar-canes, we repaired to the vessel to search for them. After no small patience and investigation, we at last found them in the steerage. I also took thence a piece of rope, which I unlaied, and then re-made into a sort of plait, which sailors call gasket. With this I constructed two articles, to be used something in the way of a step-ladder. A fathom of this gasket-work, being fastened end to end, made one ; and the other was like it. When both were finished, I told my wife, by the help of these facilities, I thought I could get down the cocoanuts without felling the trees for that purpose ; and that on the morrow afternoon we would put them to the trial. She was quite delighted with the invention and idea ; for, of all things, her kindly spirit disliked destruction of any sort, and especially when it was to be the price for only some personal gratification. For this, she regaled me with a pine-apple, that was becoming over ripe ; the top of which we twisted out, with great care, for planting. It was now time to retire to our marine lodgings.

Saturday, 19th.—The early dawn found us on our way to our little garden of Eden, “ to dress and to keep it : ” and, besides our usual articles for the purpose, we did not neglect to take our pine-apple top, and three cuttings of sugar-cane (with two joints in each), to put into the rich ground I had discovered between the cotton tree and the lake. Before ten o’clock, I had disposed of all these stocks of future progeny ; and having so far succeeded to our satisfaction, we cheerfully retrod our steps, to recruit ourselves at the spring. My wife took her station on the fragment of rock on which we had first sat, with our faithful little dog beside us, and tasted that

pleasant water with thankfulness to the good God who had brought us into such a haven. Fidele, too, seemed pleased in contemplating the scene of his first exploit with the iguana : and in this agreeable fellowship of past recollections, I left my two dear companions for a while ; trudging away myself towards the rocky point that projects into the lake, to visit my earliest beds of melon and pumpkin seeds, which had now been more than a fortnight planted. I was delighted to see them all above ground ; and called to my Eliza to come and partake of my glad surprise. The sight of them was like that of the first teeth of the first child to its fond parents—a subject of joy and exultation. I cleared the earth round them with the hoe ; and then took a look at the first pine-top, to which I gave a little water, and secured the tops of the split shingles, which I had placed round in the form of a cone, to preserve it from the goats. This was necessary, for they, together with the ducks, were now almost always about the spring.

Before noon we adjourned to the plank-house, and were agreeably saluted there by the cackling of one of the hens, just strutting out from the thicket. “Thank you, madam,” said I ; “you have begun a good work : I understand you, and will soon endeavour to find the treasure you have deposited.” My dear wife was much amused by my address to dame Partlet, and joined with me in the pleasantries. I lost no time in making the search ; and, after some time, found the welcome egg, a little on one side of the cave’s mouth, in a convenient retreat, made by the fortuitous arrangement of some small fragments of rock. There was no reason for removing thence what we must yet consider as the nest egg, but the fear of one we never had occasion to doubt before—our useful and faithful little dog. We knew that dogs have as keen a relish for the delicacies of the hen-roost as the best of us ; and we did not like to leave open a possible cause for temptation, and therefore of displeasure towards our dumb and unwitting friend and companion. It was therefore resolved to bring the egg into the house, and place it in safety on a shelf, while I went to work with some shingles, and a few pieces of plank, to construct a house for our fowls to lay, and ultimately to hatch in. Eliza had gradually acquired courage in our situation ; and she proposed going the while, with Fidele, to the margin of the lake, to gather some of the large reeds or canes which the late storm had driven on shore, and then try to make baskets of them. I did not oppose her, for there was no apparent danger, and she would not be far from me. She took her pike in her hand ;

and followed, or rather preceded, by Fidele, set off on her expedition. I had conceived the plan of my depository for our fowls, which I regulated in size according to the length of the shingles (about two feet long each); and with these, and a few pieces of plank, I erected a place on four props, about the size of one of the large chests of tea from China, in about a couple of hours. But before I had half finished, Eliza rejoined me, with nearly two dozen capital canes, or large reeds, which she laid down beside me in the cave, while she brought forth some beautiful shells she had picked up, that had been cast up by the late storm, and which she now arranged on a piece of board that lay near us. They were indeed very perfect and highly polished; and, as she displayed them before me, she delightedly expatiated on the perfections of Him whose least works are so transcendently beyond all that man can do. "There is great vanity in human beings, Edward," continued she, "to suppose that all things were made merely to please and gratify them. O no! think not, though man were not, the earth would want spectators—God want praise!"—"My darling Eliza!" I exclaimed, laying down the piece of plank I held in my hands, and embracing her; "O thou blessed angel! such were the beams of celestial light, which often thy much-loved father was wont to shed around him! May that God, whom thou dost so adore, spare thee, my love, long to comfort thy Edward, and once more to bless the eyes of thy revered parent!" We wept.

I completed my task more than an hour before sunset: but was too tired to fulfil my promise of trying my gaskets that evening at the cocoa-nut grove; so, after making up a nest in my hen-house with some dried grass, and fixing a piece of slanting board for the fowls to walk up to its entrance, my wife placed the egg within, and finished the operation by strewing some corn upon the board, to induce the hens to find their new retreat. We regaled ourselves with tea and roasted plantains this evening; and felt peculiar delight in the retrospect of the day. Before we concluded our meal (which by the way we were in no hurry to finish, it being so pleasant in the open air upon the platform), our colony gathered round us: some corn was thrown to the poultry; and the goats received for their treat the thick rind of a water-melon we had eaten at dinner with our salted food. Poor Fidele had nothing but a bit of biscuit for his repast: we, indeed, often wished for a little fresh provisions, if it were only for his sake. I have known persons who would laugh at this feeling for the comfort and health of

a dog ; but I would not choose such persons for my friends. The sun set ; and we all retired respectively to our resting places.

CHAPTER VII.

SUNDAY, 20th Jan., 1734.—Although it was Sabbath, we arose with the dawn, and enjoyed our ablutions of sea-water ; and after dressing ourselves, at least in clean attire, but observing our amended costume of conveniency, we left the vessel early for our residence on shore ; there to breakfast, and perform our church service in the forenoon. It was the first Sabbath we had observed with prayer upon the shores of that land on which we now stood ; and we could not but be impressed with the merciful providence of God, who had preserved us from a watery grave, which now we firmly believed to have been the lot of our captain and all his crew. After reading divine service, we conversed on this awful subject ; charging ourselves with great coldness of heart towards our heavenly Father ; and also with something like indifference to the fate of our companions, as hitherto we had made no effort to gain the summit of the promontory, whence, by the aid of the ship's spy-glass, we might, perhaps, discover some trace of them ; even the melancholy wreck of their boat, lying on some neighbouring shore.

These reflections stimulated us to undertake the ascent of the promontory, which was very steep ; seeming, in truth, an absolute precipice. We, however, presently accoutred ourselves for the expedition. I put the pistols into my belt on one side, and a hatchet in the other ; slinging the spy-glass over one shoulder, and our canteen over the other. In my hand I took a boarding pike, at once for defence, if needed, and for a walking staff to help me on my way. My dear partner tied up a couple of oranges in a handkerchief, and with her pilgrim's staff also, and Fidele running by her side, we set forward a little before noon, only stopping at the spring to fill the canteen ; and as soon as the low rocks and brushwood would allow, we turned round upon the base of the hill, and there found the ascent not near so steep as we had supposed ; but the shrubs, and small trees, and spine-pointed aloes, retarded my poor Eliza's progress so much, that I was obliged to pioneer at almost every step with the hatchet, and remove the lopped branches, as well as I could, with the end of my pike ; for the thorns and prickles of some of the plants cannot be encountered with the naked hand ; so that I soon found I wanted

a bill-hook instead of a hatchet ; and I was glad in remembering there were plenty on board : they are made for the purpose of penetrating thickets ; cutting first, and by their hooked bill they then lay hold of the lopped branch, and pull it aside. We, however, contrived to struggle forward, though advancing but slowly. At one time, quite fatigued, we were about to return, when we were suddenly encouraged to proceed, by descrying at some little distance the opening in the back of our cave. After an hour's hard perseverance, we gained the spot ; and were surprised at being able, with very small difficulty, to climb on some projections of rock, and look through the aperture, which became a somewhat long passage, directly into the cavern. I hallooed, expecting some pigeons would fly out ; but we did not see one. " I doubt not they pass the noon in the woods," cried I. We now determined to return back into that shaded region ourselves, and seek another way of ascent in that direction ; but by the time we descended the present side of the acclivity, we were so heartily tired ; I with cutting and clearing away, and my poor wife with scrambling and disentangling her petticoats (which, although made short for the occasion, were still petticoats), we gladly sat down under the shade of a tree when we got to the foot of the promontory, and there partook of an orange for refreshment. During our ascent, I was in constant apprehension of coming upon serpents, but I did not communicate my fear to my companion ; and the fate of our little dog was also much in my thoughts, if such a rencounter should take place : happily we met none ; and as nothing of the kind had been seen by us heretofore, I now ventured to hope (which proved true) that there were not any on the island.

We found ourselves refreshed after resting awhile, and then proceeded, with a view of taking the height on this side of the hill ; which stands forth as a boundary between the woodland region and the silk-cotton-tree plantation. Our goats, which had come round from the cave thicket, and to whom we had given the rind of our orange, seemed disposed to follow us as well as Fidele ; but we drove them back, and caused the dog to pursue them for a few minutes towards the spring. We now resumed our excursion, and made considerable progress up a wild ravine beset with the Indian fig, till it brought us to a very steep and rocky ascent, on which we observed shrubs bearing leaves like those of the palm tree, but much shorter and more erect. I could have managed to have clambered up this formidable pass, but it was not possible for my wife. Full of

courage, however, she made the attempt ; and not until she had severely hurt herself, by falling several times, could she be persuaded to give it up. We at length agreed to again measure back our steps, which we did leisurely ; and, as we rested here and there in descending, I put in the pips of our orange into various spots on the side of the ravine. Having been out above four hours, and quite fatigued, we returned slowly to the plank-house, and lay down on the wooden settee to rest our wearied limbs. After a while, my dear Eliza, and her little dog beside her, fell fast asleep ; and I, feeling myself sufficiently renovated, stole away to prepare her some substantial aliment. When all was laid out, and the table placed upon the platform, I awoke her with a gentle kiss upon her forehead, and led her forth to my little banquet. "How kind this is, dear Edward," said she, smiling sweetly on me : "it was my duty, not yours." "You were too much fatigued, beloved," I replied ; "I was only afraid of disturbing you before I had accomplished it." Fidele was not waked by a caress ; but, perhaps dreaming what was going forward, quickly joined his mistress, wagging his tail for a piece of beef, which he greedily devoured ; it was not necessary to offer him drink, for he knew his way to the spring, and always scampered thither when thirsty. We were too tired to talk much, yet I could not but express my regret at our discomfiture. "Never mind, Edward ; you made a resolute beginning," was her ready reply, "and by some other route we may succeed better." She always had a word of hope for me ; and such to man is the great cheerer of life. Although extremely weary, we read a chapter from St John, a divine companion in our trans-Atlantic Patmos ; and, after closing our little land-house door, retired at an earlier hour than usual to our marine lodging for the night.

Monday, 21st.—In the morning, finding our limbs very stiff, I proposed a good sousing with sea-water to remove it : it was instantly adopted, and it acted like a charm, perfectly refreshing us. After dressing ourselves, we walked the deck, enjoying the cool air of that early time of the day and watching the sun rise above the eastern rock in glorious array.

On retiring below, we talked over our disappointment in not being able to ascend the promontory ; not only that we might look around for our companions, but that we might acquire some knowledge, by the view, of our exact situation ; for, as yet, we could not be certain whether we were on an island or the main. I therefore urged my affectionate wife to allow me to climb the height alone, but to this her fears for

me would not consent. On this decision, I felt I had no resource but to make a path, little by little, so as to admit us to ascend together at some future time. A bill-hook being necessary to the undertaking, I opened the main hatchway, and soon found the case in which they were kept. I drew from it a couple : and as it occurred to me a plurality of spades and hoes would save me the trouble of carrying my instruments of husbandry from one plantation to another, I took out pairs of them also ; and as the Indian corn which had been deposited in the steerage was now expended, I at this time got up a large bag of that article, by means of the winch ; whose power enabled me to hoist it easily out of the hold. My next object was a bag of biscuit, which I also got on deck. We were glad to have this supply : our biscuit had been done for some days ; and our poultry having begun to lay, we were desirous to feed them well ; also to have some whole corn to put into the ground :—that which we had been using having been all bruised, on purpose for feeding. We sat down in the cabin after my toil, and most thankfully breakfasted on some biscuit and Irish butter ; in which Fidele heartily joined, for the poor animal had eat nothing but salt beef and pork for many days ; and we finished this our morning repast with some wine and water, which we found a very agreeable change.

As I had been sufficiently industrious to plant and sow as many roots and seeds as would produce as much provision as we could require of this kind for the season, and as there was no great hurry about putting in the Indian corn (there being so great a supply of it on board), I felt I might direct my attention and labour to some other matters that waited my exertions. We had felt the want of fresh provisions, and been tantalized almost every evening by seeing the mullet leaping almost within our reach about the point below the spring. This set me on my inventions how to contrive a small punt (a sort of flat-bottomed boat), and which, with the planks I had at hand, I thought might be easily constructed. My Eliza, however, evinced some scruples about its safety :—it might prove my coffin ! I smiled, and soon succeeded in calming her fears, after which she amused and employed herself during that day, and in the two following likewise, by collecting and conveying on shore several things applicable to our comfort and conveniency. Meanwhile I got out some suitable planks, and other boards from the hold, and carried them, together with nails and other requisites from the carpenter's chest, to land also ; and then set heartily to work to construct my punt—my dock-yard being the slope of the

beach, to the northward of the rocky point, and close to the water's edge. My little bark was thus made :—five of the planks, each being twelve feet in length and one foot in breadth, were laid side by side ; and pieces of plank, four feet ten inches in length, were nailed across them, allowing one inch clear on each side ; and in nailing them across, care was taken to leave an interval of two inches between each third and fourth cross piece. Into each of these intervals, of which there were three, a cross piece of the same dimensions was inserted edgeways ; which necessarily fitted in tight, the planks being two inches in thickness. To the ends of these upright cross-pieces, the side-boarding was nailed, which was of elm ; and, being one inch in thickness, its edge just filled up the space beyond the extreme ends of the cross-pieces, and rested on the flooring of the punt : these boards were two feet in breadth, which I considered a sufficient height for the sides of my vessel : the stern part was formed by a five-feet cut of the elm board, placed nearly perpendicular to the floor of the punt ; and the bow was made by cutting the side-boards with a greater projecting slope, from below, upwards ; beneath which another five-feet cut of an elm board was firmly nailed across, and secured both here and abaft by inside cross-pieces and uprights. On the evening of the 21st my punt was put together, but it required to be caulked before it could be launched.

Thursday, 24th.—I made a fruitless rummage in the ship for its deposit of oakum, to caulk the punt with ; and, as a last resource, was about to set to, with my dear helpmate, to pick some large rope to pieces, and so make oakum of it, when I bethought myself of a place in the brig I had not yet explored, and in which it might probably be. This was the fore-cuddy, a sort of store-room for sails and other things, under the fore-castle, and secured by a small hatch. I instantly repaired thither, and getting off the hatch, went down. A welcome sight greeted me, for I found not only oakum in a large bag, but a pitch-kettle, and half a barrel of pitch ! I saw a bale of canvas, some spare sails, and a good deal of cordage ; all this was a most useful discovery. I hauled up the bag with the oakum, and took it on shore, and then returning for a large and small caulking-iron, the mallet, and grease box, I was set up, and intended to proceed to business instantly. Here my zeal had run a little before the order of things, for I found the bottom must be caulked first ; so I had to return and get a couple of handspikes to raise and turn my punt ; for although it was only twelve feet long, and five feet broad, and two feet high, I could not

lift it into the proper position by strength of arm alone ; but with the handspikes, and the help of my dear wife, I soon succeeded in turning it bottom up. When this was accomplished, I then perceived that I must not only caulk, but pay the bottom with pitch, before I could proceed to work on the interior of the vessel ; so back I trudged for the pitch-kettle, which was a large heavy iron porridge-pot : and in getting this on shore, and a sufficient quantity of pitch for all the purposes, nearly the whole day was consumed ; so that it was not till the following day I could fairly commence.

Friday, 25th.—As early as possible I set about the caulking. I first made a fire, and put on the pitch-pot with its contents, close to the rock where I was to work ; but, for fear of setting my pitch in a blaze, I kept the embers low ; and while it was preparing, laboured away blithely with my large caulking-iron ; driving the oakum in between the interstices of the five planks that formed the bottom. I completed this part of the business before I was summoned to breakfast, and even payed the seams over with a good coat of hot pitch. After I had eaten this refreshing meal, by the side of my happy Eliza in the plank-house, she walked down with me to the punt, and manfully wielding one of the handspikes, while I lifted by hand, we turned our boat again over on her bottom. She was delighted with the idea of having rendered me an assistance, without which, I told her, I really could not have succeeded in this important object. I continued to work all day, but my progress became comparatively slow. I perceived I had some other carpentry jobs to execute, which I had forgotten ; like the man that built his house without a staircase. I had to place a thwart for the rower to sit on, and pins for the oars, besides a seat towards the stern : so I extinguished the fire beneath the pitch-pot ; not being able to pay the seams till all the above was done. However, I completed the whole of the wood-work by evening, entirely to my satisfaction.

Saturday, 26th.—I finished the caulking before breakfast : and having put the fire again under the pitch-kettle, payed all the seams, inside and out, by two o'clock ; and while the pitch was yet soft on the interior, I threw handfuls of sand in every direction within the punt, so that the sand might mix and adhere to the pitch, which would in a great measure prevent it sticking to our clothes. I now went up to dinner ; and, after our usual repose during the heat, I walked my dear wife down in triumph, to see our work completed. I brought with me a piece of rope for a paynter to our punt, which I made fast to

the bow. I then took a plank for a lever, and raising the end of the little vessel next the water, requested my helpmate to shove one of the handspikes under it for a roller. That done, I elevated the other end in the same manner, pretty high ; and placing the other handspike beneath it, with a necessary force applied by the plank lever, the punt went off the handspikes cheerily into the water ; and we felt great joy in seeing our little ship afloat. I wound the extremity of the paynter rope securely round a fragment of rock, and thus left our future fishing smack, exulting in our work.

"Now, Edward," said my dear wife, "you deserve a glass of good wine, and you shall have it." Indeed she had prepared me a treat, for on our return to our wooden palace, she set before me a shaddock, with biscuit, and a bottle of wine ; and I enjoyed it much, until near the close of day, which her agreeable conversation quickly beguiled away. I never can forget this well-timed and agreeable feast ! the recollection of which, even now, gives me more delight than, perhaps, comes to the lot of some men to enjoy from their most elaborate pleasures. Enjoyment pre-supposes a capability ; and there are many requisites to constitute that capability. Our dear Mr Goldsmith often said, that "Satan can grant possessions ; but enjoyment is the gift of God ; and most especially the enjoyment of retrospection." The shaddock we had cut, was large as the best melon that grows in England ; its interior was a bright salmon colour, and its flavour was that of the orange, with the addition of an aromatic bitter, which rendered it highly grateful to the palate. We preserved its seeds in a little paper bag ; several of which my Eliza had made during the last week for such a purpose. In the course of conversation, my dear wife told me she had got quite a store of eggs during the week ; that all her hens were laying ; but that they still continued to make their deposits in the original nest between the fragments of rock, though as soon as she found an egg she removed it to the hen-house above. Her store consisted of ten. "Very well," I replied ; "when you have secured a dozen, let the nest below take its chance : remove no more ; perhaps Fidele wont touch them : and if he should, we have some to spare !"

The week being so well finished,—having, indeed, earned the promised rest, by "the sweat of our brow,"—we looked forward with thankfulness to the "day of rest," which the goodness of God had appointed ; and without which, little as we may sometimes think of its importance, even the most diligent would become weary of the occupations of life ; while a worse evil

would be the consequence,—such continued operation naturally separating us, by estranging our thoughts, from that future state of spiritual existence for which man originally was created; and to secure which our heavenly Father has never ceased to bring forward dispensations of righteousness and mercy.

Sunday, 27th.—We kept this Sabbath without intermixing with it any temporal anxieties. In sweet tranquillity of mind, we performed the service of the church in the morning; and in the evening read many chapters in Isaiah and St John; recreating ourselves in the intermediate time by walking the ship's deck, where we had beneath us the ark of our deliverance. When night drew on, we retired to our cabin with unusual comfort; and awoke at the dawn, quite refreshed by an undisturbed sleep, and the rest of the Sabbath-day.

Monday, 28th.—Some laundry work was to be done to-day; so my wife, and I her helpmate on this occasion, repaired early to the spring, with the clothes for ablution: and pulling off our boots and stockings, and with our battle-doors in hand, whose virtue we were now going to try, we fixed on two smooth large stones in the stream, and went to our task. The running water cleared the linen at every stroke; and by breakfast time we had prepared a good quantity for drying; each taking an end of the heaviest articles, by twisting them contrariwise rung them well. "There, my dame," said I; "as your lord and husband could not have turned the punt without you, so you could not have rinsed these sheets without him: our situation shows how much is to be effected by mutual assistance; and that, when it is rejected or refused, many useful things must remain unaccomplished. To such a lesson, at least, is the tendency of God's providence in the order of His creation."—"God is good, and perfect in all His ways, my dear Edward," she replied; "but man is too often wise in his own conceit, and therefore proud and ruinous of his own comforts." This dialogue was worthy of the pupil and the daughter of William Goldsmith: we did not find that the tone of our minds was lowered by the menial occupation of washing in a brook. We spread out the clean linen on the sands to dry; and then walked up to the plank-house, to take our usual morning repast. That over, we returned briskly to work again, and, in a couple of hours more, finished our labour. My Eliza was then very tired: I took her arm in mine, and led her back to the plank-house, and made her lie down on our friendly settee, to repose. I repaired, meanwhile, to watch the clothes, lest the sea-breeze should blow any of them into the lake; but I also employed myself in reconnoit-

ring the punt, which I found afloat, without having leaked one drop of water. It was my next business to make a couple of schulls, or small oars; and having previously provided two pieces of lancewood, about six feet long each, I fell to work with my hatchet, and an adze, and contrived to give them both a shape by two o'clock. The linen by this time was dry; so I bundled it all up in a table-cloth, and carried it to the plank-house, where I found my Eliza, with her constant attendant Fidele, fast asleep. I would not disturb her; and, as she had not had anything but cold salt beef for some time past, I thought of surprising her with something like a pepper-pot, a favourite dish in Jamaica; and putting on a stew-pan, with a due quantity of meat, and a few of our vegetables, with capsicums, and other seasoning at hand, I produced what I hoped might prove a savoury mess. When it was done, and placed upon the table, I waked my dear wife in my accustomed way, and led her smiling to the repast I had provided. "Dear, kind Edward!" exclaimed she, surprised and pleased as she sat down. She praised my pepper-pot highly: and much as I might be disposed to think well of my own work, I fancied every mouthful better and better after every word of her commendation.

We enjoyed ourselves in the cool shade of our position, for an hour after our meal, conversing on various subjects; which I shall pass over without special notice, although there might be some remarks to chronicle not altogether unworthy of attention: but as most people become tired in listening to other people's talk (though they seldom do in attending more scrupulously to other people's actions), I think it may be more acceptable, even to our nearest kindred, should they ever see this diary, to note down rather what we did than what we said in the extraordinary situation in which we found ourselves placed; and I will endeavour in future, though I fear hopelessly, to adhere to this good resolution. However, I shall stand excused, I suppose, in the present instance, for detailing a few last words, just as we rose from table; as thereby envy may be propitiated, and cease to regard us with an evil eye, seeing that the happy pair could quarrel, or at least make a beginning to do so. As the evening drew to a close—"Now for some mullet, my love!" cried I, rising from my chair. My wife smiled. I knew it was doubtingly; for I could ever read her mind in her look. "Well, we will try," continued I. "That is wisely said," she replied; "but you are always ardent, dear Edward; and such a feeling can only be reined in by experience."—

"Now, dear Eliza!" I rejoined, more pettishly than I ever before or since remember, "what can you know about experience, at least in catching mullet?" I saw the tear come into her eye: I felt what I had done; and I lost not a moment to throw myself on her neck, and kiss from her cheek that hallowed drop which I had caused to fall there. The cloud passed away, and the sun of peace smiled forth on us again. We walked to the cave, to see our poultry; and sauntered about until after sunset, feeding our stock as they came home, and amusing ourselves in various ways, until the soft twilight vanished; which in this country, at any season, is very short. We then went to the beach, where I struck a light, and kindled some fuel. I next drew up the punt, and placed a tin baking-pan on the bow, with some oakum and rotten wood in it, to which I set fire. I took the two rough-made oars, and was about to shove off, saying, "Now for the attempt!"—"Nay, dearest," she cried, "you shall not go without me; for I do hope you will be very successful." She stepped in, and sat on the seat astern. I rowed out well and pleasantly for twenty or thirty yards, and the mullet began to leap at the light soon after we had shoved off. They came down literally a shower, and many fell into the boat, on me and on her; and one of them fairly dropped into the baking-pan, beating about till we landed; so that in five minutes we returned to shore, and found nine fine fish in the punt, beside the more adventurous fellow close to our torch in the pan. "I prayed for your success, my honoured husband," said my wife, as we landed; "I should have been very unhappy, if it had fallen out otherwise, after my unkind behaviour to you on the occasion."—"No, my love," I replied, "you were not unkind; your admonitions are always conceived in kindness and in wisdom; it was I that betrayed an unbecoming peevishness: but all is well again, and the demon of discord is disappointed in his aim." We sealed our affection with a tender embrace: and, knowing there were no thieves to purloin our fish, we left them in the punt; and, repairing to our palace, fastened its door, and retired to our ship and to sleep.

Tuesday, 29th.—We arose as usual with the day, and went to our abode on shore. My dear wife's object was to "get up our linen." She had taken out flat-irons with her for our household at Belise, and our wooden settee, with a blanket thrown over it, making a good ironing board, she soon set to work like an experienced laundress. While she was so employed, I brought up the fish, and displayed them before her; some were

much larger than others, and are called calipeavar in Jamaica. We were gratified by the sight of fresh, and therefore more wholesome, food; but she more especially, since it was procured by my exertions; yet it was evident, in this hot country, we could not eat them all before some would spoil, and though it was but yesterday we regretted not having any, now we lamented having so many, being a useless waste of life. I, however, took them to the spring, and after preparing a couple for dressing, replaced the rest in the basket, leaving them under the shade of the rock, in the cool water at the spring head, but putting a few stones on them to prevent their being floated away. I roasted the two for our breakfast, which we relished much, and Fidele, too, partook joyfully of our repast; indeed, all the family, with the exception of the goats, so that there was not a fragment left. When the meal was over, and I had returned thanks, as was our usual custom and duty so to do, my dear wife came round behind me, and, leaning on my shoulder, kissed my forehead. I looked up and blessed her, for the tear stood in her eye: it was the heart that shed it. "Sweet angel," I whispered, in a subdued voice, and pressed her to my bosom; "more dear to me than ever; we can never be unhappy. Thou art all goodness, all gentleness, and I the most favoured of men." We wiped the tears from our eyes, which, unwittingly to ourselves, had escaped them, and rose, I taking her arm in mine. We walked towards the beach to bring back our feelings to their ordinary tone. The remainder of the day was passed by her in ironing, while myself made employment near her by constructing some necessary carpentry additions to our wooden palace. Our dinner, like our breakfast, was fish—the excellent calipeavar boiled, and eat with lime juice and bird-pepper. God's bounties were always like a sacrament to my Eliza; for she found in them all something more than food—indeed, a verification in her own bosom that His children "do not live by bread alone!" When we had finished our repast, "My dear Edward," said she, gathering up the small seeds of the bird-peppers, which were red ripe, "we must plant these, and also the seeds of the capsicum; we ought not to waste anything."—"True," I replied; "and they are of great use to the stomach in this relaxing climate."—"Indeed, it seems," returned she, "that in every country there are found fruits and spices most appropriate. Mustard and horseradish are the natural spices of England; so bounteous is Providence to the peculiar wants of His creatures; and I confess that here I give the preference to the capsicum and small

peppers."—"We will sow some of them this very evening," I replied, "and at the cocoa nut grove. There I shall also try our gaskets, my success with the fishing having put me in high hope for that exploit."

While we were talking, Fidele had run off to the spring to quench his thirst, after his share of our feast, and came back frisking about in an unusual way, which we observed, being amused for some time, till we perceived he wanted us to go with him. Eliza rose, and, on my doing the same, he ran before us, then came back, and then went on, playing gently forward, till we arrived at the fountain, and there we saw the object of his attention—our lame goat, with two young kids at her foot. We were delighted at the sight, and almost as much so with the sagacity—nay, something like sympathy—of our dear little dog. While we gazed on the new-born creatures, he fell to lapping the stream, so that we really were induced to believe he had not even stopped to drink when he descried the goat with her young progeny, till he had run back to bring us the tidings. My dear wife hastened to our house for some plantains to give the mother, and, as the goat and the kids were on the further side of the brook, I took up the little ones, and brought them across. When my Eliza returned, she fed the old goat from her hand, while I held the kids, and then we proceeded with them up to the cave, the poor animal following, and eating all the way. I deposited them within, leaving plenty of food near the mother for her sustenance. We were highly gratified by this expected event having terminated so propitiously, and, mutually congratulating each other, left our old lady to her nursery.

I then took a spade, a hatchet, a sack, and my gaskets, and my dear wife being armed with her pike, and with her loins girded to make her petticoats the shorter, we set off for the cocoa nut grove, distant about a mile and a quarter. On our arrival, we were glad to see the melon and pumpkin seeds we had planted a fortnight ago, well above ground; but there was yet nothing appearing from the yams or coccos. I found little or no weedy herbage to clear away from around the plants; but what there was I removed with the spade, which, however, I thought might be more conveniently done by a hoe. That finished, I deposited the spade under a shelvy rock, that stood about twelve or fourteen feet high, to the eastward of the grove. "Now, my love," said I, "we will try what we can do with the gaskets." She owned afterwards she was afraid I should fall in attempting to climb the tree; but she waited patiently to see

whether there was any real danger, before she expressed herself by more than a look of solicitude. In perfect silence she watched me take one of the gaskets, and pass one bight through the other round the tree, so that the depending bight made a stirrup at about three feet from the ground, into which I put one foot, and stood steadily, having one arm round the trunk of the tree above, and then placed the other gasket in the same way, a little higher, into the stirrup of which I set the other foot; then loosing the lower gasket, moved it above, making a third step upwards; then again loosing the other, and placing it uppermost; and so on. I ascended easily, and without danger, to the great thankfulness and rapture of my dear Eliza. Having gained the top, I took my hatchet from my belt, and, desiring my wife to keep out of the way, I lopped off the foot-stalks of the cocoa nuts with little difficulty, and in a few minutes detached twenty-three of them. This being done, I quickly descended, and felt quite disposed to exalt myself on my prowess; but my too partial wife left me no occasion to do so. She now, as ever, said all that self-love could most earnestly desire. We now threw the cocoa nuts towards the rocky ledge (our accustomed spot of refreshment here), where we sat down, and I proceeded to cleave off the husks with my hatchet. The first I detached I opened, and gave her the milk to drink, which she pronounced delicious. I regaled myself with the second; but we did not eat the soft pulp, although it was highly inviting; for, recollecting we had taken a fish dinner, we were afraid of disordering our stomachs. While I was clearing the husks from the other nuts, she engaged herself in sowing the pepper-seeds in various little patches of good soil found amongst the rocky fragments of the ledge, and I saw with pleasure that the spots were well chosen. Having detached twenty-one young cocoa nuts, besides the two we had used, I put them in my sack, with four old ones that had fallen from the trees, still in their husks, and which were beginning to germinate; then, throwing my sack on my shoulder, we turned homewards, full of satisfaction with the success of our expedition.

The sun had set before we left the cocoa nut grove, and the stars were out by the time we arrived at the plank-house, where our simple supper was set on the table. We lingered over it, enjoying the tranquil hour, as we had nothing to dread, and well knew our way on board, and, as not a breath of wind was stirring at the time, I lighted a candle, to enable my dear wife to read a small portion of Scripture, which she desired to do.

This pious exercise, however, was soon interrupted by a swarm of sand-flies, which tormented us to such a degree by their bites, that we were forced to decamp, and retire to our ship, which we gained without any accident, and found in our cabin a night of happy and uninterrupted repose.

Wednesday, 30th.—We paid our compliments early this morning to the two young strangers and their mother. We met her bleating at the mouth of the cavern, appearing rather distressed, for the kids could not follow her down the rocky steep, which formed a natural threshold. Notwithstanding the noise she made, the wild pigeons, unscared, were pecking away, along with the fowls, at the corn scattered on the floor of the cave; neither did any of the party move a wing at our approach, and we were not disposed to disturb them. It was rather a mystery to us that they were sometimes to be seen, and sometimes not; we, therefore, supposed they only took up their night's lodging in this spacious cavern; but whether they built their nests there, or in the woods, we could not yet determine. I guided the kids down to their mother, and she immediately led them amongst the thicket. My dear wife stopped me here, to look at her collection of eggs. She had completed the deposit above to twelve, besides two more, freshly laid ones, in another corner, and there were eight in the nest below, which we were glad to see, as it proved that at least more of the pullets had begun paying us this welcome tribute. Trifling as these things would be at our English home, in our solitude they were objects of the first importance.

I now proposed our losing no more time, wishing to proceed immediately to our plantation business at the silk-cotton tree. All my requisites were bagged and at hand for conveyance, and she had only to take up her basket with refreshments, and a small bundle of her reedy canes, to try her skill in constructing another like it. The sea looked so placid, and the air was so sweetly fresh, I expressed a wish that she would venture along shore in the punt. She consented with alacrity, and first stowing our separate burdens safely in its bottom, I then seated her securely, and our little dog, without any hesitation, leaped in after his mistress. The water was perfectly smooth, and the punt rowed lightly on its surface. From the point, to the sandy beach below the silk-cotton tree, the distance was about the same by water as by land, taking into the account the rounding of the rocky point just after starting, and I suppose we got to the cotton-tree beach in about the same time we should have done had we walked. Fidele was first on shore. I then handed

out my wife, and, having put out our things, I drew the punt a little further along, to where the beach becomes rather elevated and rocky, and so it extends to the south-west for nearly a quarter of a mile, which constitutes the range of cliff that, towards the sea, is the border of the open space to the southward of the silk-cotton tree—the situation where we hoped at some future time to fix our residence. We did not go up to the great tree, but made our head-quarters under a shelving rock on the beach, now in shade, and while I went to work in the dell, my wife commenced her basket. I laboured for about a couple of hours, having first marked out points, at about a yard distant from each other, by placing a stone on each, where I dug deep and well round, in the diameter of about a foot. In each of these places I deposited two grains of Indian corn, until I had planted twenty-four points. I then walked down to the beach, and found my dear wife rather perplexed in shaping her basket, but I encouraged her, as she had often done me on former occasions, and with smiling faces we sat down to a breakfast of biscuit and the milk of cocoa nuts. That over, our next task was to sow some shaddock seeds, for which we chose the ground above the silk-cotton tree, and not far from the spot where we had put in the orange pips, to form a future grove. We were thus busily employed, when Fidele ran barking into the brushwood behind us (above which towers the promontory that separates this place from the woodland region), and in a few minutes he killed an iguana. We could not see the feat; but, as he ceased to bark, and yet remained in the bushes, I concluded he had slain his game, and, therefore, endeavoured to make my way to him; but the thicket was so dense I could not. So I took my hatchet from my belt, and began to clear away the obstructing branches. His mistress, meanwhile, called him, and he came out; but he immediately ran back again, and kept watch within, until I had reached the place where the iguana lay. There I found my gentleman standing crowingly, and wagging his tail. The prize was welcome; but it led to a discovery much more so: a small spring streamed, as from a ewer down the rock, out of a little cavity in its side, about four feet beyond where I stood, and near to the foot of a fine cabbage-palm. I cut a passage to it through the underwood; and my dear wife, malgré her petticoats, gladly worked her way to the spot; by my assistance she got up to the little basin in the rock, over the edge of which the water ran in a clear slender rill. We tasted it, and found it sweet, cool, and pleasant; and we rejoiced at the discovery; for we had now a

fountain at each of our places of most sojourn. Much time had been thus unexpectedly consumed ; and, the day having become too hot for labour, I picked up the iguana, and leaving my spade between the spurs of the great tree, we returned to the beach. Although the sea-breeze had set in with much force, yet the sea itself being there under the lee of the land, the water was perfectly smooth ; so that we journeyed back in the punt as comfortably as we came. On landing, my dear helpmate would assist me to moor our boat ; after which, we walked to our old friendly fountain, where the mullet lay, and brought away a couple ; which we carried with the iguana to our plank residence. We thought it a pity to dress so much for our dinner ; but we did not like to waste the fish, which was barely tolerably fresh ; and as no animal substance will keep well twenty-four hours in this climate, it appeared to be compulsory on us to make a grand feast to-day.

The iguana was stewed in our usual way, and the mullet roasted : we eat them, with yams for our vegetable, and wished for more mouths to partake of this rich bounty to us ! We gave a sigh to our poor shipmates, who, if alive, might at this moment be dying of hunger. The fish was yet eatable, from the cool situation in which it had been deposited ; but as the rest in our little depot would not be fit to-morrow, I determined to bury the remainder as a manure, and to that end I dug four holes at different distances, half way between our palace and the lake, into which I threw the remaining mullet, with a little sand over them ; and there I planted the four germinating cocoa-nuts we had brought the evening before from the grove. I defended the spots from our browsing companions, by circles of split shingles.

All this accomplished, I sat down to assist my dear wife in her first essay at the basket ; and, as we had agreed to be content with a rude fabric, there was no great disappointment in finding that even our united efforts made but a bad job of it. I now began to think a good basket-maker no despicable personage in society. However, the old basket was yet serviceable, and, besides, would be carefully preserved as a model to work by. We regaled ourselves this evening with a melon instead of tea, and enjoyed ourselves till sunset, talking over the occurrences of the day ; among which our aquatic expedition gave occasion to speculation of more extended voyages ; and the discovery of the little spring near the silk-cotton tree, led us to build our airy castle with great magnificence, on the rising ground beyond it ; and, as the punt could convey the

materials, the probability of realising our vision became somewhat more apparent ; but the execution was necessarily put off *sine die*, as it is expressed ; that is without fixing a time ; or perhaps, as it sometimes honestly means, to the end of time. Which of these occult imports were in the meaning of destiny to us, time only can develope. We now finished the day by seeing our live stock safe in their retreat ; and, not choosing again to encounter the sand-flies, we fastened our door, and bent our course to the vessel, and to rest.

Thursday, 31st.—Every day seemed to bring its work ; and when that is not too laborious, employment is the happiest condition of man. It is told of a religious recluse, who, in the early ages of Christianity, betook himself to a cave in Upper Egypt, which, in the times of the Pharaohs, had been a depository for mummies, that he prayed there, morning, noon, and night ; eating only of the dates which some neighbouring trees afforded, and drinking of the water of the Nile. At length the hermit became weary of life, and then he prayed still more earnestly. After this duty, one day he fell asleep, and the vision of an angel appeared to him in a dream, commanding him to arise, and cut down a neighbouring palm-tree, and make a rope of its fibres, and, after it was done, the angel would appear to him again. The hermit awoke, and instantly applied himself to obey the vision. He travelled about from place to place many days before he could procure an axe, and during this journey he felt happier than he had been for many years. His prayers were now short and few ; but what they wanted in length and number they outmeasured in fervency. Having returned with the axe, he cut down the tree ; and, with much labour and assiduity during several days, prepared the fibres to make the rope ; and, after a continuance of daily occupation for some weeks, completed the command. The angel that night appeared to him as promised. “Dominico,” said the celestial visitor, “you are now no longer weary of life, but happy. Know, then, that man was made for labour ; and prayer also is his duty : the one as well as the other is essential to his well-being. Arise in the morning, take the cord, and with it gird up thy loins, and go forth into the world ; and let it be a memorial to thee, of what God expects from man, if he would be blessed with happiness on earth.” We arose as usual with the day, and made an early voyage in the punt to the beach below the great tree ; and there I dug the ground, and put in twenty-five double plantings of Indian corn, contiguous to the former. After I had finished my work, we scrambled into the

brushwood, where I cut several lengths of a sort of withy or bamboo, to assist us in making our baskets ; the reedy canes thrown on the beach by the storm, having proved rather brittle when too much bent. This little extra task finished, we returned by water. When arrived at our palace, we were glad to rest ourselves on our couch of plank, which to us was softer than down, for we were tired.

After reposing an hour, my dear Eliza spread our table with the residue of the iguana, which she warmed, adding a few coccos roasted. Meanwhile I employed myself in reconnoitring our stock ; which I brought all round the door, with the assistance of our little dog. During our dinner we gave them food also, for it was my kind-hearted wife's wish to accustom them to expect something at our hands at our usual meal-times : and it was quite cheering to us to see them happy around us : and the two innocent little kids particularly interested her. In the midst of our enjoyment she discovered that one duck was missing ; and I proposed an immediate search ; but the wise woman thought it probable the truant might have made a nest somewhere, and if so, it were better not to disturb her ladyship, by hunting about after her ; therefore I let the matter rest. Having finished dinner, my industrious Eliza, with the old basket for a pattern, made the frame-work of a new one ; and I, never so happy as when employed near her, began to plan a fish-pot to be made with some of the cane-reeds and bamboos. It was to be constructed like two wire mouse-traps, with their broad nether extremity joined, but without any division between them. A wicker-door was to be in the middle, to put in the bait, and to hand out the captive fish ; the trap-holes at the smaller extremities being made large enough for a good sized fish to enter ; and the whole machine was to be about three feet and a half long. We wrought emulously on until sunset ; and, as we worked, we talked over our discomfiture in attempting to gain the summit of the promontory, and finally resolved to dare it again to-morrow, commencing at the very dawn of day. Our work being now put aside, we packed the basket ready for to-morrow's expedition, and then retired on board for the night.

Friday, 1st February.—Our meditated enterprise was the awakening dream of the morning. Before the day broke, we were planning our ascent over all difficulties ; and perhaps our having failed in the preceding attempt added a circumspection to our present zeal, without which nothing of importance can be accomplished. We arose with the gray of the morning

My wife accommodated her dress to the occasion : the former essay having taught her that petticoats were incompatible with such achievements, she dressed herself à la Turque : that is, adding to her canvas boots a pair of trowsers, and a dimity bed-gown, that came half-way to her knees ; girding her waist with a sash, composed of two or three yards of red bunting, of the narrow breadth of which the ensigns of ships are made. With this well-contrived raiment, and a small turban of muslin and red bunting on her head, to save it from the sun,—thus attired, with her pike in her hand, and her little dog at her foot, we landed, and walked up from the vessel. I brought a musket on shore, with half a dozen rounds of ball-cartridge ; and, calling at the plank-house, took with us the spy-glass, an axe, and a bill-hook, some seeds, and the basket which we had packed last night with refreshments. I also swung my canteen over my neck, which we filled at our spring, and then embarked in the punt just at sunrise. After rounding the rocky point, I rowed along shore ; and, passing our place of landing below the silk-cotton tree, kept on, under the cliffs, for about a quarter of a mile : the beach thus obstructed by rocks re-appeared, which continued for about another quarter of a mile : running out into high rocks. Just where the fine beach terminated, we concluded to go on shore, and attempt the ascent, a break appearing in the side of the mountain. We here drew up the bow of the punt, and secured it by the paynter to a tree, and landed our things, removing our basket to a shady place further from the beach, on our way through the trees to the foot of the acclivity. We then set forward, harnessed, as I have before described, in my own necessary accoutrements, not forgetting my bill-hook in my belt. I gave the axe to my wife to place in her sash, having her pike for her staff, and Fidele her constant follower. We began the ascent. To make so much parade about surmounting a hill not six hundred feet high, may appear ridiculous ; but there were some real obstacles to remove, and many imaginary difficulties and perils to encounter. We were in the dark as to our way, and the dark always magnifies danger.

We found paroquets numerous in the trees, feeding on the yellow fruit of a species of palm. I would not kill any of them : we had not taken life from any creature unnecessarily since we set foot in the island, neither had a shot been fired, to awaken alarm in any of the feathered tribe. We pursued a tolerable path for a short time with little interruption through the wood, which brought us to a very steep acclivity, overgrown with

dwarf palms : we were encouraged to cut our way up this height, as the hill above it seemed to split, showing a rocky face on the north. My wife sat down under a tree near the commencement of the ascent, where I deposited the musket, and went to work with the bill-hook, clearing a narrow passage through the dwarf palms ; among which there was here and there an aloe, with its extended leaves pointed by a strong thorny spike. It cost me two hours' hard labour to cleave my way, and cast the cuttings aside, through a space not exceeding thirty yards. My kind Eliza often showed her sympathy in my exertions by calling out, "My dear Edward, I wish I could help you." At length she started up, saying, "I shall be with you again presently ;" and, after a while, returned with the basket of our provisions, which had been deposited between our present station and the beach. I was not insensible to this act of consideration ; and thanking her as I ought, desisted from my work, and joined her under the tree, where she was spreading out our cold collation. We eat heartily, and with thankfulness ; and, being satisfied, replaced what was left in our basket, to await our return ; then proceeding in Indian file, that is, one after the other, to ascend the steep, we clambered to the summit : from hence I had to cut a path through its thickly-wooded brow, rather downwards and slanting, into the ravine ; the bottom of which was covered with fragments of rock, fallen from the precipice above. At about eleven o'clock we got fairly into the ravine, with high cliffs to our left, and a steep hill covered with dwarf palms to the right. We had now only to take care not to fall nor stumble among the stones and fragments of rocks that were scattered everywhere. We were proceeding slowly and cautiously, when Fidele ran aside, and began to bark : I anticipated an iguana, and stood still, expecting to see him turn it out and kill it. A living beast, but not an iguana, certainly came forth from between the broken masses, which the dog endeavoured to seize, but could not ; he, however, soon turned the creature over, for it was not much larger than the iguana. I would not fire at it, although we did not know what it was. It made a noise when the dog approached it, something between a grunt and a squeak : I thought it time, however, to succour our little friend, who had commenced a second attack on the animal ; so I scrambled up to the scene of contest with my bill-hook, and found the poor nondescript rolled up like a hedgehog, but having the appearance of a tortoise. I could not strike a creature in such a passive attitude ; and, waiting until my dear wife could make her way to us, I asked her what

I should do with it. "Don't hurt it, Edward," she exclaimed ; "it is a poor harmless armadillo : I have seen its picture in a book." We then agreed to tie it up in a handkerchief and take it home. I accordingly made it safe, but found it very troublesome to carry, it being about twelve pounds' weight ; I therefore hung the handkerchief on the branch of a tree, that I snubbed off short for the purpose, meaning to stop for it as we came back. We then pursued our scrambling way up the ravine. After ascending through this cleft for about a quarter of a mile, we came out on a smooth barren surface, a considerable height being on both sides of us, and before us : and in half an hour more, by a turn to the left, we gained the highest summit of the promontory, to our great joy. My dear Eliza placed her arm in mine, while we stood and looked around with wonder. A thousand questions that had perplexed us for so many weeks were here answered at once. We saw the sea separating two islands, and this arm of separation we had taken for a lake ; but we observed that this expanse of water was land-locked on every side, so that it was, in effect, a lake as to smoothness and harbour security. We saw the extended reef to the eastward, terminating with rocks on either end, with small islands to the northward of the place where our vessel had struck ; and we discovered the promontory on which we stood to be a peninsula.

The sun was in the meridian, and we had no shade here ; but the sea-breeze blew around us with healing on its wings, and we did not complain of the heat. I now took the spy-glass, and looked around in every direction—on beach, and rock, and sea,—for any sign of our shipmates or the boat ; but nothing was to be seen. I then endeavoured to discover any huts, or other sign of natives, or any wild animals ; and, last of all, swept the horizon, to look for other land, or perchance espy some passing vessel in the distance ; but I could discern nothing. We now, having cooled a little, sat down ; and, after resting our limbs a few minutes, took each a reviving mouthful or two of water from the canteen : we then rose, and proceeded along the smooth crest of the promontory towards its northern extremity, but kept as close as we could, in our walk, to its eastern side. As we advanced we saw breakers below us, and as far as the eye could see ; also a great black rock, as if part of the promontory, to the northward and eastward of us. It was the same rock, a part of which we had observed from the cabin windows of the brig as she lay in the creek. Further on, we remarked a clear channel between those breakers and great rock, and the promontory. After going perseveringly forward,

even in the heat of the sun for nearly two miles, we arrived at the northern extremity, and there had the satisfaction of looking down on our vessel, which we found immediately below us : it appeared like a boat ; and our wooden palace, on the sandy ridge, like a band-box.

To return by the way we came would be a serious labour for my Eliza, after the fatigue she already had undergone : I therefore proposed to cut a path for her down to the light hole of the cave, from which there already was a way sufficiently open to descend. We debated the subject as we edged down towards it : but she was averse to the proposal : she could not bear the idea of leaving the armadillo suspended in the handkerchief till to-morrow, or the alternative of my going alone to release it. "The truth is," said she, "we had no right to make a prisoner of the poor thing for our amusement ; and we are justly served, to be placed in this dilemma by having done so." She certainly appeared a little vexed at the matter. We therefore determined to rest a little, and then returned to our prisoner. So sitting down under a dwarf palm that stood near us, and soon after stretching ourselves on a rocky ledge below its shade, in a short time we all fell asleep, she with her head and arm on my lap, and her little dog by her side.

It appeared by the position of the sun when we awoke, that we had slept at least two hours ; we then arose, and taking some water from the canteen, to apply to our faces and hands, we felt refreshed, and resumed our journey by the crest of the hill, keeping now on the western side of the ridge. After proceeding about half way in this, our backward pilgrimage, we could see the silk-cotton tree below us, and some part of the open ground contiguous to it, the locality of which made it an object of peculiar interest. About an hour before sunset we began to descend the ravine, stopping now and then to put in some seeds of the shaddock, the orange, and the lime, in such places as appeared most promising. We found the poor captive as we left him, perfectly quiet in his hammock ; but he must have made an effort to escape, for we found a hole in the handkerchief, and probably it was the swinging movement he occasioned by the attempt, that most likely frightened him into resignation to his fate. I took the handkerchief down ; and my dear wife thought I had best let him go ; but I said, we could feed him and use him well, and if he would not pet, we could at any time give him his liberty. "At any rate," I added, "I should like to see his head, and tail, and feet, which, hitherto, he has kept close within his coat of mail." It well might be

called so, for his body appeared scale over scale, not like the continuous covering of the tortoise. I therefore bore him along with us, and heartily glad we were to arrive at the foot of the tree, where our basket was deposited. The sun was sinking low in the horizon, and we sat down eagerly to devour the fragments of our morning repast. Poor Fidele was not the least hungry of the party, eating his share greedily, after which his kind mistress poured water into my hand for him to drink. There were no fragments to gather, so we put the armadillo, tied up as he was, into the basket, and made a rapid march through the trees to the punt.

This little boat was now a great accommodation to our weary limbs, and I rowed it along shore with great delight, seeing my dear wife so comfortably seated, while I thus made a finish of our fatiguing expedition. We relanded a little after sunset, and literally dragged ourselves up to the plank-house, where, being so very tired, we indulged ourselves with a glass of wine, after which I cut a piece of melon, and put it on the floor, hoping the armadillo might eat some of it next morning : we then untied the handkerchief, and laid him down beside his intended breakfast. The sand-flies began to bite, so, hastily fastening the door, we made our escape to our marine dormitory, where, without rocking, we slept soundly.

Saturday, 2d.—In the morning we found ourselves very stiff from the efforts of the preceding day, and had recourse to a copious ablution of sea-water upon the deck, immediately after getting up, which was succeeded, as on former occasions, by a perfect renovation. My wife had experienced so much utility in her change of costume, that with my permission she would henceforth dispense with the petticoats, and dress à la Turque : I was quite agreeable ; the new dress was sufficiently modest, and more appropriate to her present situation ; and, in truth, it was very becoming, being not a little graceful. We were early at the plank-house, excited by curiosity to see the armadillo, we peeped through the lath lattices of the eastern window, and found him parading about, at a slow pace : his head appeared small, his tail scaly, and by no means short, and his fore feet were armed with long strong claws : we could perceive that he had eaten a great portion of the piece of melon ; and this pleased us both. “Now, my love,” I said, “you go and take a look at our stock, and I will palisado in a castle for Signor Armadillo, at the west end here of our own palace ; I have plenty of shingles at hand, which I shall drive into the sand, and do the thing presently.” I executed my project with about

forty ; first giving them a pointed shape at the nether end ; then struck them severally into the sand with the hammer head of my hatchet, making an area of twelve feet by six, and placing them with an interval of about three inches : when they were driven in, they were not more than a foot high ; but the armadillo was no jumper, and so the rampart was high enough. I completed my erection in a couple of hours, before which time my wife was at my elbow, followed by goats and kids, and the gallant cock, with only one of his hens. The ducks would not be tempted to-day from the brook ; but my helpmate had pleasing intelligence to bring me : two of the hens were sitting ; one in the hatch, the other on the original nest among the fragments of rock near the cave. I thanked her for the good news ; and my little stoccado being finished, I opened the door of the plank-house when the poor armadillo, being alarmed, made the best of his way out of our sight under the friendly settee. I took him out, however, by the back, and, carrying him forth, laid him down within his castle. I there placed the bit of melon he had left beside him, though he was then rolled up in his case again—head, feet, and tail being invisible. We left him in this situation ; but Eliza took her station on the plank-seat, to watch his movements through the lattice work of the western window. In a few minutes she called to me to come to her. He had unfolded himself, and was trying to get out between the shingles, but finding that impracticable, he fell to digging the sand, and in less than a minute had buried himself beneath it. We looked awhile for his re-appearance, but as he did not choose to come out again, we gave him up for the day, and sat down to a tea breakfast, which to us was always a luxury.

After this, as to-morrow would be the Sabbath, and as we had some arrangements to make, to prevent our breaking in upon its sanctity by domestic employments, we returned on board together, to collect and set in order what we might want for the next day's provision. My wife had heard me describe a pumpkin pie, as being little inferior to an apple pie, when the juice of limes was squeezed into it. She asked me if she might venture to try her skill at one : I smiled my assent ; and we took on shore with us (where our cooking preparations could be managed best) a brown baking dish, some flour, Cork butter, and her other ingredients. She set nimbly to work on our settee, by way of a dresser, while I turned my care to build up a good oven of hot embers in the proper place for baking. She suddenly called out to me, she had forgot to seek in our Bristol store-chest for some cloves, to complete the necessary

seasoning : "You can easily get at it, Edward," said she, "for I remember it was put in the steerage passage ; and it is full of all manner of spices, and such like things."—"Yes, love," I replied, "I perfectly recollect where it was put, and will bring you some of its contents in a few minutes." Accordingly I hurried away, and found it as mentioned. She thanked me, when I put the cloves into her hand. "Edward," said she, "when these things were given to us by your kind aunt at Bristol, little did she imagine for what necessities she was providing ! How gracious has the Almighty been to us, to prepare us such a table in the wilderness !" I replied to her with the same feeling of wondering gratitude : and she added, "My dear Edward, if we are to spend our lives on this island, and if it be God's will, I shall be content to do so : and perhaps I never could be happier than I am ! And if we remain so long as to make a nice dwelling for ourselves at the silk-cotton-tree plantation, I know there are plenty of crockery wares, and every other necessary for household comfort in the vessel, if they have escaped destruction from the storm."—"That is true, dear Eliza," I replied ; "and I hope some day to indeed put that plan in execution."

When she had finished making the pie, I placed a spare brown dish upside down, over it, having made a bed for them, thus placed together, in the embers, and then drew more embers over the whole. She was highly pleased with my contrivance, and, while the oven part was going on, set our palace to rights again. After our frugal dinner (for our pie was for to-morrow), I proposed trying my fish-pot, which I had just finished. Eliza rose with alacrity, and Fidele wagged his tail and barked, as if he snuffed some new sport in the wind. I then proceeded to fit up my fish-pot : a flat stone was selected, which I fastened by a small rope to the bottom, to sink it ; and another piece of good rope, about three fathoms long, was made fast to the rope fastening of the stone ; the other end of it was passed through the body of the fish-pot, to come out above, right in the centre, so that as it was raised by the rope, it hung evenly on either side of the aperture : whence the rope issued, was a wider hatch for the fisher's hand. To this, on the present occasion, I suspended a bit of fat pork on a slip of twine, to hang loosely in the centre, directly opposite to the two holes at the machine's extremities (which, as I before stated, were hollow cones, with the narrow ends towards each other), so that the fish might be tempted in towards the bait, but when in could not get out. I took a shingle for a buoy, to float the end of

the rope ; and all being ready, we proceeded to the punt, and pushed out a little beyond the extremity of the rocky point. I let down the fish-pot, in nearly three fathoms water, and took the precaution to bring a bucket to keep the fish alive, should we take any.

It was not yet near sunset ; so, on relanding, we strolled about visiting our melons and the pumpkins, which we had planted between the rivulet and the southern part of the base of the rocky point ; those that were sown earliest had spread their shoots to a great distance, some of them having run upwards of twenty feet from the stem ; and these were all in flower—fine large golden blossoms ; while those planted ten or twelve days after them, were nearly as luxuriant, but not yet in flower. The pine-apple top looked well and seemed to grow a little. It was no small pleasure to us to see this fine promise before us, and to perceive that none of them had been touched by the goats. The ducks were here waddling alongside the water ; but we could count only eight ; two were then missing. The goats were browsing on the opposite bank, near the spring head, and the kids playing about like kittens. We threw them a little corn ; and at the same time took some which had been bruised, to the sitting hens in their roost.

As soon as the stars appeared, I took my tar-rope torch to the beach, to be a bait for the mullet, in case my fish-pot should fail. I rowed out, and took up the pot, but to my disappointment there was nothing in it. However, I found a large horse-shoe crab, with great spikes all over him, sticking fast to the outside. Without touching him, I let down my trap again into the sea. The mullet had been jumping before the sun went down ; and as soon as I lighted the torch, which my dear wife held in her hand, they began to leap at the boat. We did not want a cargo ; therefore I soon began to put for the shore ; but ere I reached it, five fine fish had made themselves our prisoners ; and having filled the bucket with salt water, as they fell into the boat, I popped them into it. This was a bright thought. I placed a couple of shingles over the bucket, to prevent their getting out ; and having drawn the punt to the shore, returned, well pleased with our success, to the plank-house.

After adjusting ourselves a little, we lighted a candle, and sat down to enjoy some fruit ; for we had now a twofold reason for not sparing the melons : most of them in our store were on the spoil, and the seeds we had sown gave us an early earnest of plenty. During the day we had seen nothing of the armadillo, for he had continued under the sand ; but we now threw a piece

of melon into his enclosure, which we thought might, in the morning, tell us something about him. In the midst of this, the sand-flies became very troublesome ; which vexed us not a little, at the prospect of being thus constantly annoyed by their nightly visits. I first proposed making a smoky fire ; but we feared the combustibility of our mansion : I then thought, if my wife had no objection, of trying to smoke a cigar the next time we encountered them, although I owned I was no adept at such an operation. She said that, so far from objecting, she had liked the smell of the cigars in Jamaica ; and she now supposed the people had used them at first to keep off the moschetos and sand-flies there ; therefore she would be very glad of my resource, if it would not make me sick. This dialogue being ended, while the little wretches seemed to be taking vengeance on us beforehand for plotting their discomfiture, we hastily put out the candle, and, fastening the door, made our way to our vessel, and to bed.

Sunday, 3d.—We dressed ourselves in clean clothes, with more than an every-day neatness, and so prepared for the quiet enjoyment of the day, laying aside all worldly care ; for even in this solitude we were beset by it ; and as we walked the deck in the cool of the morning, our hearts expanded with the contemplation of the glorious scene before us, and with a deep recollection of all the mercies of that God who had dedicated this day to His peculiar service. We landed to our breakfast, and took the earliest opportunity to reconnoitre the armadillo : he had eaten part of the melon we had left, but was again burrowed out of sight.

After our repast (during which all our colony were rejoicing in the shade near us), I read the morning service. But it was not reading only : our hearts were in every sentence and word. After this our divine duty, we strolled forth under the rocks, and visited our preserve of fish, which were moving about lively in the bucket. We then proceeded forward, arm in arm, along the base of the point, which was here peculiarly pleasant, from the green herbage below, and the delightful shadow of the cliff ; and in about fifty yards onwards, just where the reedy grass begins to thicken, Fidele stopped, and poked his nose in among some high tufts of the same, mingled with fragments of rock. We observed him attentively ; but as he did not bark, we did not know what to make of it. Soon we heard a hissing noise, which I instantly concluded to come from a snake, and in an instant caught the dear little dog up in my arms ; then peeping into the brake myself, to see for the reptile, had the agreeable

surprise of perceiving one of the lost ducks, sitting. My dear Eliza was quite pleased with the discovery : it was important in itself ; and it honoured her sagacious surmise on the subject, when the first duck was missing. "Every thing goes well with us, dear Edward," she said ; "thanks to kind Providence !" We now proceeded a little further, to our melon and pumpkin plantation, where their golden flowers and large green leaves already spread a gorgeous carpet over the surface of the ground. We followed the rivulet that ran behind this luxuriant little plot, towards the lake, and found some of our ducks busily feeding amongst the reeds on its sides, which at some places were growing tall and strong. This gave me an idea they might be of the species whose roots are esculent ; and I proposed to my wife trying them ourselves. "Most probably you are right in your supposition, dear Edward," she replied ; "but we have abundance ; and perhaps it would be most prudent, if you please, not to make any doubtful experiments in eating things of the salubrity of which we can have no certainty." I applauded her caution, and agreed with her entirely on the principle.

We returned to our palace, and thankfully dined on our cold pumpkin pie, which sprinkled with a little sugar and lime-juice, turned out to be excellent ; and that excellence was not a little enhanced to me by its being the handiwork of my beloved helpmate. The afternoon was passed in conversing on subjects of eternal import, and in reading from the New Testament : we then proposed a walk to the cocoa-nut grove ; and returned, more refreshed than fatigued, to our ship ; where we finished the day by prayer and praises to our almighty Protector.

Monday, 4th.—We awoke long before daylight, and talked over the business of the ensuing day. I pointed out the necessity of speedily putting into the ground whatever more we intended to plant, as the moistening effects of the late rains were quickly disappearing under the daily increasing heat of the weather. Thus impressed, we arose with the dawn, and had arrived at the plank-house before the goats and poultry came out from the thicket. I carried Fidele in my arms, that, by cautiously advancing, we might possibly get a sight of the armadillo : he was visible ; but as soon as he perceived us, he burrowed, and was gone. We then proceeded to business. I put some more corn in our bag, and screwed off the tops of four pine-apples for planting. My dear wife, too, filled her basket with many requisites ; and, followed by our dog, we marched towards the punt, with all our proper accoutrements besides. We found the fish still all alive in the bucket ; and giving them

a fresh supply of sea-water, I moved it out of the punt, to a recess in the rocks, and then pushed out to the point. On the way, I raised the fish-pot, in which there was a fine grouper (a fish much esteemed in Jamaica): as it could not escape, I let the pot down again into the water, and rowed off for our destination.

We landed our implements on this side of the rocks which occupy the middle part of the plantation beach: here Eliza took up a position to go on with her wicker work, the materials for which we had brought with us. I set to, to put in Indian corn; which I was anxious to sow (although we had a large supply on board), that we might have the young cobs to roast when our plantains should be exhausted. On walking up to the ground to commence my labour, I gladly saw the melons and pumpkins beyond me flourishing luxuriantly; but what gave me most pleasure was our sugar-canes, which had not been planted much more than a fortnight, now nearly a foot above the soil; so that I could not refrain from calling my dear wife to come and look on them. There were six shoots, two and two, four feet distant. In them, perhaps, we beheld the progenitors of a future large sugar plantation, in this as yet unpeopled island. "Now, beloved," said I, "bring up the four pine-tops; I will dig their places, and you shall set them here." She was pleased with my request, because we were to be partners in the work; for to identify us in every thought and every act was her greatest delight. While she went for the pine-apple tops, I prepared their places, in a line with the sugar-canes. When she had planted them, I earthed them up; and, after gazing on them a while with much complacency, she leaning on me with her arm, we separated to our different avocations. I worked this morning about three hours; putting in about fifty plantings of Indian corn, two grains in each hole. This accomplished I joined my wife under the rocks by the beach: she had our breakfast spread forth,—cold salt beef, biscuit, and cocoa-nut milk; not omitting a good slice of water-melon, a most delicious and thirst-quenching fruit in a tropical climate. The wonderful rapidity with which we had seen how the plants grew, excited our remarks and gratitude; for we clearly saw that before our stock of this cooling fruit, and our pumpkins, could be expended, we should have an abundant supply from our plantations; and it became the wish of our heart that our friends in England could partake of our delightful melons.

We now re-embarked for our return, taking up the fish-pot,

with the grouper, by the way : I did not, however, haul it on board, but kept it in the water, and left it within a few yards of the beach, throwing the buoy on the rock, so as to enable me to get it when wanted without the trouble of launching the punt. On reaching the plank-house, we sat down to cool and rest ourselves. During our conversation I observed, that, as we had now made all our great plantings, I should like to put in some of the nuts from the chocolate-trees, here and there in the woodland region ; and, when they grew up a little, I would thin the wood in their immediate vicinity to give them room. Indeed, it seemed very remarkable that we had not seen any of those trees, excepting near the mouth of the cave : and when I took that circumstance into consideration, in connection with the military belt I found there, it did not appear improbable that those trees had sprung from some nuts accidentally scattered by those to whom the belt had belonged when they were preparing their chocolate meal : such being the chief refreshment of the Spaniards on the main. Next day we fixed on for setting some of the nuts we had already gathered. My dear wife wished to finish her basket, which now was nearly done ; so I went on board to hoist up an empty water-cask from the hold, a machine that I designed for a very useful purpose. I was not long in effecting my object ; and, without much trouble, got it on shore. I proceeded to the plank-house, where I found the basket finished ; and a very neat and perfect work it was, with a strong handle like the pattern. I could not but applaud my Eliza, and she was highly gratified in having deserved and received my approbation. I now rolled up the empty cask to the door ; and she repaid me with her commendation on my foresight, when I told her what I was going to do with it. The cask was to be a conservatory for our live fish. I cut a pretty large scuttle in one of the ends, intended for the head, and with a proper carpenter's tool bored half a dozen holes in the other end, which was to be the bottom, and a few also in the sides : the thing was then done. I rolled it down to the beach where the punt lay, and let the cask down into the water at about three feet deep. I then gathered a few stones the size of bricks, and throwing them into the scuttle, the cask soon sunk, the water rising in it through the holes made in the bottom and sides : being thus securely placed, its top stood about six inches above the water's edge, the water within, of course, reaching to within six inches of its being full ; and by means of the side holes there would be a constant flux and reflux. The repository being ready, I drew up the fish-pot ; and taking out the

grouper safe and sound, popped it in. My dear wife was quite amused in seeing the fish plunge in the cask, as if it enjoyed its new quarters. I requested her to take a walk with Fidele, while I got the pot ready to lay out again: in truth, I intended to bait it in a way I knew she would object to, did she see the preparation; therefore, as soon as she was a little way off, I took one of the live mullet out of the bucket, and laid it on the sand until it was dead: I then baited with it, and called to her to ascend the rock, so that she might have me and my apparatus in sight. She clambered up, and stood near enough to talk with me, while I laid the fish-pot; and in a few minutes I was again on shore with the punt.

During the remainder of the afternoon I employed myself in weeding our plantation near the cave-spring, and Eliza was occupied with her needle. As it approached sunset she prepared tea, to which I gladly joined her in our wooden palace. I found already there, before the door, our poultry and goats, to which we distributed the remains of the mullet we had left at dinner, and the rind of our melon. It was surprising to see how greedily the ducks devoured the fish; and we afterwards thought that its occasional mixture with their ordinary food greatly augmented the number of their eggs. Their chuckling enjoyment reminded us of the sitting absentees; and my wife instantly tripped away with some pounded corn to the matrons at the cave's mouth; while I ran down with a similar tribute to the covert where my lady duck was hatching her young brood.

By the time we returned, the sun had set, and the sand-flies began their annoyance. Our culinary fire under the rock was still unextinguished, but it lay at too great a distance to affect our tormentors, for the wind generally went down with the sun; hence the fire's smoke seldom could be made to reach them. My Eliza therefore kindled a piece of stick at the embers, and brought it to me on a plate. I lighted a cigar immediately, and managed it pretty well for a beginner. As I smoked it, she drew close to me, so as to be quite within its protecting influence; and to our great satisfaction, we found the expedient successful: but I could not accomplish more than half a cigar at this time, for I began to feel the tobacco affect my head with a slight giddiness. I therefore carefully put out our antidote; and, fastening the door, we retired to our vessel to sleep, not a little thankful that the sand-flies did not incommode us there.

Tuesday, 5th.—The early dawn found us on the alert, talking over the intended operations of the day, which, however, were not numerous. Of our old arrangements, we had only the

cacao-nuts to plant ; but it had occurred to me, that, as necessity had obliged me to become a cigar-smoker, a future provision for that would be a prudent matter of thought. I had a large box of them, to be sure ; yet if we should sojourn long on the island, its contents must gradually disappear, and then in what a strait we should be, banished in the evenings from our dear plank-house. But recollection furnished me with a remedy : the corn-cobs, the pumpkin-seed, and the tobacco-seed, still remained in my sea-chest, where I had deposited them in Virginia, for my dear old father. My Eliza was delighted with this good news : no time was lost in possessing ourselves of the precious seeds, and it was resolved to begin sowing them this very day, in our cotton-tree plantation.

But the morning's work commenced with a visit to the fish-pot, in which I found three fine fish, of a species less than the grouper ; they are called, in Jamaica, snappers. I quickly popped them into the conservatory, and baited again with a mullet which lay dead in the bucket. On our arrival at the plank-house, not seeing the armadillo, I was disposed to dig him up ; but my wife persuaded me to let him alone, and starve him a little, by which she thought we might at last force him to come out for his food, and at length grow familiar. Acceding to her reasoning, nothing was to be thrown into his crib this day ; and the shy gentleman being left to fast, we took our basket with our own refreshment, and with Fidele trotting after us, hastened on foot through the woodland region to the plantation.

Eliza took her station for awhile at the foot of the silk-cotton tree, and I, with a zeal that sweetens labour, went to work with my spade, and had put in the tobacco seeds, at about eighteen inches apart, almost all before eleven o'clock. Then it became too hot for further exertion ; but I had made a sufficient tobacco plot, and satisfied with my work, I could not but be so with myself. When I had nearly finished, my dear wife went up to the little spring in the rock-basin for some fresh cool water, and there, Diana-like, fell in upon the chase, and killed an iguana. I heard her dog give tongue, and I hallooed "Tally ho !" at which she laughed aloud, and being now familiar with the sight of that ugly creature, she took it up, and brought it to me in triumph. We sat down together under the deep shade of the great tree, and enjoyed our cold collation of salt meat and fruit. "Dearest Edward," said she, "this is a delightful spot ! How comfortable shall we find ourselves, should you ever be able to erect a dwelling for us on the rising

ground here, as you propose ! Besides, as there is no sand near, I might hope we should not be tormented by those relentless little wretches which infest our plank-house.”—“ I trust, in the cool season of next year, my own Eliza,” I replied, “ I may be able to accomplish it, and meanwhile, when all our urgent present labours are done, I will begin to gradually bring materials to the spot.”—“ Oh, my kind husband ! ” she rejoined, “ how happy am I with you even in this solitude. I would not change my lot with a queen.” After our repast, I deposited the iguana in the basket, and we returned into the woodland region, where, under a protecting, though not deep shade, I commenced putting in the cacao seeds, and by two o’clock had planted about forty. I marked each spot with a bit of stick, for the purpose of fixing a little guard of sticks round each on a future day.

I was rather tired by the labours of this part of the day, and gladly adjourned for our hours of repose and refreshment to the plank-house. When these aids of wearied nature had sufficiently recruited me, I began to talk alertly of the remainder of my day’s avocations, and told my dear partner that I meant to close them with a grand fishing match, and so stock our conservatory well. She smiled, and observed, that it had occurred to her “ there would be some difficulty in getting the fish out of the conservatory, after they were once in.”—“ Not to you, sweet one ! ” I replied ; “ did I not say you should be my fisher ? I now intend to keep my promise ; and it shall be your office, whenever you please, to take the fish out of the conservatory.”—“ I shall always be pleased with the task, dear Edward,” she rejoined, “ if you will show me how.”—“ You shall try it in a day or two,” I replied ; “ and I will answer for your being as expert as Isaac Walton himself.” With this our dialogue finished.

At sunset we repaired to the punt. On drawing up the fish-pot, I found a grouper and a snapper in it, and hauling it along under water till I came to the conservatory, I took them out, and popped them into the cask. I then baited with the entrails of the iguana, and laid the pot out again. That done, by means of my bucket, I filled the centre compartment of the punt with sea water, to the height of about three inches, and, it being water-tight between the cross planks, none of the water ran either forward or aft. My dear wife then sat down on the stern seat, with a lighted torch in her hand, and Fidele at her feet. At this time the stars were appearing. I rowed out, but before I cleared the point the mullet began to jump, and fall fast

round us, even about our ears. At first it was good sport, and I laughed heartily at some hard knocks they gave me on my shoulders and hands. Those which did not drop into the middle of the punt, but either fore or aft, were picked up by one or other of us, and thrown into the part with the water. Fidele was the first to complain of being rather roughly dealt with, for a heavy fish or two struck him in their fall, which caused him to shake his ears, and, with a yell, draw near his mistress. He was more alarmed than hurt; but she, poor dear, received a too severe blow on the side of her face, and, although she said not a word, I perceived, by her heightened colour, it had given her pain, so, wishing a truce to the game, I desired her to throw the torch overboard, which she did, and the shower of mullet ceased. I put back in haste. Fidele jumped on shore in an instant, and I leaped after him, handing out my best beloved most carefully, being anxious to see if she were seriously hurt, but she gaily declared in the negative, and I was satisfied. I therefore proceeded to convey the mullet and calipeavar out of the well in the punt, into the conservatory, and, to my no small surprise, counted more than two dozen. "This is a great fishing, indeed!" exclaimed my dear wife; "but my poor Fidele, it was sorry sport to thee! thou shalt have better shelter next time." And she patted him gently while she spoke: the grateful animal jumped to her knee, and seemed made quite himself again by the cheering voice of his mistress.

I left the water in the punt as it was, and we hastened up to the plank-house, taking some of the fire we had lit near the rock with us. A candle was lighted, and my tender Eliza, observing I was wet, took down the hollands, and mixed me some with water. On the whole, I was much fatigued, and received it thankfully. The sand-flies, however, did not forget giving us their unwelcome company; so I lighted a new cigar, and got on with it very well; my dear companion keeping close to me under the protecting influence of the smoke; the fragrance of which she said was very agreeable. I made her take a sip of my beverage, to sweeten the cup; and we sat for an hour, enjoying ourselves in spite of the little harpies; and then retired to our place of rest.

Wednesday, 6th.—On coming up to the plank-house this morning we were greeted by the sight of our other goat standing with two little kids at her feet; she had kidded in the thicket during the night: this was a pleasing surprise at the moment, although not unexpected. I baled out the punt, and lifting the fish-pot, found a fine fish in it, different from any we had

yet taken; it was a snook: I put it down again, to keep it quite fresh; and proceeded to our plantation to finish my work by planting some of the American maize, and a few of the pumpkin-seeds I had brought from Virginia. All our former sowings might be said to grow daily, nay, hourly, almost visibly shooting up. Both of us exclaimed together, "How wonderful the rapidity of vegetation in this climate!"

As the day became hot, we reposed ourselves under the silk-cotton tree, feeling that listlessness for which the residents, and even natives of this quarter of the world are so remarkable; but hitherto the European energy had abided with us, and my dear wife now expressed a fear that I had exerted myself too much in such a climate. "For," added she, "it appears that where man should labour much, God hath given him the power; and therefore we must suppose that when that power is abridged under tropical suns it is for wise purposes." Thus she was wont to view every thing with pious depth of thought, referring all things to the providence and direction of the Almighty.

While we were talking, Fidele was sleeping; and in a little time we also were covered with Sancho's cloak. It was nearly three o'clock when we awoke, and I think we were a little ashamed of the length of our siesta. We therefore hastily got our husbandry implements together, and returned by the punt to the plank-house. I had there many things to arrange for future employment; and meanwhile my Eliza prepared our dinner. It consisted of the snook, which we eat with lime-juice and capsicums, and found it excellent: fruit was not a good accompaniment to fish, so we substituted a glass of wine; which being more appropriate, and also a novelty, gave an agreeable finish to our feast. Fidele liked the snook, although he did not like punt-fishing; and he made a hearty meal, without seeking the juice of the grape to wash it down.

"Edward," said my wife, "what will you do with all the fish you have already caught? and we must feed them that are in the conservatory."—"No, my love," I replied, "were we to feed them, you could not catch them as we want them; and after they have been another day without food, we will not take more from the sea for a time, but you shall supply us from the conservatory." My making a little mystery of this achievement seemed to please her; and betraying no pettish curiosity to know all about it, before the time, she smiled, and declared her readiness to obey my orders. The sauce to the fish had reminded us of the value of our capsicums and bird-peppers, which induced us to amuse ourselves in the afternoon

by planting a seed here and there about the foot of the rock beside the cave-spring, and in the shrubby ground opposite; and it was there Fidele discovered the other duck sitting on eggs.

When we returned for the remainder of the evening, we were agreeably surprised by seeing the armadillo crawling about in his stoccado; and he did not seem disposed to burrow, even at sight of ourselves. I brought out a musk-melon, and cut off a large piece, which I placed softly in his retreat: he soon discovered it, and in our presence began to eat it, but we drew away immediately for fear of alarming or disconcerting him. "My dear Eliza," I said, as she seated herself on our wooden settee, "your idea was correct; we shall tame the armadillo." As we had no desire to contend with the sand-flies to-night, we retired to the ship, just as the sun was setting, and took our humble, though happy station, on one of the hen-coops on the quarter-deck, where we enjoyed the cool of the evening without any annoyance, until it was time to go to sleep.

Thursday, 7th.—We breakfasted on board this morning: occupying ourselves in looking up various things for our use on shore: and my dear wife took this occasion to observe, that now she must sit a little every day at her needle, as both her dress and mine required repair. While she was thus busied about her own concerns, I rummaged the sailors' chests in the steerage for fish-hooks, and was fortunate enough to find some pretty large ones, already fastened to lines: I selected a couple of different sizes, cutting the lines, so as to leave about four or five feet attached to each hook; and then put them in my pocket.

Towards mid-day, we went on shore; she taking some things with her for needle employment; and I, a bag with the last remains of our plantains. While she was cutting and contriving her work in the plank-house, I went down to the border of the woodland region, and lopped off two straight sticks about six feet long each, to the ends of which I fastened the lines with the hooks, and left them ready-baited at the rock. On my return to my wife, I said, "Now, Eliza, it is near dinner-time; I am very hungry; go and catch a fish for us." She looked up and smiled, but seemed a little confused; "Dear Edward!" cried she, "an Asiatic wife might tremble at such a command; but I have nothing to fear from my dear husband! I will go in faith, for I know you would not mock me!"—"Come, sweetest," I said, "and it will be done." She

arose cheerfully, and we ran down together hand in hand to the beach. I took up one of the rods, and gave it to her: "Oh, you cunning fellow!" she exclaimed, "how agreeably you have teased me." I now led her up on the rock, from whence she lowered down the line with the hook into the conservatory, and in an instant it was nearly pulled out of her hand; the strongest fish most likely had seized the bait. I stood by and encouraged her; and, after a few minutes, with a little help she raised her finny prize out of the cask, and landed it safely on the rock, to my great delight and to hers; but, on this occasion, Fidele wished to take a part in the exploit, endeavouring to seize the fish while it was tumbling about on the ground before us. We took it on shore, and Eliza received many compliments from her happy husband for her dexterity. Thus we amused ourselves, by turning common occurrences into causes of pleasantry.

After dinner, I proposed a walk in the cool of the evening to the cocoa-nut grove, and it was purely a little excursion of pleasure. My Eliza suggested our taking the eastern beach for our path; for she wished to handsel her new basket by collecting any pretty shells that might present themselves on our way. The breeze continued fresh, and our stroll was in shadow for nearly half a mile. We often stood to gaze on the reef, where the sea broke furiously, while all within it was smooth water. It was a scene of great interest to us; the one, our place of jeopardy; the other, the safe channel, through which our vessel passed to that secure creek in which she now lay, at once a store-house and a home. The shells were abundant, but not many were perfect, or retained their polish: we, however, contrived to gather some worth having; and, as we arranged them before us on the sand, my dear wife said, "If we should ever return to England, those shells will be a cherished memorial of our present situation."

On arriving at the cocoa-nut grove, we were delighted to see the melons and pumpkins all in flower, stretching their shoots extensively around; and the yams and coccos beginning to point their germs through the ground. We sat down on the trunk of the tree I had formerly felled, and rested ourselves. The gaskets were under the ledge of the rock: I took them out, and quickly climbing the next tree, brought down a couple of young cocoa-nuts, the milk of which was very grateful to us. We then returned by the other shore, and collected some excellent cane-reeds for baskets, or any other use that might occur, and arrived at our palace a little before sunset. Tea was very

acceptable after this long walk ; after which we gratefully retired to our vessel, to prayer and repose.

Friday, 8th.—My dear wife kept closely at her needle-work, while I employed myself in cutting some small trees and brush-wood. During my task, she got a little tired of being from me ; and to my own glad greeting too, suddenly joined me with her fishing-rod ready baited in her hand, and invited me to accompany her to the rock. “The day wears,” said she, smiling, “and I come to my duty.”—“Dearest,” cried I, “no duty ; only thy pastime ; but I will now do it, for it is sometimes rather tugging work.”—“Oh, no, dear Edward ; you allotted it to me, and I will not give up my office. So long as you replenish the conservatory, I will furnish you with its fish.”—“Well, well, be it so,” said I ; and, instantly resolving on a bit of merriment, determined to leave the matter entirely to herself ; so, walking up with her to the rock over the cask, she dropped in the bait, which was greedily seized by some strong fish, and the action pulled the rod by a jerk from her hand ; but she quickly picked it up (for I did not), while I said, “You shall have fair play, and the fish too.” Fidele would have helped her if he could ; he seemed to understand what was going forward, for he jumped off the rock on to the top of the cask, and I really thought he was going to take the line in his mouth. The fish, however, kept its station ; and the delicate arm of my dear wife was unable to drag him forth. I now offered to assist her. “No, no ; fair play, Edward,” she cried ; “no fish, no dinner.” She did indeed tug, and the fish tugged, and my poor love was almost tired out ; at last, by one great effort, she raised him out of the hatch, on to the top of the cask, where Fidele stood ; but the fish made a bound, and carried line and rod into the open water ; while Fidele, struck with terror, leaped back upon the rock ; but as since our arrival here we had accustomed him to go into the smooth sea, and bring out pieces of stick, he now, with a little encouragement from his mistress, who ran round with him to the sandy beach of the inlet, immediately took the water ; and, laying hold of the rod (the fish being almost spent by its preceding exertion), kept it fast in his mouth, and after many fruitless efforts, managed to get footing with his cumbrous prize, and, to the great joy of my wife, placed the rod in her hand. She then drew up the fish with a triumph, which she declared was all their own. I gave the dear pair a cheer of applause, which Fidele returned with an extraordinary howl, that made us both laugh. Before we carried away her prize, as the rest of the fish in the conservatory had

been some days without food, I threw some in to them, and then turned my steps homeward with my sweet helpmate.

Together, we prepared the calipeavar for dinner, which duly appeared, with all the *et ceteras*, limes, and peppers. In honour of the contest, my wife set before me a bottle of our canary wine ; and she placed a rich dessert also on the table, namely, an over-ripe pine and a fine shaddock. After so sumptuous a feast, I was not disposed to sink into the woodman again that day, but sat like a nabob, enjoying the fruit and beverage, drinking the health of my most excellent and courteous fisherman. My dear Eliza was quite happy in seeing me, for once since our landing, laying aside all care ; and I believe, on this occasion, I became a little exhilarated. We talked over the battle of the fish, which reminded us of Waller's battle of the Bermudians with the whale ; and I laughed heartily again and again, —an excess of mirth neither natural nor habitual to me. After our more than usually generous regale, we extended some of its indulgences to our crowding retainers without. We fed the armadillo from our fruit, played with the young kids, and treated their mothers with the parings of our shaddock and pine-apple. The poultry, too, were not forgotten. At sunset we retired to our marine abode.

Saturday, 9th.—I was very hot and uncomfortable all night ; so that the excellency of temperance was brought practically to my mind. I could not eat my breakfast in the morning ; neither did I feel any disposition for exertion. My anxious wife was much distressed, laying all the blame on herself, and urged me to take a dose of physic. "Dear Eliza," said I, "your honoured father used to quote a saying of Seneca:—'When I am sick,' said the Roman, 'I must either fast or take physic, and of the two alternatives, I choose the former.'—Now I am of the same mind, my best love ; and I will abstain from eating till my stomach recovers itself." This point settled, she resignedly went to her needlework, while I lounged about like a poor sick dog, refusing all food. In the evening I drank a little tea, but was no better, and my head ached. She now became very uneasy, and insisted on my taking a bolus of sweet mercury, some of which were in the medicine chest ; and I did so, and retired at the usual hour to bed.

Sunday, 10th.—I felt far from well when I arose, having scarcely slept ; and some other medicine being proposed to me, I chose rather to swallow half a pint of sea-water ; and, before twelve o'clock I was quite myself again. We then went on shore, where my dear wife read the church service, and

then prepared some coffee for me, by way of dinner, which completely settled my stomach; and in the afternoon we enjoyed a pleasant walk together in the woodland region; closing the evening by reading the Scriptures, and with prayer.

Monday, 11th.—I arose pretty well: my kind nurse disposed herself to her needle-work, and I to finish my wood-cutting operation beyond the rivulet. At breakfast, my wife told me the third hen was sitting; and that, as two more of the ducks were missing, she had no doubt they also were employed in hatching. The poor cock was stalking about, a solitary individual, before the platform; and as we threw him some fragments of biscuit, he called his hens, as he picked the bits up; but they did not come, and he left the pieces untouched, walking away as melancholy as any disconsolate, into the thicket. The armadillo now kept out in open daylight, roaming about his stoccado; and being no longer under the influence of skulking fear, stood stoutly on his legs, with his head projecting to receive any donation we might throw to him; for he was not indisposed to taste meat, or biscuit, or roast yam, or whatever was put into his crib, but he liked the musk-melon the best.

While at a frugal cold meat dinner to-day, I could not help comparing our shower of fish to the rain of quails in the wilderness; and indeed I reminded my dear Eliza of a remark she made as if in prophetic allusion, on the first evening we saw the mullet leaping from the water, when I expressed a desire to have some of them to vary our salt food. In the afternoon, while she returned to her needle-work, I amused myself fitting up a place for the ducks, and their expected young broods when they should come forth, in a snug recess of the rock, about twenty yards on this side of the cave-spring. For I foresaw that the ducklings must be some time before they could march up with their dams to the thicket, and, if a rendezvous were not provided near the water, they might become wild, and we should lose them. In the evening we took our tea early, and soon after returned to the vessel, and to rest.

Tuesday, 12th.—Early in the morning we embarked in the punt, with my usual husbandry accoutrements and a basket of provisions, with some seeds of the bird-peppers and capsicums to plant. It was a pleasant row to the beach of the plantation; and as soon as we landed, and had carried our refreshments up to the spurs of the silk-cotton tree, I repaired to my field of labour, and set about hoeing the ground about our previous plantings in every direction. I was fully repaid for all my toil, by seeing everything pushing forward most luxuriantly.

At noon, we lay down and took a nap under the tree ; after which, being quite recruited, I did ample justice to the employment I had begun in the morning. When our tasks were finished, as my arms were more tired than my legs, we left the punt on the beach, and walked home through the woodland region ; observing on our way the places in which I had planted the chocolate-nuts, a few of which, I gladly saw, were up.

CHAPTER VIII.

WE retired early, to avoid the sand-flies, and rested ourselves on the quarter-deck of the vessel, enjoying the refreshing coolness of the evening. "Dear Eliza," said I, "my agricultural labours are completed for the present, and you have done all the needle-work necessary ; what do you say, then, to an excursion to-morrow to the other extremity of the isthmus ? I wish to reconnoitre a little beyond the limits of our immediate residence."—"If you really wish it, my honoured husband," she replied, "we will go ; but we are so happy and comfortable now, that I do not like seeking any change ; and we know not whether we may not fall into some accident by the way."—"Dearest," I rejoined, "it is incumbent on us to know as much as we can of the island on which we are placed ; therefore have courage, and I will go early in the morning and fetch the punt."—"No," said she, "*we* will go, if you please."—"Well, then, dear Eliza, *we* will go : it always has been *we*, and I am content that it shall be always *we*,—now and for ever, here and hereafter, my own best blessing !" I returned, embracing her tenderly.

Wednesday, 13th.—We arose with the dawn, and landed ; then walked at a good pace round by the woodland region to the punt. The birds were all on the alert, and we heard the sweet notes of one not unlike to those of our own nightingale. The doves were numerous, feeding on the ground ; and, having come to the head of the dell, we heard and saw the paroquets among the palm-trees on the opposite side. The sun had not risen when we got into our boat ; and in half an hour after sunrise we had brought it back, and were again at the plank-house. Eliza then quickly put up some provisions, with some cocoa-nuts, in our baskets, for now she had two : and arming myself completely, with a musket and pistols, axe and bill-hook, my wife not forgetting her pike and faithful dog, we re-embarked ; and, putting off from the creek, rowed along

shore towards the northern extremity of the isthmus. There we landed in its little bay, beneath the same rock on a ledge of which we had sat to rest when we had formerly visited the spot on foot, and delighted ourselves with admiring the while the grandeur of the superb headland under which we had been placed by the kind providence of God. This little bay appeared to be nearly a mile long, and half a mile broad; the land on the opposite bank being elevated more or less, and from which we were now separated by the huge high rock close to us, while the whole of the side on which we were was formed by the sandy shore of the north-western extremity of the isthmus. After resting a short time here, I rowed round the rock towards the opposite bank. After advancing about a cable's length, nearly touching it with the oar all the way, I found it turn off suddenly to the north; forming, with the opposite bank, a narrow creek, about twenty yards in breadth, and nearly two hundred yards in length. I continued to row up the creek; the great rock standing high and rugged on my right, having a beautiful and finely-wooded slope on my left. On arriving at the head of the creek, I found a small stream of fresh water running into it; near to which I put the punt ashore, where we observed a number of crayfish, nearly the size of a lobster, in every part of the shallow water. We disembarked at this spot, and placed ourselves and our baskets under the shade of a large tree about twelve or fourteen yards north of the punt: we here took up a delightful position on a little mound by the foot of which the streamlet ran down into the creek. The lake lay wide before us on the south; and the view to the eastward was thrown open by the sudden termination of the great rock, which appeared perpendicular on all sides. My dear wife spread out her cold collation on this shaded spot; while I took care that the musket and all our other weapons were at hand, that we might not be surprised by—we knew not what. However, caution is generally safety; and we eat our breakfast the more comfortably because we were provided with means of defence, and those means available in a moment.

After breakfast, we endeavoured to penetrate into the interior by walking along the side of the streamlet; but we soon found we could not advance far on account of the entangling underwood: we therefore retrod our steps, planting some shaddock, and orange, and lime-pips, here and there, by the way. On our return, we sat down under the same tree to repose, where we had taken our collation, and sheltered

ourselves from the noonday sun. There was no bird nor other creature stirring, save the busy sea-gull, which, in numbers, were pursuing shoals of small fishes in the bay before us; so that all things invited us to add to our repose sleep; but, being in a strange place, our eyelids were not disposed to take any rest. We said to each other, "Were we now under the shade of our own silk-cotton tree, how sweetly we might sleep in safety during the heat of the day!"

Towards the afternoon, I fished up half a dozen of the crayfish, after much trouble and perplexity. I had expected they were of the same species with the creature we had taken on the western beach of the isthmus after the storm, so that there would be nothing to do but push the end of the boarding-pike between the fangs of their great claws, and drag them forth; but I soon discovered that these crayfish had no great claws, so that I was obliged to manœuvre, until I could get the end of the pike under them; which at last, after many fruitless efforts, I contrived to do, and succeeded in jerking a few of them out upon the beach. When caught, I placed my booty in the forward division of the punt. We then re-embarked; and, rowing out of the narrow creek, kept along the western shore of the bay for about a quarter of a mile, where we landed again, on the beach of a fine gravelly slope. The ground was nearly open before us, having only a few fine trees thinly scattered over it, as we sometimes see in an English park. We walked leisurely up the slope for about three hundred yards; and, resting ourselves under the wide-spreading shade of one of the lofty trees, had not only an extensive view of the whole extent of the peninsular promontory, but, our eye stretching its view to the extremity of the lake, saw the boundless ocean between that noble headland and the corresponding high cliffs of the opposite island. This situation was most inviting for a residence; the position was excellent in every respect,—the ground open, the soil good, the exposure favourable to tropical trees and vegetables, there being no long protracted shade as at the cotton-tree plantation; and, while we admired the view, we compared the two situations, in all their relations, for a dwelling.

But at the termination of this beautiful spot westward, the land becomes steep and rocky, thickly covered with palms, and a variety of other trees. While we stood contemplating the rich scenery around us, Fidele, in his usual way, hunting about, had got into the skirting of the forest: he began to bark, which induced us to turn our steps towards the place,

expecting to find him at his old game with an iguana; but before we had advanced many yards, we heard him yelp, and saw him presently brush out of the wood, followed by what we considered a small pig. I quickened my pace, and when he perceived help at hand, he turned round on his pursuer, which he kept at bay. By this time my dear wife was at my side, with her pike in her hand; and almost at the same moment a drove of perhaps twenty of these pig-looking animals rushed out of the brake to the assistance of their comrade. There was no time for parley with so large a body. I had at first spared the single one, who was still skirmishing with Fidele; but now, without more ceremony, I discharged the musket, loaded with ball, direct amongst them, and one of them fell. During the short minute in which I was observing this horde of little barbarians, the advanced combatant had wounded Fidele with its tusk, who was then close to his mistress; she, at the same moment I fired, had struck her pike with great energy into the assailant's side; but he still made fight. Fidele, however, was not so badly hurt but that he now mustered strength enough to pin the little beast by the nose. On discharging my musket, I saw things in the situation described, and in an instant I drew my bill-hook from my belt, and cut the struggling animal almost in twain. The herd had run, on receiving the fire; but they were rallying again, and seemed disposed to advance towards us. "My dear Eliza," cried I, "you must retire to our boat; you may be hurt. I will reload the musket, and soon disperse these animals."—"Give me one of your pistols, Edward," said she, "and I will not fear: although a woman, I feel I have some courage when necessary. My poor Fidele!" continued she, looking down at her faithful little dog bleeding. I loaded the musket, and handed her one of the pistols; feeling assured that she would use it properly if required. She well knew how to draw the trigger, having frequently done so to ignite our fire; and I felt that the present occasion did inspire her with courage sufficient to make an efficient use of the pistol. The herd the while advancing on us, gathered round the one I had shot; but not seeming disposed to approach further, I, not wishing to kill any of them unnecessarily, took up the slain animal that lay close to me, and began to retreat to the boat. At this sight the whole troop set up a snort, and made towards us. I was struck with terror for the safety of my wife; whom I desired instantly to get behind me. I knelt to give my fire more effect; and when the foremost of them were within ten or

twelve yards, I drew the trigger, and killed and wounded no less than three. Some now fled ; others stood still ; but three, more bold than their fellows, closed on us : my dear Eliza moved from behind me, and gave me her pike, with which I transfixd the one nearest to me ; and to my great surprise she fired the pistol, and shot another that had got in our rear. Poor Fidele, who had seemed overpowered with terror, skulked close by the side of his mistress, until that moment, when he made an attack upon the third, which instantly gave him an ugly scratch with its tusk, and certainly would have killed him, had I not shot the enemy with my remaining pistol. This had been a severe and unexpected conflict ; but now the field of battle was entirely deserted by the survivors amongst the herd, and then our first care was to examine our little friend's wounds, which were about the throat and shoulder, a sort of ripping of the skin, one of which was nearly two inches long. I reloaded my piece, by way of caution ; but, not seeing anything like a pursuit, I again took the slain enemy of Fidele by the leg, to the boat ; leaving all the rest of the killed, to the number of seven, behind. We now recognised the animal for the peccary, although neither of us had ever seen one before, but as represented in books of Natural History. It was a dark grey, rough, ugly, hog-like looking little beast ; about the size of a year-old pig. One of them appeared to be as much as we three victors could eat in as many days ; therefore, acceptable as fresh meat might be to us, we did not choose to encumber ourselves with more ; and, indeed, my dear wife and myself sincerely regretted the accident and encounter that had put us in possession of the peccary.

We got down to the boat without further molestation from the herd, and then proceeded to wash our poor faithful dog's wounds. I got a pin from his pitying mistress, and a little thread ; I bodkined the sides of the long wound with the pin, securing it by twisting the thread round it, as farriers do, to staunch the vein after bleeding a horse. I then laid the patient little creature safe down by Eliza's side, in the stern of the punt : and pushing off from the beach, rowed over to the other side of the bay, and there landed with our baskets, to take some refreshment, and give a drink of cool water to poor Fidele. Our stay here was short : we quickly re-embarked, and I pulled along the beach homewards, with all possible expedition. My kind-hearted wife had emptied the old basket, which was the largest, and with the help

of my jacket, which I had pulled off, made up a comfortable bed for our wounded companion, and placed him in it; where he lay during our voyage, with great composure, his dear mistress talking to him, and thus consoling him all the way. The sun was just setting when the punt reached its destination. My first care was to take up the basket with her poor little friend, accompanying her to the plank-house, where I left them. I then returned to the beach, and with a knife cut out certain parts of the peccary which would taint the meat, and then hung the carcase by a large wooden peg, which I drove into a crevice of the western face of the promontory, until a moment for more attention to it. I left the crayfish in the punt, giving them a few buckets of sea-water to reconcile them to their situation; then taking up the remainder of our chattels, joined my dear wife at our peaceful wooden palace.

Fidele had fallen asleep, by which the mind of his kind mistress was set somewhat at ease, but much more so when I assured her the wounds were not deeper than through the skin, they having been made by the tusks and not with the teeth, and therefore only a superficial tearing or ripping of the skin, the flesh and other parts below being untouched. By this she was quite satisfied; for her feelings could always be easily brought to yield to her reasoning faculties. "Poor Fidele!" said she, "thou wilt soon be well again; but I am sorry we were obliged to destroy so many of thy assailants: I fear thou wert the aggressor, not they." Then turning to me, "Edward," said she, "they made a noble defence: neither Greeks nor Trojans ever fought more valiantly for their dead than those poor animals; and I cannot but regret so many perished in the conflict."—"But, dear Eliza," I replied, "if we had not succeeded in destroying so many of them, I think it probable they would have destroyed every one of us, before we could reach the boat; for they made up in numbers and courage what they wanted in individual strength."—"Well, then," she rejoined, "as it did happen, it could not have ended better; and we have much reason to be thankful to God for our own preservation, even at the expense of their lives; and I will think no more of it, but in that point of view." After this dialogue, I left her to watch her wounded little champion, while I made a fire and got tea, which was highly acceptable to us both, after so trying a day; and, having finished our repast, I took up our invalid, in his snug wicker-bed, and

carried him to our ship, where, placing him near to us in the state-room, he passed the night in quiet.

Thursday, 14th.—In the morning, our first object was to bathe his wounds with spirits ; and after binding his neck with a handkerchief, and giving him a little water, we took him on shore again in the basket, from whence I removed him to a little bed, made up for him on the plank-settee, on which his mistress also seated herself with her needle-work beside her. I employed myself for an hour cleaning and re-loading the fire-arms, which, for security, I had always kept in readiness, after which I went down to the beach, and kindling a large fire, slung the peccary over it on a pole, by his feet tied together, that I might burn off all his porcupine bristles, and then scrape him clean as a Gloucestershire hog for bacon. I confess it was warm work ; and during the process, I wished over and over again that I had skinned the animal, as most nations (excepting the English and their colonies) do all they kill of the hog kind ; but, John Bull-like, I had gone to work, and like John Bull I persevered to the end. I then tied its feet again together, which had been untied for scraping, and carried it into the cave, where I suspended it on a peg that I drove into a crevice of the rock. I then returned to my dear wife to breakfast, and to report my morning's work. She praised my perseverance, but lamented my fatigue, sweetening every morsel I eat with her affectionate smile.

Fidele lapped a little flour and water with a little sugar in it, but had no stomach for more substantial fare ; yet on the whole the poor animal seemed doing very well. I soon after left them, and went to secure the crayfish, by driving some shingles into the sand in a semicircular form just below water-mark, and on the other side of the rock, where they could enjoy the run of fresh water, to which element they had been accustomed. The shingles were placed close enough together to prevent the escape of the crayfish ; and there was at least a foot in depth of water within some parts of the craal. On my return, I had the pleasure to see our two goats browsing, and their kids gamboling round them, close by the spring-head. During my absence, my dear Eliza had observed the armadillo through the window, prowling about his enclosure looking for food ; and, when I rejoined her, she was feeding him with pieces of melon from her hand. I was quite pleased with this proof of its docility ; and looked on, till he had enough, with increased satisfaction in the happy interest she took in all her dumb dependants. Towards noon I returned to the cave, to

portion our peccary for store and immediate use. For this, I cut it into quarters, and put the two hinder ones into a bucket, with plenty of salt, on which I laid stones for a weight. I then reserved some pieces to make broth for our wounded little hero; and building up a suitable fire, with a large flat fragment of rock placed before, like a screen; when this stone was well heated, I laid down a fore-quarter of the peccary to roast, setting a brown dish under it; so that the meat had the fire in front, and the hot stone behind; and I basted it occasionally with some of our Irish butter. All this was completed without much trouble, or great exposure to heat from the fire, and none from the sun, for the place was still in shade; even at noon. About two o'clock I took it up, with a roasted yam, and some of the broth, to the plank-house, and set it on the table, which my attentive helpmate had prepared for the expected dinner. When she saw it, she gently said, "I wish I did not know that this was part of the peccary; I really do not like to eat it; yet I owe it to you, my kind Edward, to your fatigue and trouble about it, to banish every other feeling than the desire of pleasing you: I will therefore dine on it with you, and I hope cheerfully." I thanked her for her sensible and gracious determination; and she smilingly received a plate of the broth from my hand, and gave it to Fidele, who seemed to mightily approve the mess. The roast looked very well, but did not taste quite as agreeable: however, by the aid of a little lime-juice and capsicum, we contrived to make a dinner. Eliza, true to her resigned spirit, did not complain of its being unpleasant: but I did; and proposed the lime and capsicum: as she had conquered her moral objection to it, the physical repugnance was to her too insignificant for a murmur. About an hour after our repast, as my dear Eliza had been confined all day with our wounded friend, I volunteered to remain with him, while she should take a little walk, by way of exercise, to the thicket and the spring. She obeyed my wish with pleasure, carrying with her some bruised corn for the three hens hatching their broods, and also for the four sitting ducks; the two lately missed having been discovered near the spring-head, sitting on eggs, in snug nests amongst the rocks. While she was absent, my little charge showed himself very sensible to my condolence and attentions; and I felt the happiness I was bestowing, even on a dumb creature, reflected graciously in my own breast.

My dear wife bent her steps first to the spring. On her return to visit the thicket, she saluted me by kissing her hand

as she passed the plank-house. She did not tarry long on her errand there, soon coming back to me again, and with a brisk step approaching the platform (where I had now placed myself with our little dog), she told me she had fed the poultry; but having taken a peep into the cave, found there, fluttering on the floor, two young full-feathered pigeons, which, in attempting to fly out through the aperture, must have dropped, probably in a first trial. She held them tenderly in her hands, and showed them to me with a pitying kind of pleasure. "Now, my dear Edward," said she, "we can keep these, and tame them without hurting them!"—"Certainly," replied I; "to keep them, we have only to cut one of their wings; and if we set them down in the cave, and throw a little bruised corn, then the old ones will feed them there: so we may even get more, if we choose."—"Oh, no!" she replied; "I wish to tame these near ourselves: but if the old ones would come to them, when with us, we should treat them well; and by so doing, we, perhaps, might tame some of them also."—"Well, dearest," I rejoined, "we will do even as you propose." I now took her scissors, and cut the long feathers of one wing in each pigeon; and, for the present, deposited her new pets in the old basket, now vacated by Fidele. During tea the goats came gamboling before our door; but the now nursing ducks did not choose to leave their cool spring; and for the gallant but solitary cock, he now seldom appeared beyond the thicket avenue, patiently waiting for the forthcoming of his young progeny. When evening drew on, I placed the basket with the young pigeons in the cave, scattering plenty of bruised corn around; and then returning to the plank-house, took Fidele in my arms, and made our escape on board before the sand-flies began to buzz.

Friday, 15th.—Our dear little dog was on foot in the cabin as soon as we arose, and seemed quite himself again; which induced me to take off the bandage placed around his neck: finding the long slit well united, I drew out the pin, and the thread twisting fell to the ground. I bathed the part again with spirits, and his mistress put on a clean neckcloth: we could not but smile at the fine bow she tied on one side of his face; although he appeared almost ready to run, I thought it best to carry him on shore. On landing, she visited her pigeons in the cave, while I remained with Fidele in the plank-house. When she returned she told me, that when she went in she found a great many pigeons, pecking on the floor, and that one of them was in the basket feeding the young ones, which had both

their bills in her mouth. She was quite pleased with the sight, and I with the details of it. We now agreed on the policy of placing the basket in the avenue, at wider and wider distances, gradually from the mouth of the cave, with corn scattered round, until at last we should lure the old ones to follow it, and feed at our door. That point settled, I walked down to the rocks before breakfast, to hoe a little round the plants for half an hour, and was delighted to see many pumpkins and melons larger than an egg. Having nothing else to do, I brought home a load of firewood, which I cut some days before. On my return, I found my dear wife had boiled the kettle, and roasted the last of our plantains for breakfast : of which wholesome vegetable we this morning took our leave with some regret ; for they were an excellent substitute for bread. During the forenoon I employed myself on board, in getting several articles for our daily consumption from the hold, for it was there all the ship's stores of salt provisions, flour, &c., were kept. On my return I went into the cave, and found, notwithstanding the comparative coolness of the place, that the other fore-quarter of the peccary was no longer fit for the use of our table. I therefore carried it down to the crayfish tank, and threw it in ; but I did not observe any of them approach it. I then baited one of the hooks at the conservatory, where I soon drew up a mullet ; meaning it for our dinner. I showed the fish to my dear wife, telling her I had been obliged to throw the quarter of the peccary away ; but did not say I had given it to the crayfish, lest she might not like to eat of them in consequence. The salted hind quarters I had found in very good order. Fidele now partook of our present usual fare ; for the stiffness of his jaws, from his neck wound, having passed away, he sat up, begging for some fish, which he eat with a sharp appetite.

In the afternoon I proposed to row to the plantation : we accordingly accoutred ourselves ; and I carried Fidele to the punt. The little voyage was pleasant ; and we soon found ourselves in the midst of our plantation. Everything was flourishing : the Indian corn was several inches above ground, high enough for the hoe ; and the sugar canes had grown another foot : so that I found plenty of employment until the evening. My dear wife, with Fidele at her foot, stood near me while at work, and we both surveyed with pleasure and thankfulness the promising reward of my labour.

We returned with improved spirits from this part of our island domain ; and my Eliza, like a kind parent welcoming her

young brood, began immediately feeding the armadillo liberally with melon, and the goats with pumpkin cut in slices. The evening was delightfully cool, which induced us to remain sitting on the platform until the stars appeared; though with them, the sand-flies also: however, we were not disposed to be driven away, so I had recourse to a cigar, while my dear love nestled close to me, and we enjoyed not a little the serenity which our situation cast around us. The cigar finished, we departed to our ship, and to repose.

Saturday, 16th.—I thought it right to pump the ship out this morning; my wife the while rummaged the captain's chest, and took out a new jacket and some striped trowsers; my broad skirted coats and short tight breeches not being at all convenient for my present occupations. We disembarked to breakfast, and I went to the cave to inspect our corned meat, which I found sweet, and fit for use. It occurred to me to look at the place where I had driven in the peg to hang the peccary on, as it appeared to me, at the time of my hammering at it, to sound hollow. On examining the spot, I was confirmed in that opinion. On rejoining my wife, I told her my surmise; and we determined, after breakfast, to satisfy ourselves respecting it. Accordingly we repaired together to the cave, and I knocked my hammer about in various directions wherever I saw a crevice; and though there certainly was a difference of sound near some of them, she thought it could only arise from natural irregularities in the rock, probably by fissures; and so we returned as we went. Next day being the Sabbath, we now employed ourselves in preparing and dressing some provisions, and in doing every other thing requisite to keep it holy, so as to give the Creator of the whole earth a seventh of that time which is altogether His own, and which He has appointed as a type of that rest prepared in everlasting mansions for His people.

Sunday, 17th.—We arose with the sun, and performed our usual water sluicings on deck. It has been well said, "that cleanliness is next to godliness;" it is, in truth, the symbol of inward purity; and, therefore, we thought it no sin to make our grand ablutions on the morning of each returning Sabbath. The sea-water thrown over us was highly refreshing and invigorating; and nothing but the dread of the sharks, which we had once seen near our shore, prevented us daily bathing on the beach. But I now hoped soon to find leisure to erect a bath, so that we should at once enjoy the pure and ample wave, and be placed in safety from those terrible fish. We dressed ourselves neatly;

she in the work of her hands, which during the last few days she had been adapting to present convenience ; and I, in the captain's jacket and trowsers ; enjoying ourselves awhile on the quarter-deck, until it was time to go on shore to breakfast. We first visited the young pigeons in the basket, and brought them forth before the plank-house, where we put them out, and strewed some corn : we watched earnestly to see what would be the result, and to my Eliza's great delight, while we were at our repast, the old birds came to them, and fed them by the basket. Our poor solitary cock came up amongst them, apparently glad of their company.

After breakfast I read the morning service, and my dear wife the lessons of the day ; concluding with one of Archbishop Tillotson's excellent sermons. "If you love me," saith our blessed Saviour, "keep my commandments." We then took food to the rest of our dumb friends, and Eliza fed her armadillo : the so recently shy creature now went round the inside of the stoccado from place to place, following her as she altered her position with the slices of melon in her hand. We dined on what had been provided yesterday, giving thanks, with more than our daily fervency, for the bounties of that God "in whom we live, and move, and have our being." In the afternoon we read some chapters in Isaiah, and a part of the Gospel of St John ; and then took a ramble into the woodland region ; Fidele following closely and sedately at the foot of his mistress. It was happiness unutterable so to walk, her arm linked in mine ; with the one of all earthly beings the most dear ; not bone of my bone, but soul of my soul—one mind, one spirit, one faith, one hope, a blessed communion with each other for ever in Christ ; who is the power and wisdom of God, by which all things were created, and by which alone mankind can be saved from the effects of sin, unto the resurrection of eternal life.

Monday, 18th.—We arose with daylight, and, on account of the valetudinary state of our little dog, used the punt to visit the cocoa-nut grove ; where the progressive state of our plants constantly required the hoe. The melons and pumpkins had attained the size of lemons, and the yams and coccos were well up ; but the stems of the former appeared weak. While I employed myself at my husbandry, my dear wife visited her capsicums among the earthy places of the rocky ledge, and found them also well forward. Having finished the hoeing, I next took the gaskets, and ascending one of the trees, cut off about a dozen young cocoa-nuts, which I carried

down to the punt on the beach, without disencumbering them of their husks, the distance being inconsiderable.

After my morning's labour I was disposed to rest awhile at the plank-house, lingering over our breakfast ; and during our conversation, it turned upon the sounding crevices in the cave ; and the idea still possessed me, that in some places the hollows must be deeper than a mere fissure in the rock—perhaps some inner cavern ; and I therefore proposed taking a heavy hatchet-hammer to sound the rock again all along the inside, to try more convincingly the real depth of the hollows. My wife liked the notion of disinterring another convenient recess in our cavern, which, perhaps, some future removal of the thin wall of rock might admit us to. I accordingly took my strongest hatchet, and struck the sides of the place as before, in various parts, with the hammer end ; and was quickly satisfied that the sound from the spot near the crevice where I had hung the peccary, and for several yards beyond it, was very different from that produced by striking on the other parts of the cavern. We now brought in a light ; for this place was the darkest, and therefore the coolest in the cave : it was for this reason I had selected it for our larder. When we had the advantage of a candle, to our amazement an artificial appearance of inserted stones was evident. We now reflected on the circumstance of the military belt, and the chocolate trees at the cavern's mouth, and thought this built up partition must be connected with those things.

I lost no time in going on board for a crow-bar, which I had seen in the fore-cuddy ; and, bringing it, commenced the work of dislodging the stones. Crowds of pigeons, which the first noise of my hatchet had alarmed, now, at this greater disturbance, fled precipitately out of the hole at the further end : we were at first vexed at this, but soon reconciled ourselves to their temporary fright, by knowing that the return of stillness in their ancient abode would unquestionably attract them back again. After very short work, I had extracted sufficient of the stones (which had formed a wall very like the natural broken-rock interior of the cave) to lay open a hole large enough to admit my body ; and, on thrusting in my head and shoulders, I did indeed perceive a kind of chamber, dimly lit by a glimmering light from a narrow fissure above, but which had not power to show me anything within. By this aperture, I knew that the air now admitted from the opening made below would instantly clear the place of all foul vapour that might exist within ; and, after resting a moment to explain this to my at-

tentive Eliza, I wormed myself into the recess, and received the candle from her hand. The floor of the place was covered deep with sand, which was quite dry; and for some time I could not discover anything worthy of notice; but, on moving forward about three yards, I saw a collection of small canvas bags, ranged side by side, and behind them a long wooden box. Without stopping to examine their contents, I stepped back to the hole, and desired my wife to come in, telling her what I had seen. She quickly got through, following the candle and me; and opening one of the bags, I discerned at a glance some sparkling metal. "This is treasure!" cried I. She instantly exclaimed, "May it please God to preserve us."—"From what, dearest?" I replied, tumbling out several large pieces of coin. "They are full of dollars," she rejoined, "and of what use are they to us?"—"Well, sweet Eliza," I replied, "they can do us no harm; we can leave them where we find them, if we please."—"Just so," she answered. "However," said I, "we will examine the box." The lid was nailed down, so it could not be opened without a chisel; we therefore quitted the recess, till I should bring the necessary implement from the carpenter's chest, and returned to the plank-house. I held some pieces of the money in my hand, which had fallen out of the bag, and by the candle light had appeared white: we then concluded they were dollars, but we now discovered, by daylight, that they were gold doubloons. I remarked this vast difference in their value to my dear wife. "Well," said she, "Edward, it is all the same to us, dollars, or doubloons, or our own English farthings: we cannot send to market with money here. Your health, my honoured husband, is our wealth, and God's blessing is our exhaustless mine! So I care nothing about these; only this, that I fear the discovery will be a source of great uneasiness, if not of misery, to us."—"Very well, dearest," I replied, "if there be any more of it in the other bags, with you and God for my guide, I hope I shall not make a bad use of it, should I ever have the opportunity."—"I hope—I believe you would not, my dear Edward," she rejoined; "but riches are a snare."—"My own Eliza," I answered gravely, "bags of gold can be no riches to me where we are; they may as well be full of the sand that covers the floor."

Here the dialogue ended; and with less haste about going for the chisel, I set about preparing dinner, in which my Eliza, cheerful as usual, assisted me; and we dined on the last corned quarter of the peccary, which was still very good; and the salt had drawn out the rankness of the meat that exists in its fresh

state. "Now, my own," said I, "let us go and inspect the box." She re-lit our candle ; and I taking a chisel and mallet with me, we proceeded to the cave, and again entered the recess. I opened the box ; it was full of all sorts of gold and silver articles—representations of the Crucifixion ; the Virgin and Child, in highly-wrought silver shrines ; gold hilts for swords ; large ear-rings of gold ; some ingots of gold, and a considerable quantity of gold and silver tissue ; and some silver lavers, and other costly things. My dear wife admired all these beautiful pieces of workmanship very much, making many appropriate remarks on the different articles ; and when we had examined all, she gently said, "Dear Edward, let us now shut the box up, and the place in which it is also : these things do not belong to us."—"Oh, very well !" I hastily replied : "as you please ; I don't care a rush about them !" In mutual silence we stepped out of the recess, and I thrust in the loose stones again.

After sitting down in the plank-house, and after a few moments' musing, I said, "My dear Eliza, we will let this matter rest for the present, and discuss it at our leisure ; for I trust that, whatever we may conclude to do, will have a blessing, and not a curse."—"Don't let it perplex you, my honoured husband," she replied ; "we will pray God to direct you." This affair was of too much importance to remain unsettled. I turned the doubloons over and over in my hand, and found on them the head of Carolus II., which, although looking as if just out of the mint, bore the date of 1670. "Eliza," said I, "when we look at the date of this coin, and consider the situation in which we discovered the belt, the probability is that this treasure has been here at least fifty or sixty years, and that there are no persons living to whom it belongs. Besides, most likely the persons who placed it where it is were buccaneers, who despoiled some Spanish vessel of it ; the first owners, then, are doubtlessly killed. Hence it does not belong to any one ; at least not to any one that could, with the utmost diligence, be discovered. Therefore, possession is the only right which, under such circumstances, can be set up ; and it is a duty I owe to myself and to you, and to all connected with us, though on distant shores, to endeavour to preserve this treasure, and to convey it to England if ever an opportunity should offer. With your consent and approbation, my beloved wife, I will act according to this reasoning." She did not answer me for some time : at last, she said, "If those to whom it rightfully belongs cannot have it, I certainly see no just reason why you should

not do as you propose—preserve it for your own use, and so apply it, should the occasion ever present itself.”—“Well, my dear Eliza, that is the principle on which I shall act, and on that principle allow me to lose no time in securing the fortune which has fallen so wonderfully into our hands.”

The question was now set at rest between us, by which a great weight was taken off my mind: for my exemplary friend, as well as obedient wife, would never have uttered an assent to any measure not founded on moral propriety. It was but a few hours since I had discovered this hoard of gold; and with all my efforts, I could not settle to my work as before. I continued in the plank-house, talking on subjects far from our little island; and I asked my sweetly attentive companion to give us some wine, which she did immediately; and I sat, and discoursed, and drank wine, till tea-time. She often smiled as I talked, but would not disturb my humour, and that visionary hour or two passed off very well. We fed our animals, and retired early to the vessel.

Tuesday, 19th.—My sleep during the night was harassed by strange dreams, so incoherent they could not be recounted; but all bore on the treasure in the cave. On waking, I mentioned them to my dear wife, though I really felt ashamed that the late matter had so completely engrossed my mind. After discussing the subject for an hour, she concluded by saying, “Well, my Edward, whatever you wish to do, I will join you in most cheerfully.” And she said this with great emphasis, as she always did when she had made up her mind to so pledge herself. I received her assurance affectionately, and we left the vessel for the shore.

After breakfast, I proposed that we should examine the whole of the bags, with their contents, and accordingly, on entering the cave, I removed the loose stones from the breach in the wall, and we again found ourselves in the recess. I counted the bags, and found forty, each of them not larger than the top of a stocking; but, on reckoning out the doubloons from one bag, the result was five hundred; and on breaking the strings, which were quite mouldering, of some of the others, I found their contents to be the same. The bags, themselves, also, were nearly rotten, although they lay in a bed of dry sand. “We have here,” said I, “my dear Eliza, a corroborating proof of the great length of time this money has been hidden in this place.”—“Well,” she replied, “but what are we to do with it?”—“You must make new bags,” was my answer, “and I will make boxes to pack them in; and then we will leave them here,

ready for any opportunity that may occur to remove them and us. For we may hope that, in the course of time, some providential vessel may hover near us, and give us means to return to our native home, to bless with our riches and our presence those whom we fondly love."—"Ah! dear Edward," she exclaimed, "it may indeed please God that we are to be the instruments of comfort to your family and to mine, and, with these riches, be a blessing to the poor." Thus saying, she embraced me tenderly.

There sometimes is a sort of foreseeing impulse in the mind that cannot be checked, and such was that which I now felt respecting the purpose of these bags of doubloons: my mind seemed assured of the possibilities of certain events; and contemplating them (though perhaps afar off) as if they really existed, I saw opportunities in a thousand shapes of quitting the island with our treasure; and I desired to be ready for the favourable moment. I therefore hastened to get up some new canvas from the fore-cuddy of the brig, and as speedily cut it out into forty pieces, for as many bags. "Now, my own Eliza," said I, "you must sew up these as strongly as you can, and I will make boxes to pack them in, so shall they be prepared for whatever may be our own destiny." Here was at least a fortnight's employment for us; and as my agricultural business had been for the present completed, we immediately began occupying ourselves with our task. During the remainder of the week we worked together at the treasure deposits, and this circumstance seemed a happy earnest connected with it. We did not, however, neglect our little dependants the while; and there having been some showers of rain within the last few days, we fondly anticipated their salutary effects on our young plantations.

On Sunday the 24th, we rested from our labours, and kept the Sabbath; but I confess we did not feel so serenely devout on this day as had been usual to us; yet we read the service of the church, and engaged ourselves in other spiritual exercises; but our thoughts too often recurred to the strange discovery of the preceding week; still it was the Sabbath, and we found it so to our minds, for we prayed fervently to God for direction and support, to be our counsellor and comforter, and not to permit us to forsake Him, and our life of holy hope, for any earthly considerations.

On our coming on shore, we were agreeably greeted near the thicket avenue by the appearance of one of our fowls with her brood of twelve; and recollecting that another was sitting at

the same time in the hatch, we visited her just in time to assist her little progeny to step down to the green sward, or rather wild herbage; of these there were as many as thirteen, and I can truly say we were more delighted in seeing this increase to our family, than in finding all the treasure: the one was unalloyed; the other was encompassed with care and misgivings. My dear wife fed the mother hens, before our own breakfast, with plenty of bruised corn, of which the little strangers endeavoured to partake; while the two young pigeons also walked about pecking familiarly with the group; and notwithstanding the late disturbance I had occasioned in the cave, several of the older birds joined the feathered society, and fed with them. The armadillo was now so tame that he might have been let out, but we thought, for fear of alarming our nursing party, we had best keep him a little longer in his enclosure.

After dinner we took a walk through the woodland region to the plantation, and there felt a renewal of our former pure happiness, while contemplating the progress our plants had made; and with these renewed spirits, we sat down under the great tree, feeling sensibly that the society of each other, and the favour of God, was all we required on earth to fill our hearts with joy and gratitude. Our dear little dog also, now quite well, seemed to participate our lively pleasure in this emancipation from our long captivity in bag and coffer making; and if he could have spoken, would doubtless have pronounced a malediction on all buccaneers and their doubloons. We returned to our house an hour before the sun dropped, and having read some chapters in the Bible, took our tea, and retired to rest.

Monday, 25th.—On rising this morning, I, as well as my dear wife, could not help expressing a wish that we had never found the treasure, for it had discomposed our minds, and sadly thrown us out of the customary tenor of our employments. However, having taken our resolution not to absolutely throw away, by utter neglect of its preservation, what we had discovered, we continued to persevere in making the bags and boxes, and all were finished by the following Saturday morning. We then counted the contents of each old bag as they were turned over into the new bags, and found each to contain exactly five hundred doubloons. I had made each box to hold three of the bags, which I packed closely with sand, thirteen boxes in all; and there was one bag over, which I removed to the plank-house. We were heartily glad when the business was completed, and so sick were we of it that I built up the wall again, shut-

ting the whole in, without looking a second time into the great chest that contained so much gold in various shapes.

In the course of the week, two of the ducks had brought out their broods,—one of eight, the other of ten ; and, busy as we had been, we did not omit to carefully house them every evening in a place I had built for them near the spring.

Sunday, March 3rd.—We arose this morning and blessed God, as if delivered from some great calamity. Our hearts were again light, and we enjoyed ourselves, arm in arm, on deck, after dressing for the day, with a new delight. The sun was up, yet the morning was cool ; and we looked once more around, alive to all the beauties of nature that surrounded us. Surely there is something even in the touch of gold that demoralises the man ! Such was my reflection. This Sabbath was passed in great comfort of mind, and in the due exercises of religious duty.

Monday, 4th.—We congratulated each other, on leaving our cabin this morning, that we had done with the counting and packing the doubloons : but nevertheless I smilingly remarked, that I had large possessions, both in land and money, without a title to either ! “ But,” said my dear wife, with an answering smile, “ if there is not anyone to show a better title, possession here will surely give you the right. However,” added she, more seriously, “ we will leave the issue of our extraordinary situation in the hands of Him who placed us in it.”—“ Just so, my love,” I replied ; “ and here we will leave the subject.”

But the subject was not so easily got rid of ; it haunted me in spite of myself. “ I should like, dear Eliza,” said I, a little while afterwards, “ to make another excursion to the summit of our promontory ; we ought not to neglect the possibility of discerning vessels in the offing ; and, besides, I wish to make some more observations on our island with the spy-glass, as the adventure with the peccaries has alarmed you and Fidele from any further excursions beyond our own immediate domain.” To this proposition she made no objection ; and her little friend being now quite recovered, we were enabled to march out again in due order.

We accordingly harnessed ourselves with pike and bill-hook, pistols and musket, and the ship's glass ; and my dear wife putting up refreshments in her basket, we stepped into the punt, and I rowed round to the further extremity of the cotton-tree plantation. We landed, and proceeded through the wood to the foot of the hill, and, having deposited our basket under the tree at the commencement of the ascent, where, on a former

occasion, I had cleared a pathway to the ravine, we began to clamber and climb, and in about an hour we gained the summit of the promontory. I here looked attentively around, sweeping the horizon with my glass wherever the land did not intervene ; but no sail was discovered. I then directed my eye to all the shores of the islands within sight, but nothing presented itself worthy of attention, excepting some large black birds, hovering about the place where the peccaries had been killed. We supposed these birds to be the carrion vulture, drawn to the spot, and perhaps even to the island, by the smell of dead and putrefying animals. We returned by ten o'clock to the tree where our provisions had been left ; and, while I opened the basket, Eliza owned being a little disappointed in not having surprised another armadillo, to be a companion to her domesticated prize. We had, however, the pleasure to observe some of the shaddocks, and oranges, and limes, we had then sown, now above ground, and promising well. Our position was in deep shade, and therefore highly agreeable ; so that, after our fatiguing expedition up and down the side of the promontory, we enjoyed our collation, to which a cocoa-nut shell of cool wine and water was an excellent appendage.

After breakfast I moved the punt to the northern part of the plantation, to save us the labour of carrying the basket ; and there landing again, I occupied myself an hour in cleaning the ground round our various plants, which were all in high vegetation ; even the tobacco, and American corn, and Virginian pumpkins, were fairly up, and looking well. At noon we rested under our arbour tent, the dear cotton tree ; and being in a place of safety, gave ourselves up to sleep. We were on foot again about three o'clock ; and visiting the little neighbouring spring for some cool fresh water, we there had the satisfaction of seeing both the shaddocks and orange plants (designed for two future groves) in green germ of growing luxuriance. We returned to dinner beneath the perpetual shade of our patriarchal tree ; and, after finishing our meal, I cut some sticks from the adjoining thicket, to support the slender stems of the yams, which I thought required it by their seeming weakness ; for never having seen the yam grow, and being quite ignorant of its cultivation, I did that which appeared necessary. We returned by the punt, in the cool of the evening, and stepped on shore a little before sunset. I felt that we had not enjoyed this day's excursion as we used to do ; the beauties of the place were not so much the subjects of remark as formerly, and nothing was said of its eligibility for our permanent residence. It was evi-

dent that the discovery of gold had instilled a subtle poison into my mind at least, that continued its secret operation in spite of all my excellent conclusions and good resolves. We were, however, much pleased with seeing our two broods of young ducks waddling up to their home, as we landed; and while my dear wife stood by them, I ran up to the plank-house, and brought down some bruised corn, which I mixed with water for them in a hollow stone, close by the door of their habitation. We walked thence with the goats and their kids, and were met at our door by the gallant cock, and his numerous progeny. It was our next care to feed them, and to cut up a pumpkin for the goats, not forgetting a melon for the armadillo; and all this gave us real gratification, very different indeed from the fevered hopes which arose from counting and packing the gold. After regaling ourselves with a damaged pine-apple, we retired to our marine abode, to pray and to rest.

Tuesday, 5th.—On rising in the morning, we talked over a little change in our accommodation. The increasing heat of the weather had made it rather unpleasant in the state-room at night, so I employed myself after breakfast in slinging a cot in the great cabin, it being more airy for a dormitory; and in the end it proved to be not only an agreeable, but a healthy expedient. While I was thus employed, my dear helpmate made us some johnny cakes, a West Indian sort of tea-bread, and a pumpkin-pie. I then went down to the crayfish caal, and was bringing one home with me, when in my walk back, I observed several young pumpkins, about the size of English penny rolls. I cut off half a dozen, and put them in my basket: my wife, on seeing them, expressed a fear that I had gathered them prematurely. "Oh no!" I replied, "they eat them in America in this state; and when boiled, and mashed with a little butter and pepper, they are as good as turnips."* This intelligence pleased her, for she had sometimes wished for some greener vegetables to eat with our fish or meat, than the yams or coccos. The crayfish was put on the fire, and also the young pumpkins; and (reserving the pie for the morrow) we made an excellent and salubrious dinner; for we did not feel that inconvenience after eating this smaller crayfish which we had experienced on a former occasion, when we eat of the large one I took on the beach after the storm. In the evening I pursued some of our daily usual occupations; and, when the stars appeared, we retired composed to our place of rest, antici-

* This appears to be exactly what is now reared, and eaten in England, under the name of vegetable marrow.—ED.

pating a cool and comfortable sleep, in which we were not disappointed.

Wednesday, 6th.—We arose unusually refreshed, feeling as if we had slept in another climate, and quite delighted with our swinging bed. On coming on shore we visited our third hen, having calculated that her brood should be out about that time, and found her surrounded by a numerous progeny, no less than fourteen. By this accession we had altogether thirty-nine chickens; a most welcome store towards our future subsistence. After breakfast I proposed to my dear wife, that, as all my husbandry was completed for the season, I should seize the interval, and begin my operations for constructing us a house on the open glade near the cotton-tree plantation; for though we might hope it would please God, at some period, to afford us an opportunity to remove from the island to our native home, yet meanwhile it would be to our happiness to wait patiently on Him for His own time, and think only on such matters as most directly and immediately concerned us. These were her own sentiments, and she was delighted in hearing me speak as I had done. But she entreated, that whatever I did towards building the house, I would go about it leisurely, and not with that indefatigable zeal which hitherto had manifested itself in the speedy accomplishment of everything I undertook. I gave her my promise to be moderate in my exertions; assuring her that I would confine myself to four hours' work each morning, in the combined operations of getting materials from the ship, and in carrying them across the isthmus, and conveying them by the punt to the nearest place below the intended site of our dwelling.

After this discussion, while I was absent examining the success of my fish-pot, my dear Eliza recollected a large and small coffee-mill she had seen in the captain's cabin; which, perhaps, he was taking for some friends at Honduras; and she brought them on shore. "Edward," said she, "this large one will make a nice corn-mill for the poultry; and I will roast some coffee, and grind it in this," showing me the small mill; "it will save our tea, and be an agreeable change." I was much pleased at the sight of these mills, which had escaped my observation on board; but I was still more pleased with the kind and affectionate manner in which she introduced them to my notice. "After we have dined, darling," said I, "we will fix them both up for service, fastened against the side of our palace." To-day we dined sumptuously on a fine fish I found in the fish-pot, and being fresh from the sea, we relished it greatly. Our

dear little dog, too, seemed to make a better dinner than he lately had done on fish ; so that I was led to conclude he had discovered something different in the taste, which perhaps in time would have rendered the live store in the cask even unwholesome. In the evening I fixed up the mills in the interior of our palace, and having brought some coffee, which we roasted in the frying-pan, I ground it ; and my Eliza soon had the pleasure of presenting me with a cup of its refreshing beverage.

Thursday, 7th.—We arose with the dawn ; and, while I commenced my operations in the hold, to get up planks and boards, and some long-squared pieces of timber, purposely made for house-building at Honduras, my active helpmate went on shore to attend to our poultry ; and, while feeding them, she was delighted with meeting the other two missing ducks, and their broods, near the spring-head ; one had brought out nine, the other eight ; so that of the four broods we mustered thirty-seven young ones. As the remaining six old ducks were still marching about, we began to suspect they were all drakes ; and this suspicion was strengthened by observing a considerable difference in the appearance of their heads, contrasted with that of those now on duty over their broods. These Muscovy ducks are altogether clumsy creatures ; far inferior in point of form or plumage to those of England : the drake having little to distinguish him beyond an exuberance of red fleshy excrescences about his head.

After our own breakfast, I set to grinding corn ; and found the mill do so well, that we looked to it as a fruitful resource for our own use, in case we should be necessitated, by the spoiling of our flour through time, to eat Indian corn thus prepared in its stead ; but we hoped that day was a long way off, for the Americans press their flour so hard into their casks, that air or damp cannot penetrate them. In the afternoon we walked over to the cocoa-nut grove, where I employed myself hoeing for an hour ; and saw, with satisfaction, everything in a flourishing condition. We finished our evening on the platform of our palace, as usual, and retired early to our vessel.

I will now pass through the rest of the month, by observing cursorily, that I worked for four hours in the morning of every week-day, getting forward the materials for building our residence on the open space beyond the silk-cotton tree ; and I also contrived to find time to make a secure place with planks and fragments of the rock, covered in at the top, under the larboard bow of the brig, for a bathing-place ; which proved a source of great comfort and delight to us both. Nor did I

neglect to dress the ground, at one or other of the plantations, every evening. My dear wife the while attended to the stock, and other domestic matters; always happy when the Sunday came round, being ever to us a Sabbath day.

Monday, April 8th.—During the preceding month I had conveyed all the materials to the spot for our new residence. But many of the melons and pumpkins required gathering; the corn was ripening apace; and the yams and coccos would soon be fit to dig; so that labour of a different kind called on me to suspend further operations towards raising our plantation-house. I, however, set about erecting a temporary shed near the great tree, to shelter the various produce of our grounds, as I might be able to get them in. This operation brought round another week; and on the Sabbath we blessed and praised God, and I rested from my labour.

CHAPTER IX.

MONDAY, 15th April, 1734.—While my dear wife and I were enjoying our breakfast under the wide shadow of our arbour tree, we were struck dumb by the sudden appearance of a large canoe, between us and the opposite island. To arms was the first impulse: I put my pistols, which were lying near us, into my belt; and, after looking at each other for a few moments with astonishment, I said, "Fear nothing, my beloved wife! They may be nothing more than a few harmless Indians, driven hither by some accident. I will wave to them to land."—"Then," replied she, "may our God be with us, as we mean them kindly!" I took her pike, and tied a white napkin, that lay in the basket, to it, as a flag; and with it she and I ran to the highest part of the open ground, where we held it up, waving it the more to attract their attention. In a few minutes the people discovered us, for they were little more than half a mile distant from the shore. They immediately turned the canoe's head towards our flag, and soon began to hail us; but we could not understand them: our only answer, therefore, was still waving our signal. My dear wife, however, bethought herself of running back to the cotton-tree, whence she brought a fine melon, and held it up in her hand, while I continued to flourish my staff of invitation. They were now lying on their paddles, about a cable's length off, apparently in consultation. At sight of the melon they spoke to us again, and we heard the word "amigos," or something very like it. The Latin I had

learned at school made me catch at it. "Amicus!" thought I, "that will do;" and I hollowed out "amigos!" as loudly as I could, imitating their pronunciation of the word, and again waving the flag. On this they began to paddle in earnest towards us; but we kept our commanding position, walking along the high ground as we approached the water, until we should see them more distinctly. As they drew near the shore, we discovered two men, two women, and a girl in the canoe, all negroes. I now perceived we had nothing to fear; so I made signs to the men to row a little to the northward, that they might land clear of the rocks. Meanwhile we proceeded forward, with our dear little dog by our side, to meet them. We descended to the beach just as the canoe touched the shore. The people did not jump on land instantly, but stood, or sat, surveying us attentively. At length the elder of the men stepped out, and stooping before me, embraced my knees. I raised him up, while my wife, with the look of an angel, gave him the melon; and I, to show him I had no misgivings, took a clasp-knife from my pocket, and putting it into his hand unopened, made signs to him to cut the melon, and divide it among his party. It was a water-melon, and in their situation, parching with thirst, as we afterwards learned, nothing could be more grateful or acceptable. He returned into the canoe, and, opening the knife, cut the melon into slices, and presented it to his companions. As they ate of it, they looked much pleased; and, on our beckoning, they all came out of the canoe, drawing it up a little after them on the shore, and sat down upon the beach, the elder man giving me back my knife. After they had finished with the melon, I made signs to the two men to rise and go with me, at the same time saying to my wife, "Will you be afraid to stay with the women?" She answered, with firmness, "Certainly not." The men hesitated to leave the women, as they did not suppose that my dear partner was other than a caballero, till one of the women suddenly seemed to recognise her sex; and then speaking to the men to that purpose, as I supposed, they readily went with me. I took them to the silk-cotton tree, where our morning's provisions lay, which had scarcely been tasted when we discovered the canoe. I put the salt beef and biscuit, and other things, into the basket, giving it to one of the men to carry, and to the other the canteen with water. I then returned with them back to the beach: as we drew near, my companions laughed and shouted to their women, who answered by clapping their hands, accompanied by some vociferous expressions indicative of joy. I caused them to

move a little higher up, where I spread the provisions before them, of which they all ate, drinking the water at times with much eagerness, while my Eliza and myself walked about at a little distance. During all this affair, Fidele never barked, but kept quite close to the feet of his mistress, eyeing the negroes with fear and suspicion.

When they had finished their repast, which was scanty enough for so many, I made one of them take up the empty basket, and another the canteen, and then proceeding in a body to the great tree, I signed to them to lie down to rest. They instantly obeyed, and all but the elder man fell asleep. He and I endeavoured to converse; but could not understand each other in the least. I was, however, satisfied he spoke Spanish, though perhaps in the sort of way the negroes of Jamaica speak English. If he had spoken pure Castilian, I should not have understood him the better for it. All that I could comprehend was, that his name was Diego, and that he called the other man Shaver; which, as he repeated it several times, caused my dear wife to smile, at which old Diego laughed heartily, although ignorant of the joke. The man's name no doubt was Xavier, though pronounced in a manner that produced a ridiculous meaning to our English ears. Our mirth awakened Xavier, who seemed quite happy when Diego explained to him the part he had borne in the jocular affair; however, he soon lay down again, and dropped asleep. My dear wife then suggested, that as these poor strangers had but a spare breakfast, it were well to take Diego, and bring some provisions for their ampler dinner. I readily fell into her kindly idea; and putting the basket into the negro's hand, he appeared to understand that his service was required, and followed us through the woodland region without showing any fear. He was delighted with the fountain of water at the turn of the cave promontory, and seemed greatly pleased on observing the broods of ducks, and the goats feeding by the stream.

No doubt he expected to see a fine house, and plenty of people; for after passing along the path between the promontory and the rock, he looked around and around, and then at us with a sort of amazement. He then followed us closely up to the plank-house, where we collected some yams, biscuit, salt meat, and old pumpkins, with a few cocoa-nuts, and filled his basket. As we came out on the platform, he turned his eyes upon the brig, and then said something to me. I made signs, to inform him she had been wrecked, and that all but ourselves had perished. He understood me completely; his eyes instantly

filled with tears, and he covered his face with his hands. Poor negro ! thy sympathies were awakened ; thou thyself, like ourselves, had been snatched from a watery grave ! and the divine spirit breathed into man, became manifest in thee at this moment, without, perhaps, thy knowing that there is a God, and that that God is your Father and ours ! My beloved Eliza was deeply affected by this language of universal nature, which so distinctly spoke how much the poor negro compassionated our present situation.

We proceeded on our return to his sleeping friends ; but I stopped when we arrived at the rocky point ; and taking up one of the rods which lay there, I baited the hook with a bit of raw pork, which I cut off from a piece in the basket, and presenting it to my dear wife, I said to her, "Go, my Eliza, and catch us a fish." She received the rod from my hand ; and while Diego and I stood at the base of the rock, she dropped the bait into our conservatory, when a fish immediately took it, which with a little exertion, she soon drew out upon the rock. Diego, on seeing the great size of the prize, caught in a moment, as he thought, from the sea, and by a white woman too, (whom, he believed, could do nothing but yawn and count her beads,) burst into an ecstasy, and sprang on the rock, to disentangle the fish from the hook. My dear Eliza thanked him with a smile, and the next instant he descended with the fish in his hand ; and my little angler, who now moved like a kid among the rocks, sprang from her position, and was by my side in a moment. Thus well provided, we returned to the cotton tree within the hour, and found all the party still asleep.

Diego seemed to think they had had repose enough, for he roused them immediately on our arrival : they were much startled by the suddenness of his manner : the women, indeed, appeared somewhat frightened ; but the old fellow was a wag in his way, and seemed, by his laugh, to enjoy the confusion he had occasioned ; while with an air of triumph he held the fish over the face of one, and a great yam over another, as the people lay close together. After rubbing their eyes, they one and all began to talk and smile, and we rejoiced to see in our new companions nothing but what was cheerful and inoffensive. "Shawveer," said I (imitating Diego as well as I could in pronouncing the name), and at the same time taking him by the arm, "come with me." He was much amused by hearing me endeavour to call him by name. I led him to a little distance, where there is a large upright stone standing between the cotton tree and the open ground, and, having taken with me a

few leaves and some bits of stick, I struck a light there, and ignited the leaves and sticks, making signs to him, meanwhile, to build up a fire on that spot. He was pleased with the occupation, and soon called on one of the women, who was his wife : she came to him. On this I put my hand on his breast, saying "Shawveer," then touching his wife's shoulder, at the same time pointing to him, and repeating his name, and then pointing to her ; after the pause of a second he understood my question, and answered "Hachinta : " I repeated the word, patting her on the shoulder, and then left them to collect wood and make up the fire.

On returning to the cotton tree, I found Diego in full detail to the other two women, or rather to the other woman, and a girl, about seventeen years of age ; the one his wife, the other his daughter : they seemed full of surprise : and I suppose he had told of his seeing the brig, and his understanding our misfortune ; for at the moment I came close up to them, his wife fell before the knees of my dear Eliza, weeping and kissing her feet. This scene sealed our friendship for these poor outcasts ; and from that hour we cherished the feeling towards them, of which they had set us so eminent an example.

We now thought it best to retire to the plank-house, and leave them to cook and eat their own dinner, as they might please ; besides, it was time that we ourselves should have some food. This determination being taken, I beckoned to Diego to follow me, and led him up to the little spring, where he replenished the canteen with water. On our return to the tree, we made them comprehend that we were going to retire for awhile ; but Diego, no doubt, had made his wife understand we were without any one to help us, for she took her daughter by the hand, pronouncing the word "Mira," and tendered her to my wife, giving her, at the same moment, a gentle push, as much as to say, "I have turned you over." My dear Eliza looked so kindly on the girl, that she showed no reluctance in going along with her, and we now left the cotton tree arm in arm, followed by the young negress and our faithful little dog, walking leisurely through the woodland region up to our wooden palace.

Mira took small notice of anything, yet did not appear sulky. As soon as we entered our house, her new mistress cut a muskmelon, and gave her a slice of it, which she eat with evident pleasure ; while we, too, regaled ourselves with some of the same, to stay our hunger until we could get dinner ready. I made haste to take a fish from the conservatory, which having duly prepared, I returned in a trice, and gave it to Mira, who

helped it into the kettle with much adroitness ; she also seemed to know what she was about in roasting the yams. When the dinner was ready, it was served up on the table placed within doors ; and, after taking for ourselves, I filled a plate and gave it to the girl on the platform, where she eat with great composure. When she had finished it, I bored a young cocoa-nut for her ; first giving her the milk to drink, and then, cutting off the top, handed it to her, with a spoon, which she knew very well how to use, and with it eat the soft pulp, after showing signs of satisfaction in our kind treatment.

After the dinner things were put away, and we had rested about a couple of hours, my dear wife made her maiden put four young cocoa-nuts into her basket, and with it we proceeded to join her friends at the plantation. They were glad to see us ; and my Eliza taking the cocoa-nuts, presented them one by one to each of the party : they looked pleased at the promised treat in their hands ; but they had no knife, so I gave Diego the clasp knife, and made signs to him to keep it, which delighted him exceedingly. They had done justice to the feast : the fragments were not very heavy.

Poor creatures ! they all appeared very much fatigued or exhausted ; and, as negroes do not require much preparation for a lodging, they seemed quite content to take up their abode in the shed I had erected to store the vegetable productions in ; but to render it a little more comfortable, I made the men bring in a few planks, and placed them side by side upon the ground, for their beds : this being done, my dear wife remained with the women while the men and I went down and secured the canoe ; from which they brought up its thin sail, to cover them at night.

About four o'clock we left them, taking the girl with us ; and on our arrival at the plank-house, my Eliza made a large quantity of coffee in the tea-kettle, and sweetened it ; then pouring about three pints of it into a tin camp-kettle, she put it into one of Mira's hands, and into the other a basket containing biscuits and a small mug ; making a sign to her to take them to her friends, which she answered by a pleasant look, and instantly set out at a good pace.

"My honoured husband," said my dear wife to me after the maiden was gone, "the coming of these people is an event so new and unexpected, that I sometimes think it a dream ; however, I doubt not Providence hath brought them for their good and ours, poor creatures ! God hath been merciful to them as to us ; and it is our duty to share what we have with them.

Indeed, they seem grateful, and disposed to be our servants, if we please to make them so.”—“We will be kind to them, my dear Eliza,” I replied : “but for their happiness and our own, they must be accustomed to look up to us for everything, and therefore be made to serve us as servants, but not as slaves.”—“My Edward,” she replied, “your judgment is always most prudent as well as most kind ; and I hope we shall be able in time to teach them to know that God who delivered them from death, and placed them here in security and abundance.”

In this strain our conversation continued until near sunset, when Diego returned with his daughter, bringing the empty baskets and tin kettle, and making many signs of thanks, bowing profoundly before us ; after which he went away, and left her with us. The girl was nearly worn out by the recent fatigue and anxiety she had undergone ; and we ourselves, being somewhat weary with our hospitable exertions, retired early to the ship ; but she did not follow us quite so willingly as before, when she saw us about to embark. However, a kind look from my Eliza, and my showing her the vessel was fast moored, prevailed over her reluctance, and we spread a bed for her on the cabin floor.

Tuesday, 16th.—We arose with the dawn, but Mira was fast asleep. I dressed myself, and left my wife to awake her, and follow me on shore. Without more ado, I walked over to the plantation, where I found the two men and their wives out before the shed. They greeted me with evident grateful reverence ; and I, having shown them a kind salutation on my part, took Diego by the arm as a sign to go with me, which he did ; and leading him to the beach, I rowed him round in the punt to the rocky point. We then drew up the fish-pot, where I found two fish, which we brought on shore. I made him prepare them for dressing, and then baited the fish-pot with the entrails. This done, we carried up our work to the plank-house, where we met my wife with her maid ascending from the vessel. Diego scarcely knew his daughter, her mistress having made her bathe, and dress herself in clothes she presented her with ; namely, a white chemise and petticoat ; after which my dear Eliza tied a coloured Bandana kerchief gracefully round the girl's head. Mira was quite elated, and showed herself with pride to her father, turning round and round with a sort of dancing step. He smiled, and patted her shoulder, bowing to us ; while we put some yams into one of the baskets, with a couple of melons and the fish. I then made signs to him to depart to his companions, which he did joyously ; no doubt anticipating the

pleasure with which he and his acceptable store would be received.

We now adjourned to our own breakfast of coffee and biscuit, of which Mira also partook, though at a respectful distance, sitting at our feet, with Fidele by her side, on the platform : he, good dog, with equal content, eat his crumbs without grumbling. During breakfast, I complimented my wife on the change she had made in Mira ; adding, that I thought it might be well to give the whole party two suits of clothes each. She delighted in the idea ; and we soon brought from on board the articles necessary for the men from the seamen's chest. She then accompanied me, Mira carrying the bundles, to the cotton-tree plantation, where I was to see the negroes array themselves, while she would bring the women back with her for a similar purpose. The latter, on seeing Mira's gay appearance, required no further inducement to follow their new mistress ; and the females returning altogether, left me with the two men, whom I led to the beach, and soon made comprehend my meaning. They threw aside their dirty partial covering, and having given themselves a thorough washing, each put on a check shirt and white duck trowsers, which I handed them, and looked neat enough. I rolled up the two duplicate suits ; and signed to them they were for change. Both men kissed my hands, seeming very thankful ; after which I caused Diego to dig a hole in the sand, and bury their tattered old garments.

I now walked my men over the places of my agricultural labours, and tried to make them comprehend that the product was to go into the shed ; at the same time putting the spade and the hoe into Diego's hands, as much as to say, "I deliver all these things into your care ;" and he understood me. He knew all the plants ; and when he saw the tobacco shoots, he put his finger and thumb to his mouth, imitative of smoking ; and instead of looking contemptuously at my half-dozen sugar-canes, or on the general insignificance of the plantation, he evidently expressed wonder at seeing them there at all, by first pointing at them, and then at me, and then looking upwards, as much as to say, "I only wonder that you alone, and a white man, could have accomplished this, situated as you are !" I proceeded next to the great body of planks, and other timber, which I had deposited near the place intended for our house ; and having pointed to the timber, I was about to mark out two spots in the rear, for them to erect each a hut for themselves, when Xavier, with a grin of sudden joy, touched his own hands, and then the timber, and quickly drawing aside a plank, began

a sort of pantomime, by which I as promptly understood that he was a carpenter—a discovery that pleased me exceedingly. We then proceeded to the sites I destined for their huts, where I marked out an oblong square for each, sixteen feet by twelve, with which Xavier seemed well satisfied. At this instant my dear partner appeared, with her three damsels, all looking equally clean and neat, and in high spirits ; and the whole party congratulated each other by bows, quite significant of mutual respect at meeting each other in such unusual finery.

Short as the time was that we had been together, enough had passed to establish perfect confidence ; so that my gentle Eliza did not hesitate to remain with Diego and the women, while I took Xavier to the ship, to help himself to a saw, an axe, and an adze, and such other things as he might require. He was highly amused with the construction of the plank-house, which I showed him in our way ; and he viewed it over and over again, inside and out, to my no small entertainment too. After getting our carpenter's tools, we made quick march back to the plantation, and in less than an hour I had the satisfaction to see both Diego and Xavier engaged in their respective employments. " I am happy to see this," said my dear wife ; " it has pleased God, my Edward, to relieve you from a toil, that, in such a climate, could not have been pursued without ultimate destruction to your health." I indeed gratefully acknowledged the signal providence ; and my sweet angel (whose soul was always full of heavenly thoughts) soon after left us, taking with her Mira, and her mother Rota, with a view to prepare food for us and them. As Diego was not using the spade, Xavier borrowed it, and commenced digging holes for the uprights of his hut ; but the ground proved rocky, being a red sand-stone, hard within a few inches of the surface soil, so that he could not accomplish his purpose with it. I therefore took him to the plank-house, and gave him the crow-bar I had used in removing the stones of the cavern ; and at the same time I made him take with him another hoe and spade, and signed to him to find his way back to Diego. I remained with my wife, who, with her women, I found very busy boiling salt beef and pork, and making flour cakes.

Not needing my help, I left them, and returned on board to get up some bags of nails of various sizes ; and with a view of expediting Xavier's work in completing the huts, I brought some pieces of torn sails on shore, of which there was an abundance. On rejoining Eliza, after this my task, I found dinner on the table, and Rota departing with our largest basket, well

replenished with beef and pork, and flour cakes, for her friends at the plantation : my dear wife had also furnished her with four knives, two tin cups, and two wooden platters, to eat off. The good negress had proved herself handy in the culinary art ; so that, to my great satisfaction, the object of my anxious care had not been under the least necessity, as heretofore, of broiling herself over the fire. As we sat down to dinner, she was sensible of this relief ; and although she never had murmured, she now smilingly acknowledged her obligation to the assistance she had received. It were, perhaps, difficult to ascertain whether we or the negroes rejoiced most in the providential connection, which our similar misfortune had brought about. No doubt their change was very great : escaped from shipwreck, and most likely from slavery, hitherto strangers to Christian kindness, they must feel sensibly the comfort of their lot. We, on our part, valued their services, and hoped, by kind and wise measures, to secure their attachment and consequent happiness. I knew there was nothing pressing at the plantation for Diego to do ; I therefore sent Mira for him, in about an hour after we had dined, which message was conveyed by my merely pronouncing the name of " Diego," and pointing for her to go. They soon returned together, when I took him to the ship's side, and gave him the bags of nails to carry, and then showed him the canvas which I had also deposited there ; by which he understood me, that he was to come back for it, and take all safe to the silk-cotton tree, whither I and my household, that is, my wife, Mira, and Fidele, leisurely preceded him. I easily made Xavier understand, that the canvas was to be nailed to the sides of his structures, instead of boards ; and also, for the present, to be sued as a covering to the roofs. He had not been idle during my absence, having excavated several places for the uprights of one hut, which, he explained to me, were to be made by sawing a plank lengthways into three—a very good idea. He saw I comprehended him, and expressed my satisfaction. While I stood by, Diego took the crow-bar, and went on with the hole-digging ; while Xavier commenced with the saw, no doubt proud to show me how well he could handle it ; and, indeed, I was highly gratified in seeing him quite at home in his work. In the midst of this, we were agreeably surprised by seeing the two women take a hoe each, and go over among the Indian corn, and commence hoeing the ground well up round all the stems. No doubt Diego had sent them ; but it was a heartfelt delight to us to observe such a spirit of industry manifested by the whole party.

While they were at work, my dear wife and myself walked arm in arm about the plantation : we visited our shaddock and orange plants at the north-east corner, and marked with pleasure the rapid growth of the latter. Strange as it may appear, we felt ourselves exalted in rank by the situation in which we then stood ; and, without being tainted by pride, we experienced a sentiment within, which, affecting our external demeanour almost unconsciously, was likely the more to maintain our dignity with our people, without lessening our real kindness and sympathy towards them. As we walked along, my dear Eliza often exclaimed, "How gracious is God, my Edward ! How, in a day, has He taken off all our burdens, and made us the protectors and supporters of those He has sent to serve us !" On coming round again where the melons grew, she requested me to cut two that were ripe, one of which she sent by Mira to her father, and the other she cut in pieces, and gave it to Rota and the other woman whom they called "Hachinta," a name that puzzled us a good deal, but which, I have since learned, the Spaniards write "Jacinta."

As the sun was now sinking towards his setting, and there was plenty of provisions left from the people's dinner for their after meals, we took our leave of them for the day. When returning to our little land home, my wife and her damsel engaged themselves a few minutes in housing the broods of ducks, which we found still loitering about the spring ; from whence we walked leisurely up to the plank-house, followed by the goats ; they and their kids here received some slices of pumpkin from their mistress's caressing hand. The poor armadillo, too, was soliciting food at the bars of his enclosure, which was bestowed by the same kind donor. Mira had never seen one of these creatures, so it excited her wonder, and elicited some ejaculatory remarks, to us not quite intelligible.

Coffee was soon in preparation ; on handing which, the negro girl raised a smile in my wife and myself by calling her Eliza, when she addressed her, in presenting it. This was very natural, having heard me so address my wife : but I thought it right to show her the proper distinction ; and although I was ignorant of the Spanish language, yet I knew it called ladies Donna and Senora : I therefore said, "No : Senora." Mira instantly corrected herself, repeating "Senora" with an inclination of the body. When the girl went over to the fire, my dear Eliza laughed, saying, "I shall fancy myself a heroine in Gil Blas ; but you are right, Edward." After coffee I regaled myself with a cigar : at the sight of it Mira was delighted, and,

without losing a moment, had brought me a fire-stick to light it; after which she stood near, to enjoy the fragrant smoke as it issued from my mouth. We did not, however, stay long enough to encounter the sand-flies, but moved to our vessel in good time, preceded by Fidele, and followed by our maid, who now showed no fear.

Wednesday, 17th.—I arose, as usual, with the dawn; and leaving my wife and her damsel to get together some things for our water-side laundry, went to inspect the fish-pot, in which I found three fine fish. I threw two of them into the conservatory, reserving the other for the day's table; and when my dear wife and Mira came on shore, we breakfasted immediately, to give more time for business; and after the meal, my Eliza named "Rota" and "Hachinta," pointing to Mira to go for them. She went, and in a short time returned with them. My wife then gave each of the women a second suit of clothes, and making them bundle up the linen to be washed, directed them to carry it before her to the streamlet, while she took the two washing mallets in her own hand, and a piece of soap; part of my good aunt's supply, which, after our first essay, we had found necessary to the perfect cleansing of our linens, notwithstanding the unparalleled cleverness of my two wooden-headed damsels in the washing department. When arrived there, she set her laundresses to work in the water, without any trouble or difficulty. When they were fairly engaged, we walked away, followed by Mira, to the plantation, to see what the men were about, and to give our attentive little maid an opportunity of explaining to them how the women were employed. We found both men busy in erecting the uprights, six of which Xavier had sawn out; and both, now active workmen, appeared quite happy, and perfectly recovered from the exhaustion occasioned by their fatigue in escaping from the shipwreck.

My dear wife and I had determined, when speaking to them, not to repeat any of their words, excepting their own proper names; hoping by this to compel them to learn our language. On this principle I began to school Xavier, by pointing to the several instruments he used, at the same time calling them respectively by their names; by which process he and his companions, male and female, soon acquired a very competent knowledge of our terms for all the common articles of life; we always remaining silent when through any forgetfulness they named them in Spanish. Mira had told them about her mistake in addressing my wife; after which both the men

when naming her in any way, called her "La Senora;" and so did the two women on coming over with Mira in the morning.

While the men were at work we sat down under the shade of our noble tree; a place always agreeable and interesting to us, but now doubly so, since from it we had first descried our great and present help. "This indulgence won't do, Edward!" suddenly exclaimed my Eliza, sweetly smiling; "I must mind my own duties, and go to superintend our domestic concerns: the women are with the linen at the brook; and dinner must be got for the whole party." She went, while I continued for an hour looking over the men, and was much pleased with the progress they made in the construction of the hut, and particularly with the scientific way in which Xavier went to work. When finished, each of these habitations would be at least twice as commodious as the plank-house; and seeing that he perfectly understood what he was about, I made up my mind not to interfere, but to leave him at once to the completion of the whole. In my walk home, as I passed the Indian corn, I pulled some of the full heads called cobs, and took them with me to roast; for in that green state they taste something like young pease. On my arrival I found the cooking business in high order. My dear helpmate had taken Mira, with her basket, to the pumpkin beds near the cave spring; where we had planted that useful vegetable on our first landing, and where it now grew in abundance. A great stew of salt pork, with a due proportion of vegetables and pepper pods, was going forward. At noon Mira was sent over to the cotton tree for the men, and, when they arrived, they and their wives found their dinner spread on the duck-hatch, near our pleasant fountain. They all seemed delighted with the Yankee stew, and the cool place we had chosen for them to eat it in. After dinner the men returned to the plantation, and the women to their task at the streamlet: the latter being only a few yards distant from their shady dining-room.

My dear Eliza and myself had agreed to dine later than usual: our labour being now little, our appetites were less importunate; and besides, we felt it would be well to attend to the wants of our people first. It was therefore time enough to raise the fist-pot after they had returned to their work; which I did, and with great success, finding in it no less than five fine groopers: I threw four of them into the conservatory; and calling our maid, gave her the remaining one to prepare for dressing, and then take to her mistress. Having baited and

replaced the fish-pot in the sea, while our repast was getting ready I walked into our pumpkin and melon ground, between the rocky point and rivulet, and was gratified on observing how the whole plantation was coming on, many of all sorts being already fit to eat ; a matter of greater gratulation because of our increased party ; as our original store of fruits and vegetables was quite exhausted, excepting a few yams and cocos. However, as I found by the present crop before me that there was no reason why we should be stingy of them, having plenty of seeds for more, I cut a couple of the melons, and took them home to my wife ; one of which we eat after dinner, dividing it with the armadillo, who was now brought out for the first time, and seemed not at all disposed to run away, though still something afraid of Fidele : rolling itself up every time the little dog attempted to play with it.

While eating our fruit I remarked to my wife that I thought it would be prudent to remove the bag of doubloons from the shelf to my trunk in the vessel, lest curiosity might induce Mira some day or other to pry into its contents, and inform her friends of our riches. Eliza saw the propriety of the measure, which in the course of the afternoon I carried into effect. The women finished their task before sunset ; when Mira went for the men, and brought them to regale, with their wives, on coffee and flour cakes, where they had dined. After that favourite beverage, they came up of themselves to the plank-house, and in their grateful delight danced before us while we sat at tea : we could have dispensed with this mark of their satisfaction, but, for the sake of the feelings that dictated it, we showed nothing like disapproval. After they had finished, Diego, who appeared quite a courtier in his way, bowed several times to the Senora and myself ; and looking archly at me, with a smile, said, " Don Edvardo ! cigarro ? " putting his finger to his mouth, and puffing from the lips as if he were smoking. I took the hint, and presented him with one cigar, and Xavier with another ; then pointing in the direction of the cotton-tree plantation, they took their leave. I could not afford to smoke regularly myself and to supply them also ; I therefore did not indulge myself this night : so after my dear wife and Mira had attended to the security and comfort of our live stock, I fastened our door as usual, and retired early with my household to our marine lodgings.

Thursday, 18th.—On this day and the two following, the men continued steadily at work upon the first hut ; Diego, meanwhile, employing Hachinta with the hoe among the corn,

and other plants in the neighbourhood of their occupation. Rota was chiefly at the plank-house with Mira and her mistress, assisting in smoothing the clean clothes and in cooking provisions. I found sufficient to do on board, looking over the bills of lading to refresh my memory, and in selecting out such things as might be required for coming events.

Sunday, 21st.—We arose as usual with the dawn. I took my bath, dressed for the Sabbath, and went on shore, leaving my wife with Mira to go through the same ceremony. I hastened to the plantation to prevent the men working, and arrived just as they were about to commence. I stopped them, but felt much embarrassed how to explain my motive, and what I meant to inculcate. The poor fellows looked a little astounded : they apprehended something wrong ; and the more so, because my aspect was graver than ordinary. Then extending my arm, as if to demand attention, I held up the extended fingers of one hand, with two of the other, bending them in succession, and making a sign of to work, until after I had bent the sixth : I then, bending the other, knelt on a plank that lay beside me, and raising my hands to heaven in this attitude, I prayed, “ Bless these people, O Lord, with Thy holy Spirit ; that they, even they, may be brought to a knowledge of Thee, through Jesus Christ our Lord.” Diego repeated, “ Jesu Christo,” and crossed himself. I was pleased to perceive that I was understood, and that the name, at least, of Christ, was not a strange sound in their ears. We put the working implements in the shed ; then, pointing to my clean dress, I gave them to understand that they must go to the sea and wash, and put on fresh clothes, they and the women also.

I now returned to my dear wife to inform her of my success ; for in talking this matter over, we had much feared there would be great difficulty in making a first impression. She greeted me in her straw hat, which she had not worn for some months ; and I was agreeably surprised to see her in it again : besides, it was a welcome evidence of a returning step to civilised life. She had made Mira, also, look very pretty : if a negro wench could ever be so transformed to an English eye !

Cakes had been baked, and salt meat boiled, on the preceding day ; so that there was nothing to do now but to heat the coffee ; and when it was nearly ready, Mira was sent to summon her friends to breakfast. We had debated on the idea of allowing them to eat with us on Sunday ; many arguments presented themselves for and against ; but we decided, I think prudently, that such intimacy might possibly prove

dangerous, not only to our peace, but to our ultimate safety; and we therefore determined to treat them kindly, but yet in no way to compromise the authority we had so well established. They all soon appeared with our damsel, and made their obeisance to us as we sat before the plank-house on the platform. They looked very clean and neat, and we complimented them by signs on their attention to our directions. We then desired Mira and her mother to take the provisions prepared to the duck-hatch for their breakfast: the thing was soon done, for they all gave a helping hand, finally leaving Mira with us, who very quickly, and even nicely, set out the table for our repast.

As we eat, we discussed the propriety of having the people at the morning service; and we agreed to do it: for although they could not understand what we should read, yet they would comprehend that we were employed in devotion. However, we agreed to shorten the service, by omitting the lessons, which we would read to each other when alone; and my Eliza offered to sing a hymn at the beginning and ending of the prayers. To instruct these poor blacks in the elements of Christianity required time, and a power of communicating our knowledge by language. After the breakfast things were put away, and the interior of our palace, now to be our church, was put in order, I sent Mira for her people; and not being ashamed of the sign of the cross, I seized on Diego's acknowledgment of its sacred import, and, when they assembled, I took a little water, and dipping my finger in it, moved it on the forehead of each one present, saying, "May it please Thee, O God, to add this individual to Thy holy Church." And this being done, my wife, while we yet stood, sang an appropriate hymn, in indeed angelic strains, which seemed to make a striking effect on her hearers. We now knelt down: they all followed our example; and I repeated the Lord's prayer, and belief, and confession of sins, with heartfelt energy. We then rose; and I read the general thanksgiving, followed by "We praise Thee, O God!" after which my wife sang another beautiful hymn: and this short service was concluded by my repeating the benediction of our church. When it was finished, I took each of the people cordially by their hands, as did my dear wife, and pointing immediately after to heaven, exclaimed, with the fervour of inspiration, "Bless us, O Lord! bless thy people!" The prayer-book was then shut, and put carefully and respectfully away; after which, we all went out together, my soul's partner taking my arm, which example the

other men and their wives reverentially imitated ; poor forlorn Mira, and Fidele, following separately in our train.

I knew it would be impossible for these uninformed human beings to pass the whole of a day in absence from labour, without drowsy sluggishness of mind, unless they had some amusement, so we thought it might be well to allow them to visit some of the distant shores of the islands in their canoe. With this intent, we bent our course through the woodland region ; and after looking with approbation on Xavier's work, we walked down to the canoe, which had been washed out very clean ; and making a sign to the men to get into it, and row us round to the plank-house beach, they obeyed with alacrity, leaving their women clapping their hands with a sort of childish delight, as we pushed off. After they had landed us, we sent them back for their wives, with whom they quickly returned, the canoe being very swift ; not like my heavy, though useful, punt, which with great propriety may be compared to a donkey that carries sand, and the canoe to a nimble-footed pony. On the party rejoining us, my wife went with Rota and Mira to the plank-house, where she filled the large basket with cold provisions for the proposed excursion ; and on its being brought down, I made signs to Diego to put it in the canoe ; then pointing to the island opposite, showed him I wished him to go there, but to return before sunset. He paused a moment, and putting his hand to his mouth, as he would drink, pronounced the word "water ;" I nodded, and he set off on foot for the canteen, which had been left at the plantation. Though I believed there was no cause for fear, yet I thought the party should have some means of defence ; so by the time he re-appeared with the canteen, I had fetched the two half-pikes ; one I gave to him, and the other to Xavier, with which they were much pleased, and both immediately stepped into the canoe, beginning in the same moment to shove off ; for he had not understood that they were to take the women. I, however, stopped the movement, and taking hold of Rota, put her arm under mine, and walking about thus for a second or two, pointed to Diego, and then to the island ; by this, they instantly comprehended that it was a party of pleasure we intended them ; and the women again clapped their hands, and laughed, when they obeyed the kindly sign of my dear wife's hand also, who presented them a couple of melons when they stepped into their boat. In short, the whole party pushed out into the lake in great glee, and rowed swiftly towards the opposite shore.

When they were fairly off, wishing to observe them, I went

up to our house for the spy-glass, which I slung across my shoulder, my pistols, as usual, occupying my belt ; and giving my Eliza my arm, we and Mira, and our faithful little dog, strolled leisurely through the woodland region, and took post under the great tree. From this point we watched the canoe, until we saw the people land on the opposite island, in a bay, which appeared to be bounded on each side of its beach by a ledge of rocks, having a beautiful and finely-wooded conical hill of considerable elevation on the north, and a steep rocky promontory on the south, with well-wooded hills in the back ground, apparently half a mile or rather more from the shore. I then adjusted the focus of the spy-glass, and soon discovered each man and his wife, according to our example, walking arm in arm up the beach, each of the men also holding his pike. My own dear wife could not steady the glass so as to bring the objects to bear on it ; I therefore placed three sticks at a little distance from each other in the ground, crossing them near the top, which presenting a rest for the glass, she could then see distinctly all their movements. Mira, too, from the same position, caught the objects instantly, at which she was both astonished and delighted, running once or twice, from one end of the glass to the other, looking both ways in added amazement. In about half an hour we saw the party re-embark, and row round the rocky shore to the northward, where they landed again on a sandy beach, from whence they walked up towards the woods. However, they soon returned, and again rowed along shore, sometimes observed by one, sometimes by the other of us ; but Mira was most indefatigable, no doubt that she might be able to astonish them by telling them all they did while away.

When the sun had passed the meridian, and having traced them to the further end of the sandy beach, where they opened their basket and sat down under the rocks to dine, we took up our spy-glass to retrace our steps to the plank-house, where our own cold dinner was laid to receive us at one o'clock. We eat it with thankfulness, blessing God for all the bounties with which His providence had loaded us. By way of dessert we regaled ourselves with a fresh musk-melon and a little wine, the former of which we shared with Mira and the armadillo. The spy-glass was again placed on a rest, and after I had discovered the canoe, Mira undertook to watch it, while my Eliza's gentle voice read to me several chapters of Ezekiel. When she had finished, we prayed together to God, for the continuance of His grace, and to pardon anything we had done amiss this day, in our zeal for converting the poor negroes to a knowledge of His will.

We now took a peep at our wandering friends, and traced them into the creek beyond the place in which we had had the encounter with the peccaries. My wife, on seeing this, expressed some apprehension at the idea of their meeting any of those creatures, and being hurt. But I told her, as they appeared all safe in the creek, having therefore passed the place, there could now be no reason to fear; however, Mira was deputed to watch their egress from the creek again. Meanwhile, my Eliza and I sauntered about, amusing ourselves in throwing corn to the poultry, the young of which had now attained a good size. After a time Mira began to show uneasiness; she was tired of watching, and they had not appeared. But, on my taking the glass, I discovered two of the party at the extremity of our isthmus; guessing they had reached it by having compassed the back of the huge steep rock at the bottom of the little bay. When I directed the glass so that Mira could discern them, she seemed quite pleased, but nevertheless rather astonished. About an hour before sunset, we saw them row out of the creek, and this was a signal with us for getting coffee ready to meet their return; we meant it for a treat; and as we had many casks of Irish butter in our vessel, my dear wife added a frugal portion of that luxury to the nice flour cakes Mira now put before the fire to warm. I thought the men would stop and take a look at the cocoa-nut grove on their way; but they did not; so our maid had just time to place the coffee, with the hot bread and butter, for her friends on the duck-hatch near the spring, as the canoe came to the shore.

As they were landing, we hailed them with a smile, and a few words spoken with a kind accent, which made their meaning quite intelligible. Mira, meanwhile, met them, to tell them of the comfortable repast we had ordered to be ready for their landing; and all, in their various ways, evinced pleasure and gratitude at the kindness. But Diego would not lead to the hatch until he had taken me to the canoe, where I saw several crayfish, and a great many large shells, among which were some rock oysters; he had also brought a variety of plants, or their leaves and some roots. I could not tell him, that to collect such things was not the object of his excursion, and that I would rather he should not so employ himself on the Sabbath day: but I owed it to his motive to appear pleased, feeling that he had done no moral wrong. This over, he departed to his coffee, quite satisfied with himself and me. When he joined the party, we heard Mira's tongue going, interrupted only by the laughing

of Xavier, and sometimes of the women, or of the whole party. Doubtless she was telling them the knowledge she had of all they did in their absence : but Diego soon guessed the truth of the matter, we supposed, for he patted her on the back, and looking her in the face, said something very knowingly, laughing also, as it were, triumphantly. All, however, seemed to continue their good-humoured jests ; and, while we walked at a distance, we observed Rota make her daughter taste the buttered cake, which, indeed, appeared a great treat to the whole party. When they had finished their meal, the men came respectfully to me, and I went with them again to the canoe, where they delivered to me the two boarding-pikes. I then showed Diego that he must deposit the crayfish, oysters, and conchs he had brought, into the crib which I had made for the crayfish I had caught sometime previous at the head of the creek. While the men pushed off in the canoe to obey my orders, the women kissed my dear wife's hand, and proceeded through the woodland region to join their husbands at their hut. We now returned to our palace, and refreshed ourselves with tea ; but Mira did not seem to relish it as well as her friends had done their coffee ; she, however, did not the less enjoy her cakes, and drank some warm water and sugar with them, which seemed quite palatable to her taste. As the evening closed, she and her mistress scattered some corn for the fowls and pigeons, and we then all retired, peaceful and happy, to our vessel, and to sleep.

Monday, 22nd.—The early dawn found us up, and active to pursue our occupations for the week. My wife employed herself in many domestic arrangements with the women. I visited the men, supplying them from time to time with what was wanted for the work from the vessel, which kept me going to and fro several times during the forenoon. Such was the great progress they made with the hut, that before evening they had even fitted on a complete framework for a sloping roof, so that in a day or two they would be able to enclose it all with the canvas. On the approach of sunset I caused them to desist ; signing to Diego that I wished to see what the leaves and roots were which he had brought in the canoe. He showed me some palm leaves, not quite the same with those near the plantation, and he made me understand that they were to be formed into hats. He then took me to a spot near the little spring, where he had put in some suckers of the wild banana, which he had found somewhere. I knew the plant, having seen it in its cultivated state in Jamaica. Pleased with his zeal, I returned and sent some cold salt beef and biscuit, by the women, for his

and Xavier's supper ; and, after taking coffee, we retired early to our ship, and to sleep.

Tuesday, 23rd.—The hut was ready for the canvas, and all things for its completion being on the spot, I left the two women to assist Xavier, while I took Diego with me, accompanied by my wife, her maid, and Fidele, to the cocoa-nut grove. We went in the punt, which he paddled along at least as well as I could do. He and Mira showed themselves much pleased with what they saw : but our plantation there had lately been rather neglected : however, many melons, as well as pumpkins, were quite fit to cut, which our handmaid set about doing, under the direction of her mistress ; and while Diego employed himself with the hoe, of which there was great need, I took the gaskets, and to his evident wonder and amusement, climbed one of the trees and knocked down about a score of the nuts presently with my hatchet. I quickly followed the shower, and cutting a nice young one through husk and all, presented it to my Eliza to drink its milk. I then pointed to Diego and Mira to help themselves, which they did not unsparingly ; the good old negro never failing to offer the opened nut to my wife, or myself, before he would partake of it himself. After this refreshment, while Mira was carrying the gathered melons and pumpkins, and the remaining cocoa-nuts to the punt, my dear wife and myself visited the capsicums, which, to our great delight, we found in flower ; we here sat down to rest awhile on the accustomed ledge, where we had once slept with our dear little dog beside us, when he and we constituted the whole of our colony.

Our party returned to the plank-house about noon, and a similar dinner to that of yesterday was quickly prepared ; but Diego added some of his oysters to our repast, which he opened for us with the clasp-knife I had given him ; and we found them excellent. In the afternoon we visited the cotton-tree plantation, whither Diego had gone before us, and where we now found both men and women hard at work trying to complete the hut that day. We looked on with great satisfaction ; and having made Mira serve them out some water-melons, and a few cocoanuts, to add to their supper of salt meat, we said, " Good evening," and retired.

Wednesday, 24th.—This morning I found the hut perfectly enclosed, and set Diego and the women briskly at work excavating for the uprights of the second hut, while Xavier was fitting up the inside of the one they had finished, on the plan of the interior of the plank-house, placing boards for a mattress bed,

and a few more for shelves. And all this being done before breakfast, immediately after it he sawed out the uprights, and began to proceed with the other hut. During this and the three following days the men worked closely at their second habitation ; the women cooking the provisions, and doing such other things as my wife directed.

Sunday, 28th.—We arrayed ourselves on the morning of the Sabbath in a clean skin and clean clothes, and prayed to God to give us a clean heart. Soon after our landing at the plank-house, the two men and their wives came in their fresh attire, and saluted us. To honour the day, I shook hands with them, and they made their obeisance to my dear wife, the women kissing her hand. A coffee-breakfast was prepared for them, with some flour cakes and butter ; and after their meal, and our own, as on the former Sabbath, we went to prayer, lengthening the service a little ; my beloved Eliza, as before, singing a hymn at the beginning and end of the service. They behaved with great decorum, and showed neither impatience nor restlessness.

After prayers we again gave them a basket of provisions, with the canteen and the pikes ; and I made Diego understand I wished him to row round the promontory. As they could not as yet profit either by our reading or conversation, I did not know how they could better employ their time ; for we wished to avoid disgusting them with the rest of the Sabbath, by dictating observances, the meaning of which they could not at present be taught to comprehend. Their wives now stepped into the canoe, as a matter of course, and the men put off from the shore in great spirits. In about an hour they had rounded the promontory, and appeared close under the brig's stern, from the quarter-deck of which we saw them, having taken our station there again ; and we saluted them as they passed. They then rowed to the northward, between the beach and the reef ; and with the glass we discerned them landing, under the very rocky point which had threatened us with a second shipwreck, after we had escaped from the reef. They continued there so long out of sight, that we desisted looking for them : they had left the canoe, and were most likely pursuing the course of the stream into the interior. We went on shore to dinner, and employed Mira to watch the explorers with the glass. She at last discovered them push out from the land. I then took the glass, and observed them until they got among the rocks where the brig had struck ; but, losing sight of them again, I returned the glass to our maid, while my dear wife and myself employed ourselves in reading the Bible.

Not finding them come back by five o'clock, we all became very anxious ; and our uneasiness increased till near sunset, when we gladly, and to me most unexpectedly, saw them rowing up the lake. They, of course, had doubled the island ; and, on relanding, must have rowed round it : by which circumstance I now got an idea of its extent. Coffee was prepared for the adventurers ; and we received them as something lost, which had been found. The men were tired ; but our kind reception, and a plentiful meal, renovated their spirits. The canoe was again, though on the Sabbath, not without a cargo : they had taken a turtle and several live shells, large and small, of the conch kind, and others ; besides having collected some vegetable productions. I could, however, say nothing about this now ; so, after they had taken their repast, I contented myself with making Diego understand he must carry all round to the cotton-tree-plantation beach in the canoe ; which he did without delay or demur. One of my reasons for this measure was, that my Eliza should not see the turtle, until brought before her as meat to be dressed. After the people's departure to their rest, of which they had much need, we regaled ourselves with tea, and then retired to our ship.

Monday, 29th.—I visited the plantation early in the morning, and found the men at work on the second hut ; but taking hold of Diego, I made him understand that he must kill the turtle, and Rota prepare it for dinner. It was but a chicken compared with the former one, not weighing more than sixty pounds, shell and all. He had taken the vegetable matters out of the canoe, to dispose of in the way he best understood ; but I signified that I should like the shell-fish to be put in the crayfish craal, which might be done by rowing the canoe over, when he came to dinner. I then left them, and returned to breakfast. In about an hour, Rota arrived, with the turtle cut up, carrying it on her head in the calapach or back-shell : she laid it down on the platform, before my dear wife, who did not instantly know what it was ; but when she recognised it, I was glad to perceive she did not show any disgust or aversion on the occasion. Such is the nice distinction made by minds of sensibility, that had she seen it alive, perhaps she would not have consented to its being killed ; at anyrate, I doubt whether she would then have consented to eat of it. I picked out the calipee, or under part, for ourselves, and made Rota take the rest to dress for the people's dinner ; and, that she might make it savoury, my kind Eliza gave her some capsicums and allspice to season it : and we all enjoyed the treat.

During the remainder of the week, every effort was made to complete the second hut. Indeed by Saturday night it was finished, and both families comfortably lodged, one in each hut. We had got mattresses from the brig, and as many other conveniences as we thought they would need. They were now each made possessor of a commodious habitation—a home, with ourselves, in this Heaven-given haven, and we were made happy in seeing them thus lodged and surrounded by many other blessings.

Sunday, May 5th.—The sanctity of the day was duly observed. After divine service, we walked with the whole company to the top of the promontory, and passed the evening in looking at the people's huts, and visiting everything most interesting around.

Monday, 6th.—The season was now come to dig the yams and coccos; also to gather in the ripe melons and pumpkins. The Indian corn, too, was nearly ripe; so there was no time to be lost. Diego and the women, therefore, set briskly to work; and after Xavier had made some improvements on my temporary shed for receiving the harvest, he likewise joined the agriculturists. By this activity, in less than four days everything was brought away from the cocoa-nut-grove plantation, and housed; and, by the following Saturday, all other of our mature produce, from different spots, excepting the corn and tobacco, was safely stored; besides our having many melons and pumpkins still in progress of growth. We were surprised and grateful at seeing so great an abundance from such small sowings. While the negroes were thus busily employed, I kept them in fish; and Mira, under my dear wife's direction, prepared all the meals, which were supplied regularly and liberally, now and then giving them some coffee in the evening, as a treat.

Tuesday, 7th.—The sun was in our zenith at noon to-day, not casting shadow in any direction beyond the object. I took advantage of this observation, to make something like an approach to a knowledge of our situation as to latitude; and, by allowing four days to a degree, from the sun's transit over the equator on the tenth of March (the day of the equinox *) to the present time, it gave fourteen degrees and a half, which I now concluded to be pretty accurately the latitude of the islands.

* The Editor started a little at this declaration, until it was recollected that, in the year 1752, eleven days had been taken out of the old almanack; by which the calendar was thrown back so many days upon the sun.

Sunday, 12th.—We endeavoured to-day to convey some religious instruction, by way of a more lasting reward on our indefatigable labourers. They listened attentively and patiently ; but Diego alone seemed to comprehend anything we said or did towards the subject, and he but little : yet any degree is one step onward.

Monday, 13th.—The women came over early, with their husbands' clothes and their own, for purification at the brook. Meanwhile, Diego continued his husbandry cares, and Xavier was employed in putting a sloping roof of board on the plank-house, the better to protect its interior from the rains which we now might look for, conformably to what I had learned respecting such seasons in the Caribbean Sea.

Tuesday, 14th.—I gave out a keg of red ochre, and some oil, from the fore-cuddy, and directed Xavier how to paint the canvas coverings of the huts, and by Thursday night he had given them two coats, which would not only render them proof against rain, but give them a gay and pleasant appearance. While he was about this work, Diego housed the corn cobs and tobacco leaves ; and during the last two days of the week, the men employed themselves beyond the silk-cotton tree, in clearing away the brushwood from before the rock, over the face of which the beautiful little water-spring, from the long absence of rain, now appeared but as a silver thread.

Saturday, 18th.—The sun rose in a haze, the clouds began to rise from the westward, and there was little breeze of any kind all day. By evening we had completed our operations, and just in time, for about ten o'clock at night it commenced raining most tremendously ; but on the morning of the following day it was again fair, with a clear sky, so that we met to prayers at the usual hour ; but about three o'clock in the afternoon, the clouds opened on us in torrents for two hours, but without wind, and then cleared up. In like manner, it continued to rain every day for seven days ; during which time we took the best care of ourselves we could, and attended carefully to our stock. We also seized the opportunity which intervals of clear sky afforded us, to cut down thirteen trees of the cabbage-palm, that grew abundantly on the high ground to the south end of the cotton-tree plantation. This was done to keep the men in exercise, and to be ready to assist in building our plantation-house, whenever the time might arrive for commencing it. In the meanwhile, the tops of those trees furnished us with a succulent and agreeable vegetable, especially when boiled with our salt meat.

Saturday, 25th.—The sun rose this morning with unusual power and brilliancy; the atmosphere had been tempered by the late weather to an ethereal purity; the rains had ceased, and not a cloud was to be seen. Diego lost no time in making me understand, that he and the women must employ themselves assiduously, after Sunday, in planting the yams, coccos, corn, and other seeds. The four cocoa-nut trees put in round the plank-house had increased rapidly in growth; as had likewise those between the plank-house and the beach, which had been raised from the four shooting nuts: the time was most propitious to vegetation. We were all busy to-day in airing things that had been wetted by the rains; also in getting various provisions on shore from the ship, and the evening was finished by a great take of mullet with torch-light, to the great amusement, if not astonishment, of our negro friends.

Sunday, 26th.—We all met in our Sunday dress at divine service; and, after my dear wife had sung the hymn, we made the people say the Lord's Prayer after us, which they tried to do. It could not be explained to them at once, but we made them understand that the God to whom we prayed in the address, "Our Father in Heaven!" stood in the same relation to us all that Diego stood to Mira; and this was a great point gained, as they now had some idea of the object of our worship. We also succeeded in making them comprehend that all we eat or drank, and all the fruits of the earth, were His gift: and that we therefore prayed for "daily bread." We went through the greater part of the service in their presence this day: and at night, when we retired to rest, we fervently poured forth our thanks to the Lord of heaven and earth, for blessing our endeavours so far, in opening the minds of these kind-hearted creatures to a knowledge of God.

Monday, 27th.—After the women had finished their Monday morning's task, they put themselves under Diego's direction, for we had now determined that Xavier should henceforth be chiefly employed in the erection of our long-projected habitation, on the glade beyond our dear hospitable silk-cotton tree. To this end, I furnished him with a plan forty-four feet by sixteen, height of walls fourteen feet: the interior to be divided into three parts; the centre great room, sixteen feet; with one at each side fourteen feet. There were plenty of materials for the projected edifice—squared uprights, planks, boards, laths, and shingles: and I mentioned before, that thirteen trees of the cabbage-palm had been felled, and brought to the spot; seven of which were from sixteen to eighteen feet

long, and the other six from fourteen to sixteen feet each, when cleared of their cabbage head. These trees, when squared, were to form the base of the frame-work. I therefore hoped, with occasional assistance, as all materials were so well prepared to his hand, that he might finish the building in six months.

Xavier having received my grand architectural plan for our new palace, I sent for Diego, and furnished him, for his agricultural department, with all the yams and cocos that had been preserved for the purpose of planting: I also gave him about two bushels of the old Indian corn, and some of all the seeds we had collected from time to time from our fruits as we eat them; also more than one-half of the tobacco seeds, which I had not yet sown. He was delighted with this kind of supply, as they were more fit for vegetating quickly than the proceeds of the late growth. He took them away carefully to the storehouse near the cotton tree, in which plantation the chief of his operations were to centre; though we had minor nurseries for a few melons in the neighbourhood of the cave-spring, and in other places, to be handy on occasion.

CHAPTER X.

THE men worked steadily at their respective avocations, and in three months the labours of each made a respectable appearance. Diego had laid out the grounds well, and every plant had attained its full growth. The house was up: the roofing and flooring, and interior work, only remained to be done. We all enjoyed good health during this period, and preserved great harmony, and proper subordination. Our negro friends began to speak with us, on all ordinary matters, in our own language; and we hoped they knew something of their Redeemer, and the moral duties that should bind man to man. In July there was some rain: these refreshing showers fell generally in the night, and especially after a great display of sheet lightning in the horizon, whose brilliant yet silent coruscations can scarcely be imagined by those who have not resided in intertropical regions.

Monday, August 26th, 1734.—My dear wife and myself had reason to be well satisfied with the prospect of being comfortably lodged before the winter, which although not much colder than an English summer, yet, in this climate, is attended frequently with stormy, disagreeable weather. We beheld everything around us prosperous and promising. Our young goats

were nearly full-grown, and our three broods of chickens had nearly attained maturity. The old hens were again laying ; and now we ventured on their prolific nature, to regale ourselves occasionally with a few of their delicious eggs at breakfast. Some of the young ducks had been lost, but there remained an abundance ; so that now and then we treated ourselves to a roast duckling, as a delicacy. The chocolate plants had sprung to half a foot in height in several places in the woody region, where we had put in the nuts ; and the capsicums and bird-peppers were everywhere full of fruit. Diego's plantation was gratifying to look on. The large red leaves of the cocos had a brilliant effect ; and the majestic Indian corn, with its feathery top, and great bulging cobs protruding, leaf-covered from the stem, looked nobly. The yams, with their small stalks, claimed little attention from the eye, but their great usefulness stamped a value even on their homely appearance. The tobacco, thinned out to give it vigour, spread its broad dark-green leaf on a stem four or five feet high, exhibiting a yellow crown of clustering seed capsules, here and there on a plant destined for seed, the tops of the others being cut off, to give an increase to the magnitude of their leaves. Our pine-apples had just begun to form ; while the six sugar-canes had attained a height of nearly eight feet, with stalks and upper leaves of vivid green. All our fruit trees, too, had advanced considerably ; so that we might eventually live to see the orange grove and shaddocks in full bearing, adding to the beauty and comfort of our plantation residence.

But the happy condition of our negro friends was still more gratifying even than all this. Their orderly conduct, their attachment, their progress in speaking English, and the pleasure they seemed to take in learning what God had revealed to man in the Scriptures, gave us a deep feeling of holy joy. They now comprehended the Ten Commandments, and would not do anything on the Sabbath day that could fall under the denomination of labour or ordinary work. They also seemed to understand the purport of the Lord's Prayer pretty well, and that memorable saying of our blessed Redeemer, "Do unto all men as ye would they should do unto you." Perhaps, too, with a sigh, they compared the conduct of their former Christian masters in Cuba, with this most Christian precept, and could not reconcile the difference.

By this time we had been able to make out their story. They had been purchased, and shipped in a schooner at Trinidad (a town on the south side of Cuba), for some person at

La Guira, on the Spanish Main. Two nights before they appeared off our island, the schooner had struck on a reef, and almost instantly bilged, quickly filling with water. The captain, and five others, his crew, took to the boat, taking plenty of provisions with them, and without mercy left the poor negroes to their fate; but fortunately there was a canoe on deck, and the weather being fine, they speedily contrived to get it into the water; and having got a sheet out of the cabin, they made a sail; and with a few dried calavancas, a species of bean, they put off before the wind, to take their chance of making some land, or being picked up at sea by some vessel. They had made our promontory at daylight, and seeing the opening between the two headlands, struck the sail, and paddled in: and this was the Lord's doing.

We thought how differently it might have fared with us, if the inhuman captain and his crew had made our island, instead of the poor deserted negroes: perhaps we should have been seized, and sold into slavery, or something worse; and we blessed God for the manifold kindness of His providence. It was happiness for us to contemplate these dispensations: but there must ever be a want, or a regret on this side of the grave, and we sometimes sighed for a sight of those we loved, and had left behind in England. However, even here, we applied the cheering balm of hope to our aching heart, and felt the relief which resignation, supported by that sweet anchor, never fails to create.

In a few weeks, the product of our second harvest was got in; and its abundance seemed more than sufficient for six months' consumption. When the labour of it was perfectly accomplished, Diego and Hachinta assisted Xavier in his work, by bringing everything to his hand as he required it; but Rota made herself so useful to us in a domestic way, that Mira's services were, comparatively, only those of a waiting maid. Rota managed all the house affairs, without giving my dear wife any more trouble than the mere expression of her wishes; which gave us now so much leisure, that we were able to read a good deal, and enjoy frequent walks, arm in arm, in intellectual converse: happy in ourselves, and happier still in seeing those around us happy.

On the 1st of September the wind blew all round the compass, with repeated torrents of rain; and during the night it raged with redoubled violence: but our buildings, old and new, did not receive any damage; nor did anything happen, from the storm, worth remarking. The eleventh being my dear wife's

birth-day, she then attaining her one-and-twentieth year, I made it a day of jubilee, and entertained the party more sumptuously than usual, giving them a couple of young full-grown drakes for dinner, a little wine, plenty of coffee, and a few cigars. I drank the dear one's health myself, after our own dinner, in a glass of Canary, continuing to sit before our plank-palace, enjoying the coolness of the promontory shadow, and her sweet conversation. But our friends soon claimed our attention by their approach: they offered their congratulations in their own way, and finished the day with dancing, blithesome and happy: an anniversary ever dear to my memory.

It was about this time that the early part of this diary was written, such as it is, from scraps of memoranda, and from memory; and in the employment, recording so many mercies, I found inexpressible delight. It was also sweet to me to write down, again and again, the name of my ever-beloved Eliza, when I occasionally paid the tribute that is due to her heart and understanding.

The plantation-house was finished on Saturday the 30th of November; the foundation of which, being on a high plot of rocky ground, was dry, and free from rank herbage: and its elevation was sufficiently commanding, when compared with the huts of Diego and Xavier, to give it an air of superior consequence. Indeed, things are great or small only relatively. The interior of the house appeared to us all we could desire: the floors boarded, the doors and shutters well made, one large door opened in front, opposite the lake, while a second in the back pointed towards the mountainous promontory. The side rooms were boarded over at the top for ceilings, the southernmost being fitted up with shelves for stores. The great hall we left without any covering but the raftered roof of the house, which gave it a cool and a lofty air.

Sunday, 1st December.—Our Sabbath devotions had assumed a deepened character. Our people had been taught to respond to the litany, and also to the prayers generally, by the "Amen." And the residue of the day was mostly employed in endeavouring to give them various instruction. Mira could read English words of two syllables, and seemed vain of this acquirement, which, we hoped, would prove at least a grain of mustard seed, that might in due season become a large plant, bearing its kind.

Monday, 2nd.—All hands being now at leisure, I determined to open the hold, and set seriously to work to get up the furniture that had been shipped for our house at St

George's Quay. The men were now able to understand me pretty well ; so I commenced business in full confidence of soon effecting my purpose. The mainmast of the brig being gone, deprived us of the advantage of the mainstay to fix a purchase-tackle to ; and, of course, we had neither main shrouds nor main yard whereon to fix a guy. We, however, contrived to get the starboard fore-yard-arm aft, between the shrouds and mast ; and making fast a double purchase to it, we then bowsed on the lift and steadied it ; the end of the yard-arm being now over the main hatchway, with the tackle affixed, nothing further was required to enable us to go to work but to fix a guy to an outrigger, made fast to the fore shrouds. This operation altogether cost us the whole day ; but on Tuesday we put our invention to use, after clearing away the remainder of the boards and planks, of which there were now not a great many. We proceeded to hoist up part of the cargo shipped at Jamaica—viz., American flour, Indian corn, biscuits, sugar, coffee, and rum ; all of which were in barrels of thirty-two gallons. The barrels of beef and pork which had occupied a handy place for ship's use, and which I had opened some months before, were now empty ; therefore we had only to throw these empty casks over on the beach. Skids were fixed from the sides of the brig, by which we could lower the full barrels direct from the tackle upon land. But it occasioned so much labour afterwards in rolling the first two or three across the isthmus to the point where they were to be transported by water to the storehouse, that I proposed bringing the canoe and the punt from that point, and embarking them from the brig at once. The boats, if I may so call them, were brought round the peninsular promontory ; but we found it safest merely to put two barrels into the punt, and employ the canoe in towing. They made two trips the first day, but on every subsequent day they made three trips ; so that, by the end of the week we had conveyed twenty-six barrels to the plantation, besides three that had been rolled to the other side of the isthmus. There then remained in the brig about sixty casks that had been shipped at Jamaica, two only of which were rum ; and I had a good mind to bore them to let their contents run out, but was afraid of giving umbrage to my good fellows by so suspicious an act. The barrels sent away consisted of flour, six ; of biscuits, six ; of sugar, six ; of coffee, six ; of Indian corn, four ; and one of rum. The men worked with great sagacity and promptness, and no accident happened during the whole proceeding.

Sunday, 8th.—We observed this day with due solemnity.

Monday, 9th.—The men were employed some time in getting round to the plantation the three casks from the west side of the isthmus; after which the women assisted them in rolling up all the other barrels to the open ground, where planks were laid over them for the present, to shade them from the sun. These operations occupied the whole of Monday. On Tuesday morning, I made them roll the cask of rum, a barrel of flour, one of biscuits, one of sugar, and one of coffee, into the side apartment of the plantation-house, designed for a store-room. My dear wife, meanwhile, had undertook to make the women bring a quantity of the different fruits from the temporary shed, and arrange them on the shelves in this room; also in other places of it which had been prepared for their reception. But we were soon all at a loss how to dispose of the barrels now lying out of doors; for I had not at first contemplated bringing so many to the plantation. However, Diego relieved my mind, by proposing his house for a warehouse, until Xavier and he could build one. The proffer was readily accepted, while Xavier courteously offered hospitality to his friend; and so all the barrels were rolled into Diego's hut, which held them easily. These, and some other arrangements connected with them, occupied the whole of Tuesday. On Wednesday morning, again in the ship hold, we got at the cases and packages that contained our household stuff, these packages lying on the top of the heavy cargo shipped in England. We unpacked them in the hold, and were much pleased to find their contents all safe. Most of the articles were conveyed on shore by hand, in baskets or boxes, and thence carried to the plantation. The women were delighted at seeing the pots, and pans, and kettles, pewter and crockery ware; and clapped their hands when they saw the glass, tea equipage, and all the truly English et ceteras, such as knives, forks, silver spoons, and so forth. Sheets, tablecloths, and other napery, with all the requisites for home comfort; chair and table furniture, and bedstead, excepted. All our wood-work was to have been done at Honduras, where mahogany is abundant; but we had mahogany here also, though small; and we had Xavier; and our wants in that way were few, and with those few we could soon be supplied by his skill and industry.

By Friday evening all our things were removed from the ship to the plantation-house, including our store-chest in the steerage passage, a few dozens of wine from the lockers, the captain's case of hollands, and box of cigars, with such other desirable

or useful articles as were to be found in the cabin or state-rooms. We slept on board that night for the last time, and took our leave next morning, with a mixture of pleasure and regret, of a blessed ark, I may call it, where we had enjoyed many months of security, peace, and comfort. On Saturday our trunks and cot were brought on shore, and the dining table from the cabin, with the two camp stools. These latter I left in the plank-house, instead of the two chairs which were transferred to our new residence. My dearest helpmate, and her maids, put everything in its place; and by noon nothing remained to be done but to sling our cot in the bed-room, and to set the table and two chairs in the great hall. We were too much engaged as yet to think of dining in state to-day; besides dinner was to be prepared for to-morrow also; and many other arrangements were found to demand present attention. In the evening we regaled the whole party with coffee, and I gave each of the men a couple of cigars, indulging myself likewise with the same. When the sun dropped, we rather dreaded a visit from the sand-flies, but were most happy in not hearing or feeling any of those little tormentors. On retiring to rest, we returned thanks to God for our comfortable habitation, and all the blessings His good providence had bestowed upon us. But we did not sleep very soundly; we heard noises we were unaccustomed to, which we afterwards found to be from lizards, some of which we had occasionally seen: but in the morning we were delighted by the song of the tropical nightingale, and rose quite refreshed and in good spirits.

Sunday, 15th.—The morning of this Sabbath was solemnised in the great hall, with appropriate devotion; and the remainder of the day was passed in the same simple pursuits as heretofore.

Monday, 16th.—Hachinta only went to the weekly washing to-day, while Rota attended with Mira at our new dwelling. I made the men tow the punt round to the brig early in the morning, where I met them after I had breakfasted. The carpenter's chest was got upon deck, and lowered down into the punt; and such other things as appertained to the craft, which had not already been taken on shore, were put into it, and delivered into the charge and keeping of Xavier. Some additional spades, hoes, axes, hatchets, and bill-hooks were next brought forth: these were to be deposited in the house store-room, for Diego's future use; and with this cargo the men were sent away, and desired to return. During their absence I

looked out two of the best of the seamen's chests, and completed them from the clothing found in the chests of the others. When my active negroes reappeared, I made them get up a barrel of beef and a barrel of pork, which I despatched by them to the house store-room; telling them not to return till they had seen me at the plantation. I remained on board some time after they had put off, securing the residue of the captain's property altogether in his state-room; and as his cabin door was still in its place with lock and key, I duly fastened it.

It being now near one o'clock, I walked over to the plantation-house to dinner. My dear partner received me with smiles, and dressed as when in England. I flew to her arms, as if we had met after a long separation. "My beloved Edward," said she, "how gracious is our God! how much happiness does He bestow on us!" I felt the just tribute, with full force. It was the sentiment that filled my own heart, as I hastened to embrace her. I saw her restored to her former gentlewomanly condition by His providence, relieved from toil, and all the menial offices of culinary labour. And, may I add, I saw a table covered with a clean damask cloth, laid out with all the conveniences of European comfort, to which my eyes had long been strangers!

While dinner was serving up, my Eliza took me into the store-room, to show me how well the people had arranged the casks, and herself and damsels the articles for house-keeping. I was much pleased with the order of everything, and highly gratified with so goodly a sight. Rota sent in our dinner, as nicely cooked and served as if she had been apprentice to my Lord Mayor's kitchen. A fine fish at the head, a piece of boiled salted pork at the foot, a pumpkin pie on one side, and a roast white yam at the other: with capsicums, and vinegar, and mustard, and all the *et ceteras*. After giving thanks to the Giver of all things, we eat our dainty viands with an indescribable satisfaction; finding gratitude, now as ever, our sweetest sauce. When the cloth was removed, a fine melon, and a bottle of wine decanted, were put before us; I took a slice of the fruit, and drank one glass of the wine to my dear wife's health. Not tarrying longer, we arose, and walked together to the plank-house; the path to which, through the goodly trees, was now well trodden: after sauntering agreeably through the wood, and lingering at the fountain, we sat down to rest upon the camp stools which were already on the platform. For some time we amused ourselves with feeding the poultry and pigeons, which

flocked around us, as if glad to see us ; and also the armadillo, which had lately been again a prisoner in his crib. As soon as I heard the boats, or rather the men in the canoe, I left Eliza with Mira, who now, as well as Fidele, was her constant attendant, and I proceeded on board.

I made my sturdy fellows get up the seamen's two chests from the steerage, and one cask of Irish butter from the hold ; after which I had all the hatchways battened down, fore and aft, and the companion door closed. Then taking two bits of stick of unequal lengths in my hand, with one end of each projecting, I told my two men that the two chests contained clothing ; that I did not know which of the two was best, but he that drew the longest stick should have his choice. They were delighted with the prospect of possessing such a treasure each, and highly entertained at the idea of drawing lots. They drew, and the choice fell to Xavier. "I get big stick, I take big chest ;" and he did so, instantly marking it with his knife. Diego's ready couteau soon performed the same operation on the other. The chests were then lowered down into the punt, and also the cask of butter. When they were pushing off to take the cargo home, I showed them the keys, at which they laughed ; but I said I would not give them until I came myself to the plantation. After their departure I rejoined my Eliza, and told her all I had been doing : she seemed greatly pleased, and said she would follow my example in one respect at least, by giving the women some striped cotten (of which she had several pieces) to make up for themselves ; but the cutting of it out she herself would superintend. We remained awhile at the plank-house in continued conversation ; and, amongst other domestic subjects, thoughts of the expediency of removing a colony of the young fowls and ducklings to our new habitation, suggested themselves.

On our return home, we met the men bringing up the butter, which they placed in the store-room ; after which I gave them their keys ; and when their wives, and even Mira, knew what they were for, the whole party went off together to the water-side, to help up with the chests to their own house, to see, no doubt, what they contained. That operation detained our domestics a long time ; however, about seven o'clock, coffee was served up by Rota ; Hachinta getting supper for the men. I now regularly took my cigar after coffee, which was both agreeable to my dear wife and to myself. The evening was cool, and there were not any sand-flies to annoy us ; we sometimes heard the buzz of a moscheto, but that insect did not bite

us; it was, therefore, pleasant to sit with open doors, looking full upon the tranquil lake, distant from us about two hundred yards, discoursing on all we had been doing, and on what we yet intended to do. While we talked, Mira and Fidele slept cosily together on the floor, not far from our side. In due time our own eyes drew to slumber; the doors were closed, and we retired to our room, making Mira spread her mattress in the hall; but Fidele shared our apartment, and contented himself with a boarded bed.

Tuesday, 17th.—In the morning I sent for the men, and told Xavier, if he and Diego could be satisfied with lodging together for a little longer time, I should wish him to erect a complete poultry-house, with roosts and laying compartments for the hens; the ducks to have their habitation below. And I thought it should be placed between the open space separating the two huts, and the great house, and be stoccaded round with stakes and wattles. I made him understand me, and he undertook the task cheerfully. I now gave directions to Diego to try his skill at a new fish-pot, the old one being nearly worn out; also to enlarge the crayfish craal, so as to hold a turtle occasionally. I told him besides, that I should look to him to provide us in fish as well as vegetables; but I charged him never to attempt to catch any of the pigeons, nor to take their eggs, nor indeed in any way to disturb them. My dear Eliza's tender wish was this; but my own principal reason for the injunction was to keep him and the rest of the people out of the cave. Diego promised to mind all I had said; but he took the occasion to observe, that the first tobacco leaves had been pressed together long enough to be mellowed, and he should like to make some cigars for himself and Xavier. "I will supply you both, for a fortnight," returned I; "we shall soon have the rains, when you cannot go to out-work: you may then make up the tobacco." He seemed quite satisfied; and I accordingly went to the store-room, and divided a hundred cigars into two parcels, desiring him to reserve one for himself, and to give the other to Xavier. This unexpected and welcome present drew forth many profound bows from honest Diego.

After breakfast, I began arranging the fire-arms and boarding-pikes in our bed-room. There were three muskets and six pikes. I drew the charge from the muskets that were loaded, and employed myself till dinner time in cleaning them; after which, I placed them, one over the other, horizontally, on wooden pins, which I fixed in the wainscot; and immediately above them hung up the ship's spy-glass and speaking-trumpet,

and then flanked the whole with the boarding-pikes, placed erect. No one but my wife knew where I kept the ammunition; but it was at hand, if wanted. We thought all these precautions right, although we hoped quite unnecessary. Caution and circumspexion, however, are faithful sentinels. My pistols I always wore ready loaded in my belt.

While I was arranging the arms, my dear Eliza placed the few books we had in due order; and on a neighbouring shelf, made a fine display of the shells we had collected during our residence on the island, from the noble conch, the monarch of them all, used for a bugle, down to the rice shells, whose extreme smallness and beautiful translucency and great abundance elicited from my beloved an exclamation, "What would you give for these, Queen Mab?" These little beauties were, indeed, like fabled things of fairyland. The noble Shakspeare was to be found among our books; but the nobler Bible was there also. We had Archbishop Tillotson's works, and the Spectator, and Bunyan's Pilgrim's Progress; and one book more that afforded us never-failing pastime—I mean the Arabian Nights' Entertainments, in which there is, throughout, more than floats on the surface of the story. A fable is a foolish thing if we do not lay hold on the allegory; but that being taken up, no mode of writing can be more delightful and instructive, as evidenced in the works of the late Mr John Gay.

Every one was industrious in his or her calling, and in nine days Diego had finished his job. But there was no rest for him! We had been made sensible of the danger of fire, when near our wooden habitations in a loose and uncovered state. I therefore directed him to quarry some stones with the iron crow-bar and place them in the rear of the open space, under the rock, behind the two negro houses; and there, with the assistance of Xavier, build a safe kitchen. This was to be done as soon as the pen was up, and stoccaded. The men worked hard at their respective tasks, and by the end of the week the fowl-house was erected; but it required all the labour of them both, during several days afterwards, to cut the stakes and watlings for the stoccado, and put them in place; which was not accomplished till Tuesday the 24th instant, but early enough on that day to allow us to transfer into it a colony of our ducks and fowls, twelve of either sort. Before they were turned in, a wing of each bird was clipped, to prevent their flying over. The goats also were brought, and put into the stoccado, as were likewise the two tame pigeons. The great body of the poultry was left behind at their old quarters; the young ones of which were destined

for table use ; while the old patriarchs and mothers of the tribes we intended to leave in permanent possession of their former haunts, to lay and multiply, as might happen.

The next day would be the anniversary of our landing on the island, of which we informed our friends ; but we also informed them, that it likewise was the birth-day of the Lord Jesus, through whose mercy we and they were preserved alive ! and that we must keep it as a Sabbath, with this difference, that they might dress a feast to celebrate the day ; for it was a day of rejoicing to all the human race. I then directed Rota to roast, for their entertainment, a couple of young fat ducks, and to make them a pepper-pot ; also to bake flour cakes, and take such vegetables and fruits as she might choose.

Our minds were much excited by the recollection of our deliverance from shipwreck, and by the anticipation of a day which brought up in our memories the dear friends we had left behind in England, and who, most probably, were sorrowing for us, who were now safe, and so happy ! We hoped some blessed occasion might inform them of our preservation ; and, added to all this, the sentiments of joy which Christmas-day brings to all hearts that beat under the banner of the cross, now rapturously expanded ours. All these emotions were too much, and we sought to calm our souls in long and fervent prayer, when we went to our chamber ; and there we indeed found "that peace which the world can neither give nor take away." Thus soothed by the Spirit of our heavenly Father, we retired to our cot, where tranquil sleep and consequent refreshment awaited us.

Wednesday, 25th.—After breakfast, we assembled in our best attire in the great hall ; and after singing a hymn appropriate to the day, we read such parts of the morning service as bore more particularly on it, together with the lessons. The negroes were much interested, and desired to have many things explained to them, which we were unable to do, from their yet scanty knowledge of our language : however, I endeavoured to make them comprehend that Jesus came into the world for the purpose of teaching to men the will of His Almighty Father, the pure and merciful God ; and by the sacrifice of Himself, to atone for the sins of repentant transgressors, who "groan in their spirit," to be relieved from the corruptible propensities of fallen human nature.

After divine service, we followed the culinary practice of our ancestors, as nearly as we could in the absence of roast beef and mince pies ; so that our friends were regaled still

something in the English way. Rota served them up a good dinner, and I added to it a bottle of wine; they had plenty of cigars; and my dear wife had given them out coffee and sugar liberally. Our own dinner was but a chicken and some cocoas. Poor Rota had roasted herself sufficiently for her party, we thought, without our imposing anything more on her for us than what we considered quite necessary; but we sat after dinner over our fruit and wine, happy, most happy, enjoying more nearly the state of paradise, than when the world's gaities could mingle in our heart's gladness. Fears, and cares, and anxieties were all excluded; here was no intrusion: peace and plenty, and an habitual communion with God, seemed alone present with us.

At sunset our people came and ranged themselves round the great door, where they sung; sometimes two dancing, sometimes the whole. When all their evolutions were gone through, they advanced to take leave; on which occasion my dear wife gave to each a large coloured cotton kerchief, to wear on their heads; and they received the present with many demonstrations of gratitude, and said "Good night."

The three following days the men continued to work at the stone kitchen; but, being unaccustomed to masonry, their progress was much slower than they had anticipated.

Sunday, 29th.—We kept the Sabbath with all due observance of sanctity; yet amused ourselves innocently in recreative exercise, after the performance of divine service, and in the evening.

Monday, 30th.—Xavier and Diego continued to work on the stone kitchen; and, that they might not be interrupted, I undertook to take the fish, and, with the women, to do whatever else might be required for the establishment, which had usually been the men's part. By Wednesday they finished the kitchen, the walls of which were built pretty high, entirely of dry stones; and the cooking places within were made of the same materials; the two ends of the kitchen were planked over, but about four feet of the centre was left open. The position we had chosen was safe, because the sea-breeze, although originally from the eastward, was changed in its course, by the hill, to the south-west, which would carry the smoke or sparks clear of all our buildings. I was glad to have accomplished this object, for we looked every day for the breaking up of the fine weather, but it still continued; so that on Thursday and Friday the men made aquatic excursions in the canoe. On the first day they circumnavigated the western

island, and brought back with them some calabashes, several fine conchs, containing their fish, and many other shells in the same living state. My dear wife had previously arranged her former collection of shells, and was much pleased with the idea of adding some fine specimens to them from this new acquisition; for the shell loses its beauty after it has been long deserted by its inhabitant, and rolled about by the wind and sea. On Friday the men visited, before daylight, the rocks and islands to the north-east, where the brig had struck; and there they succeeded in taking three fine turtle, which they brought home, and placed in the craal. We devoted Saturday to domestic purposes, letting the fowls and goats out for a few hours, and herding them to the southward of our habitations, clear of the planted ground. It was now the usual afternoon's pastime, with my Eliza and myself, to repair daily to the plank-house for an hour, to feed our abundant poultry left there, and then to visit the quarter-deck of that vessel which, at least to us, had been a faithful ark under Divine Providence.

Sunday, 5th January, 1735.—Kept the early part of this Sabbath day as usual, by the performance of divine service, and by reading and explaining to our friends such parts of the Gospel as they might comprehend. Towards evening the sky became overcast, which was suddenly succeeded by torrents of rain, alternating with heavy gusts of wind from north and north-west. We had anticipated the bad weather for some days, and had taken the precaution to haul up the canoe and punt upon the beach. The wind blew all night a hurricane, which shook our habitation fearfully: my dear wife sometimes thought it would be overturned; and, indeed, if Xavier had not exercised much skill in its construction, it could not have stood. He had given it a solid basement of trees; three under the front, and three under the back, and seven lengthways across, to which the flooring was fastened by tree-nails. All the windows were made to close with sliding shutters, like shop windows, so that they could be entirely or partially open, or quite closed; and during a hurricane the safety of a house mainly depends on keeping out the wind. The doors were each of four pieces, folding back or forwards, with a wooden bar fastening inside; so that, when shut, the gale was completely excluded. The store-room windows, indeed, were fitted otherwise; they were protected only by boards, slanting one over the other, in the fashion of Spanish blinds; but these boards nearly overlapped each other, throwing off the rain entirely, and very materially breaking the force of the wind.

ll our terrors were great, and we arose from our bed, and I took a light ; and we went into the great hall, to see how it ended with Mira ; but she was reckless of the storm, and slept soundly. "Happy creature !" said my dear wife ; "thou knowest not what anxiety means !" Towards morning the wind abated ; and we also found repose on retiring to our cot.

A little before daybreak, I thought I heard guns firing. I instantly got up, and sent the men to the summit of the promontory to look out. They quickly returned, with information that a vessel was in distress, and they believed on a reef in the offing. I hastened back with them to the heights, and taking the glass, saw the vessel, a brig schooner, steering away to the south-west. No doubt she had been aground, but had got off. We watched her for a couple of hours, until nearly out of sight. My gracious Eliza was much moved by the recital on my return : and without expressing any natural regret at so probable an instrument of deliverance to ourselves from the island, not having come into our harbour, she thanked God that they had escaped, and were proceeding on their voyage. The rains, with occasional gusts of wind from every quarter of the compass, continued daily, at intervals, in profuse torrents, for nine days, but may be said to have subsided entirely on Tuesday the 14th.

From the circumstance of seeing the vessel in distress, the idea of erecting a flag-staff on the promontory, on which I might hoist the brig's ensign if occasion should offer, presented itself to my mind, and I set about putting it in execution. With some trouble, we unshipped the fore top-gallant-mast of the brig, which was already struck, and brought it away, and before night we conveyed it to the summit of the promontory. On Wednesday morning we fitted a truck and halliards to it, and, with the crow-bar, excavated a place in the rocky ground to receive it. After placing the mast as firmly as we could, we built the base round with stones to steady it, and finished the job before sunset. On Thursday we were all on foot by the grey of the morning, taking the ensign with us ; and as the sun rose, I hoisted the English colours, and gave three cheers, crying aloud, "King George and England for ever !" I felt that, by this act, I had taken possession in sovereignty for our gracious king. We left the flag flying till sunset, when the men and I ascended the hill again, with a tarpauling bag, in which we cased the colours, after lowering them at the going down of the sun.

On my return home my dear wife regaled me with coffee and a cigar, while I expatiated on the probable consequences

of the measure, perhaps with some extravagance; for we were ignorant of whose dominions we were in, or even of the probable name of the spot where we were; for our situation did not exactly answer to any island, or islands, laid down in the chart I had found in the captain's chest. Indeed it had been made sufficiently evident to us that these islands were extremely dangerous of approach on all sides to a very great distance seaward; so that mariners, being perhaps aware of the prodigious number of rocks and shoals which lay in this direction, might always give them, if possible, a wide berth; and, accordingly, it might as yet be an unappropriated place.

Friday, 17th.—Diego put the two women in requisition to-day to assist him in the field; while Xavier began the erection of a store-house for provisions, at a little distance from the south-west end of our dwelling-house. This storehouse cost our carpenter a great deal of labour; for it was regularly built with boards, and shingled over, so that he had not completed it before Tuesday, the 11th of February, by which time the plantation-work was also nearly completed, although on a much more extended scale than formerly; for not only all the good ground between the mansion and woodland region had been cultivated, but the fertile plots between the spring and rock also.

There yet remained much of the former harvest in store. Our fowls and ducks had multiplied, and our young goats had kidded three amongst them. The wild bananas, put in near the spring, had attained their full growth. The sugar canes and pines had thrown out many offsets, which had been transplanted, and both the one and the other were approaching maturity. Diego had made cigars from his tobacco during the rains, of which from time to time he brought me an offering. And the bad weather gave occasion also to a new species of domestic industry—the plating of narrow strips of the cabbage palm leaf into a continued extension, called *sinnetto*, which the women sewed together in form, making of it a hat, somewhat rude in shape, but light in texture: holding out an earnest of something better on a future day. In short, peace, harmony, plenty, and promise, surrounded our dwelling; and it only remained to keep alive in our hearts a daily and habitual thankfulness to the Giver of all things. During this period, my dear wife and myself, with Mira and Fidele, took many a happy walk, but passed the heat of the day generally within our new palace, enjoying the few books we had the good fortune to bring out with us.

CHAPTER XI.

WEDNESDAY, 12th Feb., 1735.—While at breakfast I heard distinctly the firing of cannon, and hastened with my Eliza, and all the group at my heels, to the summit of the promontory. We saw a brig and a schooner in the offing, the former firing at the latter, which seemed much embarrassed by the shoals and reefs, in her endeavour to escape the enemy. I could discern Spanish colours flying at the brig's peak ; but the schooner did not show any. I immediately hoisted our ensign, and in a few minutes the schooner showed English colours at her fore top-mast head, at the same time shaping her course for the promontory. The brig followed her, firing a bow gun every now and then. I did not hesitate, but leaving my wife and the women near our ensign, hastened with the men back to the house, and taking down the muskets and the pikes, and ship's trumpet, got out a bundle of ball cartridges, and throwing some provisions that were at hand into a basket, and making one of my companions fill the canteen with water, we returned to the height with as much speed as possible. By the time we reached the summit, we saw the schooner entering the passage between the promontory and opposite island. I instantly loaded one of the muskets ; and at that moment the brig, which was not above half a mile astern of her, fired another shot. I immediately returned it ; and was delighted to see the brig heave to. I then hailed the schooner to luff round the headland, and anchor about two cables' length off the house, in the bay. To this they answered "Aye! aye!" The brig again bore up for the passage ; I instantly fired another shot, and then another ; but he still kept his course. I then thought a volley might be more impressive—if three muskets fired together may be so called!—for the business had become exceedingly serious ; and the poor negroes were almost frightened to death at the sight of the Spanish flag so near to them. I therefore loaded the three muskets with haste ; and advancing close to the brink of the promontory, we gave him the contents upon his deck ; the effect of which I do not know, further than that he immediately hauled his wind, and stood out to sea for five or six miles, and then hove to again.

On observing this, I requested my dear wife to remain by the flag-staff with the women until I should send for her, or return to her. She readily acquiesced ; and I added my desire that she should give me notice if she saw the brig standing in

again. I now hastened to the shore with the men ; and embarking in the canoe, rowed out to the schooner, which had anchored off the woodland region. I jumped on board with my pistols in my belt, and was heartily greeted by the captain and his crew. "If it had not been for your men on the height," said he, "we should have been taken by *yon guarda costa* ; but they gave him a dose, I guess, and he is off. What island is this ?" continued he : "I did not know that our nation had a garrison on any of these places."—"I am happy to see you here in safety, friend," I replied ; "but have you neither cannon nor musketry ?"—"None," answered he.—"Then I hope," said I, "that we shall see the *guarda costa* no more ; for you see all my garrison before you ; and as to the name of the island, I know no more of it than yourself ; however, your business now is to land, and leave your vessel to its fate. If the *guarda costa* should persist in coming in, he cannot but succeed in taking her, and in burning our dwellings ; but if he attempts to take you and us, we will do our best against him." The captain and crew were altogether six in number : they hastily got the boat out and accompanied us on shore ; whence they proceeded with me directly to the height, where my dear wife and her companions received them courteously.

From hence we had the satisfaction to see the Spaniard increase his distance ; so, leaving Xavier and his wife by the flag-staff, to keep watch, I descended with the rest of our party to the beach ; where I desired the captain to warp his vessel as close in as he could to the shore, and afterwards give me the pleasure of his company to dinner. He readily did as I bid him, moving her into the little bay below the cotton tree ; and disembarked in time to appear at our family meal. Rota, however, made it rather a feast, presenting us with a Yankee dish of salt pork and pumpkin, I suppose in honour of our guest ; to which she added a brace of mullet, and a roast chicken. A decanter of Canary was placed at my elbow. A table laid out with all the circumstances of European equipment, and served with such prime food, and capital wine too, in so out of the way a place, evidently caused much surprise in the captain, who looked at everything out of the corner of his eye. I hoped he did not see the empty box I sat on for a chair, the stranger and the lady occupying the only two I had. However he neither made remarks nor asked questions ; but eat his dinner, saying a few words now and then on his late narrow escape. And when dinner was finished he told us his story.

He belonged to Norfolk, in Virginia ; had sailed to Santa

Martha, on the Spanish Main; taking Cape St Nicholas Mole, in St Domingo, on his way. He embarked flour, and some goods of English manufacture, from Norfolk, and picked up half a dozen slaves from a slave ship at the Cape. For his merchandize he took payment in bags of cacao: for the slaves he had received nearly two thousand dollars, with which return he had sailed. A few days after, he fell in with the guarda costa, which chased him a day and a night, and had run him on a reef just as we hoisted our colours. He then expected every moment to be captured, and was about to throw the dollars overboard, the only part of the cargo that could condemn him, when the schooner beat over the reef (but, he feared, with the loss of her false keel,) and so escaped shipwreck, by good luck (as he expressed it), and from capture afterwards, by our well-timed fire of musketry. He intended to return through the Gulf of Florida, but as the schooner had been leaking since she struck, he should be afraid to put to sea until he had ascertained her condition. I made but few remarks on what he told us, and reserved all detail respecting ourselves until I should know a little more of him, and more exactly what he meant to do. After we had sat about an hour, I called Diego, and told the captain it might be well for him to accompany that guide to the height, and there reconnoitre the brig, after which I should be glad to see him back to coffee and a cigar.

During his absence, my dear wife and I took our new position into serious consideration. It was possible the Spaniard might return with the sea-breeze next morning, and destroy everything belonging to us. We trusted, however, in God, and thereby set that matter at rest. We then canvassed the wisdom of embarking in this schooner, with our money, if she were found seaworthy, and many other matters, on all of which we came to conditional conclusions. About five o'clock the captain returned, with Xavier and his wife; Diego having been ordered to remain on the height, to strike the colours at sunset, and at the same time to fire a musket, if the brig should be in sight. Our guest reported that the brig was still lying to, about six miles off; and probably, he thought, might drop anchor, and stand in with the sea-breeze. "Would you venture to do so, captain?" said I; "not knowing but by so doing you would run into a trap! He will not dare it," continued I, "you may rely on it, without a previous reconnoitre: however, during the night he cannot stir, and in the morning we shall see his movements. After coffee, bring your dollars

on shore, and hide them in the sand, where you can put your hand on them : there is nothing better than caution. If you lose the schooner, you will save your money ; and if he burn our houses, we shall at least be as well off as you, for we are not penniless ; and I will defy him, with all his crew, to attack our persons with success, if we are driven to fight him from the heights. So that, if the worst come, we shall save our lives and our money, and our liberty too ; for these much-valued negroes that surround me are free as I am, and I would rather risk my life for the preservation of their freedom, than for my own wealth."

Much of my conversation was to him a riddle, but he had something else to think of just then, than the propounding of riddles. After the return of Diego, who had fired the musket when he hauled down the colours at sunset, the captain proposed to wish us " Good night," that all might retire to rest, and so be up early in the morning, to keep an eye on the brig. " That won't do, captain," said I ; " we must watch all night. Two of your men shall go with mine, armed with a couple of muskets and four boarding-pikes, and row guard at the back of the promontory, lest the enemy should send in his boat to reconnoitre, and finding no one on the alert, surprise us." The captain consented to my proposition, and sent two men on shore, to whom I gave some coffee ; and having conferred with Diego and Xavier, they readily consented to go with them in the canoe, and keep a good look-out. I furnished the party, as I had proposed, with boarding-pikes and fire-arms, not forgetting a supply of ball cartridges ; and I desired them to take with them some food and the canteen. Being thus equipped, they put off in the canoe, which was a fine boat of the kind, to row guard.

We could not think of sleeping, and the women remained with us in the great hall ; some provisions, and a calabash of water, being in readiness to take to the height, should we be driven to the extremity of retiring thither. About midnight we heard the report of muskets, which alarmed us not a little ; so that we went out on the open ground before the house, where the captain and his remaining four men soon joined us, they having pulled off from the schooner in their boat the moment they heard the firing. I had two pikes left, and one musket, and my pistols, which I quickly mustered together, with half a dozen good felling axes ; and gently whispering my wife to stay with the women, I hastened, with the captain and his men, followed by her prayers for my safety, to the boat ; and desir-

ing them to row as quickly as they could to the assistance of the canoe, they obeyed without a word. We pulled lustily round the point, the firing being still kept up by a shot now and then. We soon joined the canoe, and saw the Spanish boat about a cable's length outside of her : they were both lying on their oars, exchanging a shot, now and then, at each other. On our coming up to the canoe, I was glad to find none in her wounded ; and the two sailors, all alert, cried out to me, " We want to board them, but your people won't lay us alongside."—" We will do it now," said I. " Give way, lads ! but don't fire a shot till we are within boat-hook's length of her ; then we will board, and carry her. We instantly pulled out abreast, and I ordered the canoe not to go ahead of us. The Spaniard kept on his oars awhile, then gave us a few shots, and pulled away. At first he seemed to go from us, but, from some cause or other, we soon gained on him, and presently were close to him ; for he stopped to load and fire, but, thank God, without effect, for not one of our men was hit. We were just about to return the compliment, and board, when they cried for quarter, and we rowed up alongside in the boat, desiring the canoe, meanwhile, to keep a few yards off, with the muskets cocked. There were six sailors and an officer and two soldiers in their boat. The officer gave up his sword, and we took the muskets and bayonets from the soldiers, and also six other muskets, which had been put into the boat for the crew, and all their ammunition. Having effected this, I told our prisoners, in a proud tone, that they might now return to their ship, but must beware how they fell into our hands again, on such an errand ; adding, that as it was, I hardly knew how I could excuse their conduct in firing on an English vessel, in sight of the English flag, when the two nations were at peace ! I had scarcely done speaking, when two of the crew exclaimed, " Massa, take we."—" Who are you ? " I replied.—" Sailor negers, sir : we Mudians, sir : they take we, sir ; they put we in boat, sir, because we row well, sir."—" You come into my boat, and tell them to go, and never come near this place again," returned I.—" Yes, massa," was the answer, as the two black fellows jumped joyously in by my side ; but they spoke too little Spanish to repeat what I desired. I had forgot I had an interpreter at hand, till Diego shouted forth, very distinctly, some words in his sort of Spanish, which, perhaps, conveyed the meaning of all I meant to say to the Spaniard pretty accurately ; for the officer replied, that " the schooner was a smuggler, and his commander had a right to take him." This Diego interpreted ; to which I made

him reply, "Within the limits of your own shore, but not under the flag of an English garrison."—"I think," said the officer, "our captain will be sorry for the affair."—"Very well," I replied, : "so he ought. Good night !" And I instantly gave orders to row towards shore, the Spanish boat taking the opposite direction.

In a few minutes, the anxiety of my beloved wife crossed my mind. I called the canoe alongside ; made the two sailors there take my place in the boat ; and myself stepping into theirs in the canoe, we sprung forward like an arrow. As soon as I could discern my Eliza, as she stood on the shore, I cried out, with all my might, "All's well !" to which she replied by repeating the same words, the sound of which delighted my heart and ear. Almost in an instant we were on the beach, where our wives ran forward to meet us, each true to nature in the reception we received. When my beloved could raise her head from my breast, and the power of speech returned, her first question was, "Is anyone killed?"—"No, my angel!" "Is any one hurt?"—"Not any one, love!"—"Blessed be God," she replied, "that blood has not been spilt, even in our own defence!" She took my arm, and silently, with full hearts, we walked up to the house. A candle was burning on the table when we entered. "What have you got there, Edward?" asked she, a little flush passing over her cheek. "The officer's sword," I replied : "we disarmed them, and sent them back to their ship."—"That was right," she exclaimed ; "that was as it should be." While my soul's dearer part, and I, were thus conversing, Diego and Xavier were also exciting vivid emotions in their female auditory ; and interested as I was in the deep feelings of my dear wife, my attention could not help being sometimes drawn aside by the ridiculous gestures of Diego, and the ludicrous manner of his mixing Spanish and English in his recital.

It was not long before the captain and his six men, together with the two negro captives, bringing with them the eight Spanish muskets and our own weapons, arrived. I directed that all should come in ; and as there were no other seats for the men, I requested them to sit on the floor. Rota was desired to place before them the provisions which had been provided for our retreat to the promontory, while I took a bottle of hollands from the case, and made a bowl of grog, serving it round myself ; not passing Diego and Xavier, nor the two Bermudian negroes we had rescued from the Spaniards. After they all were refreshed, the captain's crew were sent on

board, taking the two Bermudians with them for the night. The captain and myself now took some refreshment, and by the time we had finished the day began to dawn. "Up, Diego," said I, "and be ready to hoist our colours, and fire a musket, at sunrise: the Spaniard must see we are not asleep." Diego felt what the French call "*l'esprit de corps*:" in a moment he caught up the musket, examined it to see if all was right, and set off for the flag-staff. Exactly as the sun rose, he discharged his piece; and as he hoisted the ensign, perhaps, stout-hearted as he was, he wished a safe voyage to our enemy, hoping to see him no more.

In about an hour he returned to us. "Well, Diego," said I, "is the Spaniard gone?"—"No, sir," he replied; "not gone; sail all up; wait for sea-breeze."—"I reckon that is just the case," observed the captain: "now, if you please, continued he, "I will go on board and turn in." To this I assented; and, as soon as he departed, made my dear wife lie down in the cot, while I piled up the arms in our own room, and disposed of the ammunition. She entreated me to take rest, but that, at present, I told her was impossible. I could not sleep till the enemy was fairly gone. I therefore directed Xavier and his wife to go up to the flag-staff, and sleep turn and turn about: so keeping a sufficient look-out on the brig. They cheerfully complied; and I made Diego retire to his hut and lie down, as his wife and daughter were both fast asleep on the floor in one corner of the hall. After all this, I went softly into our bed-room, to sit down quietly near my dear wife, and there to turn many important matters over in my mind; but she awoke and said, "You need not tread so softly, dear Edward; I am not asleep. How happy I am you rescued those two poor Bermudian negroes from the Spaniard! I suppose he would have sold them in the end."—"Very likely, dear," I replied; "I also rejoice they are here; for they will add strength to our little colony, whether we go or stay."—"That, too, is a good thing," she replied; "for what a dreadful circumstance would it be to our poor negro friends here if they should ever fall into the hands of their old masters again!"

In this way we talked until the morning was considerably advanced, for my Eliza could not close her eyes, so was her spirit awake; and for me, it only remained to seek refreshment in a good bath and change of linen. Rota and her daughter were now aroused from their slumbers, and set about cleaning the hall and laying breakfast. By this time Xavier and his wife returned from the flag-staff, bringing with them the happy

intelligence that the sea-breeze had reached the guarda costa, and that he was going from us with all sail set. We were now at rest; every other consideration seemed light, compared with the possible consequences of persevering hostility from the Spaniard.

Diego next made his appearance; he looked a little queer from the fatigue and anxieties of the preceding day. I told him to go and bathe in the sea, change his clothes, and invite the captain to come on shore to breakfast. I also bade him bring the Bermudians with him. He smiled at the idea of bathing and changing his clothes, but went away with his usual good humour to do as I desired him. In half an hour the captain joined us at breakfast—a repast which would not have disgraced a Scotsman's board—flour cakes and butter, plenty of eggs, fish, and coffee! The two Bermuda negroes stood in the hall by the door; and in reply to my question, if they were married? they answered, “No, sir,” and laughed. I then asked them as to their capture by the Spaniard. They answered, that they belonged to Master Eliab Tucker, of Bermuda, and were taken in a schooner of his on the Spanish Main some months ago, that their captain and his mate were now in prison at Carthagena; but all the crew, consisting of negroes, had been sold, except themselves, who were kept on board the guarda costa, because they were thought good sailors, and behaved quietly and obediently. “But,” continued one of them, “I tank God, massa, we got away; tem Paniards bad fellows, sir.”—“Well, never mind what they are; you strive to be good, and that will show you really do thank God for your deliverance. I do not feel,” added I, “that it is my duty to send you back to your master at Bermuda; but if you wish to return to him, I will endeavour to provide you with the opportunity. If you do not like to go back, I think you have now the right to refuse, for you are free men; when the Spaniard took you, Mr Tucker lost his right over you; and now that I have taken you from the Spaniard, I freely give you any right that I may have acquired in you. I therefore do not hesitate to tell you that you are free; but I will not venture to tell you that the laws of Bermuda may not think otherwise. So if you should go back to that island, do not be surprised if the authorities there should despise the manumission I would give you as a certificate of your liberty.” They understood me perfectly, and thanked me over and over again, saying they would do anything I wished. “Very well,” said I, “we will talk over the matter by and by.” I now called to

Diego, and told him to take the men and treat them as one of ourselves ; adding, that for the present they must live with him and Xavier. "What are your names ?" said I, addressing myself again to the Bermudians.—"Jack Martin, sir," answered the one : "Jemmy Purdy, sir," replied the other.—"Oh, you are Christians, then, I presume," returned I.—"Oh yes, massa, you see we have two name."—"Were you ever baptized ?" said I.—"No, sir," answered Jack Martin, "we no more Christian except have two name."—"Oh, very well," rejoined I ; "go with Diego, and we will talk more on this too, another day." They made some very low bows, to the great amusement of Diego, who himself was a great proficient in that way, and retired. Jack Martin was a tall young man, with fine features, approaching to the European, but his skin was black as jet. Jemmy Purdy was rather short and ugly, but seemed very good tempered.

After they were gone, I turned round to the captain, and asked what were his plans, now the coast was clear ? In this question I inquired when he meant to sail, and where he was bound to ? "I am bound for the Chesapeake," returned he ; "but the schooner leaks so fast, I will not venture to put to sea without looking at her bottom, and to do that, I guess we must heave her down."—"You shall not want assistance," I replied ; "look out for a place that will suit your purpose, and let me know."

After breakfast he went along the beach in his boat, and in about an hour reappeared, telling me he thought the best place would be the southern side of the rocky point, near the run of water. "Very well," said I ; "set about the work at daylight to-morrow morning ; and, meanwhile, lend me a couple of your hands to-day, to assist in transferring some casks of provisions from a dwelling-house to a store that we have just finished."—"I may do that," he replied, "if four men can keep the schooner dry, I guess." Diego was now ordered to move all the barrels from his house to the store, which he said he would do speedily, with the assistance of the two sailors from the schooner, and the two Bermudians. Leaving him to his work, I desired Xavier to keep in attendance on me ; then giving my wife my arm, and accompanied by the captain, and followed by Mira and Fidele, we walked through the woodland region to the plank-house. "This place," said I, "captain, will do to stow your cargo in. What is it ?"—"Nothing but cacao, in bags," he replied.—"Well," said I, "what this house won't hold, you must cover over on the beach with a sail."

I then addressed myself to Xavier, telling him that, as the ship's repairs would be going on so near our live stock, I must take precautions they should not get hurt by accident or carelessness. I therefore directed him to immediately set about boarding up the entrance of the thicket from one side to the other; adding, that when it was done, the poultry must be penned in there until the work about the schooner was completed. I pointed where there were plenty of planks lying at hand, and he knew where there were hinges and locks to spare for a door. Xavier cheerfully said he would do his best, but must have help to do it quickly. On this, as the place was in the shade, I volunteered my assistance; the captain instantly did the same; and both together we soon dug a trench in the sand between two and three feet deep, from rock to rock, across the mouth of the opening, that enclosed the thicket and the cave. While Xavier placed the planks on end in the trench, we followed his movements, re-filling it with the sand to make firm the foundation of our wooden wall. In this way we made short work of it, finishing our part by two o'clock, at which hour we all returned to the plantation-house, taking with us the two camp stools from our old palace. The other people had dined; so we sent Xavier his dinner from our table; and thinking himself thus honourably regaled, he hastened back with his wife to nail some boards across the thicket fence, and to put in a few props, having then only to finish his job by hanging a plank-made door, with lock and hinges.

An hour before sunset the provision casks were all removed from Diego's dwelling to the storehouse; and then he most courteously gave up his house to accommodate the crew of the schooner while heaving down. I sent for him, and told him the schooner was to be hauled up to the rock early the next morning to be unloaded; and afterwards to be hove down there to repair her bottom; in consequence of this, I wished a good supply of mullet for the men, to be taken that night by torchlight, and put into the conservatory. I added, that we would walk over at the proper time to witness the exploit. I also desired him to find a new position for the fish-pots; perhaps off the rocky shore of the open ground or towards the southern part of the promontory. He replied it should all be done; and he hoped, as I was so kind to the people, they would behave themselves well. The captain said he would answer for that; "and so will I too," replied I; "for it shall be my business to make such arrangements as will prevent their misconducting themselves, at least towards us."

After coffee we walked over to the isthmus, taking all our household with us. Xavier had just completed his work : and there was now a general muster, and driving of the ducks and poultry into the enclosed thicket ; where a hole had been previously made in the earth, and a bucket of water sunk in it for them to drink : also a good allowance of bruised corn was scattered about ; and seeing my prisoners all busy pecking, I locked the gate, and put the key in my pocket ; my wife and myself only having a knowledge of what was locked in, besides ducks and fowls.

When the stars appeared, Diego began his torchlight fishing ; having, by my desire, the two Bermudians with him. The mullet soon began to spring, and dropped so thick into the punt that Jemmy Purdy, in his eagerness to gather them into the central part that contained water, fell overboard ; and in attempting to get into the punt again, he caused her to heel over so much that she filled, and turned his companion and Diego, torch and all, into the sea : the lucky fish the while made their escape. After the first alarm had subsided, we laughed a good deal at the accident, as the men scrambled out. Xavier then insisted on making the fishing with the women, while the drowned rats went home and changed their clothes ; but the poor fellows would not be so mastered : they stripped off their shirts, lighted a new torch, and went to it again with equal sport and more care, finishing by throwing a large supply into the conservatory. We then left them : and I desired the trio to call at the house, in their way home, to receive a glass of grog each, which they did ; and as they drank it, Diego said, " Much obliged to you, Jemmy Purdy." Jemmy, who also was a wag in his way, replied with " Your good health, Don Diego ;" and from that time his companions often addressed him so, which Diego always took in good part, and sometimes with no small feeling of pride and consequence. The fact was, Diego had a namesake, an officer in the guarda costa, whom Jemmy Purdy always had been accustomed to address in that manner ; but it was peculiarly ridiculous to us, from other associations.

We then smoked a cigar ; when I took the opportunity of telling the captain as much of our history as I thought expedient ; mentioning my wish to return to Jamaica as soon as I could find the means ; intending to bring from thence men, and such things as might be necessary to put a jury mainmast in the brig, and to otherwise equip her for sea, so as to take us afterwards to Honduras. He said, he guessed I should have to wait a long time before I found a vessel going to Jamaica.

This was the amount of his reply, which I did not like, being a very cold-hearted way of treating the subject. Here, then, the matter rested : but after he took his leave, my dear wife said to me, "I perceived you were not pleased with that man's answer to what you intended as an appeal to his feelings. But never mind his hard nature, my dear Edward : you deserve his gratitude, as well as his sympathy ; but where there is little generosity of feeling, money can generally do everything ; and if you choose to have his vessel, it is in your power to buy it."—"I think you are right, my love," I replied ; "but I will say nothing to him on the subject until the schooner is nearly ready for sea."

Friday, 14th.—The schooner was hauled to the rock ; and the people commenced unloading. I sent for the captain to breakfast ; during which, he asked me to assist him with my negroes. I told him they were all free men, but I would speak to them on the subject ; and, when the business was done, if they helped him, he must settle with them for their labour at the same rate he would pay at Norfolk. To this, after some quibbling, he agreed. I then sent for Diego and Xavier, and the two Bermudians, and repeated in their presence what I had just proposed : to which he substantially assented. "As far as depends on myself, captain," said I, "you and your men shall receive all hospitality and assistance." The two negro houses were eventually given up ; the one to the captain, the other to the crew ; and the plantation shed was fitted up for my own men : the women the while all sleeping in the great hall. I took Diego and Xavier into council on this arrangement, of which they highly approved. A good deal of the cargo was got out, and carried to the plank-house the next day ; while the women made preparations for the Sabbath.

Sunday, 16th.—On the preceding evening the captain and myself had some argumentative conversation on the subject of his proceeding with his work on the Sabbath ; to which determination of his I was at last obliged to put my decided negative. On my pronouncing it rather sternly, he said, with an air of stupid acquiescence, he must enter a protest, and he hoped I would not refuse to sign it. I assured him I certainly would sign it, if he should think it necessary.

At ten o'clock every one was summoned to prayers, which we endeavoured to make as impressive as we could ; but there was little attention, and no devotion, excepting on the part of our old friends and fellow Christians. After divine service, I proposed to the captain (if it would be any amusement for him)

to row round one of the islands before dinner ; but he objected, saying his men were tired, and he reckoned they would rather lie down under the cotton tree. I then asked him if he would like to go with one of my people to the flag-staff. To this he assented ; and I desired Diego to attend him, and show him all civility. It seems, on the way, he swore a little at me, for preventing their proceeding with the schooner on that day ; but Diego reproved him sharply, and said to me the next day, when speaking of our guest, " That captain, sir, not very good."

As the crew of the schooner were lying about idle, I thought it right to keep the rest of our own men at home also, among whom I included the Bermudians ; and to let these see how I meant to deal with them, I desired Xavier to bring them to me. " Friends," said I, " it is my wish, if it should be yours, to take you into my family, and to treat you as I do those you found here. They will tell you how we live together ; and if it be agreeable to you to abide here, I will provide wives for each of you at no distant period. You shall each have a house also, and a piece of land, for your comfort and support." They both cried out at once, they believed I was " a good and true man ; and a brave man too ; and they would stick by me."—" I am glad of it," I replied ; " and it will be my endeavour to make you happy." Xavier, who understood very well the purport of what had passed, shook them both by the hand, and said, " I very glad too."

At noon, a good dinner was given to all hands ; and at one the captain returned and dined with us. After dinner he strolled about ; while my dear wife and I remained within, reading the Bible ; but after some time he came back to take coffee and a cigar. I cannot say we were either much amused or edified by his conversation ; he spoke of the blacks as if they were nothing better than beasts of burden ; and ventured some jokes on the sober-minded people of New England, that were not received as he expected. " You call yourselves Buckskins," said my dear wife (after listening long with much patience to his nonsense), " and with anything but a feeling of brotherly love, you call your northern neighbour Brother Jonathan, sneering at his quiet and peaceful demeanour, and deriding his most punctual observance of this most holy day. I will hope, captain," continued she, " that the day may come when an American shall be ashamed of the name of Buckskin." This was rather severe, but he deserved it. While we were talking, Diego was regaling the schooner's crew with some cigars of his making ; but unluckily the captain had allowed the men to bring rum on shore

without saying anything to me about it; and in consequence they became very noisy, which induced their sable host to break up the entertainment, and come to me with a whisper communicating the state they were in. I was not well pleased, so that I rebuked my worthy Diego on the instant for allowing the introduction of rum in any quantity among them, requesting the captain at the same time never to let them have one drop beyond their allowance as long as they remained here; for intoxicated men could not be governed. "I guess it was no rum of mine," he replied; "some of their own stuff I reckon. There's no other time for them to drink it," continued he, "but in harbour upon Sundays." I could scarcely restrain my indignation at this reply: this much however escaped me—"No one shall drink rum here on Sundays, sir! I tell you that." On which he offered some sort of apology, which went little further than to declare that the rum was not his; which, by the way, I could have believed, without much ado to substantiate it. After this he soon took his leave; and, in truth, my dear wife and myself were so sick of these strangers that we wished them gone, and safely anchored in the waters of Chesapeake. I, however, saw every one to his quarters by eight o'clock; and desired Diego and Xavier to get up now and then during the night, and walk round the grounds, to observe whether all remained quiet. After our retiring, my dear wife and myself poured out our hearts to God our Father, in thanksgiving for our late deliverance, and in prayer for His grace to the obdurate as well as to ourselves.

In the course of the ensuing week, the crew unloaded and hove down the schooner. They found part of the false keel gone, and the end of a plank in the bottom pierced by the rocks on which she had struck. The captain came to me, in great distress, when it was discovered; for he had neither carpenter nor carpenter's tools on board. "Your bad condition," said I, somewhat austere, "would be likely to detain you longer here than the observance of the Sabbath, if you were left to your own resources; but you shall not be left to them: all shall be done for you that you may require: and I hope, if you should be here another Sunday, I shall hear no more of a protest." He now seemed rather ashamed of himself, if I did not mistake the feeling that his embarrassment expressed. I, however, immediately sent for Xavier, and desired him to take a couple of felling axes, and go with the captain in his boat to the place most likely to afford a long, straight, and hard tree, to make a false keel; and to measure what he might want before he went, and bring away two or more trees, if needed, for the purpose required.

This order was carried into effect without loss of time ; the whole of the crew being employed all that day in hewing down the timber, and bringing it to the place where the schooner lay hove down, keel out.

This matter being arranged, I took Diego with me to the ship, to ransack the steerage for some more seamen's clothes, to rig our poor Bermudians ; but we found little worth bringing away : so I determined to make free with some of our lost captain's commonest things, and by that means made up a couple of kits for our two new colonists. Diego put them into two of the empty chests I had before left in the steerage, and then as briskly conveying them to the punt (for he delighted in the pleasure they would give), he rowed round to the plantation, where I met him, and delivered them to Martin and Purdy, in the same way I had done to my shipwrecked friends. The poor fellows were very thankful, and assisted each other up with the chests to the plantation-shed, their present habitation ; where, as Diego afterwards told me, they overhauled them with great satisfaction.

As the opportunity was a good one, my dear wife and myself, followed only by our faithful little dog (Mira being desired to stay with her mother), made a visit to the cave, taking with us a basket of bruised corn. I unlocked the gate, and locked it again after me, taking Fidele in my arms ; while my wife, holding the basket, strewed the corn to our clamorous poultry. We then went into the cave, and I satisfied myself, by feeling the wall, that no one had disturbed it. The object of our coming being thus accomplished, we returned home, and sat down to dinner without our visitor, whose absence was to us a great relief.

The captain, however, made his appearance a little before sunset, in prime spirits ; telling us that he had got two capital sticks, which they had cut on the opposite shore, and hoped he would now soon be ready for sea. "Are you driving for a market?" said I ; "or is it for a new freight, that you are so anxious to proceed on your voyage?"—"No," returned he ; "but loss of time is loss of money. I am paid by the voyage, and not by the month ; the vessel is my own, and I must make as much of her as I can."—"And who does your cargo of cacao belong to?" said I.—"To the merchant Dwyer at Norfolk," he replied.—"And what freight do you receive for that?"—"Oh ! I am to have so much for the run out, and home."—"Very well," returned I : "then you are not confined to time, so that you make the voyage in the end?"—"Yes," he said, "I am

confined to time, because every day's delay is time lost to me, which I might employ profitably if the voyage was finished."—"Now I understand you," I replied; "I see how it is. And since you have told me that the vessel is your own, no time shall be lost in repairing her for you. Every assistance shall be given to your men, and I will pay my people for doing it, as, perhaps, you are not very rich." He spoke in reply with some feeling on this, saying I overpowered him with my generosity; that he had a wife and family; and though, besides the schooner, and the two thousand dollars he had with him, he owned a little farm, yet times were hard. He now seemed a little humanized; and we felt disposed to make every allowance to old habits, and neglected religious education, for his sordid manner of proceeding. I, however, dropped the subject nearest to our hearts for the present; and after he had taken his cigar, we mutually wished "Good night."

When he was gone, I said to my Eliza, "You were quite right; money is this man's idol. I see we may take him to Jamaica if we please; but I will not start the project to him until the schooner is repaired and reloaded." From this time to the end of the week everything went on orderly, and on Sunday the Sabbath was observed by the new comers with some appearance of devotion. The captain was in good humour, and after prayers he proposed rowing out into the sound, where he would amuse himself with making some observations on the course of the open channel. He did so; and having taken a compass, and a pencil and paper with him, he noted such landmarks as kept it open. On his return he showed me the observations he had made, of which I gladly took a copy.

The false keel being quite ready on the following Monday, it was fixed the next day; and on Wednesday a new piece of plank, which I furnished, was put in, and all well caulked and payed with our own oakum and pitch before night. On Thursday they were embarking the cacao, which was packed in bags of about a hundred weight each, called a fanega.

While sitting after dinner, as I helped my guest to a glass of wine, I said to him, "How long might it take a good sailing vessel to beat up from this place to Kingston?"—"I can't say," he replied; "I guess three weeks, over or under, as the trade wind might veer."—"Well now, if it is a fair question," I rejoined, "what may you have for the run from Norfolk to Santa Martha and back?"—"Why," said he, "six hundred dollars: it should be seven hundred, but then I made more than that by the black fellows I bought at St Domingo, on my way: and I

had need, for I shipped two extra hands on their account ; four, and myself, are men enough for the schooner.”—“Pray,” continued I, “what time did you give yourself for the run, as you call it?”—“Why, I guess,” said he, “about three months at most ; but I shan’t do it now, within time.”—“Well now,” said I, “after all this, will you undertake to give me up your cabin, for my wife and myself, and some money, to be landed at Kingston : and wait there three days to see whether I can meet with a small vessel to purchase, to bring me back here to save the brig and her cargo? And for this trip I would give you half the amount you would receive for three months’ run.”—“That would be three hundred and fifty dollars, I reckon,” he replied.—“No,” I said, “three hundred dollars.”—“I will think of it,” answered he, “and let you know in the afternoon.” He then went away, and returned a little before coffee time. “I have been thinking over your offer,” said he, “and have a mind to take it ; but I am afraid it would break my charter-party.” My dear wife, who hitherto had preserved silence when he and I were discussing the subject, abruptly spoke, and with energy. “You seem to forget,” said she, “that the Spaniard would have broken your charter-party, and reduced you and yours to beggary, if my brave and generous husband there had not saved you.” On uttering this just reproof, she got up, and walked into the adjoining room. The fellow was struck dumb by this appeal. At length somewhat recovering himself, he stammered out—“Well, I think I shall run all risks to oblige you ; for, as your wife says, it would have been all up with us, but for you and your people. So I will undertake to land you at Kingston, with any money you may take in the cabin, on the terms you propose ; but we will have a written agreement, if you please.”—“Certainly,” said I ; “two ; one for you, and one for me. But, now, if I take one of my men with me, what will you charge for his passage?”—“I don’t know,” returned he ; “will ten dollars be too much?”—“No,” I replied, “I will pay it if he goes ; and ten for a woman, if my wife chooses a female attendant.” I now got pen, ink, and paper, and without delay wrote an agreement, which he copied, and we duly signed them both, he taking the one written by me, I the one written by him.

CHAPTER XII.

AFTER coffee, I begged the captain would excuse my requesting him to take his cigar to-night at his own quarters, as I

wished to lose no time in making my arrangements for departure. He accordingly took his leave. I instantly communicated to my Eliza my decisive step, and almost in the same moment sent for Diego to come to me. He obeyed, and I opened the business. He was too much astonished to make me any collected remarks for some time; but my point was gained so far, that he had learnt my intention first from myself, and thereby I had obviated the misgivings that might have arisen had the people been first told it from any other quarter. I bade Diego come to me at sunrise next day, and bring Xavier with him, also the two Bermudians. When we retired to rest, my dear wife and myself threw ourselves on that God who never had forsaken us; and after we had prayed, we turned the matter over, looking at all the circumstances of the case as narrowly as we could, the peace and comfort and security of our adopted family being near to our hearts.

Friday, 28th.—My dearest helpmate, as well as myself, was up at daylight, and dressed, ready to receive our people. We had discussed together the propriety of giving Mira in marriage to one of the Bermudians, before we should leave our little establishment for even a temporary absence; and we determined on making the proposal at once to the damsel and her parents. When the people arrived, and were standing respectfully before us in the great hall, in a few words I told them I was going to Jamaica for the purpose of buying a schooner to bring back for our use here, and also to collect a crew for the brig, to refit her for my future purposes. I added, that I wished to take one or two of them with me, and especially Diego. The others all immediately volunteered. "I shall have occasion for only one more," said I; "and if you will leave it to me, I will decide." To this they cheerfully acquiesced. I took Diego aside into the store-room, and requested my wife to call in Roto. "You have heard," repeated I, "what I am going to do; and I think, Diego, we must take one of our Bermudians with us."—"I think so, sir," he replied.—"Well, then," resumed I: "Mira is a comely young woman, and if she would have no objection to accept of one of those clever fellows for a husband, I will marry them before I go, and we will take the other with us, and let him find a wife for himself at Kingston." Diego and Rota laughed heartily, giving their immediate assent; but my wife desired Rota to bring in Mira, and ask her if she would like either of the Bermudians for a husband. When the question was put to the girl, she courtesied, and said she would rather go with her Donna Senora to Jamaica. My dear

Eliza thanked her most graciously for this mark of her attachment, but told her it could not be : however, she must make herself happy in knowing her affection was properly estimated ; and so she would find on her mistress's return. The poor girl cried a good deal, and we left her and her parents together. While they were communing, I told Xavier to make an account of how many days he and the others had worked on the schooner, and bring it to me after breakfast. By the time I had finished my directions to him, Diego and Rota re-appeared in the hall with their daughter, who now looked much abashed. The mother whispered something to my wife, who again whispered to me, that Mira had fixed on Jack Martin. On hearing this, I got up and called Martin out. I asked him, would he like to settle here, and marry Mira, and live as we lived? Mira was a pretty negress, and gentle too—"Yes, sir," he replied, "would like it. I like you, sir—I like the place—I like Mira : her fader and moder very good people, and she very pretty ; good little girl, sir : will be very happy!"—"Very well, Martin," said I ; "I will marry you to her on Sunday. And, now that the girl is to be your wife, come in, and her father and mother shall offer her to you, and you shall accept her in my presence." The scene was rather ludicrous. Martin entered, bowing as he approached Diego, who returned the bows with a variety of steps and attitudes, and a pretended taking off the hat. Rota spoke first. "You are to be Mira's husband, Jack Martin?"—"If Mira will have Jack Martin," replied the bridegroom. Mira hung down her head, but Rota clasped the son-in-law in her arms, and hugging him very hard and close, and kissing him heartily, said, "So you love Mira!" Martin embraced his good mother in turn, and then saluted the half-averted cheek of Mira, at which our friends cheered ; and I, placing their hands together, said "In a few days you shall be one ; and may God bless you!"

The party then left the hall ; and my dear wife and myself improved the opportunity, by considering closely the many things we had to do in the very short time we could command. The captain came to breakfast, and we talked over the business of our departure. After the meal, I sent for Purdy and Diego. "Purdy," said I, "if you choose to go with me to Jamaica, and return with me hither, I will take you ; and if you can find a freed woman there that will marry you, I will bring you back together : but if you are not so lucky, I will purchase a wife for you from a slave ship—any girl there you may choose."—"Will go, and return with you, sir," replied he : "and will do as

please God.”—“That is well said, James Purdy,” observed my Eliza; “I believe thou art a single-hearted, honest fellow.”—“Thank you, ma’am,” said he; “you very good to think black man good.”—“Well,” returned I, “that is arranged; go; I shall want you by-and-by.” He made a bow blithely and gratefully, not quite with a beau air, but like himself retired chirruping. O good nature and kindness of heart! what blessings do ye impart to the possessors, and to all around them, even when ye find your place among those mis-called the outcasts of the human race! I felt happy in thinking I should have this honest fellow, as well as our trusty Diego, with us during the voyage.

After Purdy withdrew, I asked for Xavier, who was ready, with the account of work done. Eight dollars were charged for himself, and six for each of the other men; making altogether twenty-six dollars, which I thought very reasonable wages; and I desired him to come in with his fellow-workmen after our dinner. He did so, and I paid them before the captain, out of some money we had brought with us from Jamaica, for our use at St George’s Key. After they were gone, the captain said it was great hospitality, and he always would remember it. But notwithstanding this fine speech, when I told him I intended to take Purdy in his vessel, as well as Diego, he did not seem at all disposed to remit the ten dollars for the extra passenger; and as, fortunately, money was now no object to me, I only pitied the man who was so completely in its gripe.

By Saturday middle day, the cargo was nearly re-embarked. I took the occasion to purchase from him three bags of the cacao for a doubloon each, and paid him on delivery; giving one bag to Rota, to use for our people; but locking up the other two in the store-room of the house. During Saturday afternoon, we put on board both the hen-coops from the brig, inhabiting them with a few young fowls and ducks, about a dozen altogether. One coop might have served; but I meant to fill both, on my return, with another description of poultry. Some biscuit, butter, yams, pumpkins, and melons were sent on board; also the last dozen of our wine, and a due portion of ground coffee and sugar. All this being done, the captain expected to sail on Sunday morning; but to that I would not consent. I told him, I had three days by the charter-party: the coming Sabbath should go as one; and on Monday we would weigh anchor with the first of the sea-breeze. He made no more objection to the delay, under its con-

ditions; and it was agreed that we should sail as I had fixed it.

In this short interval I had many things to do, and did them. I wrote certificates of freedom for each person in the island, to be left behind with them; and I gave instructions to Xavier and Rota how everything was to be conducted in my absence. The Bermudians, meanwhile, brought to me the measure of the remaining mast and yards of the brig, to enable me to bring from Jamaica spars for a fished mainmast and boom, and yards to supply those carried away during the storm; as also a complete suit of sails. I left all the fire-arms, pikes, &c., in Xavier's charge, together with some ammunition, charging him not to use them but for self-preservation. I had thought it best not to suffer anything of the kind to be taken into the schooner, excepting my own pistols and the sword I had received from the Spaniard. On Saturday night all arrangements were completed, and nothing remained for embarkation but ourselves, our cot, trunks, and money.

Sunday, 2d March.—We endeavoured to draw all hearts round us this day in prayer; and the strangers seemed more disposed to the exercises of devotion than heretofore. After divine service, I solemnized the marriage of Martin and Mira, and strove to impress them with the sanctity of the vow they reciprocally took. I had got over my clerical scruples, by calling to mind that the law of England recognised any man a minister who had a congregation; and although dissenters were not competent to perform the marriage ceremony, yet justices of the peace, and other public functionaries were, in our colonies, and especially in these seas: for instance, there is neither clergyman nor lawyer at the Bay of Honduras, the magistrate being priest and judge.

I ordered a plentiful dinner for the whole party; and that we might separate for awhile under the most cheerful impressions, I added as much toddy, and coffee, and cigars, as would do them good. Besides, though we did not quite approve of anything like merriment on the Sabbath, yet in this circumstance we felt ourselves compelled to allow them to dance; which they did, till nearly ten o'clock. I then signified my wish that we should all retire to rest. The word was instantly obeyed; and the captain and his crew, also, made the best of their way to their vessel. Martin and his bride went to her father's house; Xavier and his wife to their own. Diego and Rota took up their lodgings in the great hall, as I should want them both before daylight. My dear wife and I sat up in conference all

night, and finished the closing of the Sabbath by prayer and thanksgiving to our heavenly Father, entreating for the continued influence of the Holy Spirit, and the favour of His divine grace and protection; and that now we were about to use the riches He had placed in our hands, that He would guide us in all things respecting their appropriation.

In about an hour after midnight we arranged our trunks, and tied up the bag of doubloons in two strong handkerchiefs. This done, I awoke Diego and his faithful helpmate; and, after talking to them a short while on some ordinary matters, I quietly said, "You must now go with us to bring my money from the place I have kept it in, for we must house it at the plank-house by daylight, ready to be put on board the schooner in the morning." We accordingly set forth to our hidden treasure. My Eliza gave Rota half a dozen candles and the tinder-box to carry. I had provided also for the occasion some small rope, a hammer and nails, a piece of cane bruised at one end for a brush, and the ink-bottle. Diego took Fidele in his arms, and, with my dear wife hanging by my side, we made our way by moonlight to the thicket. I unlocked the gate, entered, and locked it after us. We passed thence into the cave, where we struck a light; and giving a candle to my wife and another to Rota, I commenced taking down the stones from the side of the place, to the great surprise of Diego; but in which work he soon began to assist me. In a few minutes the former entrance hole was cleared, and I crept through it into the inner cavern. Then receiving a lighted candle from my Eliza, she and her faithful domestics immediately followed me within. There was nothing to be seen but boxes, and they were all very small, excepting one, so that no emotions were excited by such an appearance. If their contents had been spread out on the floor, the effect would have been very different. I proceeded instantly to nail down the large box, containing the various articles of value; and having quickly completed that job, Diego and myself lashed it well up with rope; and I marked it E. S. We then proceeded to cord the thirteen boxes that held the doubloons, which, when so done, I marked in the same manner, adding their numbers in Roman figures, from I. to XIII. This work cost us the labour of three hours; and after it was finished, we found that much time would be required to get the boxes out, on account of their weight. After a moment's thought I sent Diego for a plank, and by its means easily and quickly accomplished it. About one-third of the plank was placed through the hole (the lower edge of which was two feet from

the ground), the plank having its short end resting on the floor of the inner cave, while the long end in the outer cave stood up five or six feet. We then placed a couple of boxes on the extremity of the plank within the recess; and, while Diego kept them in their places, I took hold of the lever end of the plank in the great cave, and gradually brought it to the ground; by thus raising the boxes on the inner end of the plank, in the manner of two boys on a see-saw, they easily and safely were made to slide down into the outer cave. When all the treasure was got out, we replaced the stones; and I desired our assistants never to mention this interior spot to any one, as it might again serve some important purpose. To this they gave me their promise.

By daylight we had carried all the treasure to the plank-house; the large chest being the least heavy of the whole. "Go, Diego," said I, "and take leave of your friends for a little time; we will stay here till you return. But you, Rota, hasten home to get breakfast for us; and when Diego rejoins us, we will come and take it; and then prepare for embarkation." Diego soon returned, and we left him in charge of the boxes, with directions not to quit the spot till I sent Xavier to him to assist in putting them on board.

With care on our brow, my beloved and myself now walked once more, arm in arm, through that woodland region where so often we had strayed with joyous and light hearts, with no companion but our affectionate Fidele, no watchfulness but for the growth of our pumpkin and melon beds. Now we were oppressed by riches, and the desire of acting with prudence and precaution with respect to all the persons Providence had connected with us. As we approached our dwelling, we looked on the silk-cotton tree with a sigh, under whose friendly shade we so often had reposed in undisturbed felicity; thinking it might be possible we never should repose there again. But the assembling of our people around us roused our energies: we paid our compliments to the new married couple; and I talked aside with Xavier on many points to which I directed his attention.

While at breakfast the captain came on shore, and we hurried to embark. Xavier lashed up our cot; he and Martin corded the trunks; and then, with my pistols in my belt, and my spy-glass in my hand, with my soul's treasure, my Eliza, under my arm, and Fidele close at her foot, I found myself in a few minutes in the boat that was to row us to the schooner. We had stepped in from the beach of the plantation. Most of

our things were already on board, and safely stowed away; and we soon reached the vessel, which, at my request, lay with her side to the rock. When we arrived, and embarked with the remainder of our luggage, the captain thought all was on board, as one of the trunks was rather heavy; but I told him the money was yet to be brought, and it was for that reason I had wished him not to haul out. I now sent Xavier and the two Bermudians to Diego, at the plank-house, to assist him in bringing the boxes on board; telling Rota to remain there till all were fetched away. I kept the deck; while my dear wife, who went below, saw the boxes taken down, and stowed commodiously in the cabin: Rota accompanied the last; with which I went down myself, and counted them: after which I locked the cabin down.

We were now all on deck, and the schooner hauled out from the rock, with our canoe alongside as well as his boat. When he was about to hoist sail, my wife and I took an affectionate leave of those we were to leave behind. The women wept bitterly, while my dear Eliza endeavoured to console them by a faithful promise of our return, should it so please God; and, with our united parting blessing, we enjoined them to keep the Sabbath with all possible holiness. Being now under sail, Xavier and Martin were desired to land the women, and then to follow us to sea in the canoe, until we should haul down our colours. We went out with a fine breeze; and, after rounding the promontory, I requested the captain to proceed under easy sail till we got clear of the reefs and shoals. I took the sketch I had made from my pocket, and carefully noted the landmarks for the channel, as we went along: causing the lead to be hove every now and then, to mark the soundings. We continued to stand on, nearly due south, edging away, and hauling up occasionally to avoid a shoal, for nearly three hours, leaving the canoe considerably astern; and as I saw no occasion to take the poor fellows further out to sea, we hauled down our colours, and they returned; at which time we might be twelve or fourteen miles off the land,—shoals and breakers extending as far as we could see, both east and west of us. At twelve o'clock we took an observation, making the latitude $14^{\circ} 20'$ north. About 2 p.m. we had brought the broken water to the westward, abaft the beam, the promontory bearing N. $\frac{1}{2}$ E., distant about eight leagues; that height, and the high bluffs of the westernmost island, appearing as two rocks. We now edged away to the westward, and presently brought these two landmarks in one, which I now set at N.N.E. Finding the

broken water still abaft the beam, we kept away west, and gradually hauled to the wind, on the starboard tack, having the broken water upon the beam till nearly sunset; by which time we saw nothing but a clear sea all round us. We continued to stand on the same tack all night; but about ten o'clock we had passed over the tail of a sand bank, where the water broke a little, and on the edge of which there was but three fathoms water. After this escape, we thought it prudent to keep the vessel away a little; but the night being clear, and nothing to be seen like broken water, we again hauled to the wind, and stood on till daylight, when we went about on the other tack, and at noon we saw the land again bearing S.E., distant about seven leagues, with a great deal of intermediate broken water. We stood on towards the land for an hour, when we discovered a hummock in the distance; but the water shoaled, and we neared the breakers, which obliged us to tack. In an hour I requested the captain to go about again; and as we were working to windward to get up to Jamaica, it was all the same to him; so he did it, until we brought the distant easternmost hummock to bear south, and then shut it in; by which I was satisfied we were off the north end of the islands, and the hummock I saw in the distance was our dear promontory. I requested the captain to continue to work to windward by tacks of an hour, all the afternoon, to give me an opportunity of making notes and sketches as to the different appearances of the land; but before the sun set we put her head to the northward, taking leave of the island.

CHAPTER XIII.

WE kept our eyes upon our island home, while any trace of it could be seen. As the vessel proceeded on her course, it became less and less apparent, gradually sinking in the wave; still something appeared like a small cloud on the horizon, when suddenly, and unperceived by us, the sun went down, and I saw the little speck no more. On the instant my Eliza and myself felt as when some dear friend passes away beneath your eye to the world of spirits. We took each other's hand in silence, and sat down upon the deck. Here my sweet partner was not slow to cheer me with blissful words, while the thoughts that gave them utterance warmed her own bosom. Thus cheered we arose, and as she talked I seemed to forget all but what I then heard and saw. It was a peerless night—the azure canopy,

studded with a thousand stars, appeared in transcendent loveliness above us, while my own embodied angel leaned on my arm, discoursing of joys unsusceptible of alloy, whose fountain is higher than the heavens.

During the greater part of the night we walked the deck; and when we descended to our cabin, we left the captain in full expectation of being able to fetch the west end of Jamaica without making a tack, if the wind should continue steady.

On the following day the breeze was not so favourable, but at the expiration of a week we made the high land above Bluefields. From hence we beat up to windward, taking advantage of the land wind by night; and on the tenth day from taking our departure from the islands, the schooner dropped anchor at Kingston, as near as possible to Mr Dickinson's wharf. I now took my pistols from my belt, being again within the circle of old England's protective rights. This was on Wednesday, the 12th day of March, 1735.

I lost no time in writing a note to Mr Dickinson, and despatched Purdy with it; he soon returned with a clerk of the store, who told me Mr Dickinson was dead; but that his employer, Mr Green, who now occupied the premises, had a good deal of Mr Dickinson's business, and would be happy to do anything for me I should wish. I answered him that I had some boxes of money to put in safe charge; and that I would thank him to take a house, or commodious lodgings for myself, my wife, and two servants, as near the water as possible, for the better accommodation of business. After receiving his promise to execute my wishes immediately, I added that I would remain on board until he had accomplished the object, when the schooner should haul to his employer's wharf, and land the money. I sent Purdy with him, and in about an hour they returned. He had taken lodgings for me in King Street, not very far up, and if I pleased I might have all the house but one room, which the owner of the house, a brown lady, desired to reserve for herself. The schooner was now hauled to the wharf, and in about an hour all the boxes were landed. When done, I gave each of the crew a dollar, for which they were very thankful; and I told the captain to call on me before sunset, and I would pay him his freight. The boxes with the treasure, as well as our trunks and cot, were removed from the vessel to our lodgings with my usual caution; and seeing ourselves, with our faithful little dog, and our heavy care, all together here in safety, we felt grateful to God for His continued protection.

The good woman of the house undertook to provide dinner

and everything else we might require, at a moderate charge; and as there were but three sleeping rooms besides her own, with a front and back dining-room or hall, I took the whole house; not choosing to have any stranger companions admitted. While dinner was getting ready, it occurred to me to procure change for twenty doubloons to pay the captain; for as he supposed my boxes to contain dollars (which I knew from two or three guesses he made during the passage), I judged it prudent not to set his surmises agoing by paying him in gold. I therefore went out and changed my twenty doubloons for three hundred and twenty dollars; the exact sum I had to give him; viz., three hundred for his cabin, and twenty for the two men. He was very civil when I paid him the money, for which he gave me a receipt; and I invited him to take a cigar, sending Diego and Purdy the while to the schooner to bring the hen-coops on shore at Mr Green's wharf, and leave them there until I should want them.

In the course of conversation I asked the captain the value of his schooner, or of such another. His answers were rather equivocal: sometimes he guessed, and sometimes he reckoned; but I concluded from all he said that the hull might be worth a thousand dollars, and the masts and sails, and cables and anchors, &c., worth another thousand. This information was sought to be a guide to me in my future proceedings. He soon took his leave, hugging the bag of dollars between his left arm and his breast, while he shook my hand with the other. My dear wife was never cordial with him, and said little on parting, excepting that she hoped he would find his family all well on his return.

After he was gone, I sent for the mistress of the house, and told her that my servants would each occupy one of the spare bed-rooms. To this she instantly objected.—“Those rooms were for gentlemen, not for negro men.”—“My servants are not slaves,” replied I, “although they are negroes; and I will take care they shall not sleep in your beds with a dirty skin or unclean linen.” After much talk, among which I said my two friends were black gentlemen, she laughed, and conceded the point, saying, she believed I was only “Johnny Newcome, to be so foolish.” After coffee, my dear wife and myself were truly happy to retire to our chamber, where a fine large bed, with moscheto curtains, awaited us. Our boxes were stowed in the corner of the room, at the foot of the bed; yet our minds were rather in a hurried state about them, notwithstanding we now felt ourselves and our riches in a place of security; but it

remained for our God to give us that peace of which we felt the want, and which was not refused on offering up our prayer for it before we went to rest.

In the morning we awoke refreshed ; and, during breakfast, I arranged with my dear wife that she should remain at home to keep an eye on the boxes, until I could dispose of the money. But there was another matter of perhaps equal worldly import that demanded our consideration. While on our dear little island, convenience and comfort were the only objects in determining the form of our dress ; but I knew we must here conform to the modes of fashion in civilised life (if such monstrous modes deserve to be so classed !)—and myself, particularly, must submit my head to be covered with pomatum and powder. There was no time lost, therefore, in sending for a hair-dresser, who promptly came, and as quickly put me under the torture. He rubbed my hair up in front with hard pomatum, till I could scarcely close my eyelids ; and he dusted in the powder, first from the puff, and then from a leathern horn, until he nearly blinded me, having previously appended to my hair behind a large false queue, tied with about five yards of black riband. My dearest Eliza pitied me, and admired the Christian patience with which I sustained the operation ; but it was to be done, or I could not show my face anywhere as a gentleman ! My equipment being thus finished, she felt herself in duty bound to permit her fine and abundant auburn hair to be cut, and disposed in curls ; but she would not allow any frizzing or powdering. And in this resolution of natural just taste, I was happy to see her continue during the whole of our stay in Jamaica.

When I was pronounced by Monsieur, the friseur, as quite the thing, I sallied forth, taking Purdy with me ; leaving Diego to hold guard with his mistress. I called at Mr Green's store, and found him there. He gave me an account of Mr Dickinson's death, which happened about six months ago : adding, that he (Mr Green) had lately arrived from Liverpool, and had taken the store and wharf. I told him my business was to purchase a schooner of about a hundred and twenty tons burden, and a variety of things to load her ; among which would be a main-mast in pieces, fitted, with other spars ; also, a complete suit of sails for a brig that now lay in a creek, the crew of which had been drowned : and that, therefore, I should want to take with me a captain, and crew of eight, including the mate : and that if he would assist me in these matters, I would pay his commission ; to which he readily agreed. I then said, the first things to be set about were the masts and sails ; and that if he

would send a proper person to me the same afternoon, I would give him an explicit order, with the dimensions; but should trust to Mr Green for the honesty of the charge. I added, that as soon as he could hear of a schooner for sale, that might be suitable, I would look at her. "It shall all be attended to," he replied. "Indeed, I understand from my clerks that you are well provided with dollars, so you will find little difficulty in speedily doing the needful." Mr Green invited me to dine, but I declined his kind invitation, having Mrs Seaward with me.

After having despatched so much, I returned to our lodging to write a note to the admiral's secretary; which I sent by Purdy, with a person to show him the way to the admiral's penn. I merely stated that I wished to transmit a considerable sum of money to England, and requested to know if any man-of-war was soon going, and whether the admiral would order the money to be received on freight. I was soon favoured with a very civil reply; in which it was intimated, that such an opportunity was about to present itself, but that the admiral would not order any sum under ten thousand dollars to be received in charge of any of his Majesty's ships; he therefore requested to know what sum I proposed to remit to England. After giving some refreshment to the messengers, I returned them with my answer; in which I stated, that if the ship were a frigate I would send by her about £40,000; and as it would be all in gold, the captain would suffer little inconvenience by its bulk. In the course of the afternoon a reply was brought, saying the admiral's secretary, and the captain of the Solebay, would wait on me to-morrow morning.

In the evening Mr Green appeared with a Mr Finn, a ship-builder, (I suppose he may be so called, although no vessels are built at Kingston,) and I gave him the dimensions of the mast and spars, and sails, &c., and requested he would have them all ready in a fortnight; which he promised to do. After he was gone, Mr Green stayed and took coffee with us, and showed himself so pleased in making himself agreeable to my wife, that he asked me no more about the object of my business than I chose to tell him; which at present saved me some embarrassment. The only thing he communicated of any interest was the circumstance of a calamitous hurricane having swept over Jamaica last year, on the 1st of September; the very day on which we experienced, at Seaward Islands, four-and-twenty hours of violent rains, with variable winds, and a heavy gale at night.

In the morning, about nine o'clock, the naval gentlemen made their appearance. We were just going to breakfast, in which they joined us with great frankness and good breeding. During our repast they talked a good deal about the creole ladies of Jamaica, and such other light matters as came uppermost. The captain also invited us to visit the *Solebay*, my Eliza having mentioned her never having seen a ship of war. After breakfast she retired; and we then entered on matters of business.—“I understand, sir,” said the secretary, “you intend to send about forty thousand pounds to England in gold, if you have the opportunity of a frigate. Captain James will sail in about ten days: and I privately communicate to you that he goes to Chatham; so, if you wish the money to proceed to London, the opportunity is a good one.”—“It will be so, sir,” I replied. “And now, gentlemen,” said I, “as a merchant, you must pardon me proceeding in this matter like a man of business,—what is the freight?”—“One per cent, sir,” answered the secretary.—“In full of all charges, and considerations?” said I, in return,—“the money being in the captain’s charge, until delivered on shore by him to my order at Chatham?”—“Just so,” they replied, smiling; then, after a few minutes’ more conversation, they informed me they would duly let me know on what day the money should be sent for; and at the same time a receipt would be given by Captain James; and memorandums exchanged, as to the conditions mentioned. My wife returned into the saloon when the gentlemen were going away. The captain then repeated his invitation for us to visit the frigate; which we promised to do before he sailed.

This matter being arranged, I sat down and wrote a long letter to my uncle at Bristol: detailing all that had happened to the brig and crew, and with due gratitude mentioning our extraordinary preservation: adding, that fortune had thrown some money into my hands since our shipwreck; and that I had seized the earliest opportunity to get to Jamaica, where I was now providing a mast, spars, and sails to refit the brig; and by the help of some other repairs, and a fresh crew, that I meant to take with me, I hoped I should have her at anchor off Belize in about a couple of months; and that then I would send him a faithful account of all disbursements. My dear Eliza at the same time wrote most affectionately to her father and sisters, and to mine. By two o'clock we had finished these long and interesting letters, and had just time to be dressed for dinner, when it was announced.

The dinner was excellent, and my two domestic friends were

in attendance. Their apparel might do very well at Seaward Islands, but it cut rather a shabby figure at Kingston. My wife, therefore, suggested the propriety of giving them three or four white suits each,—waistcoat, jacket, and trowsers, with neat hats. This being settled, the brown lady was requested to send for a proper person to make the clothes; which she did in the course of the afternoon, and by Saturday evening one suit for each was brought home.

I remained with my dear helpmate all the remainder of the day, which allowed poor imprisoned Diego to go out for a walk with Purdy, to buy the different articles they wanted. When they made me their bows on going forth, I gave them a word or two of admonition as to their behaviour, which they promised faithfully to attend to. And I also desired them to be on the look-out for such things as they knew I intended to take with me; but as we should be here about a month, there was no hurry beyond getting information, of which we might avail ourselves at a proper time. In the evening I took a cigar with my coffee, which brought back to our minds the many hours of happiness and peace we had so passed in our solitude—unperplexed by cares, undisturbed by anxieties.

Next morning I called on Mr Green, and told him I wanted to purchase a bill of exchange for one thousand pounds sterling, which I was desirous to remit to London as a deposit; and I asked him if he could furnish me with a list of the London bankers, as I had forgot the name of the firm I wished to remit the money to, but I should recognise its name on seeing it. He said he would go with me to the paymaster-general, who would give me the bill, no doubt; but there would be a premium on it of ten per cent.: after which we could call at the coffee-house, and look over the list I desired. On our doing so, I made a note of Perry, Child, & Co., Lombard Street: having preferred dropping in at the coffee-house, in our way to the paymaster; with whom I arranged for the bills of exchange; and as an extra packet was to sail next day, I begged to have them the same evening; he shortly but civilly answered, that I should have them when I pleased to call with the money. I therefore quickly took my leave of Mr Green, thanking him for the trouble he had bestowed on the matter, and instantly returned to my dear wife, who assisted me in counting out 300 doubloons from the bag we had placed in the trunk; then turning out the remainder into a stocking, I replaced the 300, and taking the bag on my arm according to the example of our Yankee captain, I went back to the paymaster's office; where

he calculated the difference of exchange and premium, and then told me the sum to be paid was 4620 dollars. I said, "That is right, if you take the doubloons at sixteen dollars."—"Certainly," returned he, "if not cobbed."—I produced my gold, which was the proper sort, the cobbed money being unshapely and not milled. I counted him out 289 doubloons, and he returned me four dollars, being the change; and then delivered me a set of bills of exchange on the British treasury for the £1000 sterling. I asked him what he thought of Perry's house in London, to make a deposit with. "None better," he replied; so I took my leave, returning lighter in weight and in heart than I went, for all these operations were attended with much anxiety.

On my return to our lodgings I refreshed myself with a little wine and water, but the real cheerer was my dear kind wife. I now lost no time in writing to Perry & Co., enclosing them the first of the set of bills, and advising them of a shipment of 12,000 doubloons to be made in a few days in his Majesty's ship *Solebay*, Captain James; which said 12,000 doubloons would be consigned to their house; and that they were to receive them from Captain James at Chatham, paying one per cent. for freight; after which they were to make the best of the market for converting the gold into stock, in the name of Edward Seaward; reserving in their hands £1000 as a deposit to my credit. I also bade them take care of the bank receipts for the money, and to send me their acknowledgment for them, with the accounts, by the first packet, followed by duplicates in the next. This letter being finished, and the bill of exchange specially endorsed, I read the letter to my dear friend and wife as she stood by me, observing to her, "You perceive, my love, I do not order this money to be insured: I commit it to the waves, to be preserved or otherwise, for us, as it may please Him, who most wisely disposes all events for good to those who seek to serve Him." My Eliza kissed my forehead, as she hung over my shoulder, to read and listen to the letter, saying in reply, "My honoured husband, we have but one mind in all things."

It was nearly dinner-time, but I hastened off to post the letters; and returned, heartily glad to change my clothes, and then sit quietly down in comfort and security with the sweet confident of my bosom, to enjoy the ample board that was presently set before us.

Diego and Purdy had been out all day, with permission; and after dinner I called them in, to tell me what they had

seen, and what they had done. Their recital was highly amusing to us, but too trivial in point of importance for detail in this place, excepting that they had seen a capital boat or two, and several excellent canoes, to be sold ; and Purdy had heard of a new Bermudian schooner, sent to Kingston for sale. I told them I was particularly pleased with this last part of their information, and that next week I would look at the schooner. We retired early to rest, as I was much fatigued ; but it was in mind rather than in body. My mind was refreshed, however, by our evening prayer ; and I slept soundly, notwithstanding the buzz of musquitos that hovered all night round the muslin enclosure of our bed.

Sunday, 16th.—We made the best shift we could, with a large sponge and the contents of a great basin, as a substitute for our accustomed Sabbath morning's ablution. We then dressed ourselves in our Sunday clothes, which we found had not become quite unfashionable, excepting my waistcoats ; the flaps of which were quite diminutive, and without lace or embroidery ; so that I had ordered a couple of genteel vests to be made, one of which I now put on to-day ; and the flaps being to the mode, reached half way down my thigh, with pockets sufficiently large to hold a week's provision. At breakfast I received the acknowledgments of our two attendants, in their new attire ; and in my own opinion they were much more conveniently clad than their master. We desired very much to go to church, but we thought it prudent not to leave so large a sum of money in a place so insecure ; we therefore determined on having prayers at home, and accordingly, in the forenoon, we read the service ; omitting the singing of the hymns, as we did not wish to draw the attention of people from without. Our two men attended, and by invitation the brown lady made one of the congregation. Diego was as usual truly devout, and Purdy behaved very well ; but our new friend sometimes laughed, and sometimes yawned, and seemed heartily glad when it was over. The heart of my dear wife bled inwardly at this manifestation of total darkness on the part of the poor woman ; and said to me, how happy she should be if it were granted her to be the instrument of bringing that poor soul to the knowledge of God. After service the men had permission to go out, but I enjoined them to keep away from all revelry, and to hold in mind that this day was the Sabbath, to be kept holy to the Lord.

About one o'clock Mr Green called on me. My dear wife expressed her regret that we had not been able to go to church,

but hoped we should have that happiness next Sunday ; and concluded by asking him how many churches there were in Kingston? He replied, "One, I believe; but I never have been in it."—"Never in it!" repeated my Eliza, with an emotion of surprise.—"O no," resumed he; "scarcely any one here ever thinks of going to church. We have too much to do, and have only just shut up the store." She could hardly believe her ears; for on this subject we had made no enquiry, having on our former visit to the island arrived on one Sunday and sailed the next. Her spirits were a good deal affected by what she now heard; it was a deep sentiment of sorrow for the people. Mr Green sat a good while, and I thought in that case it was incumbent on me to invite him to dinner. He accepted my civility, and returned by two o'clock. We gave him excellent fare, with which he seemed well pleased; but when at our wine, he ventured to make some satirical remarks on saying grace before dinner, which drew from my dear wife a rebuke that I think he never will forget. "It has been said, Mr Green, that ingratitude is so base a crime, that the man was never yet found who would acknowledge it. He that omits thanking the Creator and Giver of all things, for the good he receives at His hands, I think fairly deserves the imputation. And this is my apology for that grace before dinner which you have endeavoured to make a subject for ridicule." Our guest was quite confounded, he could not make any reply for some time; at last he said, Jamaica has a pestilential atmosphere; and that while in England he was sure he never would have ventured to say what he had said. My dear wife mildly answered, that she hoped he would not suffer all his early good habits to be destroyed, and that she might see him at church before we left Kingston. To this he gave a smiling promise, and we passed the rest of the evening in general conversation. He left us after tea, or rather coffee, without much regret on our parts at his departure. We soon retired to our Sabbath thanksgiving, and to our rest.

Monday, 17th.—I called on Mr Green early in the morning on business. He very soon alluded to what my wife had said to him, and he really felt much obliged to her; saying, it had made such an impression on his mind, that he thought it would keep him on his guard against the inroads of impiety, which stalked about with unblushing face in every shape at Kingston. After finishing this conversation, I told him I wished him to make some enquiry about a Bermudian schooner that was for sale; and if he considered its price reasonable, and it would

suit me, I would purchase it. About noon he sent his clerk to tell me the owner of the vessel was at the counting-house, and if I would go with him I could see it. I accordingly went, and took Diego and Purdy with me. It was a fine vessel, built entirely of cedar, and fully equipped for sea—the admeasurement one hundred and thirty tons: we were all much pleased with her. The owner, and another person with him, knew Jemmy Purdy; and he knew them: but they gave themselves no trouble about him, and he had sense enough to say nothing to them about himself, lest he might be seized as a runaway slave, and put in confinement. After we had looked at the vessel, we returned to Mr Green's counting-house, and then I asked the price of her. The owner named four thousand dollars; she was complete; and there were two suits of sails. Comparing this with what the Norfolk man said, I thought the demand too much, and told him so at once; saying, "I will not give anything like that sum," and went away. He called on me several times during the week, always coming down a little; but I would not negotiate with him at all. "What is the most you will give, then?" said he. "Three thousand dollars," said I, "if the report of a ship carpenter be satisfactory; and I am content myself with the inventory of the equipment, with which you must furnish me." No, he could not take such a sum as that. But before the week expired, he consented to do so, and also brought an inventory of the equipment. Mr Finn was sent to examine the vessel, her boats, sails, cables, &c., &c.; and being well satisfied, a conveyance of the schooner was made; which, together with the register, was handed over to me, and I paid the seller in dollars; which I had taken care to procure; not wishing it to be thought my boxes contained anything more valuable. The vessel now being mine, I told Purdy he must take charge of her; and I shipped two free New England negroes, at five dollars a month.

On Wednesday morning, the 19th inst., Captain James, and the Admiral's secretary, and the master of the Solebay, called on me; and eight of the boxes were brought out by Diego and myself into the saloon. When they were put down, I sent to purchase a hammer and chisel; with which I soon opened the lids, Diego having quitted the room after they were uncorded. The doubloons were then counted, and replaced, and the boxes nailed up again, and Diego called in to re-record them. I then delivered them to Captain James; taking his receipt, and signing a memorandum of agreement, the counterpart of one he had signed and given to me. The master went for the

boat's crew,—who lugged away the cases of treasure down to the boats in waiting for them, as lightly as if they contained so much ballast. I told the captain the name of the house in London, to which the bullion was consigned ; and that I had written by the packet, to advise the firm of the business, but that I should write by him also. He took his leave, again expressing his hope of seeing us on board the *Solebay*. "You must come and see my little ship," he repeated again ; adding with an emphasis, "My *royal* little ship, for it was she that brought King William to England."

Towards the end of the week, I called on the paymaster of the forces again, and asked him if it were convenient for him to draw on the Treasury for any sum within five thousand pounds ; he replied it was quite convenient, and that I might have a bill for that sum or any other within it. My answer was, that I should prefer taking the whole sum ; and would bring the money on Saturday morning. Accordingly I made Diego, and another man I hired, carry one of the boxes with me to the paymaster's ; where I opened it, and untying one of the bags, I drew out twelve doubloons, saying, "Now you will find in this and the other bags, the sum right, if you will give me eight dollars." They then lifted out the bags, and counted 500 out of each of the full ones, and 488 from the other ; which being the exact sum I mentioned, the paymaster delivered me the bills, at thirty days' sight on the Treasury, for the £5000 sterling ; also the eight dollars change ; and I took my leave.

In the course of the week I had desired Diego to look about for a large strong wooden chest, to lock up the remainder of the boxes ; but he could not find one suitable. I therefore bought an iron chest, into which we removed the twelve bags of doubloons, from the boxes that remained ; and also the contents of the big one, of which we now took a correct inventory ; viz.—

Gold :—Crucifixes, thirty-six ; sword handles, twelve ; chains, large and small, forty ; triangular pieces embossed with scripture figures, having a hole at one angle for a chain, eight.

Silver :—Candlesticks, two pairs ; ewers, two ; salvers, four ; crucifixes, fifty ; chains, fifty ; cases with perfume, two ; shoe-buckles, twelve pairs.

Tissue, of gold, four pieces ; of silver, six pieces.

This being done, we locked the new depository ; feeling, as I put the curiously-wrought key into my pocket, a great relief to my mind and to the mind of my dear wife also. Our thoughts

and time were now comparatively at liberty ; and we anticipated with delight the celebration of the Sabbath in a temple dedicated to the service of God.

Sunday, 23rd.—I sent Diego to the schooner, for Purdy to accompany us to church : and we left mammon in the chest, to take care of itself. There were but few people attending divine service, compared with the population of the place ; and the greater part of that congregation consisted of officers and soldiers. We could not but be affected by this awful corroboration of Mr Green's statement ; yet we ventured to hope a day would come when the Sun of Righteousness should rise on this spiritually benighted land, when both bond and free should join in the worship of the God that made them.*

Monday, 24th.—I sent for Mr Finn, to urge him not to fail in his promise with respect to the spars and sails, and to request he would be on the look-out for a captain to take down for the brig, and for some one acquainted with the Spanish Main to command the schooner ; and to cast his eye over some of the boats Purdy had mentioned to me, as I wished to purchase one of about twelve tons to take with me. Mr Finn promised to do all I required.

After he left me, I desired Purdy, who was in waiting, to be on the alert for a crew for the brig, eight hands, and bring them to me as he found them.—“ Yes, sir,” he replied : “ I will get crew for brig, but wish to tell you something, sir. You said I should have Jamaica wife to go with us. There is young woman, sir, will have me, sir ; but if she go, sir, father and mother, and one brother, want all to go too, sir ; I tell them, say, sir, can't marry every one of them, sir.”—“ Well, Purdy,” I answered, “ bring them all to me ; or, bring the father and mother, and I will talk to them.”—“ When they shall come, sir ? ” he asked.—“ To-morrow evening, Purdy,” I replied, “ before sunset, let them come.”—“ Thank you, sir, thank you very much, sir,” said he ; and, making several scrapings with each foot, and a merry turn of both arms, retired. As he went out, Diego respectfully observed, “ Good fellow, that, sir ; honest fellow, him, sir.”—“ I am glad to hear you say so, Diego,” I replied ; “ for I believe thou also art an honest fellow thyself.”—“ Thank you, Senor Don Edvardo ; good master to me, and friend ! thank you, sir,” said he, with much emphasis and emotion, bowing his head low and slowly to the ground.

* This pious prophecy of heart, made by this good man nearly a century ago, is happily now verified in the year 1830, by the indefatigable labours of Doctor Lipscombe, Bishop of Jamaica.—*Editor.*

"Now, Diego," rejoined I, rising and taking him by the hand, "our time draws on; you must be on the look-out for whatever you may think we shall require; remember our family will be increased to at least four times our former number."—He remarked, in reply, that our stores would be full from the field, soon after our return: but we must take some plantain suckers to put in; and two or three breeding pigs, and a few turkeys, and some geese, if I pleased: and if anything else occurred to him, he would mention it.—"Very well," I said; "bespeak these things, and anything else you think we may want."

Having despatched all this business, I asked my dear wife if she was inclined to pay a visit to Port Royal, and the frigate; to which she readily assented. Diego was told where we were going, and desired to keep within during our absence. I added that we would lock our room door, and if we did not come home that night, he must sleep near it, on the hall floor. My word was a law to this faithful creature; and, bowing his answer of obedience, I despatched him to man one of the schooner's boats with himself and Purdy's crew, and bring it to the nearest wharf, to row us to the rendezvous of the wherries; these are large sailing-boats of eight or ten tons measurement, that ply between Kingston and Port Royal. By ten o'clock, we found ourselves in a wherry; and the breeze blowing strong and fair, they disembarked us at Port Royal in an hour and a quarter. The ships of war looked nobly, as we passed a-head of them, lying at anchor off the town. On landing we were shown to a lodging-house by one of the wherry men, where we were kindly received by a brown lady who kept it, and by her daughter. The latter came smiling up to us; and, rubbing her white teeth with a piece of chew-stick all the time she stood by my wife, spoke to her every now and then, "How you do, ma'am;—hope you don't sick, ma'am;—hope you get better at Port Royal, ma'am;—season don't very sickly, ma'am."—"I am very well, thank you," replied my Eliza. "You seem a nice girl; you can read and write very well, I suppose?" The girl tittered; "Read, ma'am! Bucharah read! me no read."—"You sew, then, I suppose?" continued my wife.—"O yes," replied the girl; "can sew—but no more than hem handkerchief sometime."—"What do you do, then, with your time?" replied Eliza.—"Plenty for do," she returned; "all day sit down, and talk sometime."—My dear wife smiled, and the brown young lady resumed the rubbing of her teeth, which was done in a manner not to fatigue her, and walked out of the room with a peculiar movement that swung her petticoats from side to side.

In a little time the table-cloth was laid, and our hostess told us there was a guinea fowl roasting for second breakfast, and that it soon would be ready; for which we thanked her. In the meanwhile I wrote a note to Captain James, and asked her to despatch it on board the *Solebay*; but she said she had no doubt he was on shore, and would therefore first send where she thought he was; which she did; and in about a quarter of an hour he waited on us, with another captain of the navy, whom he introduced as Captain Denny. Captain James was very glad to see us; and my wife, in turn, received him and his friend courteously, and requested they would partake of our second breakfast. They politely assented; but before we sat down, Captain James sent off a note to his ship. We talked of England and Jamaica, and the Spanish Main; at least, he talked of the latter, believing that we had come from thence with our stores of gold; however, the topics were all lightly touched on, so that there was no embarrassment.

After we had finished our repast, a midshipman came in, to say the barge was in waiting; and Captain James then repeated his invitation to Mrs Seaward and myself, to do him the honour of visiting his ship. We were struck with the elegance of the boat, and the neatness of the crew, who were all dressed in white shirts, and trowsers like petticoats, and small straw hats. They pushed off the boat in a peculiarly fine style, and rowed simultaneously, with a long interval between each stroke of the oar, the coxswain making a sweep as if he would pass the ship; and, in fact, he did so, for I saw her cabin windows, before he brought the boat's head fairly round. As we approached, the bowman tossed up his oar into the air, and caught it again; while at the same instant all the crew placed their oars regularly within the boat, and she was laid alongside with the greatest ease and exactness. The frigate appeared high; but my dear wife said she could easily get up: however the necessity of the attempt was prevented, for a large chair, fitted for the purpose, was lowered down to the boat, into which the captain placed her, covering her limbs with a flag, and in one moment, by the signal of the boatswain's pipe, she was hoisted up, and placed on the quarter-deck in safety. The captain and Captain Denny were received with presented arms. He then introduced his officers to us; they were all dressed in dark blue coats, with white linings, but the lieutenants only wore white facings; some had on gold laced waistcoats with deep flaps, rather the worse for wear; others wore their waistcoats plain, but I observed a rose on all their buttons. The lieutenants, and another officer,

wore small cocked hats, of a shovel fashion, and they were laced, though somewhat rusty; and more than one of the group flaunted an awkward-looking wig under the beaver. But, without exception, every fighting man of them had a short curved cutlass slung horizontally at his side. I made a few complimentary remarks on the dress worn by the lieutenants, but more especially on that worn by Captain James himself. He said, in reply, that the navy was indebted for it to his present Majesty; that it was but a few years ago he had given them the white lapelle, and double rose upon their button: previously the coat was single-breasted, like that of a landsman; the junior officers wearing nothing but jackets, with sugar-loaf buttons, and a bit of gold lace edging the rim of a round hat.

After this ceremony, we walked down into the captain's cabin, which is on the main deck, where he showed us increased courtesy. "You see your cash there," said he to me, pointing to the after-part of the cabin;—"but you perceive," continued he, "I am more careful of it than you were, for I have caused the carpenter to make a great coat of oak plank for each of your deal boxes; I wonder you could trust gold in such trumpery cases."—I thanked him, smiling, saying, "If they were nails, we should think deal boxes safe enough; and perhaps we sometimes add little to our security by too evident precaution! Still I felt much obliged to him; and I hoped he would not suppose I undervalued my obligation, by the remark I had made."—"No," returned he, with something like an oath, which rather startled my dear wife; "no, I really think you are right."—And then he told us a story about his smuggling some valuable things, when he came from India as a lieutenant, by merely putting them into a seaman's chest, for which he gave Jack five shillings, and which he sent on shore by a common waterman, directing it to a waggon office in London; where it arrived safe, when all those who bribed custom-house officers, and took every precaution, had their whole collection of things seized the moment they were landed.

Our chatty host now invited us to see the ship. I observed there was some small cannon on the quarter deck, but on each side of the main deck the guns looked nobly; yet I believe they were only nine pounders; the frigate was said to carry twenty-two guns altogether, with a complement of one hundred and fifty men. We were next introduced to the gun room, a deck lower, where the officers live. It was hot and dark, and is below water. Men must have a great thirst for glory, thought I, to live in such a place; to which the cavern in our own dear

island is a palace! We found ourselves very pleasant on the quarter deck, after emerging from that close region; and the awning being spread, we walked under its shade with great comfort, the cool breeze from the sea blowing freshly over us. The ships, and the scenery around, were all objects interesting to our reflective minds. Ahead of us, were the remains of a once proud city; over the ruins of which, perhaps, we now stood, on the deck of the frigate! My dear wife made this reflection. Captain Denny assured her he had seen the chimney tops; and that he had heard of their being hooked sometimes by the fluke of an anchor. "I do not know how to credit that!" said she, smiling.—"Oh! there was not a word of a lie in it, I do believe," cried he.—"Well, but," added his gentle antagonist, "where did the chimneys come from? I have not yet seen any in Jamaica; and if ever there were any in Port Royal, the climate must have been strangely altered by the earthquake!"—Captain James laughed heartily at Denny's exposure: but he himself joined in the laugh, crying aloud, "What an infernal ass I am, to be sure!"—by which unusual candour, and great good humour, he completely turned aside the shaft of ridicule he had unwittingly drawn upon himself.

Dinner was announced by a drum beating "The Roast Beef of Old England," when Captain James, who was a well-bred gentleman, handed my wife down to his cabin; Denny, at the same time, giving me a slap on the shoulder, said, "Make sail, my boy, and keep in the commodore's wake."—There was no other company. We had pea-soup at dinner, which was a novelty to us, and some Newfoundland cod, with onions. There were a couple of roast ducks, and a dish of pancakes made on board without either milk or eggs; the last dish proving very good, was a great mystery to my wife. They were made with sea water! During the meal we had some excellent Hockenstein, brought from Curacoa, and a glass of ratafia by way of finish. Our conversation at dinner was not worth noting, excepting an account which Captain James gave us of an attack by the Maroons, not many months ago, made on Colonel Charlton and his officers, while at mess; taking them by surprise, and although the fellows were beat back before they did much mischief, yet the first report was that Charlton's men were totally cut to pieces. So that the records of the island were immediately packed up at Spanish Town, and all the old women, he said, came flying to the squadron for safety. The table-cloth being removed, we drank the

King's health ; after which, my dear wife addressed herself to our host :—"Now, with your permission, Captain James," asked she, "I will go and walk the quarter-deck for half-an-hour ; by which time I think Mr Seaward will thank you for a boat, as we are desirous of getting up to Kingston to-night." He very politely requested the officer on deck to give her his arm, where she enjoyed the fine air : and after we had sat an hour, during which we were abundantly jovial, I pressed my host to allow me to go also ; adding, at the same time, that I certainly should not wish to do so were I alone. He felt the propriety of my request, and we soon joined Mrs Seaward on deck. He ordered coffee to be got ready, and the barge to be manned ; and after a short time we took our coffee and our leave, having previously learned that he would sail by the end of the week ; before which time I promised to send my letters to his care for England. On landing, I asked the officer if he could permit me to give the boat's crew some money? to which he answered, "Certainly not ; but your offer is not less kind."—"They are going to sea," said I ; "allow me, then, on that ground, to beg the favour of you to buy some vegetables for their mess? There can be no objection to this."—"Well, sir," he replied, "I think there can be no objection : you may give a dollar or two for that to the coxswain, and I will tell the captain." I put ten dollars into the coxswain's hand.—"Two for yourself," said I, "and one for each of the men."—As we walked away, the men cheered us with "Long life to you, sir, and to your lady!" And the officer, who was a midshipman, accompanied us to our lodgings. On his taking leave, I invited him to come and see us at Kingston, which he said he would do with pleasure.

The day was too far advanced for us to think of proceeding there that evening ; so we amused ourselves walking about Port Royal, enjoying the cool hour before we retired for the night. It is a miserable place now. The piazzas were occupied chiefly by mulatto women, (brown ladies, as they called themselves,) sitting with their feet placed on a chair, or cocked up against a post,—no very modest attitudes for the female sex ; but my candid Eliza rather pitied than found fault with them. With some of them, we saw naval officers standing and joking, or smoking a cigar, but all was quiet, and nothing indecorous in conduct presented itself to our notice. We retired early to a large comfortable room, with an ample bed, and a fine white moscheto net, where we soon found a sweet sleep awaiting us. We breakfasted on coffee, with hot roasted

plantains, and Irish butter, which reminded us of former days ; and as soon as the sea-breeze set in, which was about nine o'clock, I paid our bill, and got on board a wherry ; which stretched up against the wind to Kingston, making but one tack ; and when arrived we had rather a warm walk from the Wherry Wharf to King's Street.

Diego received us joyfully, saying all was well. We were glad to rest ourselves, and to change our dress ; not so to sit under the hands of my friseur. Soon after, as I stood in the hall, Purdy came in with two seamen. I did not like their appearance much ; so taking my good fellow aside, I told him I thought it better to defer this matter till I had found a captain, that I might have the advantage of his judgment in the choice. I then said to the men that I could not ship them till I had fixed on a captain ; and on this remark they went. In less than half-an-hour after, Mr Finn brought a man who had been mate of a London ship, and whose captain had behaved somewhat brutally towards him. Finding that he had been at the Bay of Honduras, I engaged him as captain for the brig, but with an understanding that, as his wages were to commence immediately, he was to obey my orders in everything, and to take charge of the schooner for the present, in which he and his crew were to sail to join the brig. I added, that he must come every morning to me at nine o'clock for orders, and meanwhile, as opportunity offered, to seek and bring such men to me as he could procure for a crew, taking care not to engage any of bad character : and I desired him to confer with Purdy, who was a confidential servant. So this was arranged, and in the course of the week he had got his crew together ; and having received from me a very minute statement of the condition of the brig, he took care that everything should be furnished by Mr Finn that might be required for her re-equipment.

My dear wife and myself had for some days past made our beloved friends at Awbury the subjects of our conversation, and I had resolved that she should send a present of £500 to her father, and I would at the same time remit an equal sum to my sisters and brother ; and for this end I procured two sets of bills on the Treasury, for which I paid as before 288 doubloons 12 dollars for the £1000 sterling. The letter written by my dear Eliza was replete with expressions of tender duty to her most worthy parent, and of affection to her sisters ; but it overflowed with grateful love towards myself. She told them as much of our story as I thought might with prudence be at present disclosed ; for as yet, until our affairs were settled,

there were many reasons requiring partial secrecy. She, however, told them Providence had bestowed an ample fortune on me; and that if either of her sisters would marry and come to Kingston, and not object to live with us where we lived, I would provide for that sister and her husband. In the same strain I wrote to my brother at Awbury, telling him that £100 was for each of my sisters, and £200 for himself; and if he chose to marry, and he and his wife should come out to Jamaica, I would provide for them; and that he need not be uneasy about leaving his sisters, as I would allow each of them £50 a-year. I desired him to write to me, but not to wonder if five or six months should elapse before he received an answer, as my place of residence was some hundred miles from Jamaica; but that a vessel belonging to me would visit Kingston every two or three months on business. I requested him to communicate with our friends at the Parsonage on our proposals, as Eliza had sent her father money, with an invitation to her sisters of a similar nature to that which he now received from me. Our letters to Awbury, with their enclosures, were ready, and another letter to my uncle, informing him how I was getting on, as far as respected the preparations for re-equipping his brig. Likewise letters to Perry & Co., with the first of exchange for £5000, ordering them to invest it; and also duplicates of the letter written by the packet, with the second of exchange for the £1000 remitted by that opportunity.

The midshipman who had landed me from the ship called on me to-day, according to promise, and I invited him to dinner. He seemed an honest unsophisticated youth, and amused us much by his droll phraseology. He said the captain expressed himself very handsomely on the present I had given the men, and had desired the purser's steward to lay the money out for them in vegetables. "But," continued the boy, laughing, "they would rather have had the cash to bouse their jibs up ashore." When the evening came he desired to depart; but I persuaded him to stay till the morning, as I wished him to take charge of my letters to Captain James. He soon said "Yes;" and when morning came, I gave him my packets, together with a superb gold hilt for a sword (the value of which could not be less than £50), which I took from my reserved store, and sent with a separate note to Captain James, begging his acceptance of it, and regretting that I could not here get it mounted; but adding, that I hoped he would have it done in England, and send in the account to my banker's, who had

my directions to pay the cost. When the midshipman took these things, I said to him—"My young friend, don't be offended if I offer you a doubloon, to lay in anything you like for your mess;" but he objected to receive it, until my dear wife remarked, "You cannot refuse it, because it is a present to your messmates as well as to yourself." He acknowledged the weight of this appeal, adding, "You are very kind; and as we hear you are very rich, I will no longer say no. When you went on shore," continued he, "the captain said to our first lieutenant, 'There goes a fellow worth more than his weight in gold!' Some took the speech one way, and some another. Now, sir, I would take it both ways—a good heart and a good purse! and they are two good things; that is, when they lie close aboard of each other." So, shaking me cordially by the hand, and my dear wife offering him hers, which was not her custom, he took his leave of us, apparently much delighted; perhaps more with what he had said, than from what he had received, either by my present, or our joint courtesy. But if his pleasure did not arise from what he had said, my dear wife's had; that having been the impulse to her cordiality on his leaving us.

The next day I received a note from Captain James, acknowledging the receipt of the letters, which he promised should be carefully delivered; also that he would pay every attention requisite to the safe delivery of the money boxes to my banker's; and then he returned me his warmest acknowledgment for my very superb and valuable present, which, however, he must insist on having mounted at his own expense.

Purdy and his nuptial friends were punctual on the appointed evening. The father and mother of the girl were both mulattoes. The man said he would give his daughter to Jemmy; but as he had heard from him that I had a good settlement where I could employ him, and give him a house and grounds, he and his wife and his son wished to go too. He told me he was a carpenter, and so was his son; that they had been turned out of a place they had built on some ground that did not belong to the man who sold it to them; and they were so impoverished and vexed by the business, they now wished to leave Jamaica altogether. I consented to take them; but it was on condition that the son should bring a wife with him, as my great object was to people the settlement with honest and industrious families. He answered, there would be no difficulty in that; so he would promise for his son. This matter

being thus arranged in the presence of Purdy, I informed them I would lend them all some money, to buy such things as Purdy would advise as necessary to take with them, and that I would charge it to them; for which they must account to me at a future time. The father and Purdy thanked me, and then departed with the welcome news to their friends. Little more was done this week, and on Sunday the 30th, we went to church, accompanied by Diego, who now remained with us entirely at our lodgings; the schooner having the captain and his crew on board, besides Purdy, and the two New England negroes, whom we had shipped as part of her establishment.

Early in the week a fine new boat was fixed on with lugsails, measuring quite twelve tons. She was half-decked, and therefore safe in the open sea. I paid 300 dollars for her complete. Purdy agreed to have charge of her, with the two negro sailors; and to take all his family down in her, with their needfuls. I advanced to his father-in-law, the son, and himself, 20 dollars each; and told him he must ballast with coals, which I should want to burn lime; that they were now lying on Mr Green's wharf, where he must take them in, and be in readiness to accompany the schooner, whose cargo was now ready, and would certainly sail on Monday or Tuesday next. I called this fine boat the Avon, after the beautiful river down which my Eliza and myself sailed on leaving England, and on whose admired banks we had walked delightfully together before we embarked on our eventful voyage. It had also been my place of recreation when with my uncle at Bristol; and I loved such recollections. I had wished to call our schooner the Severn, in honour of that noble river, near to which our native village stands; but she had been registered by name, and ugly as it was to our ears, it could not be changed; she was called the Porghee, after a fish much esteemed at Bermuda.

By the middle of the week Mr Finn was ready; but it seemed the spars could not be got below; so the schooner now began to take in her cargo, leaving the spars to be stowed upon deck. A few thousand bricks were already placed on the floor of the vessel; she then took in spare anchors for herself and the Avon, and also a long 12-pounder, fitted with a depressing carriage, to mount on the promontory, and nearly a ton of shot for the gun. Then, *in barrels*, came American flour, rice, biscuit, Irish beef, pork, butter, sugar, salt, suet, coffee, raisins, gunpowder, pitch, tar, resin, kegs of paint, kegs of ball cartridges, and keg of flints: *in boxes*, Russia duck, English stripes, checks, linens, coloured handkerchiefs for the head,

&c., &c., soap, candles, refined sugar and tea : *in cases*, ironmongery ; as knives, locks, hinges, nails, &c. ; ship carpenters' tools ; house carpenters' tools ; twenty stand of arms, with their appointments, and blank paper cartridges for the 12-pounder : *in crates*, kitchen utensils ; as pots, pans, kettles, &c., with a large quantity of yabbahs, or earthen pots, used for cooking in Jamaica ; also wooden trenchers, and coarse crockery, as jugs, brown dishes, delft plates, &c. : *in packages*, implements of husbandry ; as pick-axes, spades, shovels, hoes, axes, hatchets, bill-hooks, &c. ; sawyers' saws, leather, canvas, cordage, oakum ; a quantity of slop clothing, including shoes ; a large and small Union Jack, with spare bunting for other flags ; two mahogany bedsteads, with mattresses and moscheto nets : *loose*, spare cables for the schooner and Avon, sails and rigging for the brig, a timber carriage, wheelbarrows, handbarrows, squared timber for erecting habitations, boards, planks, staves, shingles ; a great handmill, with a wheel for grinding maize ; two mahogany tables, twelve mahogany chairs, wardrobe, and two chests of drawers. There were besides, a few hams, and a cheese ; six dozen of Canary in hampers, and a quarter cask of the same ; a large box of Spanish cigars, jars with oil, and spirits of turpentine, two looking-glasses, two spy-glasses, a speaking-trumpet, and bugle horn, a pair of glass shades for the candles, and some other things not herein enumerated : however, the whole did not make more than three-fourths of a cargo ; the planks and boards being stowed above all, so as to make a platform fore and aft in the hold, with room enough above it for the accommodation of such people as we might think fit to place there ; as well as for the stock that Diego was to bring on board ; viz., six sheep, four pigs, twelve turkeys, twelve geese, and twelve Guinea fowls ; also a supply of plantain suckers, and a quantity of pine-apples, shaddocks, oranges, limes, and some other fruits. I may here remark, that the gunpowder, of which there were two barrels, as well as the kegs of ball cartridges, were cased in flour barrels, with a packing of Indian meal between, for security and safety.

While they were engaged in thus loading the schooner, I procured a letter of introduction to the Governor's secretary at Spanish Town ; and hiring a calash with two horses, which I preferred to a kiterreen, we were driven over from Kingston on Thursday morning, in about an hour and a half. Soon after our arrival I waited on the secretary, and told him that I understood he gave commissions for island appointments, and

that I wanted a commission as Captain-commandant over a place where I was settled with some negroes and free people. It was a small island or two, among some rocks and shoals off the Mosquito shore, on which there were no inhabitants when I landed there, about fifteen months ago; that we had built some huts, and I was now going back thither with a schooner; that we had prevented a Spaniard, about three months since, from taking a Virginia vessel; and that I had hoisted the English colours, but was afraid to protect them, without a commission. The secretary asked me what the island was called. I said it was not laid down in any chart that I had seen; I therefore had called the group "*Seaward Islands*," after my own name.—"And what is your Christian name?" he replied. I told him, "Edward."—"Well, Captain Edward Seaward," said he, "you shall have the commission; but you must pay twenty doubloons for it."—"That is a great sum, sir," returned I, "but I do not demur; you shall have it; and I will thank you to give me the privilege of appointing any person on the island my lieutenant, in case of my occasional absence."—"O certainly," he replied, "there can be no objection to that." He then requested me to sit down, while he went to settle the business. He returned in about an hour, with the commission, signed by the Governor; I read it over and found it everything I wished. I then counted down the twenty doubloons to the secretary; who wished me a good morning, without asking me any more questions. Of that I was heartily glad; but I could not help thinking, that I never had seen the commonest mercantile transaction done in a more matter-of-course manner; and I strongly suspected, that when the Governor put his pen to the commission, he knew no more of the nature of the appointment he was signing, than he did of the rocks and islands over which he had unconsciously placed me: however, I had obtained the important credential; and my wife rejoiced with me, on my return to the inn, at the quiet manner in which the thing had been done. "Now, Captain Seaward," said she, smiling, and taking my hand, "we will have dinner; and I shall have the honour of drinking your health; and we will then return to Kingston."

On re-entering our lodgings there, I found Mr Green waiting for me. A few difficulties had occurred in procuring some items of the cargo: however, after a little conversation, the obstacles were surmounted; having chiefly arisen respecting prices, and terms of payment, the word "ready money" acted like a charm, and all the stoppage vanished. He stayed with

me to smoke a cigar ; during which time I told him, if I found he behaved to me with strict integrity, I should appoint him my agent at Kingston ; with which place I might have considerable business. He thanked me, observing that it would be his interest to serve me well and faithfully. We were glad to retire early, and rose next morning in health and spirits.

On Friday morning I consulted with Diego and Purdy, as to the expediency of purchasing two new negro boys, to form a part of the schooner's crew, whom, I thought, with Purdy and Martin, and the two New England negroes, might be sufficient. My worthy counsellors approved the idea ; but I added, "Don't suppose that I will have any slaves at Seaward Islands. I will bind these lads for seven years ; after that, they shall be their own masters."—"God bless our good master !" my two friends, one after the other, replied. "Dear Eliza," continued I, "would it not be well for you to take three or four girls on the same terms ? for our society will be so constituted on our return that you will require them." She cordially acquiesced ; and we went altogether to the wharf of a merchant, who had just disembarked a cargo of these human beings for sale. My wife remained in the counting-house ; while I, with my attendants, proceeded to the enclosure where the poor creatures were all assembled. Some were young, and some in the prime of life ; some were gay, and some were sad ; but all exhibited a black and glossy skin, having been dressed with palm oil for the occasion ; and all their vesture might have been replaced with a fig leaf. After some scrutiny, my men picked out two nice clean-limbed lads of about eighteen, and they were led up to the store. The price was £50 currency each, and the bargain was struck. The merchant's clerk was told that Mrs Seaward wanted two or three girls ; but that, as she could not go down into the mart, we would therefore thank him to bring a few up. Half a dozen speedily made their appearance ; and my wife was selecting three from the number, when one of the young new negroes I had purchased evinced considerable restlessness and some emotion. My dear Eliza, regarding him attentively, said to me—"I am sure that lad has a mother, or wife, or sister, among these people, whom he wishes should go along with him." I bade Diego take him out to see if it was so, by leaving him loose, and observing to whom he would run. My Eliza proved to be right : they returned with his sister : and when my wife selected her, which she did at once, the youth fell upon his knees before her, kissing her feet. I was asked £40 currency each for the three girls :

the money was paid ; and Diego then conducted the party to our lodgings, where they were received and placed in the negro-yard by the brown lady, among her own domestics.

On our return, the first care of my dear wife was to have these girls washed with warm water and soap, and then neatly clothed, while Purdy took the lads on board the schooner, and put them under the same discipline, treating them also kindly.

In the afternoon the captain of the brig called at his usual hour, and reported progress. He said he would be complete on Saturday night. "Very well," I replied ; "but do not hurry ; I will not sail on Sunday ; and I shall leave Monday to collect any things that in the hurry of business may have been forgotten ; we will sail on Tuesday."—"That is very well, sir," he said ; "but I would suggest to you that it may be a very bad business to send Purdy's family in the Avon. We may want that boat to look out among the shoals and breakers for a passage ; and if she should take the ground with those people in her, there will be horrible confusion. You had better send them in the schooner ; and put half a dozen good hands in the boat, to jump out and get her off if she should ground, or use the oars to keep her clear of a reef if necessary." I thanked him for his advice, and would abide by it. "But," said I, "Finn was to get me a skipper for the schooner, and it is quite time I should be suited ; he has not done it."—"I know a proper fellow I could recommend," returned the captain ; "he is rather young, but he is a nice lad, and a prime navigator ; and no lubber withal ; he was born and bred at sea. I will bring him to you to-morrow, if you please."—"Do so," said I, "but, remember, do not serve a friend at the probable expense of human life ! The person I want is to take charge of my schooner, in which my wife and myself sometimes may be ; and always many of those we love as friends."—"I would trust my own life with him," he replied, by way of recommendation, "as far as that goes."—"Then bring him," said I.

In the morning the captain called on me with his young friend, "Francis Drake."—"I like your name and your countenance, sir," said I ; "but you are very young."—"I am twenty-two," he replied, "and have been at sea all my days. I was born on shipboard ; my father was master of a man-of-war : I was a midshipman for some years ; but my father being dead, and it being peace, I could not get promotion. I have been on this station, and in these seas, in and out of the service, altogether six years ; and I think, without flattering myself too much, I know as much about it as any man now

sailing out of Kingston. I would not have said so much," continued he, "only a man must say something for himself, when he is taken for a brat of a boy." I smiled, and stretching out my hand, asked his pardon, saying, "I doubt not, Mr Drake, we shall in time be better friends. I engage you, if you please, at the same rate your friend there is engaged to command the brig." He took me at my word, and he was captain of the schooner. "Now, gentlemen," resumed I, "sit down, and let us consult together." I then opened to them the situation of the place to which we were going, its unknown longitude, its complete investment with reefs and shoals; and showed them, by sketches of the land, remarks, &c. After some consultation, it was agreed that Captain Drake should go in the Avon, with three white seamen belonging to the brig, and Purdy and the two New England blacks; while Captain Taylor, of the brig, should navigate the schooner, with his mate and the four other white seamen.

This being decided, I sent Diego for Purdy and his father-in-law, and stated these things to them. Purdy did not like it much, but his father-in-law, who had just seen the two vessels, was very glad; and Purdy was easily persuaded to confide his wife to her own family during the passage. I had still one object more to compass, and without loss of time, for Monday would be occupied in settling and paying the accounts. I found it would be necessary to get a regular ship-carpenter to go out with me, for although Xavier was a clever fellow, yet his sufficiency could not be relied on where a regular repair might be wanted. I therefore sent for Mr Finn, and, after desiring him to meet me next morning at Mr Green's counting-house with his bill, I asked him if he knew of any one that would dispose of a ship-carpenter negro, whom he could recommend; and as an inducement, I would buy wife and children, if there were any. He answered, he thought he did. And in the afternoon he brought a person to me, who was as much disposed to sell as I was to buy; for he was going home, he said—that is, to England. He seemed an honest man; for he said he would leave the price of the negro to Mr Finn, or any one else. "No," returned I, "it shall be left to yourself. Has the carpenter any family? how old is he?"—"He is old, sir," was the answer; "I suppose nearly forty; he has no children with him; he has a wife, and she is nigh as old as himself."—"I should like to see them," I replied, "before we say anything more about them." He then went for them, and they both pleased me. They appeared healthy, and did not

seem at all the worse for wear, if I may so express it. I sent them to the back of the house, and asked him his price. "Give me," said he, "£100 sterling for the man, and you may have the woman for what you please."—"That is," replied I, "into the bargain, I suppose."—"Not quite that," said he; "but I will take anything in reason."—"Forty pounds," cried Finn.—"Yes," replied he, "that will do, though it is only the price of a new negro."—"Of a young one," I responded. "I think, sir," continued I, "if I give you £100 sterling I should have man and wife; that is £100 currency for the one, and £40 currency for the other; and I will give you no more: take that, and I will pay you on delivery." He mused some time, and at last consented. The bill of sale was made, and the money paid; after which I called in Allan Derrick and his wife Priscilla, and told them I had purchased them; that I was sorry they were not younger, because in seven years I should give them their freedom, if they behaved well, and should desire it; but, in the meantime, I would treat them with the greatest kindness. To this promise my faithful Diego bore testimony, by saying, "Yes, indeed, sir, you indeed, sir, all like one our father." I asked Allan if he had any property. He replied, "Not too much, massa; have pig and goat, and few fowls, and some lilly tings in house."—"Well," I answered, "you may carry them all with you. Diego will take charge of them; and you shall have a house for yourself and your wife, and whatever you have shall not be injured."—"Tank you, massa," he said, "me see you good buckara massa." I now told Diego to go home with these two people, and to put them in the way of being ready to embark on Monday.

My dear wife had kept herself in her bed-room all the while I was engaged in this morning's business, but she was not idle. She was making many arrangements in her own department, and the brown lady, with a frank-hearted activity, very usefully assisted her. She had not left our new damsels to run about the negro yard; but had taken them into her room, and set them about unravelling some hanks of thread, and doing some other things that required neither skill nor knowledge. When dinner time drew on, the girls were sent out to walk in the yard, while we, too happy to be together again alone, talked over our affairs, and dressed for the hour of repast.

We had nearly dined when Diego came back, with a very satisfactory account of our ship-carpenter and his wife, who were also, he said, quite happy in all he had told them of their

new home.—“Get your own dinner, Diego,” replied I, “then go on board the schooner, and make my compliments to the captain, saying, I wish the two young new negroes to come ashore with you to see their friends.”—Diego, who had a kind heart, was glad of the errand, and in a couple of hours we saw him return with the two lads neatly dressed in white jackets and trowsers. I desired him to leave them standing near us; then to bring in the girls. It was truly delightful to see the meeting: true, there was no ecstatic burst of feeling, but all the evidence of joy their degraded condition was capable of, was elicited. My dear wife gave each of them an orange, and then signs were made to them to go into the yard. Diego accompanied them, and endeavoured by pantomime, which he well understood, to make them comprehend that they were all going together. He returned with the youths to the schooner before sunset, and twice, during the two following days, they were again brought to renew the meeting with their friends, which had the very best effect on the spirits and conduct of the whole.

As I sat smoking my cigar after coffee, my dearest Eliza gently said, “Edward, I feel that we are chosen vessels for the mercy of God to others, which also we ourselves have so largely shared: I do not repent that we are taking all this trouble, and putting our lives to risk, when so much good may be accomplished by the means placed in our hands. I own my natural inclination was to go to England, pay your uncle for the brig altogether, if required, and so be done with it; and then enjoy our fortune. But to enjoy,” continued she, after pausing a little, “is the gift only of God; to possess may be His gift also; or, it may be the gift of him who said, ‘I will give thee all the kingdoms of the earth, if thou wilt fall down and worship me.’” —“True, my own best gift!” I replied; “I should be the most ungrateful of men to the good God who has bestowed all this on me, if I did not feel that this money, so wonderfully delivered into my hands, was for some especial purpose of stewardship. The providential arrival of the poor castaway negroes, and then of the schooner,—all—all working together to give us the means of providing every comfort, towards planting a colony of refuge in that blessed haven of our own preservation—seems to me, in solemn truth, as so many signs from the Divine will that it is our duty to fulfil a task allotted to us in that long unknown island.”—Tears stood in my Eliza’s eyes when I said this, and oh! how like an angel she did look! for they were tears of overflowing happiness.

"His spirit then bearing witness with her spirit," that we were indeed disposed to obey His most holy will.

Saturday, 5th.—I went immediately after breakfast to Mr Green's counting-house, where I received a statement of the money he had laid out for every thing that constituted the cargo—on all of which I allowed him commission—and made the payment. In the course of the morning I settled with Mr Finn, the disbursements on account of the brig being made a separate account : and I was pleased to find all fair ; so that I paid the several demands with much satisfaction.

After I had done this business, I waited on the paymaster, to inquire if he had any bills on England : he told me he had not, but referred me to the agent-victualler, to whom he gave me a letter of introduction. This gentleman was very glad to see me on my errand, as the cash would be convenient to him, and he quite chuckled when he heard that I could let him have a large sum. But I complained of the premium, and told him I would not take bills for any considerable amount at anything above five per cent. He replied that all Government bills had fetched ten for some time back ; but if I could accommodate him with £10,000 sterling, he would give the bills at five. We struck the bargain, and on Monday I waited on him with two boxes of the doubloons ; out of which I counted down 2747 pieces, being the amount required, receiving back eight dollars. He in turn handed me over a set of bills of exchange on the Treasurer of the Navy for the £10,000 sterling approved by the Admiral, for which I had stipulated as a security for Government acceptance.

Sunday, 6th.—We kept this Sabbath by going to church. Before we went, my dear wife and I had some difficulty in deciding whether we should have Purdy married there this day, but as Martin was not married in a church, and others at Seaward Island could not be, we feared it might make a schism, or create a jealousy among the people, and we therefore resolved to celebrate the rite on our return, so that all our people might be on the same footing with respect to such matters.

Monday, 7th.—After negotiating for the bills as above stated and paying for everything, I found I had four bags of doubloons still untouched ; and about 100 extra doubloons from the last bags we had opened. Of these, I converted 150 into dollars ; for which I received 2400. I placed them in bags, in the iron chest, beside the gold ; reserving as much as I thought necessary for present use. I now wrote letters to Perry & Co., inclosing them the first of exchange for £10,000, with orders to fund

the amount; sending them at the same time the seconds of the former bills, and also inclosing my Will, which I indorsed—"Not to be opened, but by myself, or in the event of my decease."—And I moreover got ready a duplicate letter, with further duplicates of the bills already sent, to be forwarded by Mr Green, to Messrs Perry & Co., at a future early opportunity.

Diego reported all his stock (consisting of six sheep, four pigs, twelve turkeys, twelve geese, twelve Guinea fowls, as also a quantity of plantain suckers and plantains, some roots, and a good supply of fruits,) to be safe on board; besides Allan Derrick's pig and goat: he had brought a fine large dog also with him, which he begged to take: and, after some hesitation amongst us for fear of our little pet Fidele, with my dear wife's approbation I at last gave my consent: but the dog was to go in the Avon, and not in the schooner. Diego declared himself well satisfied, if it might go in any way, for it was a fine animal, and his name was Lion.

Before dinner I visited the vessels, and was highly pleased with their appearance, and all the arrangements that had been made: everything necessary had been provided: and I felt greatly indebted to Mr Green, and the two captains, for having taken so much minute trouble off my hands. I paid a month's wages in advance to the captains, and also to each of the men. On returning to our lodgings, I would have invited the captains and Mr Green to dine with us; but now that we were on the point of sailing, I thought it best that every one should be at his post. My dear Eliza and I, therefore, dined alone, and after dinner busied ourselves in packing up some suitable clothes we had ordered; amongst which were several pairs of buck and doe skin boots, the colour of our own sandy isthmus, on which we hoped once more soon to tread.

At my fond wife's request, a handsome suit of uniform, blue and gold, with a hat looped and handsomely laced, had been made for the Captain-commandant. "If those Spaniards," said she, "should ever intrude themselves into our bay, which they may do as friends, without an imposing uniform on your person they might pay very little respect to your commission." I saw the force of the observation, and therefore the uniform was made.

At the last visit of my hairdresser, he recommended me to purchase of him an Adonis, a new-fashioned wig very much in vogue, instead of having my own hair tortured into the mode. I wished he had informed me of such a thing at first, as it would have saved me a great deal of time and torment. "But," said

I, "I do not want anything of the kind where I am going." My dear wife thought otherwise; and, smiling, desired him to bring the wig. He obeyed, with a proper box to hold it in, and all the requisites for powdering it up, when required. As it was my Eliza's pleasure, I made no more demur, but took it, and paid him 20 dollars for it. When he was gone, I said to her—"What am I to do with this mop-head, my Mistress Commandant, at Seaward Islands?"—"It is for my Captain-commandant," she replied, "when he has occasion to appear in state!" I smiled at her remark, but felt at the same time that it was dictated by good sense, and a just regard to the opinions of men.

My kind wife, meanwhile, had provided herself with some presents for those left behind; and had attended to the minutiae of our own future comforts, in the procurement of many things not necessary to be enumerated: and having finished the day in prayer to God our Father, we rose next morning in health and spirits. We paid our bill cheerfully to the brown lady, our hostess, and thanked her besides for her many civilities. The negresses and our trunks were conveyed on board, followed by ourselves and our faithful Fidele, who ran by our side before the great iron chest; which was a formidable burden, from the combined weight of itself and its remaining contents.

CHAPTER XIV.

TUESDAY, April 8, 1735.—We embarked at seven o'clock, where nothing but happy faces met us. I felt I had no need of pistols here! All hands cheered us; and the women crowded round my wife, kissing her hand. Indeed, she smiled so sweetly on them, and had already done so many kind things to them, they could not but love her. We did not receive our clearance from the Custom-house before nine o'clock, which gave us time to inspect the dispositions made on board for the people. Temporary combings had been fixed to a scuttle cut in the main hatches, to protect the opening from the wash of the sea should it at any time come over the decks. This was well; and a wind-sail was fitted to the scuttle, to throw air down between decks; so that the stock and the people on the platform there might breathe freely and wholesomely. Here were berths put up for Allan Derrick and his wife, for David Allwood and his wife, for young Allwood and his wife, and two berths for the three negresses and Purdy's wife. The captain was requested

to sleep in the steerage with the crew, to which he readily consented ; himself, Diego, and the two new negro boys, John and Harry, being packed in among them. We were in all, on board the schooner, fifteen in number. And in the Avon there were altogether seven : Captain Drake, Jemmy Purdy, the two New England blacks, and three white seamen. A little before nine o'clock the Avon hauled alongside, and I went on board to take a look at her. Some precautions had been taken here too against the sea, by fixing canvas so as to make a defence if necessary : with which I was much pleased. Captain Drake, who, as captain of the schooner, had cleared her out at the Custom-house, now returned, but took his station in the Avon.

The sea-breeze having set in, and the pilot being on board, we set sail ; and with the fine little lugger in our wake, ran down to Port Royal in little more than an hour. As we passed the men-of-war, I perceived the Solebay had gone ; so, wishing her as well as ourselves a good voyage, we stood out to sea, and dismissed the pilot. The vessels steered nearly South, keeping away about half a point, to allow for East variation. At sunset we computed our run off the land to be about eighteen leagues, which was sufficient to take us clear of the Pedro shoals ; we now kept away S.W., and having run about one hundred miles by Wednesday at noon, we observed in $15^{\circ} 48'$ N. It was determined still to steer S.W., keeping a good look-out ahead ; and at noon on Thursday we observed in $14^{\circ} 46'$, having run little more than eighty miles during the last twenty-four hours, by reason of going under easy sail all night, and again laying by, for some hours in the forenoon, until we could ascertain the latitude, so as to shape our course accordingly, supposing ourselves not to be very far distant from our destination. After some consultation, we agreed to steer West ; and by four o'clock, breakers were discovered right ahead ; we in consequence hauled up to the northward, bringing the breakers on our beam to leeward. The Avon was now ordered to keep three or four cables' length ahead of the schooner, on her larboard bow. We continued to stand to the northward for about an hour, when we were enabled to keep away N.W. : at this time something like land was discerned to the southward of us, but it was too late in the day to endeavour to close with it ; we therefore stood off and on all night, holding a pretty good offing, for fear of encountering calms or currents, while among so many unknown reefs and shoals. At daylight in the morning we again descried the land to the southward, and stood in towards it. The Avon being

within hail, I desired him to keep on our quarter till further orders ; and I would endeavour to lead, and find the channel. After coming up with the broken water, and then running a few miles on a west course, keeping the surf on the reef about a mile within us, we were enabled to steer two points to the southward, and then S.W. A little before noon we set the high land nearest to us, bearing S.E., when the channel appeared open, having a little hummock in the distance, which I knew to be our homestead promontory. We now hauled to the wind on the larboard tack, laying up about S.S.E., and stood in. I was not without fear and apprehension, although I knew there was a navigable channel that separated the two islands on the north, through part of which Diego, who was now at my elbow, had rowed his canoe. Thus assured, and thus backed, I ventured to keep on under easy sail, till we found ourselves embayed within a horse-shoe reef, and were thus compelled to stand back again to escape from our perilous situation. We then rounded the edge of the reef to the westward, keeping away a little till we brought the hummock in the distance to bear S.S.E. The channel now appearing quite open, but with shoals on each side of it, we stood in again, with the Avon leading ; but soon found ourselves obstructed by a long line of broken water, stretching apparently all the way across. Being thus straitened, and at a loss how to proceed, I thought it expedient to bring the schooner to an anchor for the present, under a low small coral island that lies on the eastern extremity of the breakers, and there remain until the Avon should make out the passage. I hailed Mr Drake to that effect ; and as soon as we dropped anchor he made sail along the northern edge of the broken water that obstructed our passage, until he at length rounded its western extremity : then hauling up to the S.E., the boat entered a clear and unobstructed channel, through which she stood on, with a full sail, for about three miles ; making her way quite into that harbour, which on my first arrival I had mistaken for a lake, and which I have so called more than once in the early part of this Journal.

As soon as Mr Drake ascertained a clear channel, he hoisted a Union Jack, as had been agreed on, but stood on until he entered the harbour : he then put back, standing towards the schooner. As soon as I perceived his signal, we got under weigh ; and quickly rounding the reef, hauled up to windward of a high rock, and afterwards a low island, which lay amid channel, passing between them and the northern end of the

main island. Here the Avon met us, and took her station on our weather quarter ; and we sailed hence together, with a flowing sheet, and colours flying, through the strait that separates the two main islands on the north, into the open harbour, where at once a thousand well-known objects burst upon us. Xavier had caught a glimpse of the Avon from the shore, when first exploring the channel, so that we had scarcely passed the strait when we saw the colours go up on the promontory. Captain Taylor was much pleased with the sight, and complimented me on the occasion. I will not attempt to describe my emotion, when my dear wife pressed my hand in silence at that moment. In half-an-hour more we brought up in Woodland Bay, with our dear mansion, and our still dearer silk-cotton tree, in full view before us ; and at the same instant the anchor dropped, Xavier and Martin were alongside in the canoe. They were almost out of themselves ; they embraced my knees, they danced about, they hugged old Diego almost to death, and bowed to the Senora Dona with all their heart. Captain Taylor was both pleased and amused by the display which they made of their joy at our return. The boats were quickly hoisted out ; and we landed at once, with Diego, and the three negro girls, on the silk-cotton-tree beach, where Rota, with her daughter Mira, and Hachinta also, were standing to receive us : my dear wife had scarcely put foot on the shore, when they all, with one accord, threw themselves at her feet, embracing her knees ; and when they arose, the new negro girls thought they must do the same, so they prostrated themselves also. But my Eliza raised them instantly, saying, "No ! No !" She was affectionate herself, and loved every demonstration of it ; but anything that could tend to give worship where it was not due she utterly abhorred.

After this scene my beloved took my arm ; and we felt as our first parents would have felt, had they been permitted to return to Paradise after their expulsion. Rota had prepared coffee for us, as soon as Xavier reported the appearance of a vessel ; and indeed the reviving beverage was very acceptable : for we had passed through an anxious and trying day. I desired to have supper ready about eight o'clock, and requested Hachinta to cook a good supply of provisions to refresh the people. After coffee, I was going on board, but met our trunks, and cot, and iron chest, coming on shore ; and as the evening was drawing to a close, I ordered all the people to be landed, excepting the white sailors, who were to take up their quarters in the schooner : the two New England blacks were to return

to take charge of the Avon, and sleep there. After the captains had seen that their men were properly disposed of, and made comfortable, they were to come on shore to supper. David Allwood and his family had the plank-house allotted to them; and Purdy, being yet unmarried, after passing the evening with them, took up his lodgings on board for the night, along with the two young negro boys, who returned with him, having been permitted to land. Allan Derrick and his wife lodged with Xavier; and Diego went to his own house, where Martin and his wife also lived. The three negro girls were to sleep in the great hall. Captains Taylor and Drake occupied the cabin of the schooner. These arrangements being made, we all retired to our respective lodgings, as soon as everybody had been refreshed; and then my dear wife and myself, after shutting our door, lifted up our hearts to that God whose mercy and goodness had attended us by land and by sea.

Saturday, 12th.—I sent for the captains early in the morning, and told them they must move the schooner within the black rock, and there discharge the cargo; after which they must take it up under the promontory, close to the plank-house: and to avoid the formality of repeated invitations, I added, that I should expect the pleasure of their company to breakfast, dinner, and coffee, every day, while the bustle of our work was going forward. Captain Taylor was to superintend on board, and Captain Drake on shore, till the cargo was all got out; the latter taking an account of everything as it was landed; but I told them, as to-morrow would be the Sabbath, there must be no work then;—that we should have prayers at ten o'clock in the hall, and that dinner would be provided on shore for all hands at one o'clock. I sent for Allwood and his son, and Derrick, telling them they were to work under Captain Drake's orders, and that their wives must come daily to the store for provisions. I promised Purdy he should be married the ensuing day, which gave him great joy. Xavier was retained, to assist Diego in bringing the stock, and plants, and vegetables, and fruits, and other matters, to the plantation. The Avon, meanwhile, was left at anchor, to take care of herself.

My dear wife undertook to manage all the provision arrangements, for I found I now had a great deal to do in writing: regular accounts must be kept with respect to every individual in the settlement; and a correct statement must be made out, from the brig's bill of lading, of everything I had taken from her for my own use. I therefore set about opening books, in a regular way, for all purposes connected with money transactions.

In the afternoon we paid a visit to the pen, which, with its new inmates, was like a fair. We were happy to see the armadillo and our two pet pigeons among the number. All, excepting the pigs, seemed to take quietly to the place, but they were unruly members; and we found Xavier prudently planking up a corner to confine them. The large dog showed no signs of a savage disposition, but, on the contrary, was placid as a lamb, and lay down very peaceably in the hall, allowing Fidele to play with him as he pleased. In the evening the captains and myself smoked a cigar, and my Eliza was much pleased with their decorous and respectful manner. We talked over our operations, doing, and to be done; and I took this opportunity of telling them, that I would leave the great gun, and the bricks, and the spare anchor and cables, which formed the ground tier of the schooner, in the hold, until we were quite at leisure to put them on shore.

Sunday, 13th.—At ten o'clock everybody assembled in the great hall, dressed in their best, to prayers. We were thirty-two in number; and looking round upon them, I blessed God for the sight. My dear wife opened the sacred duty with a hymn, and I read the whole service of the church, which finished with another hymn, and the prayer for grace. Some were devout, some only orderly; but everything in God's good time. After service I performed the matrimonial rite,—David Allwood giving his daughter Cornelia in marriage to Jemmy Purdy; and at one o'clock dinner was set out for all hands, under the great tree, on a table of planks raised about a foot from the ground; round which they all sat, squat fashion, at meat, to the great fun, as well as gratification, of the white sailors, who partook of their good cheer. But the mate of the brig was on this day invited to dine with us, which we postponed to a late hour, on account of the wedding-feast. Having plenty of limes, I tapped the rum cask, and gave Diego sufficient to make the whole company as much punch as would do them good. They were supplied with abundance of melons; and I allowed them to amuse themselves with dancing, for fear, if unoccupied, they might do something less innocent. About three o'clock Rota served us up a fine fish, with other meats, flesh, and fowl. Our guests were rather astonished at our hospitality and abundance; the very sight of which produced a cheerful influence on every countenance. After dinner we took some punch, and in the evening regaled ourselves with coffee and a cigar. At an early hour every one retired to their respective quarters; the bride and bridegroom taking up their habitation with her family in the plank-house.

On Monday morning all hands went manfully to work, so that by Wednesday afternoon the schooner's cargo was all landed, and placed under the side of the promontory ; having a temporary covering of planks and boards over all, with the exception of the spars and sails for the brig.

On Thursday morning the people erected shears on board the brig, to serve two purposes ; first, to take out as much of the cargo as would be requisite to lighten her, so as to get her afloat ; and, secondly, to afterwards enable them to raise the fish of the mainmast into place. Xavier had kept her dry, so there was no water to pump out. They began about mid-day to take out the cargo, and I had the two casks of rum, which came out with the first portion of it, brought immediately to the store-house at the plantation, to prevent the possibility of intoxication among the men. Before evening, Captain Taylor thought the brig began to lift, and proposed taking one of the schooner's spare anchors and a cable round in the Avon early in the morning to try to heave her off. Derrick, and Allwood, and Xavier, and Manus Allwood, were employed in getting ready and putting together the pieces which were to form the fish of the mainmast, and in doing all such work as required the hand of the ship-carpenter. On Friday morning the Avon was brought round with an anchor and cable, which was laid out astern, and by which they hove the brig off presently into deep water, drawing her back about twenty yards from where she had lain with her fore-foot aground. She still remained with her side close to the rocks, along which there was a gangway, to carry anything on board.

The vessel being now fairly afloat, it was desirable to ascertain the state of her bottom. One of the white seamen volunteered to dive under the keel, stripping at the same instant, and plunging under her bows. He soon reappeared, reporting a piece of the false keel off forward ; but, after making several voyages of discovery under water, round and round the vessel, could not spy out any other injury. A consultation was now held with Captain Taylor, in which we agreed that if the brig did not leak more than usual after replacing the cargo, and bringing her round the promontory, he should proceed with her to the Bay of Honduras, without delaying to make further repairs here, the time of year being as yet favourable for fine weather, and the run not requiring more than three days. This being settled, and the vessel secured to the shore, they set about reloading her, and restowing her cargo, which was all again in place by Saturday at noon. I ordered the doors that had been taken away from

the cabin to be replaced ; and also the table, and chairs, and stools to be restored.

Sunday, 20th.—We observed the Sabbath of to-day by attendance at divine service, and in innocent recreations, there not being any excuse for dancing or other noisy mirth.

Monday, 21st.—They began to fish the mast ; and as there were about seven or eight feet of stump standing above board we were of opinion that it would be made perfectly strong and secure. The shrouds and back-stays, together with the main-stay, and every other thing as far as was practicable, had been prepared at Kingston. The mast was up, and the standing rigging over-head, and the cross-trees and top on, and main top-mast pointed, by the middle of the week ; and by Saturday I had the pleasure to see all the yards across, the running rigging rove, the sails bent, and every thing in place, and the brig towed round by the boats, and anchored off the plantation. I was glad to find that there had been little occasion for the pumps during the week, the leak scarcely requiring more than the ordinary spell of twice a day, and it had not increased on bringing the vessel round ; so that it was now resolved she should put to sea without loss of time.

Sunday, 27th.—There was a general muster to prayers at ten o'clock ; and at one all hands were regaled with a dinner under the cotton-tree, as on the Sunday after their arrival : devotion, with contentment, and good order, being our combined object, under existing circumstances. At noon the brig hoisted her colours, which were brought down from the flag-staff on the promontory, and the large Union Jack I had brought with me from Jamaica hoisted there in its stead. The colours of the schooner and the Avon were flying also ; so that, altogether, we looked very grand, "low and aloft," as sailors express it.

Monday, 28th.—It was determined that the brig should not sail until the crew had assisted to get the twelve-pounder up to the flag-staff, which was a formidable undertaking. Early in the morning the gun was landed from the schooner, on the rocks beneath the plantation-house, and, by means of the timber carriage, (a clever invention for raising large pieces of timber, and great guns, by hand,) they easily transported our noble piece of ordnance to the foot of the acclivity ; at the very spot where the original footpath had been made to the ravine. But the carpenters found it necessary to widen the avenue ; after which, by means of planks, and tackles, and parbuckles, they succeeded in dragging the gun up to the flag-staff. That mastered, its carriage easily followed, and the gun was mounted before sunset.

On their return, I gave the men a glass of grog each, and a dollar. This operation had been conducted by Captain Drake.

The captain of the brig and myself had not been idle at home; we examined all the accounts, with the invoices, and compared the duplicates I had previously made out. In addition to which we had taken an inventory of whatever remained belonging to the former captain and crew; to this I subjoined, as an appendix, a list of the articles I had appropriated, which I believed to have belonged to the one or the other. A duplicate copy of this paper also was now made and signed by Captain Taylor and myself; making ourselves respectively responsible for such articles as still remained with him, or had been taken away by me. Of the duplicates we each took one. After I had delivered all the papers above alluded to, I handed him what are commonly called the ship's papers, and with them a narrative of the shipwreck, with a protest in form as to the accident. I then gave him letters to my cousin, and instructions how to proceed, if he did not find him at the Bay of Honduras! and also a letter to my uncle at Bristol, containing a detail of proceedings, as far as regarded his business, up to the present time. It is scarcely necessary to observe, that in my letters to my uncle and cousin, after thanking them for their intended kindness to me, I now having other views, gave up all intention of settling at the Bay; and intimated, that I should be ready to settle our accounts as soon after the brig's arrival in England as my uncle could examine and adjust them.

Tuesday, 29th.—About nine o'clock in the morning I gave Captain Taylor the marks for going out of the southern channel, and he took his leave. Purdy, who knew the situation of all the reefs and shoals, was put on board the Avon; and as soon as the brig got under weigh, he made sail ahead, leading her out in safety, to the fair way in the offing. The boat, and my pilot, returned about four o'clock, having seen our friend clear of the shoals, standing to the S.W. I congratulated myself on this event, and looked forward with pleasure to be able now to attend to the immediate concerns of the colony, which now seemed in some respects rather pressing. I therefore lost no time in holding consultation with my dear wife, and then with Diego, with regard to the precedence of the various operations requiring to be done. In less than a month we might expect the rains; the crop was ready to be taken from the ground, and the schooner's cargo must be housed. After a long discussion with my best helpmate, and many scruples between us both, it was determined to cut away the thicket leading to the

cave, and build a storehouse there, from side to side, at the entrance of the recess. So that, in fact, the cave itself would become a very important part of the warehouse, making an inner apartment of the greatest security. Having taken our resolution at last, on this unpleasant resolve, the four carpenters were sent for, and ordered to clear away all the trees and shrubs for the purpose. And, as the first step, the poultry located there were safely removed to the pen, to be with the rest. Diego was to have the two negro lads for a few days, and Xavier's wife, and Derrick's wife permanently; and two of the new negro girls, to assist him in taking up the crop. Captain Drake, with the two New England blacks, was to make a good platform with pickaxes, near the flag-staff, for the gun-carriage to traverse on; while Martin and Purdy were to repair the craals, and also construct some new fish-pots, and go to the small islands to the north-east in the canoe, to procure turtle.

Captain Drake completed his work by Thursday evening, having carried up sixty rounds of shot, and twelve rounds of powder. The latter were preserved in a waterproof chest, in which, also, were some matches for firing, and a tinder-box, and stuff to light them when required. He had placed the tompon in the gun, and secured the touch-hole with the leaden apron, before his return; and he asked permission to fire it to-morrow evening, at sunset, with blank cartridge, and then load it for service.

He and I deemed it important to make a survey of the island as soon as possible. He therefore employed himself on this duty during Friday forenoon, and at sunset on the same evening he fired the gun, to the great terror of some of our people, and therefore to the great amusement of the others. But I was glad to hear the *bull-dog* bark; who might, by the same token, keep an intruding Spaniard or pirate from our door.

Till the end of the week no change was made in our arrangements. Of the negresses, my dear wife had retained Anne, the sister of Harry, to supply the place of Mira, now Martin's wife. Rota was our cook and housekeeper; indeed, she and her husband Diego were our most useful and faithful people. A bargain was made with the wife and daughter-in-law of Allwood to wash for the whole colony; and Mira Martin was engaged to mend their clothes. From the day of our return, I kept a regular day-book, in which every one's employment was noted down, and the amount of wages carried to their credit; their rations and other things being charged

against them, respectively, male and female : and with this proceeding they were made acquainted ; so that every one now felt it to be his or her interest to labour with industry, thereby to earn not only a daily subsistence, but to have something beyond, in credit on the books, to enable them to demand any particular article in store they might wish, as far as their means would go. Rota was cook to the colony, as well as to ourselves ; and she and the washerwomen were paid by contribution ; that is, I paid Rota, but a small fractional charge was made to others on the washing account, in the way of polity. The machine was thus set going ; and Saturday evening having brought the week to a close, the people were desired to bathe themselves every Sunday morning, and appear dressed at church by ten o'clock ; the hour in future was to be announced by the ringing of a large bell, brought from Kingston. My dear wife, as well as myself, had been a good deal perplexed, in arriving at some principle by which the labour of every one should be free, and yet, in the nature of things, compulsory ; and we hoped we had now decided right : but resolving to watch the operation of our plan, with a jealous attention as to its justice, and the degree of satisfaction it gave to the people themselves.

Sunday, May 4th.—The bell rang for prayers at ten o'clock, and our congregation numbered twenty-four. Before the service commenced, I said a few words on the gratitude we owed to the God that made us, and the earth on which we tread ; and by whose goodness everything grows that we eat for food. I then added, that He had ordered one day in seven to be set apart from labour, that we may worship Him, asking in prayer all that is beneficial for us, and giving thanks to Him in praise for all the blessings with which we are surrounded. Those who could understand me bowed their heads at this, and, after divine service, I told them that we intended to devote part of this day to teach some of them to read, and that such as chose to learn might remain with us till their dinner-time—one o'clock. But I thought it well to advise, that the elder people, such as Allwood and his wife, Diego and his wife, Xavier and his wife, Derrick and his wife, should not attempt it ; yet, if at any time they should like to try to learn, I could have no objection. The old people seemed satisfied with my remark, but did not at once retire ; they stopped a little to see what was to be done. My dear wife brought out her large wooden-mounted alphabets ;—the men being placed on one side of the hall, and the females on the other ; she taking the charge of these, and

I of those. I pointed to a big A made on one side of the wooden book (if a piece of board may be so called,—and why not “a wooden book,” as well as “a horn book?” for such was the sort of book by which we were first taught our letters). I endeavoured to give this first letter a sound as in *father*, considering it less exceptionable than that usually taught with the alphabet. After they had severally, and then together, pronounced it, imitating the sound I gave it, I turned the other side of the board, exhibiting the letter B; and as these symbols were made by myself with chalk, they were readily replaced by others. As I proceeded with my squad, the mistress went on with hers, *pari passu*, as we would say at school. After which we tried their recollection of both letters shown together; and then one after the other, in a dodging manner, assisting them when they were at fault. They took the lesson good-naturedly; sometimes laughing at one another’s mistakes, sometimes at their own. The old people seemed much amused, remaining with us nearly an hour; after which they and Captain Drake went to seek other pursuits admitted by the day. We dismissed our school a little before one o’clock, expressing our pleasure at seeing them so attentive; desiring Mira, who could now read pretty well, to go over the business again under the cotton-tree in the evening. It was curious to observe, as well as satisfactory, how quickly the five young new negroes caught the sounds of the letters. And I may here remark, that we anticipated from this circumstance a good dialect of English among us, as Allan Derrick and his wife, with the Allwoods, were the only individuals that spoke negro. The New England blacks, and the Bermudians, might be said to have a good pronunciation when compared with the Jamaica negro dialect; and so had my Spaniards, Don Diego and his friends.

After the people dined, Captain Drake took as many as chose to go with him for a sail in the Avon; amusing them by coursing about in every direction on the noble sheet of water that lay open to view before the house. It was therefore pleasant to us all: to those who were enjoying the sailing, and to us on shore looking on so fine a sight. At three o’clock Captain Drake came on shore with his company, and instantly sat down with us to our comfortable dinner, neatly, if not elegantly laid out. I felt particularly happy to-day in the company of our guest, who seemed a gentlemanly young man, and well-informed. Our conversation was sometimes reciprocally instructive, but always agreeable; and I sensibly felt that my young skipper would prove to us a valuable ac-

quisition. In the evening we took a walk, and visited Mira with her disciples under the shade of the great tree, now become "the Academic Bower;" and after looking on a while, we strolled through the woodland region; where embarking at the black rock in the schooner's large boat, we were rowed by the two Bermudians, and the New England blacks, to the cocoanut grove, which we visited with much pleasure; and returned to coffee, well pleased with all we had seen and done, and retired soon after to our night's repose.

Monday, 5th.—Orders had been issued for every one to rise at daylight; and ourselves taking advantage of this cool and delightful hour, my dear wife and myself walked over to see our desolated thicket, and to give directions for further preparations for the erection of the storehouse. As we crossed the streamlet, we found all the females of Allwood's family already at the general wash, which they were performing nearly in the same way we had done. My dear Eliza praised them for being so early at work; and on quitting them we called to mind the days, not very long passed, when we ourselves were cheerfully employed at the same labour. Captain Drake met us at the rock; and I requested him to suspend the survey for the present, and to superintend the building of the store-house instead; adding, that the two New Englanders and the two Bermudians would be required as additions to the carpenter's crew: at the same time I put the plan into his hand. He walked up to the spot with us, where I saw an immense pile of trees and shrubs, cut up, and lying to windward of the plank-house.—"When these are dry," said Drake, "we will stow them in bundles for firewood."—I thanked him for the thought and the care. We then crossed over the rough surface of the ground, where the thicket had stood, and entered the cave; several pigeons were still roosting there, whose old domain we were now about, alas! to deprive them of entirely. It was here determined that as much soil as could be got should be dug out, and wheeled away for other use, and so the bottom of the cave be completely cleaned; after which a foot thick of sand should be laid over the whole surface of the place on which the storehouse was to be erected. That done, the building would be commenced, which was to be altogether of wood; that is, the part projecting from the cave, which would comprise a front and roof; for the caverned rocks made two ends and the back, having the cave's mouth nearly in its centre.

The men were assembled, to begin the work; and having given out particular orders, we returned to the plantation, where

we found Diego with his party getting in the Indian corn. My dear wife had given Anna charge of the poultry, to feed them and collect the eggs ; and on visiting the pen, we found her with an immense flock of feathered creatures round her, ducks, geese, turkeys, fowls, and Guinea hens. The pigs were grunting in a corner ; and the goats, ten in number, including Derrick's, just let out, were making their way to browse among the bushes on the side of the hill to the southward. The sheep had been conveyed to the opposite island, where there was some good feed for them ; having a high steep ridge all round, not unlike our own position, but more fertile and extensive.

We returned to breakfast, after making these arrangements for an undertaking important to the comfort of the settlement, but not devoid of pain to ourselves, from the recollection of past events ; and talked them over, with varied feelings, until Anna had returned from the pen, and put our breakfast on the table ; Rota being similarly employed under the rocks beyond the spring, where the working people were to take their morning meal. I now gave orders to announce the turn in and turn out of all the parties, by the blowing of a conch-shell at eight o'clock, which had been prepared by Diego for the purpose ; that the bell might be reserved to summon only the congregation of the people on the Lord's day. Captain Drake soon joined us ; and during breakfast he and I talked over the business in hand. At nine the shell was again blown ; and he repaired, followed by people, to his station. But I promptly determined that Diego should learn to wind the bugle instead, as the shell rang sounds in my ears I did not like to hear again.—“Then my people are slaves !” said I to myself, as the deep hollow intonations of the shell fell upon my ear—sounds I well remembered to have heard in Jamaica every morning at daybreak, when sleeping at Mr Dickinson's pen, to turn out the slave population to task labour.—“I will no more of it,” said I to my dear Eliza, who readily entered into my feelings on the subject, and applauded my resolution.—“You are right, my Edward,” she replied ; “let us have nothing here to make any of our people feel that they have been bought with our money.” I now hastily called Diego to me, and told him what had been passing in my mind ; desiring him to blow the conch no more, but try what he could do with the bugle, which I now took down from the place on which I had suspended it, and gave to him.

Our house began to look very respectable. All our furniture was in, and one of the bedsteads put up. Besides, I might now call it our castle ; for the twenty stand of arms, brought from

Jamaica, were placed under its roof, in the arm-chest in which they came. I added to them those which I formerly possessed ; but I had put those old ones at bottom, so as to have the newest and best at hand. To these latter there were bayonets, and cross-belts, and cartouche-boxes annexed. This arm chest occupied a corner of our bedroom, and having the cot mattress laid upon it, with a large flag thrown over that, served as a settee ; and to us, who once had considered the plank-couch in our wooden palace a luxury, this piece of military furniture was very acceptable. At twelve o'clock Diego blew a blast from the bugle, and at once the people dined where they had breakfasted ; and at two they resumed their work. We dined at three o'clock ; and at six the bugle desired the labour of the day to cease. And thus we continued our arrangement, and carried on our work during the week.

Sunday, 11th.—This Sabbath was observed like the former, in devotion and teaching ; but with some little variation in the afternoon amusements.

Monday, 12th.—Every one at work, as on the preceding Monday. But Diego came to state that it would require three or four days more to get in all the roots, and vegetables, and corn ; and that the shed would not hold the tenth part of what were already taken up, and piled here and there on the ground, covered with corn-trash. I told him to proceed, and I would take the matter into consideration. Great progress had been made with the storehouse ; and, as many hands make light work, it was expected to be finished by the end of this week. At least it would be up, and the roof covered with boards, on which the shingles could be placing while the stores were getting in. But quick as this promised to be, we feared we must expect the heavy rains before it could be even so far completed. However, as it was of the utmost importance to secure the fruits of the earth, I offered the hall of the mansion for a temporary store ; reserving only a corner for our dinner table. Accordingly we sent the spare chairs into the bedroom ; and Diego's party began immediately to carry and stow corn, yams, cocos, tobacco, and other vegetable matters, into the back part of the hall, the shed being already full. By Wednesday, he had finished ; and then, with a zeal which acted well on those under him, hastened with his men to assist at the storehouse. I directed Captain Drake to have a sloping platform from the cave's mouth down to the floor of the wooden building, immediately laid ; and all the packages, and boxes, and casks, with articles perishable by wet, conveyed into the cave, where

there was ample room indeed for the whole schooner's cargo. This was all done by Thursday at noon, without interfering with the carpenters at work : nothing being left out but the barrels of beef, pork, pitch, tar, and the like, besides the crates of crockery ware. We had run a race with the weather. On Friday morning the storehouse was boarded over, and the remainder of the things housed. In the afternoon I desired Captain Drake to moor the schooner in the bay, off the woodland region ; also to get the coals out of the Avon, and moor her likewise ; to unbend the sails of both, and stow them below deck in their respective vessels ; and to strike the yards and topmasts of the schooner, and the masts of the Avon ; this also was done. On the following day the rain came down in torrents ; so that we had much reason to congratulate ourselves on our activity and foresight.

The rain fell in heavy sheets of water for two or three hours, during which broad streams of it ran round the house in every direction, notwithstanding the thirstiness of the ground. The sky cleared up suddenly in the afternoon, and the ground appeared as dry on the surface as if it had not rained a drop. During the weight of the torrents, everybody was made prisoner in the place it caught him, so that Captain Drake did not make his appearance to dinner till half-past four o'clock. But as the wet had put the cooking fire out, we, and all the people, were obliged to make the best sort of repast we could. And as we knew, by the experience of last year, that the rains fell generally at middle-day and in the night, we lost no time, when it became fair, in cooking provisions for the morrow.

The Avon being only half decked, Drake sent four men off as soon as the rain ceased, to bale her out ; on their return, they reported that several hogsheads of water had been collected in that small vessel during the three hours' rain : however, it had washed her clean, leaving no mark of the coals except where the dirt had settled at the bottom.

I enjoyed my coffee and cigar very much this evening, in talking over our affairs with my dear wife and Mr Drake ; and the air being delightfully cool, added to my pleasure and to theirs. However, as the season now stopped work of one sort, I sent for Diego, and told him to serve out some dried palm-leaves to the people, to be ready for Monday ; and employ them during the rains in making hats and baskets ; and this evening to take a batch of mullet.

Sunday, 18th.—The bell rang for prayers at the usual hour, and the school was dismissed by twelve o'clock ; just time

enough to escape imprisonment from the rain, which fell soon after the people had been sent away.

Monday, 19th.—It had poured in torrents nearly all night, with some thunder and squalls of wind, but the vessels had not driven; and all the buildings kept out the rain, excepting the great storehouse at the cave, which was as yet only boarded over. Captain Drake visited the vessels in the morning, with a few men, while the other people were occupied at the work allotted to them. The weather continued in this way for five days, but cleared up entirely on Thursday the 22nd; not half the space of time the rains lasted the preceding year; but I think they were heavy in proportion, and that quite as much water fell. Diego now advised that the whole stock of poultry should be allowed to go at large over the plantation grounds, to pick up the grubs that soon would be in swarms on the ground. Martha, one of the negro girls, was appointed to herd them, as their numbers from the late hatchings were very great; of ducks and fowls there were more than a hundred of each kind. Yet I did not wish this abundant store to be diminished; it being the intention of my dear wife and myself to divide them among the people, as soon as we could locate their families in separate habitations. And now that the coast was all clear of intruders, a colony of the ducks was sent back to their old quarters at the fountain under the face of the promontory; and an additional hatch being made for some geese, half a dozen of these were sent also, that they might enjoy an element in which they delighted, and that we might see them now and then swimming about the shores of our lake-like harbour.

The carpenters resumed their work as soon as the boards of the storehouse were sufficiently dry to put on the shingles; which operation was more tedious as to time than all they had done. Captain Drake bent the sails of the Avon, and in a few days resumed his survey: taking with him the two new negro boys, John and Harry, in addition to the two New Englanders, it being of importance to make sailors of the boys as soon as possible. My cares meanwhile went to the agriculture; and my trusty bailiff, Diego, told me that the yams and most other things near us, excepting the maize (Indian corn), had not sun enough at our plantation, owing to the shade being cast over the ground for so many hours in the morning by the promontory, during all the year: he therefore recommended a plantation to be made on the opposite island, on the grounds to which we had sent the sheep, and to move them further along

to the northward. Accordingly, he and the Bermudians were sent there with felling-axes, to clear away such trees as might stand in the way. And after the store-house was shingled over, the four carpenters were despatched to expedite that business in conjunction with the two Bermudians; while Diego returned to superintend matters at home. Captain Drake and his crew gave two days of their time to remove the provisions in the plantation store-house round to the great storehouse of the cave, previous to a serious commencement of his survey of the islands. The plantation storehouse being thus cleared, all the corn and roots, fruits and tobacco, were immediately transported thither from the hall of the mansion, to the great improvement of our comfort.

A boat took the men, with their provisions, to the opposite shore every morning; and when they returned in the evening, they always brought back a good freight of firewood; by which we accumulated an ample supply during the business: but after they had felled the trees, and cut off their branches for fuel, the trunks were removed by means of the timber-carriage to one side of the bay, for any future purpose. While a party were clearing the ground at this place, Diego, with as many hands as he could collect, planted Indian corn, and pumpkins, and melon seeds, and sowed Indian kale, and calaloo, and ocras, within the range of our own plantation. The sugar-cane we had put in soon after our arrival was now all but ripe, and the pine-apples had nearly come to perfection. To this little pinery had been added some of the suckers they had thrown out from time to time; and of late, also, the tops of such of the pines as we had eaten, lately brought from Jamaica. The plantain and banana-suckers, which had been put into moist places in the rock, near the silk-cotton-tree spring, were thriving very well; and some of the wild banana plants, that Diego had collected last year in one of his Sunday excursions, now began to show fruit. Spades and hoes were given to Allwood's family, and a quantity of melon seeds of both sorts, and pumpkins, which they were desired to sow in the grounds between the spring and the rocky point, to be handy for themselves or any one else resident in the plank-house; and they were much pleased with the idea, as it promised advantage to themselves. —By Saturday, the 31st, Captain Drake had completed his survey of the islands, and presented me with a chart, of which he kept a duplicate; and both being remarkably well done, I was so much pleased that I presented him with a couple of doubloons.

Having put away my chart, I asked my dear Eliza if she would like to make a visit to the opposite island, and dine there under a tree; that Captain Drake and myself might have an opportunity of seeing the place. Such a proposition was too much in unison with her own mind to require a moment's deliberation. A basket was got ready, and presently well stored for the occasion: and without much delay, she and I and Mr Drake, accompanied by Diego and her damsel Anna, 'squired by Fidele, marched down to the boat; in which, with a fine, fair, light breeze, we ran across in little more than fifteen or twenty minutes. Having landed, Captain Drake and myself visited the woodmen, who had nearly completed their work; they had cleared about twelve acres: some of the trees cut down were of very considerable size, and many of them prime timber—mahogany, cedar, tamarind, and yellow wood; but, on the whole, the ground had been little encumbered. Diego, who knew the place, begged permission to carry the basket, and show his Senora Dona a fine, smooth, shady seat under the branches of a noble tamarind they had left standing on the northern side of the bay, at the foot of the Sugar-Loaf Hill, close to a fine run of water. My dear wife readily desired that I might allow her to proceed with our faithful Diego, so that Captain Drake and myself might have plenty of time to inspect the work done by the wood-cutters. When the lady and her damsel were seated, Diego returned to us, and together we then visited every part of the cleared grounds, and saw that the soil was good. After this exploration was finished, we betook ourselves to join in the *fête champêtre* under the shade of the wide-spreading tamarind tree; the contents of the basket were spread forth; and we sat round them on the ground, taking what there was with an appetite and an enjoyment not felt at a regular dinner table. When our repast was finished we walked to a little distance into a narrow pass, when our pleasure was not a little heightened by Fidele killing two iguanas. I was glad to see this; for I had feared his courage had received a lasting damper from the rough treatment he met with in his encounter with the peccaries. The day being thus finished delightfully, we returned to our plantation residence; the wood-cutters following us in the Avon with a cargo of firewood.

Sunday, June 1st.—We were able this day to give ample time to the church service; also to our Sunday's teaching: it was like the dew of Hermon on the Land of Promise. Our God was with us; and we saw, with delight, our people improve in knowledge and in devotion.

Monday, 2d.—The moisture from the ground was quickly exhaling, so that I feared we should be late in putting in our yams and coccos. Besides, we had brought a quantity of cuttings of the cassava plant from Jamaica, which hitherto had been preserved in sand, and which ought to have been planted before this time; we had also some bushels of Guinea corn to sow; meaning all these articles of food to stock the grounds of our new plantation. Afraid of losing more of the season, I sent for all the people early in the morning, and told them, so much were we pressed for time, that every one, without distinction, must lend a hand; all other business being suspended: and I requested Captain Drake to head the party to the opposite island, to see that the grounds were laid out with some regularity for the different crops; and to take the advice of Diego about the places best adapted to each. These orders were cheerfully acquiesced in by all; every person feeling an individual interest in the success of the undertaking; besides, they were kept in a temper of mind that rendered them obedient, with a willing spirit.

After breakfast they took boat, with their implements; eleven men, besides women, with Captain Drake to superintend their operations; leaving Rota alone with us, to cook their provisions and ours. On their return in the evening, I regaled the whole party with coffee; also desiring Diego to serve out a supply of home-made cigars to the men.

On Wednesday, my dear wife, Fidele, and myself, joined Drake and the agriculturists, leaving Rota and Lion to take care of the garrison. We took a supply of shaddock, and orange, and lime-seeds with us, and seeds of the capsicum and bird-pepper; and amused ourselves in planting these in appropriate situations. The situation of this new plantation was altogether beautiful. It was on part of a gentle slope, nearly half a mile in extent every way; having an amphitheatre of steep rocky eminences enclosing and adorning it, terminating only at the water's edge; these steeps being beautifully wooded, with varieties of the palm and other trees, among which we saw flocks of paroquets and some other birds. "My own love!" said I to my dear Eliza, as we stood under the shade of a magnificent palm, on the highest part of the cleared ground, "I hope to see a comfortable house built here, at no very distant day, and inhabited by some of your dear friends and mine from England."—"We want nothing else, dearest Edward," she replied, "to complete our happiness."—Then pausing a little, she added, "No; I should be ungrateful to God to allow that

wish to pass. I do not want even that to complete my happiness. I want nothing, my honoured husband," said she, tenderly pressing my hand, "but you, and the Spirit of Him we desire to love. But," resumed she, smiling sweetly (for my heart was too full to speak immediately), "I shall, nevertheless, rejoice to see our friends; and to see them here, as you so kindly and fondly anticipate."—"Sweet angel!" was all my reply.

We now bent our steps towards the people at work. Allwood's family of women were employed at the least laborious occupation, chiefly in carrying the cut roots and corn to the men planting; but all were cheerful, and greeted us cordially when we came among them. In the evening, we regaled the party, as on the preceding day; and by the end of the week this great business was so far completed that Diego undertook to finish it, with only the two New England blacks, and John and Harry.

Sunday, 8th.—We observed this day with little deviation from the preceding Sabbath.

Monday, 9th.—Having accomplished everything that required the whole strength of the settlement, I proposed to Captain Drake that he should undertake a voyage to Kingston in a week or two, to bring us some supplies of building materials; and that we might contribute something from the island towards paying for them, I suggested that he should take Martin and Purdy in the canoe, with provisions, and a sail to make a tent; and endeavour to catch some turtle, where they had been seen in abundance, among our small islands on the north of the eastern reef. He did not hesitate to comply with my request: indeed, I could not have found another man so well suited, by talents and disposition, to do the various things his peculiar situation and ours required.

The carpenters were now directed to build a house on the N. E. of the mansion, corresponding in site and size to the plantation storehouse; which, as I noticed before, stood on the S. W. end of us; and I marked out the ground for it, which was immediately set about. In the evening, Captain Drake set off with the canoe to try his skill in turtling. The women, generally, were engaged in their respective habitations, in various useful employments; but Martha and Mary, two of the young negresses, were now both appointed to take care of the poultry; feeding them, and collecting their eggs, some of which were distributed every day among our people; and as young broods of ducks and chickens were daily coming forth, these

girls had quite enough to do, and my dear wife also, who carefully registered all that was going on in their department.

On Tuesday morning, the canoe returned with five turtle, and had succeeded in turning six more: these were put into the craal. But Drake said he must take the Avon at the next trip, with the canoe in tow, these being safe anchorage for her between two small islands. The two negro lads were therefore withdrawn from Diego's party, to accompany him; and the Bermudians, with Hachinta and Priscilla, sent to the new plantation in their stead. The Avon, with the canoe in tow, went out of the harbour at noon: and in about an hour after, we walked to the plank-house, to have the pleasure of seeing this fine boat sail up towards her destination between the beach and the reef, till we lost sight of her by an intervening projection of the main island.

On Thursday morning, Drake made his appearance round the point, and ran alongside of the black rock, near to which the enlarged craal was situated. My dear wife took my arm, and we strolled to the landing-place to meet our friend, whose success far exceeded my expectations. He had brought eighteen fine turtle in the Avon, and five smaller ones in the canoe. After dinner, the party set out again; and returned on Saturday morning, with the same number in the canoe, and twenty-two in the lugger.

On Friday, Diego reported his work at the new plantation completed, and that he had driven the sheep to the pasturage of the great bay to the northward. This capital feeding-place was separated from the new plantation by a narrow pass—the same in which Fidele had killed the iguana—between the ledge of rocks on the point, and the high conical hill, that stands immediately to the westward of them. Early on Saturday morning, my dear Eliza and myself visited his work, in the schooner's small boat, rowed by Diego, and Ned Hall, one of the New England blacks. The field did him great credit: it was well dug; and the divisions, planned by Captain Drake, regularly planted. It must be confessed, there were many stumps of trees protruding here and there, but it would have been impossible to have grubbed them up this season. We next walked along the pass between the rock and the hill, until we opened the bay. There appeared much sand all along, extending, perhaps, fifty yards inland; but beyond this, towards the rising ground, there seemed to be good herbage for three miles beyond the place on which we stood. On our return we stopped to admire this commodious spot. Either side of the

pass was bounded by a wall of rock : on one hand, that which stretched into the sea as a rock ; on the other, the rocky base of the Sugar-Loaf Hill, wooded to the summit ; at the foot of which, the fine spring of transparent water ran with a full stream into a little harbour of the sea, formed by the lateral projection of the rock that forms one side of the pass, on which we had just turned our backs. The contemplation of this beautiful spot induced me again to remark to my wife, how delightful this situation would be for some of our family, should they please to join us. " My dear Edward," said she, in reply, " I think we should all reside on one island, that we may be able at all times to communicate with each other : for although the channel that would divide us may not exceed a couple of miles, yet circumstances might arise which would render such an interruption to immediate communication extremely painful. And, indeed, I have had it in my mind for some days past to suggest to you this consideration, that, if you think well of it, you might alter your plans a little with regard to the places intended for settling some of the people." I reflected awhile on what she said ; but some possible events soon crossing my mind, " You are right, my Eliza," I replied : " I will adopt your principle in locating the people, and send some of the families to this place ; and I will reserve Peccary Field and East Field, on our own island, for any branches of our family that may join us. And if they do not come, it will be time enough, after every other place is occupied, to give those lands to other settlers." We returned home just as the Avon was entering the harbour, and had the pleasure to see the turtle landed and put into the craal.

Our late exertions deserved a little extra rest and recreation ; so I proclaimed a half holiday, and a turtle feast for all hands under the great tree. A calipee was dressed for ourselves, such as was never seen at the mansion-house of the Mayor of Bristol, nor even at a Lord Mayor's table ; the green fat being nearly three inches thick on the white meat : whereas, by the time these creatures reach England, after fasting nearly two months, the fat, if not quite gone, is reduced to nearly nothing ; and, instead of it, the greenish gelatinous part of the fins and calipash are palmed upon the epicure for that delicious substance, which they only know by name, and taste in idea. We regaled ourselves at the mansion with lime punch, and I sent a fair allowance to the people. After dinner, the chart which Captain Drake had made was laid on the table. After looking attentively over it for some time, my dear wife requested to give a name to the islands. " The group," said she, " we have already called

Seaward Islands : but in honour of our good King, and old England, let us name this on which we are, as being the principal, *Saint George's Island* !—and the one opposite, after my dear husband, *Edward's Island* !” Captain Drake applauded the nomination ; and I showed my approval, by merely saying, “Thank you, love.” She brought the pen and ink, and with her own hand wrote the names on Captain Drake’s chart, and on my duplicate. “Now, dear Eliza,” said I, “before the ink is dry, let us call this majestic promontory, under whose shade we have dwelt so long in peace and security, *Drake's Promontory* !” She smiled, and instantly wrote down the name, for which he expressed himself as highly honoured. We then drank the King’s health ; my own ; Captain Drake’s ; my dear wife’s ; with all our friends and relations in England ; and, finally, “Prosperity to the settlement :” finishing the day in witnessing the hilarity and mirth of our settlers, round the great tree, in dance and song, enjoying their coffee and cigars.

Sunday, 15th.—We assembled at the usual hour to prayers ; and it was delightful to perceive the increasing intelligence and devotion of our motley congregation ; also the variety of intonations falling on our ear, from their united responses to the several portions of the Litany. However, I must own, some were almost too ridiculous to hear with gravity ; especially “Spare us, good Lord ;” as few of them could articulate the S. But they were in earnest, and anything else was of little consequence. In the afternoon, Mira held her school under the cotton tree, the sight of which never failed to afford us inexpressible delight.

Monday, 16th.—Captain Drake set off again on his turtling expedition, taking the two New Englanders and the two lads. The carpenters resumed their work ; Diego and the Bermudians employed themselves in putting the storehouses to rights, so as to be able to lay our hands on the different packages as they might be wanted, and afterwards in restowing the produce of the late harvest. The women, excepting Allwood’s family, took it in turn to grind maize, with the large wheel-mill brought from Kingston ; of which a portion was to be used daily, to save flour, as I found that sort of bread would be too expensive for ordinary and daily consumption.

On Tuesday, the turtlers returned with twenty-six, and on Thursday with twenty-five ; so that we now had one hundred and five in the craal. Soon after their return, the schooner was hauled to the rock, and all the bricks, with the spare anchors and cables, taken out. After which, she was ballasted

with sand, to be well wetted, to give it solidity, so that it might not shift when the vessel heeled at sea : and on this bed of wet sand the turtles were laid on their backs ; in which situation, buckets of sea-water would be thrown over them, two or three times a day, during the passage. On Friday evening, the sails were bent, and the vessel ready for sea. No work was done on Saturday. I settled accounts with every one in the island up to the day, allowing them reasonable wages according to their respective situations, and charging a moderate price for their subsistence, so as to give a daily balance, more or less, to each. My honest slave carpenter, Derrick, was surprised and overjoyed when I allowed him a pittance of wages also. Captain Drake and the New Englanders were paid differently. This being done (for which I had been already prepared with calculations), the people were told the schooner should bring from Kingston, free of charge for the freight, whatever they chose to send money to purchase. This announcement created a great stir among them ; and poor Drake soon found enough to do to make their respective memorandums, and receive their moneys. The following day being the Sabbath, we dedicated it, as heretofore, to the more especial observance of moral and religious duties ; permitting everyone to indulge themselves in innocent amusement, after duly performing the duties of the day.

CHAPTER XV.

MONDAY, June 23, 1735.—The men began shipping the turtle at break of day ; and soon after, Captain Drake waited on me for orders. I gave him letters to Mr Green, at Kingston ; and letters for Messrs Perry & Co., and for my uncle ; and also letters from my dear wife and myself, to our friends in Gloucestershire.—“Put those in your pocket,” said I ; “and let us look over the list I have made out for supplies required from Kingston.” We conned it over ; and after making a few additions, he put this paper in his pocket also. The list embraced all sorts of lumber ; that is, squared timber for building, planks, boards, shingles, &c. ; then followed other items :—two canoes ; a marble muller and slab, to grind our cacao into chocolate ; a coffee-roaster ; glass cut in squares for the windows ; Spanish whiting, and linseed oil, to make putty. Then, one ram and six ewes ; a basket-cage of live pigeons ; some plants of grafted fruit in tubs, bespoke by Diego in April ; also a further supply of plantain-suckers ; kernels of the Avocado pear, and of the

Barbadoes palm, and some other vegetable propagants. As many bricks as could conveniently be stowed under the cargo were to be brought. A memorandum was added, instructing Captain Drake to obtain a free negro mason or bricklayer, if possible, to settle among us ; such a person being much wanted ; and to purchase four healthy young lads, to assist us in our various operations. A large clock to stand in the hall was added to the list. I estimated the cost of this cargo at 1200 dollars ; and calculating on the turtle as averaging 8 dollars a-piece, I took credit on their account for 800 dollars, and gave Captain Drake 50 doubloons, which were equivalent to 800 more, so as to secure the supplies required. At sunrise our colours were hoisted ; and at nine o'clock the gallant Porghee sailed out of harbour, through the northern passage—the same through which she had entered—with a fine breeze from the east.

The carpenters had now completed the house on the N.E. of the mansion, of the same size with the storehouse on the opposite side, but considerably larger than the houses of Diego and Xavier. In the absence of the Bermudians, who had gone with Drake, Purdy's wife remained with her friends at the plank-house ; and Mira, Martin's wife, with her parents Diego and Rota. Diego's family was now moved, *pro tempore*, into the new house, while the carpenters were employed in stripping off the canvas sides and roofs from the old ones, which they began to replace with boards and shingles ; and after this was accomplished, Xavier's residence had a similar refit. Meanwhile the women were set to various occupations ; none being permitted to be idle. The palm-leaves were worked into hats, the stems into brooms and baskets ; besides, there was washing, sewing, and cooking, and the grinding of maize, when nothing else could be found to do. Diego caught fish, and brought home cocoanuts, and gave out provisions, and looked to the plantations ; and reported every evening on the state of affairs. Of all these matters I and my dear helpmate kept our registers, and our accounts likewise. And sometimes, in a leisure hour, we strolled out together along the beach, or through the trees, with one of our favourite numbers of the Spectator in my hand (and how often did we thank, over and over again, in our minds, my Eliza's kind father, for having given to her the few loose numbers he had preserved of that invaluable weekly paper!). We dwelt particularly on the parts where Mr Addison points out so movingly to the reader, the poet John Milton's description of the sweet innocence, and therefore perfect felicity, of our first parents

in the garden of Eden, with no other human society than themselves. We read over and over again these passages, comparing them with our own extraordinary lot ; and feeling happy, most happy, in this our almost solitude, having God and ourselves ! yet, with a few round us, who shared our peace, and all the good His providence had so bountifully bestowed.

Thus we went on, and by the 7th of July the two huts or houses were boarded and shingled ; and Diego and Xavier took possession of their respective dwellings again. I now told Allwood, and Manus his son, that they might occupy the new house for a time, if they pleased ; but as it was my intention to give them both land, on which they were to build for themselves, I thought it might not be worth while to move them from the plank-house, as the women of their family washed for the settlers. Allwood said he would do as I pleased ; but he wished to know what land he might have. I told him, four acres for himself and four for his son, in separate allotments ; and that each must build a house on his lot, but large, or small, as he liked ; only the grounds belonging to it must be fenced round with hurdles, to keep their stock within their own bounds ; and that no tree, excepting such as might be in the way of their enclosures, should be cut down without my leave. I then proposed placing them on the opposite bay, which was gladly accepted. The next day Allwood and Manus accompanied me in the canoe, rowed by Diego and Xavier : the former my privy counsellor. After a little consideration, I marked out the site of their respective houses, on two contiguous allotments of land, part of the ground that had been lately cleared and cultivated. The father and son were highly pleased, and immediately set about erecting a temporary shed for themselves. After which we returned ; and on the following morning, they, being furnished with tools and provisions, and the loan of the schooner's small boat, left behind purposely for our use, set off to their tasks, to return in the evening. In this way, they took with them whatever they stood in need of day by day, until they completed their work, which was duly noted down in our day-book.

Xavier and Derrick were now employed in putting a coat of paint on the storehouse at the cave's mouth, and on all the buildings at our plantation, excepting the mansion, which was to remain in its present state for some time. The goats and poultry were let out every morning, and brought back to the pen in the evening : the latter were very numerous, and very noisy ; particularly the Guinea hens, whose loud shrill note was scarcely bearable. Rota continued to be a treasure to us ; and

by her example and my dear wife's instruction, Anna had become highly useful, and gradually became intelligent and completely civilised. Rota, like a true Spaniard, was a great conservator of forms; always showing great respect for her mistress, whom she never failed to address as "La Senora:"—Anna copied her in this, as in all other matters, with surprising exactness: and we thought it prudent not to check this feeling in our dependents.

Day after day, week after week, we went on with these every-day avocations; observing, as formerly described, the Sabbath; and without anything particular occurring until Wednesday, the sixteenth of July, when we had the pleasure to see the schooner enter the harbour from the northward; which welcome appearance was greeted by hoisting our colours. At two o'clock she came to an anchor, and in a few minutes after, we had the happiness to receive letters from England.—After shaking hands with Captain Drake, and congratulating him on his return, I put a few questions to him respecting the success of his voyage, which he answered without any circumlocution, —a quality much to be esteemed at all times, but more especially when the mind of the questioner is anxious to proceed to other matters.—My Eliza, after desiring Rota to get Captain Drake some dinner, had already gone into her room with her dear letters from Awbury in her hand, to read and enjoy them unobserved by a stranger; and the board being now spread for Drake, I took a chair aside to the further part of the hall, and commenced on my own budget: Perry & Co.'s first. The treasure and bills had arrived safe, which was announced by a more than business-like letter. They had paid Captain James £400 for freight; and after defraying other charges, and paying a trifling commission, they had funded £56,000 money in the three per cents. South Sea stock, at 83, being in stock £67,424, leaving in their hand £1092 at my disposal; having made nearly £2000 more by the doubloons than I should have done by converting them into bills at Jamaica: which shows that the bills should have been given at a very trifling premium, not above $2\frac{1}{2}$ per cent. This information was a source of great satisfaction, although the possible result had never disquieted me a moment; but, in its consummation, I obtained the certain means of doing everything our best wishes could desire. After I had read this letter I hastened to my dear wife, and communicated its contents, which in their way were altogether gratifying. But she was not long in directing my attention to a letter from her much-loved, and deservedly-

revered father ; which commenced by giving praise to Almighty God for our deliverance from shipwreck, and for His wonderful Providence towards us since that event. He received the present his beloved child had sent him, with the same feelings that she had in giving it ; but he hoped before his eyes closed on this world to embrace her once more ! Her sisters also wrote most affectionately, and concluded by saying, she must not be surprised if one of them were to take us at our word, and pay us a visit. My letters from my family, which I now opened and read, were equally gratifying. In one of these, my brother expressed himself as determined to join me as soon as possible. But there was yet another letter, and that was from my uncle, which I just glanced at, and then put by for a while ; having instantly perceived something in its tenor I could not at once make out. However, we read it attentively in the evening ; but for his sake I will not repeat it. I will suppose he was so puzzled by what I had written, and what he had heard of money being remitted to Awbury, that he did not know what to think, and therefore could not know what to write. Had he been made acquainted with the freight I sent to England in the frigate, his brain would have been completely addled.

Captain Drake, in the meantime, left the mansion ; but returned by five o'clock, with the four fine young negro lads, whom he had had the manly propriety to clothe decently in sailors' jackets and trowsers. The poor youths stood before the door, perhaps pondering on their fate, perhaps careless or reckless of the future : but, lest they might possess any of those feelings common to civilized man, I desired Anna to give each of them a small wheaten cake, and to tell them to behave well, and they should be kindly treated. They all understood her, being from her own country ; and they leaped for joy when she spoke to them, and at the mark of future kindness they received from her hand.

When they went away, Captain Drake handed me Mr Green's letter, which was short, but enclosing the invoice and receipt for the cost. All the things desired had been procured, and our captain had been quite successful in all his commissions, excepting obtaining the mason. He had made his passage to Kingston in the short period of six days, and did not lose a turtle. On his arrival he found a ready market for them, at something more than we had anticipated : having received for the hundred and five turtle, 850 dollars. He paid 600 dollars for the four negro lads, and 70 dollars for the seven

sheep; and the two canoes cost 50 dollars each. So that our turtle cargo covered all these charges, and something over. The amount of the invoice was 304 dollars: so, after paying all this, and some other incidental expenses, he brought me back 25 doubloons out of the 50 with which I had entrusted him.

We had a great deal of interesting conversation over our coffee and cigar; amongst which he told us, that Mr Green had been very civil to him; but very inquisitive; that he observed we were "the strangest people he ever had met with!" and he threw out many hints, in half joke, that he suspected we were carrying on a contraband trade with the Spanish Main, if not some other game he would not name: for he could not in any other way, he said, account for Mr Seaward having so much money. Drake had humoured this idea by a mysterious manner and equivocal answers; saying, however, with a laugh, "that if at any time he choose to pay the pirates' nest a visit, he should be happy to see him, and would give him hospitality." This account made my dear wife and myself quite merry. We could not refrain from laughing outright at some parts of our friend's detail; particularly when he repeated a remark that he said was always in Mr Green's mouth, when talking to him on the subject—"But what was that large gun for, then?"

The moment the schooner came to an anchor, Diego had got the plantain suckers on shore, and lost no time in planting them near the little spring above the silk-cotton tree; just where some time ago he and Xavier had cleared away the brushwood from before that delightful little run of refreshing water. The suckers were sufficient in number to make a double row, leaving an avenue to the approach, which in time would prove a beautiful as well as useful plantation, usually called in Jamaica a plantain walk, on account of its cool and large extended foliage: and when he reported to me in the evening what he had done, I commended him warmly.

On the following morning the seven sheep were conveyed by boat to the Long Bay pasture on Edward's Island, to join the other flock; and as soon as breakfast was over, I requested Captain Drake to deliver all the little commissions to the people which they had sent for by him, before we would begin to unload the general cargo. He lost no time in complying with my request; and a curious scene it was, especially among the women: but they were all more than satisfied; they were well pleased also with what "the good massa Captain had done." As to their commissions, many were useless, and others foolish; but as the people really had everything here they should desire,

and they were requested not to send for live stock of any kind, nothing better than trumpery could be expected, among which looking-glasses and ear-rings had not been forgotten ; and as all these were to be admired, it may readily be imagined there was no work done to-day after the sheep had been transported to the opposite side.

The new house lately finished on our plantation was allotted to Diego and his wife, with his son-in-law Martin, and his wife, for the present ; that his former dwelling might be occupied by the four new negro lads, to whom my dear wife had given certain patriarchal names—Abel, Noah, Jacob, David. Captain Drake made the Porghee's cabin his head-quarters ; and the two new Englanders, with John and Harry, the black sailor boys, were led to understand that they must consider the steerage of that vessel as their proper abode.

On Friday we began to unload ; and as a first-fruits from the voyage, the clock I had sent for was fixed up in the great hall. The marble slab for bruising cacao was placed on a stand at the back of the great tree ; to the trunk of which, in the same direction, the corn-mill had been previously fixed : a pleasant and commodious situation for the operations they were to perform ; an ample shade over head ; a fine spring of water close at hand. Rota was glad to see the coffee-roaster ; for hitherto it had been a tedious operation. The two canoes, either of which two men could manage well, and one man tolerably, were drawn on the beach ; and the crates of glass and other things conveyed to the large warehouse. Some fine fruit-tree grafts, planted in little tubs, were for the present brought into the hall of the mansion, and a very large supply of fruits into our store-room. By Saturday night the lumber was all on shore, piled up in due order ; and as the bricks served as ballast to the schooner, they were allowed for a while to remain on board.

Sunday, 20th.—When the bell rang we all assembled at prayers. The four patriarchs attended ; and while they did as they saw others do, they seemed happy in finding themselves in a situation of equality with all around them. After prayers the business of teaching commenced, when these new scholars were turned over to Martin and Purdy to be taught their alphabet.

Monday, 21st.—The fruit-trees, eight in number, were now put into the ground, tubs and all, for the present near the sugar canes, to remain there until they could be transplanted. This gave me occasion to observe that the canes were nearly ripe, and might be cut. However, that could not be done, with the

view of propagating them, until the next rains. Some of our pine-apples also were ready for eating ; and all the suckers and tops, lately put in to extend our pinery, were doing well. The whole side and bottom of the little dale looked delightfully. The variety, the beauty of the several parts, now covered with culinary vegetables and Indian corn, produced a generally pleasing effect, as viewed from the door of our mansion, or from the grounds immediately adjacent. In the afternoon we visited the new plantation on the opposite island, attended by Captain Drake and Diego, and were well pleased to see one of the houses completely finished, and the other in progress ; all the plants of every description greatly forward, which when Diego saw, he felt rather vexed and ashamed that he had not visited them sooner with the hoe ; therefore next morning he took all the men with him, twelve and himself, and before night they went over the ground, dressing it clear of weeds, and loosing the earth about the young roots of the cultivated plants ; and henceforth he was determined, he said, to look more closely after that plantation : on which I told him to consider the four young men just arrived, as his assistants in the work.

On the return of the hoeing party on Wednesday evening, I sent for Purdy, who, as has been stated, had married Allwood's daughter, and asked him if he would like to have a house and grounds near to his kinsfolk on Edward's Island. The question pleased him ; but he did not seem quite sure that his wife's father and brother "would like to make a house for him."—"They shall do it for you, Purdy," said I ; "if they will not do it for love, they will do it for money. But I have no doubt, if I find you materials, which I will do, they will not be backward in doing their part for you." And I must do Allwood and his son the justice to say, when I spoke to them on the subject, they did not hesitate a moment. The next day we passed over, and marked out the site of Purdy's house, in a line with theirs, so as to give each a plot of four acres of land attached. The front line of every man's lot being one hundred and ten yards, and the depth one hundred and seventy-six yards, in form of an oblong square ; the front of these three lots just occupied the frontage of the cleared ground ; there being still a considerable space uncleared at either end, and about one hundred yards between the lots and the beach ; and, on an average, as much between them and the foot of the hills behind them, which, however, was in the form of a bow.

As we were now somewhat at leisure, I determined to commence building on the Peccary Field, for any of our relatives

that might join ; and I requested Captain Drake to superintend the work. My gentle-hearted wife bore no enmity to the peccaries ; and, foreseeing their destruction in this design, expressed some sorrow respecting them, requesting the captain, if possible, to drive them back to some other part of the island, and not kill them. Captain Drake promised all grace in his power to these fierce little natives ; but after he had heard my story, he did not choose to go unarmed.

On the following day, taking four men in the boat, with Lion, a couple of muskets, and four pikes, thus prepared, we set forth to fix on the spot most eligible for the contemplated building, and mark it out agreeable to a plan I took with me in my pocket ; my Eliza for once desiring not to accompany me, fearing to witness what might happen to the peccaries. We landed at the bottom of the creek, amusing ourselves here a while in securing a dozen or two of the crayfish that swarmed close to the shore, just where the run of fresh water falls into the sea. That done, we left the boat there, and took up the men to the Peccary Field, giving them each a pike. And in a short time I fixed on a rising slope, about a quarter of a mile west of the little fresh-water brook. This spot occupied the centre of the open ground : I say open, because the trees here were few and large. On this site a space of forty-eight feet by thirty-six was marked out, so as to allow four bedrooms, two on each side, with two saloons, for sitting-rooms, between. We had nearly finished our business, when the advance of a herd of peccaries intruded themselves : but Lion, being a quiet, though powerful dog, took little notice of them, as they showed no disposition to attack us or him ; rather, indeed, seeming disposed to make acquaintance with us, and particularly with the dog ; but one of them being somewhat rude in his caresses, Lion gave him a turn over, and a battle instantly began. The dog was engaged by three or four of them at the same instant, one of which he pined to the ground ; but the others, finding themselves unmolested, attacked him so furiously and effectually with their tusks, that the blood was seen streaming from his sides and shoulders : their numbers increased every minute, and he was beset on all sides ; so that if we had not quickly run to his assistance, large and powerful as he was, they soon must have destroyed him. The blacks were desired to charge the little desperadoes with their pikes, yet not until many of them were killed did the rest make off. We pursued the retreating herd into the wood ; but not a musket was fired, for fear of alarming her we had left behind at the plantation. The

strong parts of the slain beasts were immediately cut out, to render their flesh eatable : and, after having satisfactorily completed the object on which we went, the party returned before sunset, with a cargo of live crayfish and dead peccaries.

On Friday morning the Avon was loaded with building materials, the timber carriage, and pioneers' tools, for the Peccary shore ; having on board Xavier and Derrick, and the two New England blacks, and the two sailor negro boys ; Purdy being sent to assist his friends at the new plantation on Edward's Island. Diego found plenty of work for himself and his troop ; so that we required a man at a call to be with us, who could paddle one of the small canoes anywhere that might be required ; and I fixed on Martin for this purpose, and to visit the look-out at the flag-staff. In this way we proceeded, every one in his calling ; sometimes taking away Purdy for a day from his friends, and sending him, with Martin, in the large canoe, for a supply of turtle ; by which I saved some of our salted provisions ; for the people began to tire of fish, which as yet necessarily constituted our chief animal food.

During a period of some weeks, the respective parties pursued with little variation the employments heretofore stated ; my Eliza and myself, the while, using our intellectual faculties, to the best of our judgment, for the advancement of the general good and our own comfort. Sometimes we visited our former haunts ; and being now furnished with excellent boots, there was little inconvenience in our walking among the sand to the cocoa-nut grove, which was the only spot left where we could sit as formerly, quite by ourselves, with our dear little dog at our feet, and repose our spirits without the chance of intrusion. Sometimes while there I took off my coat, and climbed a tree with the gaskets, and brought down a few fresh cocoa-nuts to regale my sweet companion ; sometimes we ate one of the melons, which grew in abundance round us ; and on going away, she would collect some capsicums in a little basket, and say, "These will do for our dinner-table to-morrow, Edward." Now and then we conversed on what we had been reading, whether religious, history, or only amusing story. And not unfrequently we talked over the scenes of our first days in this Bethel of the desert ; and then, perhaps, turning our eyes to where Captain Drake and his party were at work, anticipated the day in which we should see some of our dearest friends inhabit that pleasant spot. We seemed afraid to cast a glance on the subject of our wealth : but it happened one day that my Eliza asked me how much a year the money which had been

placed in the funds would produce?—"About £2000 a year, my love," I replied.—"Then, my honoured husband," said she, "surely you will never again send a hundred poor turtles to the butcher, to save £200 or £300!" The rebuke was just: few but herself would have made such a use of the information she had acquired: and I took shame to myself on the instant she so expressed herself,—promising I never would repeat such an act again.

Friday, September 5th.—Allwood reported the three houses finished on Edward's Island; and Diego stated many articles of the harvest ready for getting in. I told Allwood, as soon as the crop was taken up, the allotments of land round the three houses should be marked out; but that, meanwhile, he and his son must immediately join the building party at Peccary Field, to earn some money to pay for his supplies; and this was readily acceded to and gladly acted on. Diego required no additional hands at the harvest, taking time by the forelock; and as he cleared the grounds of it at Edward's Island, he housed it in one of the new buildings. Early in October the whole produce of all our plantations was got in and housed; that from the opposite island being brought over. The plantation storehouse and little shed being filled, a considerable quantity was carried to the great storehouse of the cave. In this gathering, to my great surprise, there were three flour barrels filled with pressed tobacco leaves of excellent quality. There had been no want, certainly, of that article heretofore; but, till now, it had not been well cured, and therefore, although our Spaniards were not bad cigar makers, I never could use our own manufacture with any degree of pleasure. And for the same reason, a few of my Havana cigars, given to the men, had always been considered as a treat; Diego usually saying that his cigars were only "Cabana," alluding to their cottage manufacture.

Tuesday, October 14th.—It was now the time to fulfil my engagements to Allwood's family; and to this end I sent for the three men, and told them the wood and other materials that had been used in building the houses I should consider as a set-off against their labour in erecting them, for an occupation of seven years; that four acres of cleared ground were to be attached to each habitation, for which they should pay a dollar yearly per acre as rent during that term, but nothing for the houses; and that, if they behaved well, the lease should be from time to time renewed on such terms as at the time might be just and reasonable: and that this, and all other rents, were intended under present circumstances to form a public fund

for any future occasion that might arise for the benefit of the colony. There were no objections started to these proposals; therefore writings were delivered to each of the men to this purport. "And now," said I, "let your wives come to the store house, and furnish themselves with kettles and earthenware knives and forks, and every other thing requisite to make your homes comfortable: as to tables and chairs, and such like, you can make those yourselves, at your leisure, and I will provide you with mahogany for the purpose. When you have taken your families to live on Edward's Island, you shall draw rations weekly, which will be charged to you. But I will make you a present of one of the small canoes among you, or rather to the township; and at my expense, Diego and his lads shall set up your hurdle enclosures. So that you, Mr Allwood, and your son, may continue to work at Peccary Field." These propositions were well received, and the women lost no time in making their demands upon the storehouse in consequence; but, like some other people who have an account with a tradesman, their orders were rather large: however, I desired they should have whatever they required; and accordingly they fitted up their three houses very comfortably. Within a few days I paid a visit to the new hamlet, and without any difficulty subdivided the twelve acres into three equal allotments; the shape of the cleared ground having been so well adapted for division. When I had marked the corners, I left Diego with his train to set about the work of enclosure, which in the end proved tedious, as there was much difficulty in finding small wood for the purpose, without cutting down some large trees; most of the branches of those which had been felled on clearing the place having been cut up, and carried to the neighbourhood of our residence to be piled for fuel: however, by Saturday, the 25th of October, he had completed his task, and all was in due order at Allwood's Plantations; for so we now called it.

The house at Peccary Field, having been three months in hand, was beginning to make a respectable appearance; therefore I thought Manus Allwood might be spared from the work awhile, to make the necessary furniture for himself and friends; and I told him so, lest he and they might feel sore at the delay I had already occasioned. Two of Diego's patriarchs were added to the strength of the building party, and the other two left with the Don, to keep our place in order. Purdy was also allowed to give his whole time at home for a while to make fish-pots, and to assist the women in various other domestic provisions and arrangements necessary to the future comfort of peo-

ple newly settled. Having the canoe, he could provide them with fish; and I gave him a cask, to sink as a conservatory for any superabundance he might occasionally take.

My Eliza now sent for the wives of old Allwood, and Manus, and Purdy, and gave to each of them six young hens and a cock, and as many ducks apiece; also to each a young she-goat, and one male amongst the whole party. She told them these were her presents, and that all she requested in return was, for the women to take all our Guinea fowls with them, in charge for us; rearing new broods, and providing us with eggs, and galenas for the table, when required; adding, that she had arranged it with me that I should give them a weekly allowance of corn for all their poultry, free of any cost to them, until their own harvest came round. The women expressed much gratitude; making many professions of the warmest attachment. Their kind friend then said at parting—"Remember, nothing but sickness must ever prevent your attendance here on the Sabbath! And on that day a dinner will be provided for you after divine service." They took their leave, loaded with their poultry, and dragging their goats along with them, well satisfied with my gracious Eliza, and her kind and useful present. On the same evening, their husbands came to thank her also; so they were all made happy but she the happiest of the party.—"Mercy is twice blessed!" says our inspired Shakspeare; and I say—so is every act of kindness:—"it blesses him that gives, and him that takes;" but most the giver.

CHAPTER XVI.

SUNDAY, October 26, 1735.—We were much pleased with the improved devotion of all our people this day; and afterwards with the great progress many of them had made, in reading words of one and two syllables, in sentences conveying sense and meaning.

Monday, 27th.—It had been my orders for some time back, for a regular look-out every day at sunrise, from the flag-staff; and Martin being in the way, whose regular business it was, he reported a brig in the offing. In consequence I detained Captain Drake, who went with me to the height; and, with the glass, we discovered a Union Jack flying at the fore-top-gallant mast-head of the brig. I despatched Martin with the information to my wife, desiring him at the same time to tell her not to be alarmed, as we intended to fire the gun, when we hoisted our colours. Martin was also directed to get the Avon ready

to go out of harbour, by the time Captain Drake should come down from the height. The shot was then drawn from the gun, and the match lighted; and having given Martin plenty of time to deliver his message, the piece was fired, and the colours hoisted; which was answered from the brig, by the Union Jack being hauled down, and the ensign hoisted at the main. From this moment I had no doubt of its being Captain Taylor, returned to us in our own ark, and perhaps bringing with him some of our family. I hastened to apprise the dear partner of all my cares and joys of my anticipations. A thousand fond ideas flashed across her mind the moment I spoke; and in her transport she threw herself on my breast, saying, "Oh, my dear Edward! if——" then pausing, added—"but just as it may please God! I will not venture to say more. He is our gracious God, and kind Father, and I rest confidently on His goodness: be it as He will!"

The Avon was quickly under weigh, having Captain Drake on board with the schooner's crew. As soon as she made sail, I despatched Allwood and Manus in the small boat, to tell their wives what the business was, and to bring them back with them if they pleased; but that I did not intend to give any merry-making until after the vessel's departure, considering that the presence of the strange sailors on such occasions might lead to some unpleasant irregularities.

When the boats were fairly off, my dear wife and myself climbed the promontory; and by the time we had placed ourselves under the colours, we saw the Avon go alongside of the brig, as she lay to, with the main-topsail aback. They both quickly made sail, the Avon leading, and soon we had the pleasure to see them approach near to the promontory, when I perceived a female on deck. On this discovery we hastened down to receive them, with our hearts full of tender wishes, notwithstanding higher feelings of resignation. But nature will speak if it be but in a whisper. And as we watched the vessels coming round the point, that whisper was loud enough to be felt, if not heard; the heart beat high and irregularly, and we could not prevent it. I put the glass to my eye, and now saw distinctly my brother, and my Eliza's sister, Amelia, on the quarter-deck of the brig, looking towards us.—"They are indeed there, my best beloved!" I exclaimed, "your sister Amelia and my brother!"—"Blessed be God!" she said, and sunk into my arms. The struggle within her had been great to repress these emotions; but now that they had burst the bounds of restraint, she was overcome. In a little she

sighed deeply, then by degrees raised up her head, and smiled, looking earnestly towards the vessel. The schooner's best boat had been manned with Diego and Xavier, and the Allwoods, who had just returned with the women from the opposite shore ; so that the moment the brig dropped anchor we stepped in, and rowed alongside. My dear Eliza, with the agility of a kid, sprang up on deck, and I quickly followed her. We each flew into the arms of the children of our fathers. Blessed moment ! blessed by Him we adore ! and blessed by many an eye that saw it !

I was glad to see Captain Taylor again, and shook him heartily by the hand ; then embarking in the boat for the shore with our brother and sister, who had become doubly so by their intermarriage, I requested Captain Taylor to join us at dinner ; at the same time taking him aside, I told him my restrictions respecting his crew ; but added, that fish and vegetables should immediately be sent off for their refreshment. Our people waited to greet our coming friends, upon the beach, with every testimony of respectful attachment : but our domestics alone followed us to the mansion. Here we welcomed our dear guests with a new embrace : my beloved wife saying, "This is indeed a happy day to us."—"And to us also, my dear Eliza," replied her sister.

They now expressed their surprise at everything around them,—the stupendous hill, the placid and extensive lake, the beautiful shores that seemed to surround it on every side, and the little settlement opposite did not escape their observation.—"And is it here you were wrecked, brother?" said James.—"Yes," I replied ; "here ; we will point out the exact spot to you by and by."—"But this island is not the uncivilised, half desolate place, in which we expected to find you," returned he.—"No," replied my Eliza ; "our God has made the wilderness to blossom as the rose ! and when we were thrown on this coast, Edward and I, and Fidele here, were all our company."—"O Fidele !" cried Amelia, the little creature at last attracting her attention, "come here." The fond animal, on being spoke to, raised its fore feet on her knee, and seemed to devour her hand with caresses.—"You know me then, Fidele?" continued she. On which the kind little creature redoubled its fondness, as much as to say, "I do indeed remember you." The ladies now soon retired to the bedchamber, and I requested my brother to walk down with me to the beach. We met Diego by the way. "Hark you," said I, "lodge the four lads in the plank-house, and remove all the stores out of our store-room into the house

on the north ; and have a good lock fitted to it, and some shelves instantly put up there, for the reception of the things that may require them." Diego bowed more elegantly than usual, but without speaking a word, and retired to execute the orders I had given him.—"Is that a negro?" said my brother ; "I should say he is a very well bred man."—"How can it be otherwise, brother," I replied, smiling ; "is not he at court? He is my minister for the home department." This sally made James smile in return ; but he evidently did not know whether to consider me in jest or earnest.

That there might not be any confusion in carrying the things through the hall out of the store-room during dinner, they were all removed without loss of time, and the floor of the vacated room washed out. At the appointed hour, we had the pleasure to see the two skippers walk into the hall ; and our brother and sister, well dressed, quickly after make their appearance ; so that dinner had not to wait for the guests, nor the guests for the dinner,—a point of some importance to all parties ; for without this observance, either the dinner is spoiled by waiting for the guests, or the appetite of the guests taken away by waiting for the dinner. During the repast, Mrs Rota had many commendations for her excellent fare, and still more exquisite cookery ; but our dear relations, as they sat at table, were more delighted with the fine view through the open doors, than with all the cunning of Dame Rota's cookery. After dinner we had the best dessert our island could afford ; our first pine-apple was cut for the occasion ; Diego had brought in some ripe bananas from the wild plants near the spring, to which was added a fine musk-melon, cut in the dell since we sat down to dinner. With such a display, and a bottle of Canary, I was enabled to entertain our friends nobly. The Captains, with becoming delicacy, left us at an early hour, to smoke their cigars on board. After they were gone, our second bedstead was put into the room that had been prepared for it, and three or four chairs, with a small table ; and the second chest of drawers, with all other requisites, as far as our means would go, were got in, and arranged for the comfort and accommodation of the welcome accession to our family. Being alone, we now talked over family affairs, and read the letters they had brought with them from Awbury, which afforded a heartfelt pleasure to us both. After the letters had been perused, and many a kind word had passed from the lips of my Eliza, in affectionate acknowledgment of what her much revered father had written to her and to myself, we entered generally on the subject of family affairs, in the

course of which her sister took occasion to say,—“So you perceive that we were determined to lose no time in joining you; for as no one would have me, and nobody would have James,—is it not so, James?” continued she, “we cut the matter short and followed your example.”—“You little monkey!” cried her husband, “you know I had long pined to make myself happy with you, but only wanted those means which our kind brother here so unexpectedly afforded us.”—“All is well,” rejoined my Eliza; “and that same brother will do everything in his power to make you both comfortable here, now that you have confided yourselves to his friendship.” On her saying this, I took my brother’s hand, which was the best speech I could make on the occasion. Our conversation next turned on my uncle, whose letter by them I had not yet read, but which I begged leave now to open. I read it to myself, and smiled:—“This is a very different letter from the last, my dear Eliza,” said I, putting it in my pocket. “And there is a little postscript in it, from my good old aunt, telling me the Virginian nightingale is well; and if I have any other pretty thing to send her, Captain Taylor will take charge of it. You may, perhaps, think of something for her, dearest,” continued I. All matters uppermost being now nearly exhausted, we took coffee, and soon after retired to rest.

Tuesday, 28th.—Captain Taylor waited on me early in the morning, telling me, he wished to proceed to the Bay of Honduras without loss of time, as my cousin would be expecting his arrival with anxiety; and, therefore, forthwith he would land the supplies which had been shipped for me by my uncle’s orders. I told him to do so; and that I certainly would take what my uncle had sent out by him on my account, although I had not ordered anything of my uncle; and there were many things in the inventory useless to us, and many others we did not want. Among the former were blankets and candle moulds; among the latter, large quantities of bottled beer and cheese. However, there was much welcome matter in the provision way, and otherwise. In short, such an assortment as would be ordered by a person keeping a general store in any of the West India islands.

The amount of the invoice was £480; but my uncle had not counted without his host: he had learned from Captain Taylor that I had brought an iron chest well filled with money from Jamaica, although he could not devise how I came by it; neither could the captain furnish him with any information beyond surmises.” The story of our attack on the *Guarda Costa’s*

boat having been magnified so as to throw a wonderful light on the subject, my uncle, in his letter, says, (in that familiar phraseology, which he sometimes chose to use in writing as well as in speaking,)—"Eh, Ned! 'tis well thee didst not lose either life or limb in the attack on the *Galleon*; how much did come to thy share?—'Tis a secret, may be: thee must have got a pretty penny; did hear thou hast a large iron chest full, besides the schooner thou bought, and what didst send to Awbury: well, thou art a good-hearted fellow, Ned; and now thy brother and his wife wish to join thee, I will let Taylor take them out for £20 a-head in his way to the Bay; as he tells me he can pop in on you, without going much out of his way; and I take upon me to send thee out an investment by him, of which thee mayest take much, or little, or all: but the goods are shipped purposely for thee; and thou mayest make good profit on them if thou knowest how; but if thou wilt not take them, I may be loser. The amount, to be sure, is large, but if not convenient to pay ready money for (which will allow five per cent. discount), thee shall have credit for twelve months, till Taylor makes his next voyage." My uncle enclosed in his letter a counter-statement to mine, respecting the disbursements for the brig, and the prices of the things I had taken out of her while she lay a wreck; contriving to make the balance considerably more in his own favour than I had done; however, I resolved to let it pass, without objection or comment, and pay agreeable to his own statement. After breakfast Captain Drake employed himself in taking an inventory of the things landed, and in superintending their removal to the great storehouse. Meanwhile I was engaged in settling accounts with Captain Taylor, in doing which I took my uncle at his word, deducting five per cent. from the amount of the invoice: a subtraction, in truth, it could well bear. This being done, I gave Captain Taylor a set of bills on Messrs Perry & Co. of London, for the amount of the invoice, and balance of the other accounts, for which I took his receipts.

Our dear friends from Awbury had not burdened themselves with many matters beyond their wardrobe, so that all their movables were soon conveyed into our mansion. During my counting-house occupations, my wife and her sister, with James also, were busily employed in writing long letters to England, in which I interrupted Eliza, saying—"Go, dear, and put up a piece of the silver tissue for my aunt, and tell her it came from China, which I believe it did, somehow or other! and write her a few lines with my love." I then sat down and wrote my own letters to England; which were rather short, but I hope

to the purpose. I next dashed off a very brief but civil one to my cousin at George's Key ; while my Eliza, by my desire, ordered a certain number of ducks and fowls, and melons, to be put on board the brig as a present for him, together with some yams for the crew. When all these proceedings were completed, it was too late for the brig to go out of harbour that day, seeing she had at least five leagues to run before she could be considered in the fair way beyond the shoals and reefs.

After work, the brig's crew were regaled again to-day with fresh fish and vegetables ; and in the evening were allowed to go ashore on the isthmus, to amuse themselves by walking anywhere, except crossing the streamlet to the southward. We found there was some difficulty in getting this order obeyed ; which led me to the determination, on some future day, to make a strong palisadoe (with a gate in it), from the sea to the face of the promontory, for the purpose of fencing in my own residence. We did not dine till three o'clock to-day, every one being closely employed to enable Captain Taylor to sail in the morning.

During dinner, at which Drake was present, Taylor often expressed his great pleasure in the progress every day produced in the comforts of our little colony. His observation, I confess, delighted me not a little. But he added—"I don't see how you are to get any trade here."—"Oh !" I replied, with a grave air, "we can board a galleon now and then : that will do."—James and he glanced at each other.—"My dear brother," said Eliza, "you look like Gil Blas, when he saw Captain Rolanda ! Do you really think my husband is a pirate ?—he is only playing off a joke at your uncle's expense ; who says in his letter that *he hopes Edward had a good share of the galleon he boarded !* Now that impression must have arisen from something you told him, Captain Taylor," added she, addressing Taylor, "about capturing the Guarda Costa's boat, with the two Bermudians ; and that is the galleon floating in his brain." James and his wife now laughed, and Captain Taylor began to explain ; but we soon perceived, by his confused apology, that he had said rather more to my uncle than had been quite correct : however, it was of no great importance, and we passed it all over as a matter of pleasantry.

It was dark when the coffee was served this evening, so that the glass shades were placed over the candles. Amelia admired them very much. "So elegant," she said, "in their appearance, and so useful in completely protecting the flame from the current of air !" which, indeed, was pretty fresh some-

times, as we permitted it to perflate our dwelling by night as well as by day. She did not, however, seem as pleased with my cigar; and she openly expressed her dislike, when James discovered an inclination to join me.—“Amelia,” said my dear wife, “we must lodge you in the plank-house, for a few evenings, where we were; and you will soon be glad to get enveloped in this delicious smoke, to protect you from the tormenting bites of myriads of sand-flies.”—“Very well,” she replied, “when the sand-flies bite, he may smoke! But, at no time can I ever like it. Gentlemen never smoke in England till they are half a hundred years old, and then they use a handsome pipe, which certainly in an old gentleman’s hand looks something respectable; like a justice of the peace! but as to these cigars, they remind me of dirty boys trying to smoke a piece of stick.”—Eliza and I looked at each other, and smiled. At this moment our captains came in, who had left us soon after dinner; and they joined me in the fumation, to the great amusement of my dear wife, who wished to see her sister smoked out of her prejudices, as she had avowed they could not be overcome in any other way.

In the evening after we retired, my Eliza told me that her sister had taken a clandestine peep into the iron chest, during the minute or two it was left open, when she was bringing the tissue to me. My dear wife owned herself vexed at the spirit of the action, and therefore had gently chided her: telling her she was welcome to look into any of her sister’s drawers, but never to again attempt to pry into any thing that more especially belonged to her husband, “whose desk, or other lock-up places,” I told her, “even myself did not presume to look into, without his permission. I was sorry,” added my gentle love, “to be obliged to say so much to my sister; but I had met an attempt on her part to sift the secret of your wealth, at an earlier hour this morning; and I determined instantly to crush the spirit at once in her, on discovering her peeping into the iron chest.”—“I, too, am sorry for this, dearest,” returned I; “for doubts between relatives are ugly things.”—“O never mind, we shall be as good friends as ever,” she replied; “and now the ground is made sure.”

Wednesday, 29th.—Captain Taylor took his leave as soon as the sea-breeze freshened; and the Avon got under weigh with him to see him clear of the shoals, by the same passage he had entered the harbour. After breakfast, James and I went out together to visit the several houses on the plantation, and to show him other parts of my little domain. He was de-

lighted with the finely-shaded walk through the woodland region and with the gush of water that burst from the cliff. I showed him our wooden palace, and described to him how I built it with my own hands. I then took him to the inlet, where the kind providence of God had placed the brig, after delivering us from the reefs and rocks, the situation of which I also pointed out to him. I then took him into the recess where once the thicket stood, and showed him our extensive storehouse, and the spacious cavern within it, which much excited his astonishment. He said the place, taken altogether, the depth of the recess, the perpendicular of the rock, its vast altitude, the completeness and fulness of the storehouse, and the extent and wonderful appearance of the cave, with the light coming in through the rock behind, filled his mind with something like the idea of an enchanted cavern. "Now, James," said I, "you must take charge of all these things, and keep books of them regularly, as I have done ; and I will allow you a hundred a year for doing it ; and as soon as circumstances may permit, you shall commence trading as a merchant, and all the money you can make shall be your own. I will give you a house, and lands, and servants ; and I will enable you to start fair, unencumbered, and in the possession of every requisite for success."—"My dear brother," he replied, "I will be guided entirely by you ; and, under that guidance, act precisely as you may point out, and I hope I shall not be ungrateful for your kindness."

The Avon returned about half-past twelve o'clock, and after the people had dined, we proceeded in her to Peccary Field, where the carpenters were at work. "That is a capital looking house," observed James, as we drew near the little bay.—"I hope, my dear brother," I replied, "it will be a commodious one. It is in the best situation on George's Island, and it is intended for you."—"Indeed !" he said : "but why not for yourself ?"—"O, no," was my reply ; "we should always treat our friends better than ourselves." Lion met us on the beach : I had given orders that he should be of the party, to keep the peccaries at a distance, and ultimately, if possible, to drive them altogether from the place. We were quite delighted with the approach to the building, and more so with the fine view from it, embracing a great part of the lake, the promontory, and our settlement ; also the opposite coast of Edward's Island, with Allwood's plantation. "This is, indeed," exclaimed James, "a charming spot." The house was now quite up, and the carpenters in the act of putting on the shingles ; so that, externally, it had all the appearance of being complete. "In a couple

of months," said I, "you will be able to inhabit it, if you please. But I advise you to remain with us till the latter end of February; by which time I shall be able to fit up the interior, and to furnish you with a suitable establishment." After perambulating the adjacent shore and grounds, we returned, bringing Drake along with us to dinner. James was full of what he had seen; so that, the moment he entered the hall, he began to tell his wife of the wonders he had encountered beyond the woodlands, and of the fine house I had built for them at Peccary Field; and during dinner he continued to talk of nothing but what he had seen; so that our sister was quite agog to go over the ground again with him, which I promised she should do to-morrow.

Thursday, 30th.—Captain Drake was desired to send off the Avon, with the men and their requisites, to the creek; and to attend on my brother and his wife with the schooner's large boat, and row them to Peccary Field. My dear Eliza took care to put up a basket with refreshments, and a bottle of wine for the party; not forgetting a few cigars, by way of a little innocent mischief. Now Drake was fond of a cigar, like the Spaniards, at all hours; and we well knew he would not miss the treat, whenever he saw one near him; and, strange to say, when he did turn to, to regale himself in this manner, Amelia began to find a cigar not quite so abominable a thing as she had declared it to be. On their return, our sister seemed quite delighted with the day's excursion; and while describing to us the pleasant spot at the head of the creek, where they had spread forth the contents of the basket under the ample shade of a fine tamarind-tree, she added, "After enjoying our cold meat, and wine, with water from the little stream that ran at our feet, I confess I really found the smoke of Captain Drake's cigar by no means disagreeable." This confession drew forth a smile from Eliza. But all the party, as well as the lady, were pleased with the day's amusement, and enjoyed the fumes of the cigar. Our sister, however, cherished one gratifying recollection beyond either of her companions; which was the superior appearance of the house and ground destined for her abode.

During the absence of the party, my dear Eliza and myself had felt quite happy in being again alone; and we could not help saying to each other that, when we reflected on the bliss we enjoyed when no other human being was on the island but ourselves, and on the inexpressible relief we found in the temporary absence of even our dearest friends, that we must draw the conclusion that the happiness of those who truly love each other cannot be improved by any other mortal intercourse

—God and ourselves being to ourselves all in all. “But man was made for society, dearest,” rejoined I; “and it is, therefore, our duty to sacrifice even our happiness to our usefulness.”—“And it is this reflection, my honoured husband,” she replied, “that reconciles me to all the stir and bustle we have brought upon ourselves; certainly at the expense of our own immediate enjoyment.”

Friday, 31st.—Martin reported a sail in the offing just after sunrise. Captain Drake immediately ascended the promontory; and having hoisted the colours, sent down Martin to tell me it was a Spanish unarmed schooner. My good friend soon after followed his messenger. “I think she wants to come in,” said he to me: “she is lying to.”—“Very well,” returned I: “go out to her with the Avon; but arm the boat’s crew, for fear of a trap, and take Xavier to interpret.” He did all I directed; and in half an hour sailed out of the harbour. Diego sounded the bugle, and Manus and Purdy instantly came over in the canoe. I then took some of the men with me to the height, to be ready with a shot if there should be any hostile intention. But I soon perceived all was right, seeing the Spaniard follow in the wake of the Avon. However, as this fellow would carry some report of us somewhere, I thought it prudent to put on my commandant’s uniform; and give a musket and accoutrements to Allwood and his son (who had both been militiamen at Jamaica), and post them as sentinels; one at the landing-place near the Black Rock, and the other to walk to and fro on the open ground before the mansion. When the Spaniard came to an anchor, I sent my brother in the four-oared boat, to bring the captain on shore. When he made his appearance, I received him with all the importance and gravity of a Spanish hidalgo; which did not fail to make the desired impression. Diego was standing behind my chair; but my Eliza and her sister were in one of the bed-rooms.—“Where did you come from?”—“From Santa Martha.”—“Where are you bound?”—“To the Havanna.”—“What do you want here?”—“I have sprung a leak; and, seeing the land, stood in as far as I could for the breakers; and hoisted my colours, in hope of relief.”—“Do you know where you are?”—“I am not sure,” he replied; “I believe these islands are called the Serranhas; but no one ever thinks of coming near them if he can help it, on account of the shoals and reefs.”—“This is St George’s Island; in the dominion of the King of England,” replied I: “you will know it again, I hope, when you see it! Your schooner shall be repaired with all possible despatch.—What is your cargo?”—“Cacao, xinchona, vanilla, dye-woods, wax, and some dollars.”

I now sent for Drake, and desired him to take the Porghee alongside of the Spaniard, and assist him to unload with all speed, and, while his schooner was heaving down, to give the Spanish captain share of his cabin; but to lodge the crew in the Avon; and not to allow any of them to stray into the settlement. I bade him make sentinels of the Bermudians and New Englanders, four hours and four about, at the Black Rock; and to set the four carpenters at work on the vessel's bottom, as soon as she was hove down. This was quite enough for Drake: he was master of my hints in a moment, and put them in execution. But he moreover suggested to me the policy of firing a morning and evening gun, while the Spaniard was here; to which I instantly acceded. Accordingly, at sunset he fired the gun, and hauled down the colours; and again in the morning, when they were hoisted: and this he continued punctually to do while the foreign schooner remained.

Saturday, 1st November.—They had got out great part of the cargo into the Porghee: and as we did not know what to do with the Spaniards on Sunday, I, on mature deliberation, determined, that as they were birds of passage, and could not join in our devotions, to leave them to themselves to do as they pleased; which was to continue at the work of getting out their cargo.

Sunday, 2d.—The bell rang for prayers at ten o'clock; and all the settlement were soon present, excepting Captain Drake and the sentinel on guard. Every one came dressed in their best; and our brother and sister were much impressed by the scene they witnessed. I believe it raised us higher in their esteem than all our wealth. The teaching, however, was this day dispensed with; having desired Diego to make the people walk by twos and threes on the isthmus; and to row to different places backwards and forwards all day in the boats, and in the canoes, both men and women; so as to impress our visitors with a belief that we were more numerous than in reality we were. The settlement at Allwood's Plantation made a respectable appearance; and the empty house at Peccary Field looked very grand; so that by this stratagem, and the firing of the gun, I hoped to obviate any despicable opinion the stranger might otherwise conceive of the English colony in these islands.

Monday, 3d.—By middle day, the Spaniard had got out all his cargo, and was brought alongside of the Black Rock; and there soon hove keel out. She had started a plank, and it is only to be wondered that she did not founder; for it was loosened fore and aft. Formidable as this accident really was,

it could be repaired in a day : I therefore, putting on my ordinary dress, went with my brother in a boat to the rock ; and, calling Xavier, told him to tell the Spanish captain to walk up to the store, and see if there were any things he would wish to buy, or to take in barter, for some of his cargo. All our people knew the policy of my conduct towards the Spaniard, and therefore concealed from him my being the same person he saw in the commandant's uniform : and having now put aside my wig, as well as my laced suit, I might well personate some other individual. The captain readily accompanied us to the storehouse, where Diego and two of his patriarchs were apparently employed. Xavier then returned to his work ; and I desired Diego to show the captain the hams, and cheese, and some of the hardware and crockery. He asked the price of the various articles, of which we informed him, having the invoices with the prices in our hands ; but laying on the usual Jamaica advance, of 50 per cent., exclusive of the difference of currency. He seemed very well satisfied with the prices ; and picked out several cheeses, and a quantity of checks, and linens, and hardware, and crockery-ware, for which he paid in dollars to the amount of 700 ; and said, he would call at the island, on his return from the Havanna, and take some of the other articles, as well as more of those he had already selected, as he could find a good market for them at Santa Martha. I desired him to enumerate the things he would most want, that I might ensure a supply for him ; and asked him when we might expect him again. He replied, "In about two months and a half." I then desired him to bring me twenty boxes of cigars.

A new plank was put into the schooner, and caulked, and the seams payed over, before Tuesday night. So that on Wednesday he re-embarked his own cargo from the Porghee, and also took in that he had purchased from us from the store ; making room in his vessel, by leaving out some of the dye-woods, which I bought of him for a mere trifle.

I charged him only 40 dollars for repairing the schooner, which he paid with great satisfaction ; and on Thursday, the Avon accompanied him clear off the reefs, through the same channel by which he had entered. On the return of the Avon, I assembled the people, to praise their good and judicious conduct during the stay of the schooner ; and I then distributed the 40 dollars among them, not forgetting my six young bondmen ; but to each of the carpenters, including my poor slave Allan Derrick, I gave 5 dollars. "Tank you,

Massa," said he; "you treat me same as free man."—"Yes, Derrick," I replied, "no one shall feel here that he is not free, unless he is bad; and all who are not free, who continue good for seven years in my service, I will then give to them their freedom."—"Tank you, Massa," cried the poor negro, clapping his hands; and all around joined in the acclamation.

I brought the bag of dollars I had received from the Spaniard into my own room, on my return to the house with James, after distributing the amount paid for repairing the schooner among the people. "Now," said I to my brother, "let us make an entry of this transaction in the books." And while we were so employed in the hall, our wives joined us. I then left James writing; and brought the bag of dollars out of our room, and placed it on the table. "Here, brother," resumed I, "calculate the freight and insurance on the goods we have sold; add to that the invoice prices; and see what profit arises."—"The invoice prices," said he, "amount to £111 sterling, and the freight, &c., say to £9, making £120 sterling, which is 504 dollars."—"Well, then, James," returned I, counting out 196 dollars from the bag; "there is the profit for you, and thus I will deal with you as long as we are brothers." He was overpowered by my generosity, and Amelia also; who said—"It is no wonder, Edward, you are so rich, if money comes in like this!" The sight of so many dollars was a novelty to her; and while she was turning over the splendid coin, her sister brought her out an empty bag from our coffers, to put them in. Poor souls! they were quite overjoyed at this commencement of their good fortune: we, although not thus exhilarated, joined in their pleasurable feelings; and being relieved from the care which the presence of the Spaniard had occasioned, sat down in high spirits to our excellent dinner. But we did not feast alone: an ample repast was provided on this occasion for the people under the cotton tree, where they regaled themselves with unusual festivity.

Captain Drake dined with us; and we laughed heartily, over a good bowl of punch, at our grand display of a flag, a cannon, a fine coat, a wig, and a sentinel, to our Spanish visitors.

We did not sit long over our glass; my brother and Drake and the ladies making a visit to the joyous group at the head of the glade; leaving me at home, by my own request, to meditate on a measure which the visit of the Spaniard had induced me to consider. I was not long in determining on the expediency of immediately doing what my mind had sug-

gested for consideration. Having come to the determination, I quickly conceived the details of the business; so that when the party returned, I told Captain Drake I found it expedient to send him to Jamaica. "Therefore," said I, "get the schooner ready for sea to-morrow; take out the bricks, and ballast her with limestone from the rocks of the promontory; then take in the dye-woods, and your orders shall be ready for you, and you shall sail on Saturday morning."—"It shall be done, sir," he replied; and before the people dispersed, he went out to them, and informed them of his intended speedy departure. But they had no money at present to send for commissions, nor did they require anything. It was necessary, however, that the sailor men should know of the intention, that they might be ready accordingly. This measure was not taken on account of goods wanted for the Spaniard; our store was yet well supplied; but I wanted more strength, and some things for my brother's house. I therefore chose to embrace the interval of the Spaniard's absence, to have this voyage made, which, at any rate, must otherwise have soon been undertaken. When my soul's partner and I retired to our own room, I explained to her the objects I had in view by sending off the Porghee so suddenly. We consulted together on the subject during the greater part of the night, discovering every now and then something more that would be desirable for Drake to accomplish when at Kingston. And having at last satisfied our minds with a full contemplation of the matter, we offered up our prayers at the Throne of Grace; and then, endeavouring to dismiss all worldly care, resigned ourselves to the welcome influence of sleep.

Friday, 7th.—We were all busily employed this morning, in writing to England; my wife, and her sister, to our friends; I transcribing duplicates of letters, with bills, given to Captain Taylor for my uncle, together with an order for goods by the Mary next year. I wrote also to Perry & Co., and to Mr Green at Kingston. These done, I made out Captain Drake's orders, desiring him to procure two sawyers and one bricklayer, all free people, if he could procure them. I did not care whether they were whites, blacks, or mulattoes, with or without families. But if he could not procure free people, he was to purchase slave workmen; single men, if he could get them; but if not, to take husbands, wives, and children, at a fair price. Also, to buy seven young negro men, and four young females newly arrived from Guinea; and to take in bricks, planks, boards, one hundred bushels of maize, bales of negro

clothing, bales of checks and stripes, boxes of linen, boxes of large coloured handkerchiefs for the head, bales of leather, two grindstones, packages of hoes and bill-hooks, bags of nails, &c., agreeable to memoranda of items, and one chest of tea; also household furniture, as per memorandum; and to bring with him a fast-rowing six-oared boat; also twenty stand of arms more, with accoutrements; and to procure fifty suits of soldiers' clothing, if possible.

By the evening, the schooner was ready for sea; and the wages of Martin and Purdy, and the two New Englanders, Ned Hall and Ben Hackett, were now paid up to the day. On receiving their money, Martin and Purdy expressed a desire to take their wives to Kingston; and Hall and Hackett asked me if I would give them houses and a piece of ground, if they could bring wives with them from Jamaica. I granted both these requests, of which I informed Captain Drake, when I put my papers into his hand; telling him, at the same time, to be very careful on his return, to preserve propriety in the schooner; and to give the women the steerage entirely to themselves, with directions to the wives of the men going out, to take special charge of the brides and negro girls. My dear wife hearing this, sent for Mira, Martin's wife, into our bedroom, and there gave her some useful advice, following it up by a present of ten dollars.

Saturday, 8th.—Early in the morning Captain Drake came to take leave, when I counted him down 225 doubloons, equal to 3500 dollars, which is about £860 sterling; but desired him, with a smile, to bring back as many of the gold pieces as he could; that sum being, indeed, quite sufficient to cover the whole order, supposing he should be obliged to purchase all the articles wanted. He got under weigh about nine o'clock, and passed through the northern channel, with a fine breeze, at E. by N., carrying the good wishes of the settlement in his wake for him and his crew; who were now not only our fellow-settlers, but our fellow-worshippers, and bound up with us in one interest, and in one faith, serving each other in love.

Three carpenters were still kept on at Peccary Field house, to finish the interior, in doing which they required no extra assistance. Manus continued at Allwood's Plantation, making furniture; and Diego and his four men being now at leisure, had set about completing the painting of the great storehouse, roof and sides, and all the houses on our plantation, excepting the mansion. One of the two poultry girls was added to the washerwomen, in lieu of Mira; a single "henwife" (as my

father used to call such a person in his farm) being found quite enough for the business, since its management had become better understood. Still there was plenty to do, notwithstanding the late abstraction of poultry for Allwood's Plantation; for the young broods of geese, turkeys, ducks, and fowls were numerous, and the whole flock, taken together, quite a swarm. Besides, the pigs had multiplied from four to twenty-four, and the goats, after sending away four to Allwood's settlement, still numbered ten. It is true that Diego's men looked after the pigs; which now had a commodious sty, boarded off for them in the S.E. corner of the great stoccade, never being allowed to range about but when Abel, or some other of the patriarchs, could be spared to run at their heels.

Sunday, 9th.—We enjoyed our assembling together on the Sabbath in happy quietness; no hurry of spirits, no distraction of thought: and our school, after prayers, was strictly attended to; in which duty our brother and sister cheerfully lent their aid, and I was happy to see their zeal in the business.

Monday, 10th.—Our men having their several occupations assigned them, at which they were to continue till finished, I took this opportunity of making my brother master of the books, and of the principles on which they were kept, with respect to the people. Even Diego's department, and that of the stock, were represented by figures.

We now found leisure to enjoy ourselves with our dear friends in personal recreations. Sometimes we walked abroad in the cool of the morning on the beach, collecting shells; or, when the sun was high, reposed under the shade of one of our numerous fine trees, and there read books of amusement,—Gil Blas, or the Arabian Nights' Entertainments, or Swift's Gulliver. But my dear Eliza's favourite was the *Paradise Lost* of Milton, which, with a few other choice books, her father had sent to her by Amelia. From this sublime work she would sometimes read a fine passage to us, and always with great pathos; for her soul was in the subject, and she therefore did the author justice. I will not, however, dissemble, that my evening cigar, a gratification not quite so elevated, in which now my brother heartily joined, afforded great pleasure both to ourselves and to our wives, as one or other read out to us by the shades on the table, during that ceremony. Thus we passed our time, observing faithfully the Sabbath, as it came round.

Monday, 1st December.—The carpenters reported the house at Peccary Field completed; we therefore visited it in the Avon on the same day, and were highly pleased with it altogether;

its commodious size, the beauty of the situation, and the excellent workmanship and materials that built it. I bestowed much praise on Mr Allwood and his coadjutors ; and requested they would endeavour to knock up two small houses near this new mansion, for its domestics ; and to do it before the schooner's return. I proposed them to be sixteen feet by fourteen each. Allwood did not hesitate to promise that they would set about the job immediately ; and as Diego had finished the painting, two of his men were to be sent to their assistance : Diego himself, with the others of his party, being retained to grind corn, procure fish, and do other things required in his victualling department. Besides, poor old fellow, he was now our look-out at the flag-staff.

There was, however, a business hanging over us to be done, in which my dear wife took a lively interest. The pigeons must be shut out from their ancient domain, the cave ; for we found they soiled the packages stowed there. My Eliza deeply regretted the necessity of this measure ; and stipulated, for these ancient possessors of the place, that they should receive at our hands the best indemnity in our power. After many consultations, it was at length determined to construct a large pigeon-house on the sides of the gallery of their entrance ; which was to be closed at the hither end by lattice-work, so as to admit light and air into the cave ; and as this lattice-work frame was to be placed in the interior of the opening, the passage to which through the rock might be six or eight feet, we hoped a sufficiently commodious habitation would thus be afforded to the poor ousted natives of the cavern. But as time must pass before it could be completed, it was also resolved that the pigeons should be allowed quiet possession of their former home till the new one was ready for them. We, therefore, meanwhile, directed the stores to be removed from the sides of the cave, where only they were liable to be smeared. But this reminds me to notice that the pigeons which Captain Drake brought from Jamaica, above three months ago, had taken kindly to a tea-box we had stuck up at the end of the fowl-house in the stoccado ; but that our two little wild pets had not associated with them, but left us when their wing-feathers were allowed to grow, no doubt to join their old friends.

Early in December, we became anxious for the arrival of the schooner ; but as the weather continued fine, I attributed her delay to Drake's difficulty in executing some of the commissions without a great sacrifice of money. Manus having now finished the furniture for the three houses at Allwood's

Plantation, joined the other carpenters at Peccary Field; and by Thursday the 18th, the two outhouses were completed. But the schooner had not arrived, and our anxiety gradually increased. In this state of suspense, I prevailed on my dear wife to consent to my going in the Avon to the extreme part of the northern channel, that I might look out beyond the reefs, from some accessible part of the high land on that part of the island. I took the carpenters in the boat, which they managed very well, having been accustomed for some time back to sail to and fro with her from the Black Rock to Peccary Creek. I landed with Manus, the most active of the party, opposite to the outermost little low island, on a fine open spot of rich ground, and with great difficulty gained the summit of a height, after an hour's laborious climbing; from whence we saw all the reefs on that side, which I examined carefully with my glass, but could not discover any sail in sight. We, therefore, descended; and, re-embarking, landed two or three times on this part of the main island, which I perceived to be well suited for settlements, if our increase of population should at any time require them.

On the morning of the 19th, we received the unexpected intelligence that Xavier's wife, Hachinta, had brought forth a male child in the night. We could scarcely believe Rota, who gave the information; for we did not even suspect Hachinta's pregnancy, she having continued her work as usual. My dear wife and her sister lost no time in visiting the little stranger, administering everything necessary to the mother; and on their return they set about making baby-clothes, with which, I afterwards understood, the mother would gladly have dispensed, having wrapped the child up in a large coloured cotton handkerchief, which she thought quite sufficient and less troublesome; but as the infant must be dressed after the English fashion, our two ladies soon carried it into effect, though to the great discomfort of both mother and child. But he was our firstborn! and there was, of course, a great fuss about him; and to honour him as much as possible, his name must be *George*, after our good king. "Very well," said I, "be it so: and if he take his father's name as a patronymic, it will sound altogether nobly, *George Xavier!*" But, alas! the peculiar pronunciation of the Spaniards was not favourable to the name of this *august infant*; for both father and mother, and Diego too, when speaking of him by his name, called him "*Gorgy Shaver*," or "*Corky Shaver*," which, in a great measure, destroyed the sublimity of my intention.

Notwithstanding the interest this new event excited in the mind of my dear wife, she could not help observing my anxiety respecting the Porghee, and took every opportunity of consoling me, and setting my mind at rest; first, by showing the probability of unexpected delay in accomplishing my orders; and next, by directing my intellectual eye to the providence of that God who had hitherto made us His especial care. During Saturday, I gave too much occasion for her kind solaces; and on Sunday, during divine service, we ventured to offer up a prayer for their safety.

CHAPTER XVII.

MONDAY, 22nd Dec., 1735.—I was preparing to go out again in the Avon, when a schooner was discovered from the flag-staff by Diego, and reported as standing in for the promontory; but he had not been able to make her out, being as yet too far distant in the offing. I lost no time in ascending the height; and instantly, to my great joy, recognised our anxiously-expected vessel. She had now approached near enough to allow me to see distinctly with the glass everybody and everything upon deck; and the sight a good deal confounded me. "Diego!" said I, "Captain Drake has brought all Kingston with him, I believe! take the glass; and see what a crowd is there; what am I to do with all those people?" Diego took the spyglass in his hand; but I did not wait his reply, hurrying myself away to tell my dear wife the news, and to prepare for the reception of my friend Drake, and his numerous companions. When I arrived, Diego was close at my heels; and, having acquainted my Eliza and our friends that Drake was now coming round his own promontory, we all hastened to the front of the open ground close above the rocks, to await the arrival of the schooner: she was not long in making her appearance; and in a few minutes after, passed us, and then came to an anchor. We were all filled with wonder at seeing her deck so full of people; but the more so by observing that many of them, men, women, and children, were *whites*. However, as soon as the anchor was down, Drake came on shore: I welcomed him heartily, as one found that had been lost, exclaiming almost at the same instant—"But who, all, have you got there?"—"I don't know," returned he, "whether I have done right or wrong; but I have brought four families I saw in distress at Kingston. The men had belonged to the temporary corps that was raised, you may remember, for putting

down the Maroons ; but being found useless, it was disbanded. Such as chose were sent back to America, whence they came ; but these four families, being foolishly advised, remained in Jamaica ; and gradually found themselves in no better condition than the free negroes, which is bad enough.”—“ Go and tell them,” said I, “ they shall be well received ; but where to lodge them, Drake, I really do not know. Who else have you got ? ”—“ Every one,” he replied, “ you desired me to obtain.”—“ You have done well ! ” returned I. “ Go and tell them, also, they shall be kindly treated ; but for a little time they must put up with great inconveniences. And let them land forthwith.”

In about half-an-hour, the soldiers and their families were conducted to the mansion, and brought into the hall. I received them courteously ; and my dear wife, who never could bear to see even an insect in suffering, spoke kindly to the women. The men were beyond the prime of life, and looked the worse for wear ; the wives were slatterns ; and the children looked sickly. The youngsters were nine, altogether ; and the eldest of them a boy about twelve years old : there were four boys and five girls, the youngest of which was in its mother's arms. I told Diego to show them under the cotton tree, whose ample shade would make a comfortable temporary retreat, and to desire Rota to give them some solid refreshment.

“ James,” said I to my brother after they were gone, “ there is nothing for it, I perceive, but to convert your house into a barrack, till we can turn ourselves round, for these people.”—“ It is yours, brother,” he replied, “ do with it as you please ; but if it were not, you should be quite welcome to it for the purpose wanted.”

The black strangers were next brought on shore, and introduced in rotation. The sawyers had been purchased at 400 dollars each ; a great price, but they were fine fellows, and unencumbered. I spoke civilly to them, and desired Captain Drake to request Allwood to take them with him in the evening, for the present, to his plantation. The bricklayer came next ; a mulatto free man, named Hart, with a wife and two young children, male and female. I told him I would fulfil every agreement made by Captain Drake ; but for a little time, he and his family must put up with such lodgings as we could give them, until a place could be fixed on for their residence. I then desired him to get his things on shore, directing Diego to lodge his family in the plank-house ; on which he observed, he was in my hands, and must rely on me altogether for dealing

fair by him. "You may not doubt it," said my dear Eliza ; "all who behave well will be more than fairly dealt with here ; but I should leave the people to tell you this : I will say, however," continued she, taking one of the children by the hand, and looking kindly on it, "if you love yourselves, we will love you and show you all kindness." The new negroes were now mustered ; and well looking young people they were, decently clad in Osnaburgh ; seven men, and four girls. "I do not know what to do with all these," muttered I to myself ; then pausing a moment, concluded to send the men to occupy the out-houses at Peccary Field. That my embarrassment might be more complete, the two New Englanders had brought wives with them, who were presented to us in their turn. "Dame Rota," said I, "what are we to do with these?"—"Let them be with Derrick and his wife, if it please massa," she replied, courtesying. "We would take them ourselves," continued she, "but Mira is come back, and she and Martin are again with us ; and La Senora, I know, would not send them to trouble Hachinta and her little child."—"But then," I rejoined, "Derrick and his wife must take their husbands also."—"But they not married yet," rejoined Rota, looking with no inconsiderable importance, as she made the reply.—"You are quite right, Duenna," I exclaimed ; "we will see about that on Sunday ; and you may now tell them so."

There was so much bustle in the settlement, by the arrival of all these people, that we found no time even to sit down to dinner. Captain Drake handed me my letters, and gave me an outline of his voyage and expenditures, while snatching a morsel ; but we were too much engrossed in considering and in doing what was now required of us, to enter on details. He merely told me he had sold the dyewoods well, but that the proceeds and all the doubloons excepting ten had been expended ; and these he now gave me. "Finish your sangaree, my good fellow," said I ; "and take the soldiers and their families, and whatever they may have brought with them, to Peccary Field house, in the Avon ; take the seven new negro men also, and put the New Englanders into the boat to work her ; it may be as well for the present to keep them out of the way. Lodge the soldiers in the four bedrooms, and put the negro men into the out-houses, where they will be sufficiently well accommodated. And I should wish, moreover, that you would take your cot with you to sling in one of the saloons, so as to keep an eye on the strangers until we know them better. Desire Diego," continued I, "to furnish you with provisions for their subsistence,

and whatever else you think you may require to take with you." Drake made no other reply than, "Very well, sir;" quickly after moving off, to carry the order into execution.

Purdy and his wife returned home with their friends, the Allwoods, in the evening, taking the two sawyers with them. And now the two black sailor boys only were left in charge of the Porghee. At night a shakedown was made in the hall of the mansion for the four new negro girls, who, with the other three, Martha, Mary, and Anna, lay down quietly, and well satisfied, to sleep on the floor. Thus I had found quarters for every one, consistently with the relative condition of all concerned. It may be thought such circumstances too light a matter to be worth all the troublesome arrangements it forced upon me to observe; but in all such things the fruit is worth the labour—a certain harvest of amity and peace.

Tuesday, 23rd.—Early in the morning I took my dear wife and Diego, with my brother and sister, into council on the subject of providing permanent accommodations for the people, but most immediately for our young negresses. We all seemed puzzled. The rainy season was approaching; ground was to be cleared of timber, ready for the husbandmen; and there was no time for building. After a considerable pause, my sable minister at last spoke as follows:—"If it so please my good master, I will go back from big small house to my own house, after Hall and Hackett take away their wives; and then Derrick go to live again with Shavier. Martin and Mira stay with us, will be four—and will only be four and child at Shavier's; then you master, sir, can give big small house to somebody; black girls can be made to lodge there, if it please my good master."—"Thank you, honest Diego," I replied; "you are always ready to put yourself to any inconvenience for the accommodation of others; but I cannot give that house to the negro wenches, since you are so good as to leave it at my disposal."—"Take house there on other side, good master, sir," he replied; "cave large, sir; great storehouse large, sir; plenty of room there, sir. Can empty plantation storehouse, and make place for all the young women in it, sir. May be, La Senora and the hermana Donna will put some little things that they and Rota may want, in their own rooms here, sir."—"A very good proposal, Diego," said I; "so let all the bulky stores be removed from the plantation storehouse this very morning: its shelves, however, may be still occupied by jars and the fruits; but as soon as the ground floor is cleared, send Xavier and Derrick to fit it up for the girls to sleep in." To this arrange-

ment the ladies made no objection ; but, on the contrary, commended Diego for his sagacity.

Captain Drake came now over from Peccary Field, with two of the soldiers. One of these men (James Craig, a Scotsman) had been a corporal in the corps to which he formerly belonged. My zealous friend thought it his duty to offer Craig to my notice as a well-behaved, sober-minded man : on which I called him to me, and told him he should have charge of the barrack, as long as the people were to remain in it, and that all provisions and other things for their use would be placed under his care ; that I should look to him for a regular account of all disbursements ; and that he would be furnished with pens, ink, paper, and a book for the purpose. The corporal touched his hat, and I was well pleased thus to rid my friend Drake of a troublesome office. It was not long before the soldiers returned to their quarters with the necessary supplies, in our large canoe, rowed by the two New Englanders.

Having got rid of these people, Drake and I paid Diego a visit, who with his men, were busy removing the stores round by water to the Black Rock ; and having also taken a look at my brother James and his party, making stowage for the roots and some other such articles, by placing boards on beef barrels in the cave ; I told Drake to send the fruits, brought from Kingston in the schooner, on shore ; and then move her into Peccary Creek, that she might be in a place of safety in the event of bad weather, until we could find time to unload her. I added, he might sleep on board, if he liked, which would, perhaps, be more comfortable to him ; and still he would be on the spot to superintend the clearing and laying out of the ground for planting, which must now be set about with all expedition. "And," said I, "you shall have the two sawyers, who are capital woodmen, and the seven new negroes, under your command ; and you must employ the soldiers to assist also in the best way they can." Allwood, who stood by, was now directed to take Diego's four men, as soon as the work in hand was done, and with these, and his son, to clear the land of trees to the southward of their allotments, within the lines formerly marked out by Captain Drake ; to be ready for the spade and the hoe after the expected rains.

My dear wife had, as usual, not been idle this morning. All things required from the plantation storehouse, that could not remain there, and could be placed on the shelves in my brother's bedroom, our original storehouse, were brought to the house ; and among other matters, she took care that the sable

damsels were all well washed with soap and water in the stream, where the trees of the woodland region conceals it from view : and after this operation, at which Rota superintended, they were neatly dressed in striped linen, with coloured handkerchiefs on the head, tied *à la Francoise en bandeau* ; and when this was done, she appointed to each their respective occupations, placing them more immediately under the direction and control of their governant, good old Rota.

Wednesday, 24th.—The schooner had been moved over to the creek in the afternoon : and this morning, Martin and Purdy, with Hall and Hackett, the two New Englanders, were sent in the Avon to the eastern islands, to procure a supply of turtle ; while Drake and his party at Peccary Field, and Allwood with his party at Edward's Island, were hard at work felling trees, to make clear the grounds for our approaching field labour. Being now a little at leisure, I sent for Hart the bricklayer, and came at once to an understanding with him about wages and so forth ; telling him a regular account should be opened for him, so that whatever conveniences he wanted for his family, he might now have from the store on credit. Having thus disposed of him, and the great body of the people being well employed, I found my mind somewhat at rest.

My brother, however, still had full occupation at the store-house, with Derrick and Xavier for assistants, in making good stowage of the things ; so as to be all conveniently at hand, without incurring confusion and delay, when any particular article might be wanted. But it now became absolutely necessary to exclude the wild pigeons from the cave, and I felt myself called upon to perform the terms my Eliza had stipulated for on their behalf ; and to this end, Hart and Xavier were instructed to fit up the gallery which communicates with the cavern from without, for their retreat ; and then place a lattice-work partition across the inner opening ; so that while we gave them the best accommodation in our power, I took care that both light and air should still find their way through this extraordinary passage.

Thursday, 25th.—We could not make this day a holiday, our numbers were so increased, and the stormy season so near ; therefore I told the people how it was, adding, that I hoped, next year, we should be able to honour the day as we ought. I visited the working parties at noon, and took a hamper of beer in the boat with which I regaled the men ; leaving some bottles for another drink to each, after the labour of the day. With this treat they were well satisfied ; and having plenty of provisions, the business went on with alacrity and method. I re-

turned to dinner, but it was not a *Christmas* feast ; yet I was glad to sit down, and recreate myself with the conversation of those I loved.

In the evening, my Eliza and her sister named the new negro girls, Delia, Phebe, Clara, and Hebe, who in due time were to be baptised.

Friday, 26th.—The Avon returned with fourteen turtle, ten of which were immediately put into the craal ; she was then sent with two to Allwood's, and two to Peccary Field, being directed to bring back a load of fire-wood ; but Purdy was left at Allwood's to fish for the party ; and on the return of the boat, Martin and the New Englanders were set to work on two more fish-pots for the settlement ; and in the evening, they made a great take of mullet by torch-light, and replenished the conservatory.

Saturday, 27th.—My dear wife, with her sister and myself, paid a visit to Peccary Field, for the express purpose of taking some comforts to the soldiers' families, which she had got ready ; namely, coffee, sugar, butter, flour, and some soap ; besides a piece of striped and checked linen, with all the requisites of tape, thread, needles, &c., to make up their clothes. The women were much gratified at seeing her, but more so when the presents appeared ; but I left her with them, and visited Drake and his party, who were getting on apace. After my Eliza had finished her kind donations to the wives and children of the soldiers, (during which she gave them salutary admonitions about cleanliness, and their expected attendance on Sundays at divine worship,) we then embarked, and returned home much pleased by our expedition.

Sunday, 28th.—At ten o'clock, the whole settlement assembled to divine worship ; which was conducted with as much order and solemnity as possible, considering the motley group that formed our congregation. After prayers, Xavier's infant was baptized ; and then I proceeded to marry Ned Hall and Ben Hackett, the two New England blacks, to their respective betrothed spouses, who had accompanied them from Kingston. There was no school teaching to-day, the ceremonies mentioned having made it late. Besides, in consequence of our great numbers, I thought it best to send the soldiers and their families back to Peccary Field ; and also Allwood's families to their homes, immediately after service ; the bridegrooms with their brides being put in temporary possession of the vacant house at our plantation.

Monday, 29th.—This morning I desired Hart the bricklayer to construct a limekiln on the isthmus, to the north-west of the

plank-house. There were plenty of bricks on the ground. The coals had been landed close to the black rock, and the whole promontory was mountain limestone, so that his work was altogether quite at hand ; and hammers being provided to break the limestone small, I told him I should expect great expedition in turning out a kiln of burnt lime. The ground-clearing wood-cutters continued assiduously at their work, and I added what strength I could to each party ; sending the two New Englanders, with their wives, to Peccary Field ; and desiring Martin, as well as Purdy, to assist at Allwood's. Hart having finished all a mason could do towards fitting up the gallery in the rock for the wild pigeons, Derrick joined in the carpenter's work, which now quickly would be finished. It was a part of my arrangement at this time to employ the two black sailor boys in rowing a despatch canoe from one place to another, as there might be occasion.*

Early in the week, Allwood reported the twelve acres cleared of wood, and ready for the planter ; having removed all the trunks of the trees to the side of the bay, where those cut on a former occasion now lay. The smaller wood fit for hurdles and faggots had also been put together ; and he brought over with him the timber carriage, to send to Peccary Field for the transportation of their felled trees, to a proper place for sawing them afterwards into planks. By the end of the week Drake had finished his task also, so that now nearly all hands were set at liberty

Our zealous and useful friend was now able to give us a little of his company, which was a pleasure to us, and a recreation to him after his late labour. I thanked him for the complete way in which he had seen the work performed, and the taste and judgment he had exercised in leaving a fine tree standing here and there on the cleared ground, which altogether might amount to fourteen acres.

I took the opportunity which our present leisure afforded to send for the soldiers. I told them it was my intention to lodge Corporal Craig in a vacant house on my own plantation, in consideration of his being their non-commissioned officer ; but I would give the others each a house with some land, at the northern extremity of the isthmus ; and that no time should

* If the Editor had taken the liberty of abridging any parts of the original journal, it would have been in one or two such passages as the above ; where the changes of occupations and residences of the different individuals are so circumstantially, and somewhat tediously, detailed. But they belong so truly to the style of the narrative altogether, that, without making an awkward rent in it, nothing of them can be omitted.—*Ed.*

be lost in the business, provided each and every one of them continued to act with the same propriety they hitherto had done : and I requested Drake to go the next morning early, and take any persons with him he might choose, to mark out six lots, of four acres each, in a line between the high black rock east of Peccary Field, and the little rivulet.

This little rivulet was the same my dear Eliza and myself had seen when we feared we might again encounter the rocks, after having been delivered from the perils of the reef.

My dear helpmate had not been unmindful of the bricklayer's family since they landed at our settlement. She had supplied them with many comforts ; and took the trouble to admonish the woman on points of order and cleanliness, and directed Mira to spare an hour in the day to teach the children to read. Martin now again became our look-out and our fisherman, and attended my brother occasionally at the store ; and thus we proceeded, observing the Sabbath as it came round.

Tuesday, January 6th, 1736.—The wind was very unsettled all day ; I therefore gave orders for all work to be suspended, and sent such supplies as might be required for a week or two to the distant settlements. Captain Drake was requested to return to Peccary Creek immediately. The sails of the schooner were unbent, and the topmasts, and yards, and gaffs got down, and all made snug. The Avon and the six-oared boat were secured there, within the schooner, and all the other boats and canoes were hauled up before night upon the beach of the isthmus ; and a kiln of quicklime, that had been turned out in the morning, was covered over with planks slantingly, so as to protect it from the heavy rains, which might now every minute be expected.

The event of the night bore testimony to our foresight and precautions ; for it blew and rained tremendously, chiefly from the northward, threatening every moment to blow in our door and window-shutters, and at times increasing with such violence as to make us fear it would carry away the house. We had not forgotten to pray, although of late I have said little about it ; but on this night, our brother and sister, and ourselves, were not one minute in our beds, but together in the hall, comforting each other, and imploring the protection of that God whose hand can bridle the fury of the wind, and preserve His people. The noise of the storm was great ; the howling of the wind, the pelting of the rain, the uproar of the waters, beating up against the rocks not two hundred yards below the house ; and now and then we heard the bleating of the goats, and the

mixed noises of the frightened poultry. Our settlement was the only one completely exposed to the violence of the tempest : which reflection, on thinking of the others, afforded us some consolation.

As the sun rose, the gale abated, but the rain continued to fall in torrents. The wind came now only in squalls, but these squalls were bad enough. This dreadful weather continued, with scarcely any intermission, for five days ; clearing up suddenly and permanently on Monday at sunrise.

Monday, 12th.—Notwithstanding our care of the lime, the rains had got to it ; and some of the planks were nearly consumed by taking fire : but as the heat extricated itself below, the rain kept down the inflammability of the wood, and little further damage ensued. We found the beach covered with seaweed, and broken reeds, and shells. The turtle craal was knocked in pieces, and the staves scattered in every direction. Our tub conservatory was also thrown on the strand. The sugar-canes were broken off short above the roots, or knocked down ; and the pine-apple plants much injured. The canoes and boats drawn up upon the beach had been moved from their places, but had not received much damage. All the buildings stood secure ; but the stoccado of the poultry-yard was blown down, and part of it carried to a considerable distance, and some of the poultry killed. Early in the day we were visited by Captain Drake, who reported all well at Peccary Field ; and we had the pleasure to receive the same tidings from Edward's Island.

Tuesday, 13th.—Mr Allwood with his son, and Xavier, and the two sawyers, were now despatched to commence work at the northern extremity of the isthmus, with directions to get up three houses as soon as possible on the plan of those on Edward's Island ; and the three soldiers and the two sailor boys, John and Harry, were directed to assist in transporting materials to the spot, and in any other way in which they could render assistance, and as soon as Derrick could repair the damage done by the storm to the stoccado and turtle craal, I promised to add him to their party.

Diego now took the field with all his strength—his own four patriarchs, and the seven negro men ; to which the two New Englanders were added ; commencing operations at my brother's plantation. In a few days they did their business here, planting the fourteen acres that had been cleared. He then took the whole force to Allwood's Bay, where Purdy joined him ; and with this strong party he finished his work there by the 28th. Plantain suckers from our own plantation had been put in both at

Peccary Field and at Allwood's Bay. Cuttings of our broken sugar-canes, and cassava cuttings also, were planted. But the bulk of the grounds was occupied by yams and cocos, maize and Guinea corn and tobacco. What may be called garden ground, was sown with Indian kale, calaloo, oca, pumpkin, and melon seeds; and in a choice spot, offsets from our pines in the dell, formed an infant pinery. When Diego had finished his labours, I visited the two settlements; and could not but express myself highly pleased with the masterly manner in which the grounds had been cultivated, and the alacrity with which all hands must have worked to accomplish so much in so short a time.

During this time, Martin, with the women, had planted our grounds in the dell. The pumpkin and melon beds between the spring and black rock, after being enriched with the soil from the cave, were put in order, and duly sown by Hart and his wife.

The grand agricultural operations being finished, we had now time to attend to minor matters. Four of the fruit trees (that came from Jamaica in tubs) were removed to Peccary Field; where, the hoops being knocked off, the trees, with all the earth about their roots, were taken out of the tubs and planted; and in the same manner, the other four trees were put into the ground, as near to our own mansion as the nature of the soil would admit. But being desirous of doing still more in the propagation of fruits, two of Diego's patriarchs were sent off, day after day, in a small canoe, with seeds of the shaddock, orange, limes, and peppers, to plant in the best situations they could find all along both coasts of the two islands. On taking a survey of our vegetable stores, after planting the thirty-six acres of ground, besides our own little plantation, we found very few yams and cocos remaining; and from the great consumption of corn by the poultry, the maize also was brought to a low ebb; so that it was well we had a hundred bushels of that grain in the schooner.

There was now leisure to unload the Porghee; so after taking out the furniture for my brother's house, and a grindstone at Peccary Field, she was moved over from the creek to the black rock below the promontory, and the cargo landed. Our storehouse and cave were again pretty well filled; and notwithstanding the paucity of our yams and cocos, we had everything else in abundance. By Saturday, nothing remained in the schooner but the bricks, which we were not in a hurry to land, as there were a great many already on shore, and those

on board would serve for the present as ballast ; and by way of a finish to the day's work, the second grindstone was set up close by the duck-hatch, near the spring.

The following Sabbath was observed with due reverence, as I hope every former one had been since our landing on the island ; and the Sunday teaching was conducted this day upon an enlarged scale.

Monday, 26th.—The buildings at Soldiers' Town were proceeding rapidly : and there being now three kilns of lime turned out, the bricklayer was ordered to mix a quantity of mortar, and, with the assistance I should give him, see that stones and bricks, and other materials, were carried to the rear of the stoccado well back towards the hill, to build there an ample stone and brick kitchen for our settlement.

We were now looking out rather expectingly for the Spanish schooner on her return to Santa Martha, the time being expired at which he promised us a visit. And having judged it expedient to make a display of our little force on this occasion, should he come, to prevent any report to our disadvantage which might afterwards draw on us some adventurous Picaron or other Marrover ; with this object in view, I sent for Corporal Craig and his three comrades, and told them my ideas on the peculiarity of our situation, signifying my intention of devoting every Saturday to military exercise ; to which end, they must accustom the men about us, as soon as possible, to fire with blank cartridges, and afterwards to try them with ball at a target placed on the isthmus. But, in the meantime, I wished Craig and his three comrades to fit on a suit of clothing each, and tally them with their names ; so that in the event of the sudden arrival of the schooner, or any other strange vessel, the men could repair to head-quarters, and dress in an instant, ready to be placed as sentinels. They were quite delighted with this information ; it renewed in their minds the recollections of proud days gone by, without the annoyances and abject circumstances that attended them. The clothing-chest was opened, and having their choice, they managed a tolerable good fit ; looking well with their broad-flapped red coats and cocked hats, quite like brave musqueteers as they were : but when they put on their broad belts, and shouldered arms, I felt a glow within me I cannot describe. I hoped some day to see all my people appear thus. I now desired Craig to remove with his family to my residence, and take possession of the vacant house I had reserved for him near our own ; which I only delayed giving him until I had assured myself, by observing his

conduct, that he was worthy of the confidence I desired to place in him.

On Saturday morning we had a grand muster in the shade, to the north of the promontory; in all, thirty-four, including ourselves and Drake. The arms were brought to the ground, and the men were put in training. We kept them at it till noon, when dinner was served to the whole party on the field, after which they recommenced the drill, and at five o'clock returned to their respective habitations.

Sunday, February 1st.—Our new associates began to show something like devotion at prayers, which afforded us much satisfaction. I endeavoured on this occasion, in a few plain words, to impress on them their dependence on Almighty God, not only for their preservation in this life, but for a participation in the life to come; also the duties He required of us, both as to Himself, and to each other, and to all men of every country and colour. And I took the opportunity of stating to them, that, although some of them were my slaves, bought with my money, I should treat them as the white indented servants in Jamaica were treated; that is, after a service of seven years, every man and woman should be free: and it was my determination that such should be the law of the island: agreeable to which, every resident on it should sign a paper to that effect; and that every child born on the island, of slave parents, should be considered as free from the moment of its birth, excepting that, in compensation for the support the master gave to such children in their childhood, they should be bound to serve him until the completion of their twentieth year. All this was explained particularly to the new negroes; on which the whole assembly poured fourth a joyous acclamation.

Monday, 2nd.—Mr Allwood reported the three houses finished at Soldiers' Town. In consequence, I desired him now to set about the building of three similar dwellings at Edward's Island—one on each of the four-acre lots lately cleared and cultivated; to observe his front line accurately, and not to encroach upon the intersecting road as marked out by Captain Drake. In reply, he requested me to give him a few days to attend to some private affairs, and he would then set about the erection of the houses required; but hoped that I would render him every assistance he might desire; which I duly promised, and as duly performed. During the week, some of our people were employed in procuring turtle; some in transporting the small wood lately cut at Peccary Field to our own settlement, and there building it into stacks for firewood.

On Saturday we had another day of drill ; and on Sunday the Sabbath was kept with due solemnity.

During the two following weeks nothing remarkable occurred ; but I gave Mr Allwood so much assistance that the buildings on Edward's Island seemed to rise as if by magic ; Diego the while, with his men, enclosing the land around them with hurdles made from the lopings of the trees lately felled there, in clearing the grounds.

Tuesday, 24th.—Martin reported a Spanish schooner off. We answered his signal by hoisting our colours, with a gun ; on which the bugle was sounded, and all the men hastened, by boats and canoes, to head-quarters. Captain Drake went out in the Avon, to pilot the stranger into port. In the meantime the soldiers were dressed in their regimentals, and a sentinel planted at the pass between the black rock and promontory, and another before the mansion. The other people were variously disposed, some in boats, others set to carry bricks, but all moving about, so as to be seen from the sea. And as the Spaniard anchored, the Allwoods and their party were made to return by boats to their settlement ; having shown themselves, which was all that was required.

The captain of the schooner landed, escorted by Drake to the mansion. I had dressed for the occasion, and was sitting in state, with Corporal Craig, in regimentals, standing on one side, and Diego on the other. The Spaniard said he had again come from Santa Martha, but on purpose to trade with us ; that he had missed the islands in his return from the Havanna ; adding, that he had been so well treated the last time he was here, that the report he had made of it, he was sure, would occasion some other Spanish vessels to visit the place. I assured him of my protection, and hoped he would have no reason to complain of any treatment he might receive at the island ; and I hoped I should not have any complaint of any of his people, all of whom must be on board every evening at gun-fire. He bowed, and took his leave of me ; but went to the storehouse, accompanied by Diego, where my brother awaited him.

They proceeded immediately to business, at which my presence was not at all required. Fifty per cent. on the invoice was the ratio of sale, so that James could tell him the price of every article in an instant ; and as he fixed on things, they were turned out. He took nearly all our refined sugar : two boxes of linen ; several boxes of stripes and checks, and coloured handkerchiefs ; some bales of negro clothing, and, to

our surprise, most of the blankets, and all the candle moulds, which he said were for the Cordilleras, or mountainous country, to the westward of Santa Martha. He took also a quantity of our hoes and bill-hooks, some barrels of salt beef and pork, a few hampers of cheese: a large quantity of copper, both in pigs and sheets; some brass and tin, also in pigs; almost all the crockery we could spare, and several chests of ironmongery and nails. The articles fixed on amounted to £570 sterling by invoice; to which 50 per cent. being added, to cover freight, insurance, and profit, gave £855 sterling, which is £1197 Jamaica currency, viz., 3591 dollars. We took from him in return, dyewoods to the amount of 300 dollars; two tons of bees' wax, 296 dollars; one hundred bags of cacao, at 16 dollars each, 1600 dollars; and twenty boxes of cigars, 160 dollars; amounting in all to 2356 dollars. By Thursday evening, the one cargo was out and the other shipped; and the necessary papers being exchanged, he paid the difference in hard dollars, amounting to 1235.

On Friday, Captain Drake disembarked the bricks, and took in the goods purchased of the Spaniard; with which he sailed on Saturday for Kingston, taking with him 2000 dollars in addition, to purchase an assortment of merchandise, such as the Spaniards were most likely to require. And I desired him to bring, for our own use, a certain quantity of American flour and Irish provisions, and maize, together with as many yams as he conveniently could stow away.

On Saturday, while the men were at drill, I adjusted the books with brother James, and, agreeable to my promise, paid him over the profits of the sale just made, which amounted to 987 dollars, after deducting ten per cent. for freight and insurance; and to these I added 30 dollars that had been cleared on the dyewoods, sent the last trip to Kingston.

I now told my dear brother that from this day forward I would have nothing more to do with the trade. He was to charge himself with the amount of the whole stock on hand, and also with what should arrive either from Jamaica or England. However, he was to keep my island account for supplies, but it was to be totally distinct; and I added, that I would lend him more capital at any time he required it, only desiring to be reimbursed when his circumstances would allow him to do it without inconvenience. He received my determination and assurance with many expressions of gratitude; and the sum he had just received was, he said, a handsome earnest of his future fortune.

The three privates, with their families, having removed some time ago to their own quarters at the further extremity of the isthmus, and my brother's house at Peccary Field having undergone a thorough scouring, two beds were now put up in two of the bedrooms, and all the furniture unpacked and arranged for the reception of the family; and as Hart had finished our stone kitchen, and was quite at leisure, he, with some assistants, were despatched to build one at my brother's mansion of similar materials.

Thursday, the 11th of March, James took possession of his house and grounds at Peccary Field; having one of his back rooms fitted up as a store chamber, well filled with all requisite supplies. On their leaving us, my dear wife and myself appointed the following persons to reside at his plantation: Xavier, with his wife and child; David and Jacob, two of Diego's agriculturists; Mary, one of the young women about my wife; besides two of the new negro girls, and also one new negro man; together with a good stock of every kind of poultry, and two she-goats with kid.

The buildings at Edward's Island being finished, I sent the wives of the two New England blacks to occupy one house, destined for themselves and their husbands; and the two sawyers, and four of the new negro men were to take up their abode provisionally in the others—they being bondmen, and the former about to be employed in sawing the felled trees into boards. There now only remained with us Diego and Rota; Martin (when at home) and his wife Mira; Derrick, the carpenter bondman, and his wife; two new negro men, and two of Diego's patriarchs; Anna and Martha, my wife's maids: with two other negro girls and the corporal's family.

I had the old plantation warehouse fitted up again for a store; and my kind wife gave directions for the chamber our brother had slept in, and which had been a storeroom originally, to be furnished with two beds, and everything necessary for her maids and the other girls, agreeable to the manner of civilised life. After these arrangements drill-day came; and when the men had fired half-a-dozen rounds of blank cartridge, the orders for the operations of the ensuing week were issued, liable to interruption only from casualties; and this was adopted as a rule of procedure in the colony.

In the evening, when the people and our brother had returned to their respective homes, my dearest Eliza and myself felt once more to live and breathe in freedom; being again alone, and quiet: and, as we congratulated each other, our dear little dog

seemed to participate in our feelings by every demonstration of gaiety and fondness. "You have now put the machine together, my dear Edward," said she, "and have set it going; and I do think the arrangements you have made with our brother may be calculated on to continue it, without harassing yourself almost to death, as you of late have done.—" Indeed, love," I replied, "I hope things now will go on pretty smoothly, without much trouble, but with great pleasure to ourselves and to the people; and I bless God for making me the instrument of so much good." She leaned over me as I smoked my cigar, while thus we talked; which imparted to me a happiness all my wealth could not have purchased.

Sunday, 14th.—After prayers, the four patriarchs were baptized by their respective names, also Anna, Mary, and Martha, and the children of Hart; but we did not consider the seven young negro men, and four young negro women, who arrived last amongst us, sufficiently advanced in Christian knowledge to entitle them to the rite of baptism. Our school, too, was duly attended too; but, from the great increase of persons requiring tuition, little could be effected with each individual: however, as our only object was to enable them to read the Scriptures, we hoped in time to accomplish it.

Monday, 15th.—I convened the people, and in their presence placed one of the new negro men with Allwood, and one with Manus Allwood, and one with Xavier, and one with Derrick (although himself a slave), and one with Hart the bricklayer; to be with them for four years, to learn their respective trades: and it was stipulated that, after they had served the four years with their masters, they should be considered as my servants again until their seven years of bondage was completed; when they should have a house and grounds allotted to them, and they would then live and work for their own profit.

Xavier and Derrick, having roofed in the kitchens built by the bricklayer, went next, with their apprentices, to make a formidable stoccado barrier of wood, with a strong gate, from rock to rock, across the entrance that leads to the great storehouse at the cave. There was nearly wood enough in the old palisadoes, which had been placed there in a loose and hurried manner on a former memorable occasion, so that the job could not be either long or tedious. Between this barrier and storehouse there was a fine intermediate area, that might at some future time be occupied advantageously. But, in the meanwhile, it was intended to place a doghouse here for Lion; so that if, by accident, among our increasing population, any dis-

honest person should arrive, he would feel little inclination to make his way clandestinely to our stores. Diego was sent off to-day, with his two remaining patriarchs, and one of the new negro men, to Soldiers' Town, to assist in making hurdles to enclose their lands; and he was desired, after showing what was to be done, to leave his men at the place until the enclosures were completed. As there was not any trees on the ground, although the soil was good, nothing further at present was required to be done in preparing it for the hoe and the spade, to be in readiness for the falling of the rains.

I now found time to put a favourite plan of my intelligent helpmate into effect; which was, to construct an underground conduit of brick from the great fountain, through the woodland region to the grounds below the cotton tree; there to empty itself into a reservoir covered from the sun; from thence to overflow, and irrigate the planted grounds in the dell between it and the lake. The bricklayer and his apprentice were forthwith set about this work.

The two sawyers were now directed to form a sawpit on the south side of the grounds at Allwood's, where all the trunks of the felled trees had been carried; and make it their daily occupation to saw them all into boards, many of them being timber of the first quality.

Corporal Craig took the look-out at the flag-staff permanently, and charge of the gun; and the regimentals and arms for his three men were lodged in his house. In fine, he became my day-orderly for government arrangements, while Diego attended for domestic concerns; and therefore, as I said when I introduced him to my brother James, he was my minister for the home department; and an honest and faithful minister he proved.

My dear wife and myself made frequent visits to Peccary Field, to see our brother and sister; for they were so much occupied with the improvement of the place, that they could not conveniently leave it: and as Xavier was now borrowed from them for a time, I promised them an equivalent in Derrick as soon as the stoccadoes should be finished, although the one before the storehouse was equally important to James as to myself. But I was desirous in all things to observe every appearance of equity between man and man, and to show my brother that I did so.

Friday, the 19th, Captain Drake arrived, bringing a full cargo for my brother; which was conveyed to the storehouse. And to my order he brought a free tailor, with his family, consisting

of a youth of fifteen, bringing up to his own trade, and a wife and two young daughters. He also brought with him half a dozen she-goats for the benefit of the settlement.

One of the houses lately built at Allwood's Bay was given to the tailor and his family, which was fitted up for him with every thing needful. A she-goat and a stock of poultry were given to him ; and the same also now to the New Englanders, who had a lot next to him. Two of the remaining goats were sent to Peccary Field ; and the others retained at our plantation, where the stock by this time was much diminished.

We now began to dress all our people in regimentals for drill, and the tailor was set to work to alter such of the clothing as required it ; each suit being tallied with the man's name to whom it belonged, when finished.

Wednesday, April 7th.—Two schooners were reported in the offing : our colours were hoisted, and the gun fired. Captain Drake discovered one of them to be armed. The gun, therefore, was reloaded with shot ; and he armed the crew of the Avon ; and putting on his old midshipman's uniform, went out to reconnoitre, signals being agreed on. The alarm bugle was sounded ; and the whole force of the colony collected, then dressed, and put under arms. I repaired to the flag-staff, and saw the Avon board the schooners. One of them had a pendant flying, which implied that she was a King's vessel ; they were both Spaniards, and I recognised the merchant schooner as our old friend. They soon all filled their sails, and stood in for the harbour. I desired the corporal to furnish the men with thirty rounds of ball cartridges, by way of precaution, and place all but the sentinels behind the house. In an hour or two the vessels came to anchor in Woodland Bay ; and Captain Drake, having remained on board the armed schooner, was rowed on shore, with the Spanish captain, in his boat. Seeing with my glass that the Spaniard was in uniform, the sentinel above the landing place was ordered to present arms to him as he passed ; and also another of the soldiers, that had been planted before the mansion house, paid him the same compliment.

I received him in full dress, not omitting my Adonis, with all possible courtesy ; and having Diego for interpreter, asked him to what accident I was indebted for the honour of this visit. He answered, he was sent by the Governor of Santa Martha, in consequence of some trade with this island having been reported by the master of the schooner now in company with him. That the Governor was not aware of these rocks

being inhabited, much less in the occupation of a British authority; and he was therefore despatched to enquire into its truth. "You have seen and heard the truth, sir," replied I: "tell his Excellency that you have seen the British flag, and heard our guns."—"But may it please your Excellency," said he, "I come in peace,—peace being long established between the two countries; and it is the desire of the Governor from whom I come that nothing may occur of an unfriendly nature on his part: and I am directed, if your Excellency will favour me with a sight of your commission, to assure you of his friendship, and to put you in possession of the laws and regulations of his Majesty the King of Spain, with respect to our trade with the English colonies and settlements." Diego had some trouble to make out all this; but he was quite intelligible; and I have put it in such language as I suppose the Governor of Santa Martha would have dictated. I told the officer it was an unusual request to show my commission to the commander of an armed vessel; but in the same spirit of amity he had been sent, I would send him back, and therefore he should see it and hear it. I then ordered the corporal to parade the guard before the house, and went into the inner room for my commission. On coming out, I perceived the men drawn up on the open space; and before I sat down to read the commission, and show it to the Spaniard, I desired the corporal to march them to the plank-house in a body, and in a quarter of an hour send Allwood back with a corporal's guard of five, to lay on their arms near to the landing-place below. Having given these orders, as if it were a matter of course, I read the commission; which Diego interpreted to the Captain in the best way he could, and I then put it into his hands. He returned it immediately, with many apologies; and then took a packet from his pocket, which he delivered to me. I instantly opened it, in due respect; and by Diego's assistance, in about an hour I seemed to comprehend the purport of the communication. A great part was empty compliments; among which, incredible as it may appear, were these words: "*and may your Excellency live a thousand years!*"—"You mistake, Diego," interrupted I; "Methuselah fell short of that."—"O yes, 'tis, sir," he replied; "*mille annos*, a thousand years."—"O, very well," said I; "tell the captain I return the same vain wish for his Excellency of Santa Martha."

The commercial instructions as to what was, and what was not, *contraband*, and so on, were the subjects of an enclosed paper: I therefore sent to the storehouse for my brother, who was dressed as an English merchant ought to be, to hear these

papers read by the Spaniard, and interpreted by Diego, and at the same time to take down the substance of the translation. I ordered a hamper of strong beer and a good Gloucester cheese to be put into the Spaniard's boat; and wishing him "*mille annos*," he took his leave; receiving the salute of the guard on embarking in his boat, to which Diego attended him. He returned me his thanks, by that faithful servant, for the present I had made him; and in half-an-hour, accompanied by the Avon clear of the shoals, he stood out to sea.

The military body was now marched back, and unclothed, all but the corporal and his three comrades. And a sufficient number of men being appointed to assist my brother, he proceeded to negotiate with the captain of the trading schooner; unloading her of her goods from Santa Martha, and loading her with such of his own as the Spaniard thought fit to take: and a profitable business it was, James having told me he did not clear less than 1000 dollars by his sales, besides what he might get on the Spanish cargo at Kingston.

All the tradesmen and every one else were settled with in a few days after the departure of the trading schooner, and Drake sent off again to Jamaica. There was little or no money yet coming to any of the people; but they were satisfied, and saw that in a little time that would not be the case. I had no order for Captain Drake, but to bring four new negro men, and as many girls; and I gave him 1100 dollars for the purpose.

During the absence of the schooner, our respective operations were going on. The sawyers had accomplished a good deal; the soldiers' lots were enclosed, and pretty well prepared for planting. My brother had done much to Peccary Field; and our settlement was cut off from the isthmus by a strong barricado from the Black Rock to the face of the promontory. And the barricado before the great storehouse was also completed; each having a strong gate; and the conduit from the spring to the grounds below the cotton tree was proceeding as fast as we could expect.

Saturday, May 1st.—Captain Drake arrived with a cargo for James, while we were at drill. We were happy to see him, and the more so when he laid before us letters from England. Our brother and sister dined with us to-day; and as the schooner was not to unload till Monday, we enjoyed ourselves much by reading the letters, and with all the variety of news, public and private, he had brought us.

Business, too, had speeded well: four negro men, and as many girls, which I had sent for, arrived, and they cost rather

less than the sum I had given to purchase them ; the four men were instantly turned over to Diego, and lodged in the old kitchen, with his remaining two patriarchs, and one other negro that had been retained for agricultural purposes ; two of the four girls were sent to Peccary Field, to add to our sister's establishment, and the other two kept with ourselves.

On Monday and Tuesday the schooner's cargo was discharged ; and before the end of the week the conduit and its reservoir were completed. It was delightful, when the communication between them and the spring was opened at the source, to see the full body of water come pouring into the reservoir as clear as crystal ; and in half-an-hour overflowing at a notch made for the purpose, and running in a small stream towards the sea ; but in its course the thirsty earth gradually drank it up, many little channels having been made with a hoe to irrigate the cultivated ground. This capacious reservoir being covered over with thatch made of palm-leaves, afforded a large supply not only of fresh but cool water to the settlement, without the people having to go through the woodland region to the spring-head, when our little cotton-tree rill failed them here ; so that I considered this suggestion of my dear Eliza one of the finest things we had accomplished.



CHAPTER XVIII.

I TOOK occasion, on muster-day, to tell all hands to get in their crops with every possible despatch, as we might expect the rains in a week or ten days ; and that I would have no drill on the next Saturday, to allow plenty of time for the work in hand. On Monday, the 10th, Diego set the example with his people : he commenced reaping the twelve acres south of Allwood's lot ; and last, the fourteen acres at Peccary Field, which as yet had not been alienated. The corn, and the tobacco, and many of the roots, were got in by the 21st, and housed when the rains commenced, which lasted about five days. After they ceased, the remainder of the crop was taken up, and the grounds replanted with all expedition ; in doing which, I took care to assist every one that required it ; the ground now under cultivation out of my hands being too much for the strength of the occupiers ; and by the 31st of May all was finished.

During these operations, the sweet partner of all my cares and joys, and myself, had often conversed together on the propriety of making a visit to England ; and having determined the matter, we now opened the subject to our brother and sister. They could not but acknowledge that we felt and judged rightly ; and in a few days after, we convened the people, and told them of the necessity of my absence for a few months. On this occasion, several papers which had been drawn up were now signed and delivered to the settlers ; and their verbal compliance with the terms stated therein taken before the congregation, and a note made at the foot of each paper to that effect. I then gave my brother a commission as my lieutenant, which was read aloud to them ; and I expressed my hope that the people would be governed by him as they had been by me, who, I was sure, would do everything for their welfare : and having

appointed the following morning for a complete settlement of accounts with every individual of the colony, they were permitted to retire.

In a day or two after, all the accounts having been adjusted, I gave Diego a long interview; during which I expressed my attachment to him, promising him a mark of it at some future day, and desiring him and Rota to take charge of the house and plantation in my absence. I bade him look well after every thing, and to confer with my brother daily, giving him a report of proceedings. And I enjoined him to improve the grounds about our plantation as much as possible; also, to lend assistance to my brother, or to any of the colonists, when required; and to exercise six of his men, as frequently as he had time, in the six-oared boat, so as to make a crew of expert rowers for me on my return; and that he must learn to steer me; and that I wished the sandy beach of Long Bay, at Edward's Island, where the sheep were grazing, to be planted with cocoa-nut trees; also, the front of Allwood's settlement with a double row of the Barbadoes palm, now growing in our nursery below the cotton tree. I particularly told him to mind the progress of the settlers' crops, to instruct them in all matters thereon, and, as soon as they should get them in, to distribute the pigs among them; but, in the meanwhile, to feed the herd with our own produce. And if at any time he should discover that any of the people needed help in any way, to represent it to my brother, that it might be given; taking care at the same time not to encourage idleness, and to be watchful over the conduct of all persons, so that any irregularities, if they should arise, might instantly be repressed.

When I had done with Diego, I sent for Allwood, and told him I wished the mansion to be exactly doubled, by running up its counterpart at the back, so as to give us two halls and four bed-rooms as at Peccary Field; and when these were done, to surround the house with a lofty piazza, and to paint the whole a lemon colour, except the pillars of the piazza and window-shutters, which were to be green; and to let Manus prepare window-sashes, and glaze them, ready to put in after my return. The details of this subject were now entered into, and the various points settled to Mr Allwood's satisfaction and to mine.

I next sent for Hart, and gave him the last of the new houses built at Allwood's Bay; to which boon my kind Eliza added a suitable stock of poultry, and a she-goat with kid. This being arranged, I told Corporal Craig to take charge of

the arms and ammunition ; and I desired him to tell the soldiers I should expect them to take guard day and day about, from sunrise to sunrise, at the plank-house, which in future should be reserved entirely for that military purpose ; and they were to have charge of the barrier gates, and storehouse, and boats, and canoes, near their post, and any stores or other things within their observation ; and this was the duty they were to perform for the pay allowed them, being the same as king's pay. By these arrangements I hoped to guard against any bad individual, or individuals, that might be among us, or come among us, and my dear helpmate applauded my foresight ; “ the want of which,” she said, “ often exposes the foolish and the wicked to fall into a snare, which a little prudence and precaution might have prevented : and it is certainly better,” continued she, “ to prevent crime than to punish it.”

After drill on Saturday, the 5th of June, accompanied by my brother and Captain Drake, and Allwood and Hart, not omitting my faithful and intelligent Diego, we walked down towards the rocks that form the sea line of the open ground before the mansion. Here I pointed out a position within forty yards of the shore, where I proposed to erect a ten-gun battery *en barbette*. And after a little consultation with Drake, we marked out a line of 120 feet, nearly parallel to the beach, flanking it at either end with a line of sixty feet at an angle of 135 degrees. Along the whole extent of this line, I proposed a brick wall of five feet in height to be built ; and a bank of sand extending from the summit of the wall outward, in a sloping manner, to be made so as to form a curtain to the battery. This work being planned out, I took the occasion of the presence of these chief men of the colony to impress them with all I expected from them in my absence ; and, to do them justice, my address was met by a good spirit on all sides.

Sunday, 6th.—We held a solemn festival to the Lord. And on the following day, my dear wife and myself, with our faithful little dog, together with our trunks, a box of fine shells, and the iron chest, (containing 1930 doubloons and 3800 dollars, besides the contents of the Spanish box of gold and silver articles,) embarked in the Porghee ; attended by our brother and sister, followed closely by Diego and Rota, and all the people, who crowded round us before we could step into the boat ; our older friends embracing our knees, or kissing our hands ; and thus, with the blessings of our people, and the blessing of God, we sailed out of the Northern Channel, with a fine breeze from the east, for Jamaica.

We had a long passage, owing to light winds ; so that we did not arrive at Kingston until the 21st of the month. Our former lodgings having been sufficiently agreeable, and our brown landlady remarkably obliging, we were glad to find them unoccupied, and took up our residence as before. I was not now perplexed and overpowered with business, as on a former occasion, and therefore sat down very quietly with my dear wife, after our landing, to make ourselves comfortable. I invited Captain Drake to dinner ; and we dressed with some little attention to the prevailing fashion of society : but I would not again submit to the torture of a friseur ; and therefore, after arraying myself in an embroidered waistcoat, popped on my trusty Adonis over my father-Adam-like curls, and looked sufficiently, I suppose, like a modern fine gentleman. Drake was an excellent fellow, but had no pretensions to modish attire ; indeed, he despised it, and never could see me in my wig without a smile : I also could laugh at myself when alone ; but before others, not excepting Drake, I took care to preserve my gravity and self-possession, without which I knew all external marks of a superior quality would lose their value ; and I had too much mother-wit not to have observed how much influence a grave countenance, under a well-dressed wig, has on society.

On the following day I took our passage in the Phoenix for London ; she was quite ready for sea. And after having arranged the matter by paying Captain Tracey 500 dollars for our passage, in consideration of which he was to lay in all requisites both of stock and wine, I sat down with Drake, and entered on subjects highly interesting to himself and the settlement. I exacted a promise from him that he would not quit the command of the Porghee without my consent ; and in reward for the hearty pledge he gave me, I raised his wages from £3 to £5 a month, and promised to make him a present of 100 dollars on my return from England. I desired him to look out for a young man, of good character and otherwise properly qualified, to go with him as mate, so as to be an available person to put into another vessel, or to go any distance in the Avon, or to take the command of the Porghee in case of his being ill, or any other casualty. He was much pleased with the proposition, saying he often had wished to propose it himself. I then recommended him to take out a quantity of paint and oils with him ; and, when got back to our island, to have the schooner and the Avon and all the boats overhauled under the smartening brush.—“ Besides it is good for them,” added I.—“ Yes,” said my Eliza, gently interrupting me, “ and let the venerable old

punt be painted, Captain Drake ; it is a much valued relic.”—“It shall be done, ma’am,” he replied.—“I admire your feeling on this occasion, my dear Eliza,” I rejoined ; “it reminds me of an heroic people who were applauded by posterity for endeavouring to keep the old timber of some famous little ship together for five hundred years ! I think I have heard of it from your worthy father.”

After this little diversion from our business matters, I proceeded to direct our friend to have the barricadoes and the gun and gun-carriage also painted. I told him I had given orders to Allwood to the same effect about the mansion ; so that he must calculate and purchase materials accordingly.—“Now, Drake,” said I, “there is but one point more in which I must take a concern. My brother no doubt has arranged for the purchase of the cargo and all matters connected with it ; but as I have thought it right to establish a military force as far as our strength will admit, and my brother being my lieutenant, I will thank you to purchase cloth and lace, and such other things as are necessary to make him a suit, to correspond as nearly as may be with the soldiers’ clothing ; and that all may be handsome, get him a proper sword and hat. And, before you sail, equip yourself with a midshipman’s new suit ; but bring me the estimate for all these things as soon as you can, so that before I go I may give you the amount. I wish these official matters to be a present from me to him and yourself.” Drake liked these demonstrations of military array ; and said he would accept of my present with much pleasure ; and also take care that my views and wishes, now expressed to him, should on all occasions be complied with.

On Wednesday, the 23rd, I had a visit from Mr Green, from whom I learned that at present much sickness existed in Kingston ; that the fever was prevalent everywhere in the low lands of Jamaica, and the mortality considerable. This information made me very uneasy : my first fear was for my beloved wife, the next was for the crew of the schooner, and for our colony, if any of the schooner’s crew should be taken ill, and carry it there. We had not known what severe illness means at Seaward Islands ; and I confess, I never till this moment contemplated the probability of such an event. After Mr Green took his leave, my dear wife and I talked over the subject.—“Do whatever you think right, my Edward,” said she : “it is required of us in all things to use circumspection, and the best means within our power, to avert calamities ; and having done so, we may rely on the mercy and goodness of God to bless our

endeavours.”—“I hope, dearest,” returned I, “the ship will soon sail, and under Providence this will be our safety. With regard to the others so valued by us, I will admonish Drake to take care of himself and people, and not expose himself or them more than necessary.” In the course of the afternoon, my anxiety and fears were a good deal allayed by conversing with our hostess on the subject. She explained to me that the fever took new-comers only, chiefly soldiers and sailors; that native white people, and such as had been seasoned to the climate, escaped it pretty generally; that people of colour and negroes seldom had anything more than an ague now and then; and that the fever was never catching, unless it might be in ships and barracks, where many people were huddled together, and the fresh wind kept from blowing on them. I was happy to find her statement corroborated by others.

On Friday I embarked the iron chest, together with our trunks and other things. And having received from Captain Drake an account of the monies required for his disbursements, I paid him the amount; having done this, I presented him with a capital gold watch purchased for the occasion, which he received with becoming grace and manliness.—“This is a valuable present, sir,” said he; “but, either as a token of regard or a mark of approbation, from you it is doubly so.”—“Drake,” I replied, “you deserve it, and my approbation and regard along with it. Take care of your health, and we shall meet again.” He continued with us during the remainder of the day; all profiting by the opportunity to discuss every matter of importance to the settlement that presented itself to our minds. In the evening he took an affectionate leave, charged with the disbursement of a few dollars among his men, and some small presents from my wife for her sister at Peccary Field.

Saturday, 26th.—Early in the morning, I settled with our brown lady hostess; and embarked, with my dear wife and our faithful little dog, on board the Phoenix, Captain Tracey. My first care was to see that all my things were safe in the state-room, which had been allotted to us. After this inspection, my next duty was to politeness; and we were introduced by the captain to a gentleman and lady of the island, who, with their family, were our fellow-passengers. As we were heaving up the anchor, Drake came alongside, and, springing on deck, told me—“The men desired to see me again before I sailed, and that, indeed, he had the same wish!” I shook him heartily by the hand, and truly my heart was in the greeting. Martin and Purdy and the New Englanders, and the two lads, soon

followed him up the side, showing every demonstration of affection to us in their power.—“We all pray to God for you, good master, sir, and our lady,” said Purdy. Captain Tracey and the creole family looked at each other.—“Did you hear what that negro said?” whispered the wife to her husband.—“God bless you all, my good fellows!” I exclaimed; “I hope soon to return to you! and tell all the people, when you go back, that I shall think of them as my children.”—“God bless you, sir!” was the reply of all in one voice.—“And may He bless our good and kind lady,” added Martin,—“all our wives bless her!”—“Martin,” rejoined my dear wife, with a parting word, “commend me to Mira and to her mother.” Some bowed, and some raised their hands to heaven, and retired to the boat. I followed with Drake to the gangway, and again shaking him cordially by the hand, bade them adieu; and they rowed for the shore.

The sea-breeze set in about nine o'clock; the ship was under sail, and passed out of the harbour in gallant style. The weather continued fine, and the sky bright, until we got into the Gulf of Florida, where we were much annoyed by mists and variable winds. However, no accident or circumstance occurred during the passage worthy of remark; and on Tuesday morning, the 17th of August, the ship arrived off Gravesend. Our fellow-passengers instantly set off for London, in a coach and four; but I contented myself by sending off a note to Messrs Perry & Co., with information of my arrival off Gravesend; stating also that I had brought with me some doubloons and dollars, and some Spanish gold and silver manufactured articles of value; of which I sent an inventory, and requested them to despatch a clerk on board to meet me, and to take charge of the iron chest, on the arrival of the ship on the succeeding day.

We proceeded up the river the same afternoon; and before the ship came to her moorings, Mr Child, one of the partners of the bank, came on board, and introduced himself to me. After the usual compliments, he asked me if the articles I had enumerated were in the ship's manifest: and when I answered in the negative, he said he was afraid they would be seized; and even if we could succeed in getting them entered at the custom-house, he could not answer for the difficulties that would be thrown in the way of paying the duty, and recovering them. “What am I to do,” said I, “under such circumstances? I have no desire to cheat the revenue.”—“The custom-house officers,” he replied, “when they get them, will not be very

scrupulous about defrauding you of them altogether, if they can set up any plea for doing so.”—"Can they touch the bullion?" said I.—"If they find it in the same chest, they may; and I am not sure that they may not seize the ship also." I now became very uneasy, and proposed to throw the gold and silver articles overboard, rather than risk any of the possibilities he had suggested. My dear wife was present at this conversation. "My honoured husband," said she, "send for the captain instantly, and state the matter to him as it is." Mr Child opposed this measure, as rash and dangerous.—"It is the only one that can with propriety be resorted to in the present exigency," rejoined I, "and I shall adopt it."

Captain Tracey and I had preserved a good feeling towards each other during the passage—he was an open-hearted, single-minded man; I therefore hesitated the less in confiding this matter to his discretion. "Put the gold and silver muslin, or whatever you call it, in your trunks," said he: "and I will clap the rest down at the fag end of the manifest, as the property of Edward Seaward, Esq., passenger: they will admit everything to entry but the gold and silver cloth." The banker was not quite sure that the captain was right; but I acted under his advice, disposing of the tissues as he directed; and without loss of time, with the assistance of Mr Child, packed the other articles in a large box (which the captain gave me for the purpose), putting a card on the lid, endorsed, "Gold and silver articles, belonging to Mr Edward Seaward, passenger, Phoenix; to be entered at the custom-house, London." After the arrangement was completed,—"Well, madam," said Mr Child to my wife, "I think this may do: Mr Seaward is happy in such a counsellor; and Mrs Child will be happy in such an acquaintance." My dear Eliza bowed, while I took her by the hand, making that silent acknowledgment to her on my own part, which, of all compliments, is the most grateful to a devoted heart. In the evening we disembarked, taking one trunk, in which was the tissue; and which the officer on board allowed us to do, on receiving a fee of 5s; and that I borrowed from Mr Child. He very politely accompanied us to the hotel in the Adelphi*; then taking his leave, promised to send a

* Several persons having noticed *this name* as an anachronism in Sir Edward Seaward's Narrative, the editor, in preparing another edition of the work, having submitted the objection to the possessor of the original MSS., presents the public with the answer of her friend.

"The criticism is perfectly just. Assuredly the present Adelphi Buildings were not existing at the time Sir Edward Seaward took up his lodging, in the year 1736, on the spot now so named. Yet, that he subsequently speaks of

clerk to bring the iron chest to his bank ; who should also have in charge to convey our other trunks to the hotel, and to act with Captain Tracey in passing the gold and silver articles through the custom-house. We were once more happy in seeing ourselves alone with our dear little dog ; and we greeted each other kindly on the occasion ; Fidele also showing an excess of joy.

About the middle of the next day we received our trunks, with a note from Captain Tracey, saying he had much difficulty in getting the gold and silver articles admitted to entry ; but he knew the demur was set up chiefly to exact *douceurs* ; and that, as it could not be helped, he had got five guineas from my banker's clerk, on my account, which had accomplished the entry ; and as soon as the duty was ascertained, he would let me know. I was well satisfied with this account of the matter ; but it did not end here ; for in the sequel I had more trouble about the things than they were worth : a plea was brought forward upon some old Act of Parliament respecting popish relics, and I know not what ; in consequence of which I had to swear that the crucifixes did not belong to Jesuits, and that

the place by *that name*, in his Narrative,—as he may not have finished writing and revising it until full ten or twelve years after the Adelphi was built (for he did not die until 1774),—I think may easily explain itself. For that name would then be the familiar one amongst the young people for whom he intended the Narrative ; the old name of Durham Yard, with its wharfs and warehouses, having been buried from sight, and out of fashionable memory, under the new archways and other elegant erections of the enterprising brothers, after whom the place was called the *Adelphi*. With regard to the coffee-house, it has a good pedigree for its pretensions. A bill of charges, appended to the Diary, dated 'Durham Yard Wharfs, No. 7, 1736,' has this note on it :—

"'Good Mother Osborne's Good House of Entertainment has two other good points: it looks pleasantly backwards towards the river, and opens conveniently forward towards the Salisbury Burse—a noble structure, which some vain folk talk of pulling down.'

"This was done the following year. But the remnants of the old episcopal mansion of the bishops of Durham, and their merchant adjuncts, did not share the same fate till many years afterwards. Meanwhile, the old coffee-house and hostel doubtless remained ; and, on its being levelled also for something in more modern taste, we may fairly suppose would bequeath its *good name* and hereditary customers to the present one erected on its site."

So far the owner of the Seaward MSS. on the objected anachronism. And it seems cogent to the editor, remembering, as she does, many precedents of the most creditable histories mentioning places by the name in use at the time of their writing, rather than that (which had become obsolete) of the time when the matter narrated occurred.

One reader thought he had discovered an anachronism in "The Arabian Nights' Entertainments" being mentioned as known to Sir Edward Seaward. But the objector candidly acknowledged that, on examining the point, he found he was mistaken.—Ed.

they were not for the use of the Pope or his emissaries, &c. Nor is it quite impossible, if the laws against necromancy and witchcraft had not been repealed a few months before, that I should have had another string of oaths tendered to me on the subject of obeas and talismans, as touching the triangular pieces of gold, and some other strange looking articles in the box. The more oaths, the more fees: however, in about a month after I landed in England, I obtained the things, having paid in fees and duty upwards of £200.

We remained within all day (Wednesday), walking out only a little in the dusk of the evening for exercise, it being almost as hot as in the West Indies. Everything appeared quite novel to us, and our heads were made giddy by the noise and crowd in the streets; but happily for us our hotel was in a quiet situation. On repacking our trunks on Thursday morning, we perceived that our wardrobe would not do. The mode had changed considerably, even from what we had seen amongst the best-dressed persons in Jamaica; and notwithstanding our vanity-despising humility of heart, we could not resist the desire of dressing like other gentry of easy fortune. While we were conning over this matter, Mr and Mrs Child paid us a visit; and after the ceremonies of compliment were passed, my dear wife, with her usual ingenuousness, told her visitor how much she would be obliged for a little counsel on a subject we had been discussing; adding, "When we make ourselves look like other people, I shall be happy to return your kind visit."—"My dear Mrs Seaward," replied our new acquaintance, "I shall be too happy in assisting you to ruin your husband in any way!" My Eliza looked planet-struck; at length, recovering from her astonishment, asked what she was to understand by such a declaration? "Oh nothing," replied Mrs Child, laughing; "*c'est une facon de parler*:" you shall go with me now in my carriage, and we will order whatever you wish." My sweet Eliza thanked her with great courtesy; but said, if she would have the kindness to send a milliner and mantua-maker to her, that was all the trouble she could think of putting upon her, but for which she would be much obliged. Her visitor pressed her much to accompany her, but in vain. The giddy Mrs Child little knew the steady purpose of the one she was endeavouring to persuade to enter on a project, where a phantom so hideous at the outset, if it were nothing more than a phantom, had been held up to her mind. As this was a visit of ceremony, I said nothing to Mr Child on business; and after rather a longer stay than ceremony required, the lady finding her importunities unavailing,

at length rose, and they took their leave. "Many thanks to Mrs Child!" said my dear Eliza, as we heard their coach drive away. "Jest and earnest not unfrequently are like the shadow and the substance. I have seen the shadow—it shall be my care to avoid the substance—I must be on my guard I perceive with that woman." I smiled, but endeavoured to convince my Eliza that nothing was meant; that it was an idle flourish of the lady, and ought to be passed by as such: but she smiled in her turn, reminding me of my own maxim in other matters, as to the excellent quality of caution, and begged leave to be permitted to exercise it on this occasion.

Before dinner-time the milliner and mantua-maker arrived; and also a tailor I had sent for. After a long consultation, and much discussion with these important personages, all points were at length settled; and on Saturday evening our undress suits came home. On Sunday morning we prepared for church, a happiness looked forward to by us with pleasure, ever since our arrival; and in truth we much needed some spiritual help through the ordinary means of grace: for we felt the high tone of devotional feeling much subdued since we quitted our inter-tropical paradise. My dear wife being dressed in the new mode, found great difficulty in walking with high heels, not having worn any for more than two years, and those were low compared with the present mode. Her farthingale too was cumbersome, and altogether she felt very uncomfortable; a little black hat with feathers being the only tolerable part of her attire. I had less to complain of; the good taste of my Eliza having decided for me against lace. My suit, therefore, was a plain one, for which I was thankful; deep ruffles had been appended to my shirts, at the breast and wrists; my knee and shoe buckles were handsome; and as I would not submit to the torture of a toupee, my head was accommodated with a morning peruke in tie; and a plain hat, with a silver loop and button. Thus attired, we attended divine service in a hired carriage, at the church of St Martin-le-Grand; and on our return to the hotel, after having dined, we endeavoured to keep alive the good habit of reading the Scriptures.

On Monday we returned the visit of Mr and Mrs Child, and left our names, they not being at home. I then proceeded to Lombard Street, where I met Mr Perry, who took me into an inner room, leaving Mrs Seaward the while in the carriage at the door. He lost no time in compliments, but proceeded immediately to converse on business: said he had to congratulate both himself and me on his judgment in vesting my money in

the three per cent. South Sea transferable stock ; for that the fours would now certainly soon be paid off, to the great loss of the holders : that the threes had advanced, since he made the purchase for me in May last year, from 83 to 99, which latter sum was the quotation at Change Alley this day ; and although the fours had also risen considerably, namely, from 105 to 114, yet whenever the ministry found themselves able to do it—which they might accomplish this day, if they knew how to go about it—they could pay off every hundred, with a corresponding hundred in money ; that is, with a £100 three percent. stock, and the additional bonus of £1 or £2. “But,” continued he, “there are wheels within wheels, Mr Seaward ; and that which ought to grease the large wheel, is made use of to grease the small ones. I am a Whig, sir, and a supporter of the King’s government ; but there is a want of principle in the men at the head of affairs that would disgrace Change Alley. The truth is, men in office too frequently sacrifice principle to a momentary expediency, which to me is no small evidence of poor talents.” Having said this with some degree of warmth, he apologised for having allowed himself to quit the subject of our business ; but the truth I believe was, he had taken some pains to advise the minister on the subject of paying off the four per cent. stock ; and his good offices having been treated rather negligently, he was piqued, and could not suppress his indignation.

I, however, thought the present a favourable opportunity to mention my wish to purchase a grant of the islands, and accordingly I broached the subject to him. “There will be some difficulty in it, I suppose,” he replied ; “yet it is not three years ago, since grants of lands in the island of St Christopher’s were given, to the amount of £40,000, to portion off the Princess Royal, on her marriage with the Prince of Orange.”—“But how shall I set about it ?” I asked. He paused a little, then said, “There are so many ways that I am at a loss how to direct you ; if there was but the King’s highway, I should not then hesitate to point out the road. Excuse me, Mr Seaward,” continued he, after another short pause, “but would you object to wade through dirty water to accomplish this business ; or is it your intention to go to it simply as a man of business, and in that way put it to issue ?”—“As a matter of business,” I replied. “I will not approach the minister through any dirty channels. The truth is, Mr Perry, I desire to accomplish the business with no other view, and for no other purpose, than securing the poor people already there, in their little possessions, made somewhat valuable to them by their own labour and my patronage ; but with regard

to my own advantage, I would freely bind myself to give all the money I may ever derive from it to the minister's lackey, or to anyone else he might choose to appoint."—"Give me your hand, sir," said old Perry; "I will endeavour to negotiate for you; but in these times a suspicion of indirect interest in the thing will not be lost sight of; and until Sir Robert Walpole can be induced to see it as it is, he will suspect it to be something of more importance than you are disposed to admit; and so withhold the grant until he be satisfied in some way or other on the subject." I had no argument to offer against this, and therefore finished by accepting his kind offices in the business: adding, that I would rest the result on his endeavours, and my own integrity of intention.

This consultation being brought to a close, he urged me to invest the doubloons and dollars I had brought with me to England in the three per cents.: but I told him it was probable I should have occasion for the whole money, and would therefore allow it to remain in Spanish coin. "Do not do that," said he, "send it to market; it will never bring a better price; and I will then place the amount to your credit, and allow you two per cent for it, as I have hitherto done for all moneys above one hundred pounds, and it will then be equally at your command as now." I did not hesitate, and fixed the next day to count out the doubloons and dollars, for the purpose of converting them into current money; I then shook the old gentleman cordially by the hand, and took my leave,—a favourable impression being made, I believe, on both sides.

My Eliza was not tired waiting for me, but she was glad to see me again, and as I stepped into the coach, my eyes were met by her endearing smile. "My Edward," said she, "I thought I had lost you." As we drove back to the hotel, I would have recounted to her all that had passed between Mr Perry and myself, but the noise of the wheels, and of carts and other carriages, and of people bawling about the streets all sorts of things to sell, and chairs to mend, and bellows to mend, as if the crier himself had a pair of blacksmith's bellows within him, she could not make out a single sentence I uttered; I therefore covered my mouth with my hand, which diverted her a good deal, and placing my other hand round her waist to keep her steady, the rough-going coach jolted along, until at length we reached our quiet hotel.

While dinner was getting ready I detailed the banker's conversation, with which she was much pleased, observing that it had been conducted quite in the way she liked, and she was

"glad Mr Perry showed his colours," using an expression to which she had been much accustomed at our dear far-distant home, when Drake and I were discussing maritime matters, and she ventured to hope, from what had passed, that through the agency of Mr Perry the business would be done, if it could be done at all.

After dinner, Mother Osborne, our hostess, came in, with many courtesies and apologies, saying there was a tirewoman without she could recommend, and if the Lady Seaward would see her she should feel obliged. (Mrs Osborne was an unconscious prophetess.) My dear wife could not resist this; and where is the wife, under similar circumstances, that could? Madame Filibert was introduced, and she commenced her address in French. When she had proceeded for a considerable time with the complimentary prologue, in which "*milady*" and "*beaucoup d'honneur*" were repeated twenty times, my simple-minded Eliza told her she did not understand French; and therefore would only trouble her to show some of the head-dresses, if she had brought any with her, one of which, perhaps, she might take to oblige Mrs Osborne. Two women were now called in, carrying a large covered wicker basket, out of which were brought indescribable things: they were placed severally on the table; and, to my great amusement, Madame Filibert took them up one after another, putting them on her own head before the looking-glass. One was *charmante*, another *magnifique*, a third *superbe*; but the fourth—*O milady, regardez celle là; c'est une tire tête unique. J'avois faite la même pour sa majesté la Reine.* It certainly was handsome, being made chiefly of gold tissue, but of a quality far inferior to that we had found in the cave. After some parley, my wife purchased it. "Now," said she, "Madame Filibert, is this the richest tissue of gold that is made?" The tirewoman answered in tolerable English, that nothing in Europe could surpass it; if she did not speak true, she would give it for nothing. "I will not tie you to your word," returned my Eliza, "but I will show you a piece of tissue with which it cannot be compared." She then went up to the bedroom, and brought down a piece of the plain gold; two of the four being richly wrought. The tirewoman, at sight of it, expressed her astonishment, exclaiming, "It was all gold! there was never anything like it seen in Europe! it was certainly from Persia, or China, or the gold mines." She anxiously desired a little bit of it, which my dear wife would have given to her; but at my whisper that some possible mischief might come out of it, she politely declined complying with Madame

Filibert's wish : so the business concluded with her by paying for the tire she had chosen ; on which Madame, with her women, made their obeisance and departed. This scene afforded us abundance of pleasantries for the evening.

On the following day we received an invitation to dinner from Mr and Mrs Child, and in consequence care was taken that our dress-clothes should be brought home in time. When the day arrived we dressed : my dear wife's brocade was rich, and no doubt highly fashionable ; the hoop large ; the ruffles were of blonde, and she wore the tire purchased from Madame Filibert. I had presented her with a diamond necklace and ear-rings, the price of which is the only secret I ever kept from her in my life ; but she placed it to the right account, and accepted them, as I gave them, with feelings of deep regard. My suit was embroidered velvet with white silk stockings, and a peruke in the best mode. As I took her hand to lead her down stairs to the carriage, she looked up at me with her own sweet smile, saying, "My Edward has given me a diamond necklace and ear-rings,—will he stop at the jeweller's, and give his Eliza a diamond ring also?"—"With the greatest pleasure, my beloved," I replied. The coachman was then ordered to stop on Ludgate Hill, at Harding's, where we both got out ; and I was proceeding to choose for her a ring. "No, Edward," she said, "I must be selfish for once ; it must be of my own choosing, and the finest brilliant I can find." In a little time she fixed her eye on a splendid gem, elegantly set, but not a lady's ring ; then taking my hand, she put it on my finger, saying, "It is here I shall always love to see my brilliant : " then raising my hand to her lips, added to it a mark of her affection more precious than the gem itself.

We had not from thence far to drive to Mr Child's, so that I gave a few minutes to Mr Harding, as a proper finish to the affair : and notwithstanding the delay occasioned by this agreeable adventure, we arrived in very good time.

The company were numerous, and somewhat gorgeously attired ; the dinner was sumptuous ; and the liveries of the servants vied with their masters in the richness of the lace on their coats. We got through the ceremonies pretty well ; but felt no inclination to copy the tone of conversation that was kept up afterwards. The subjects were low, and some of the expressions worse than low : the ribaldry of Fielding seemed to be the standard of wit, and some of the coarsest jokes of the Dean the signal for a general laugh ; the ladies drank rather freely, and few of them were without a snuff-box. I perceived

early in the afternoon how much my dear Eliza was disgusted with the society around her, although the ladies commended her fine taste, and more than one gentleman told her she was an angel. In the evening Mrs Child pressed her to take a seat at the quadrille table; and although she knew little of the game, politeness obliged her not to refuse. In the course of the evening a gentleman, Mr Powis, who with myself had refused cards, engaged me in conversation. He talked on a variety of political subjects, with the merits of which I was totally unacquainted; I however listened with great attention, being glad of an opportunity to pick up information in any way; and as I listened with attention, so I took care not to disclose my ignorance, but masked it by a well-timed assent; now and then adding a short, but, I hope, pertinent remark. He told Mr Child the next day I was one of the most sensible men he had conversed with for many years. The truth is, he went on flowingly from subject to subject for an hour, without my ever crossing his path; and if I stopped him a moment, it was only to set him off again with increased vigour and self-approbation; and therefore, forsooth, I was the most sensible man he had conversed with for many years! A moralist might adduce a maxim by no means contemptible from this man's folly:—*It is easier to listen than talk yourself into some people's good opinion.* However, Mr Powis took a fancy to me in consequence, and afterwards, if I am not mistaken, interested himself to serve me.

At ten o'clock we returned home. I was well enough pleased with our entertainment; but my dear wife found little to approve, and much to condemn. She delicately observed, blushing while she made the remark, that there seemed to be a frightful looseness of thought amongst them all, in every way; and she would not conceal from me that she had no doubt there was cheating at the card table. One of the ladies having been detected in hiding spadille, made a joke of it, which was passed by as a thing mighty clever, if other people were blind or stupid enough not to perceive it. "I will play no more cards with such persons, my dear Edward," she continued; "and, unless it be to oblige you, or to forward our views in getting the grant for our people, I would desire to avoid all such company in future."

During the remainder of the week I was engaged in business, partly at the custom-house, on the subject of the gold and silver articles. But my first object was to ascertain the state of my finances. I had called at the Bank agreeable to promise, and counted out 1900 doubloons, and 3000 dollars from the iron chest, reserving 30 of the gold pieces and 300 of the dollars

which remained, for my own use, lest I might at some future day require them. The doubloons had sold for £6650, and the dollars for £675, and passed to my credit. I now received my account current, in which I perceived £67,424 in three per cent. S.S.T. stock, purchased at 83 in May of last year; and £2105 in the same stock, bought in January last at 95; the whole cost in money being £58,000. After the statement of other items, *pro* and *con*, there appeared a balance of £9554 11s 6d to my credit this day, viz., the 28th of August, 1736. So that without taking the value of the contents of the box at the custom-house into consideration, or my brother's debt to me, I could estimate my fortune at nearly £68,000 sterling, and my income from Government securities upwards of £2000 a year; each half yearly dividend being £1074 2s. Having thus ascertained the state and condition of my money concerns, I felt myself prepared to square my expenditures accordingly, although such conduct might not be quite *à-la-mode*.

On Sunday we attended church, morning and evening. And early in the week had the pleasure to receive letters from dear Mr Goldsmith and my sisters, in acknowledgment of some we wrote immediately after our arrival. They hoped to see us soon; and we as sincerely hoped and desired to escape from the vortex we saw gathering round us, to the peaceful retreat of our virtuous, gentle, and dearly-loved friends.

Some of the persons we met at Mr Child's dinner called on us; they were visits merely of ceremony, which in due time we returned. But Mrs Child had been teasing my wife to take a house and set up an establishment. She said I was as rich as a Jew; that Child had told her so; she insinuated that husbands did not let their wives into the secrets of their wealth, or their amours; and that she would bring her out with *eclat*; and if I said a word about it, she and the ombre party would teach me better manners! My dear Eliza felt too indignant to take any further notice of this wicked counsel, than politely to reject the advice; saying—"Mr Seaward and myself have arranged our plans; and I, therefore, must decline following the suggestions of any one. I believe, while we remain in London, we shall continue at this hotel."—"No one will visit you here, my dear Mrs Seaward," replied her visitor.—"If that be the case, Mrs Child," rejoined my wife, "I perhaps may have reason to be glad that we have concluded not to take a house during our stay in town."—"Well, to be sure," exclaimed the banker's wife, with a giggling laugh, "that is the funniest as well as the most ridiculous thing I ever heard said in my

life! I heard something like it on the stage the other night;—you surely picked it up there.” My Eliza made no answer. Mrs Child continued the giggle; then rising suddenly to depart—“Well! *bon jour, charmante!*” she exclaimed; adding, “I hope soon to have the pleasure to see you again, *chère ami.*” These attempts of Mrs Child, although perhaps the offspring of folly rather than wickedness, were extremely disagreeable; so that we agreed to mix with her society as little as possible; and that I should strain every nerve to obtain the grant, that we might escape from the pestilence of London.

Sir Robert Walpole was at present out of town; the King was gone to Hanover; but the Queen-Regent was reported to be a kind-hearted lady, and might be more readily disposed than his Majesty to accede to my request. Mr Powis had proposed to speak to Mr Paxton about it; but I at once rejected indirect influence. Mr Powis had said—“A couple of hundred pounds would get me the right ear of the minister, and that every one knew he was deaf in the other ear; therefore, it was of the utmost consequence to obtain a comprehensible hearing.” But I also had a right and an unhearing ear on some subjects; and Mr Powis happened not to address me through my right ear.

However, early in September, the murder of Captain Porteus by the Edinburgh people brought the minister to London to hold a cabinet council; and very soon after this, Mr Perry contrived to solicit an interview for me, and procured a card with my name written on it, bearing Sir Robert's initials in one corner. My dear wife and myself rejoiced, when he called on me with the news of his success so far.—“Now, Mr Seaward,” said he, “I hate bribery and corruption in all shapes; and I have reason to believe you are of the same mind:—but when you take this card, you must give a crown to the porter at the gate, another to the warder in the great hall, and half-a-guinea to the servant in waiting, who will show you into the secretary's room. And when you give him, I mean the secretary, the card, put a couple of guineas into his hand, wrapped up in a piece of clean paper, saying, “Sir, I will thank you to give this to those to whom I have given so much trouble.” I soon got my lesson, and thanked Mr Perry for the trouble he had taken in the business.

The next morning I went to the minister's residence, at the hour appointed for my attendance; and passed the porter and the warder with silver keys, the servant in waiting with a small golden key; and next, having delivered my card to the secre-

tary, and put two gold pieces, neatly wrapped up, into his hand, saying the precise words dictated by Mr Perry, he made a gentle inclination of his head, and dropped the offering into one of his waistcoat pockets, a pouch ample enough to contain a peck, Winchester measure. He took my card away, and, returning in a few minutes, desired me to wait. I was shown into a room where there were five gentlemen already in expectation of a summons. The anxious brow or enquiring eye was manifested in every face around me; but nothing passed beyond some remarks on the oppressiveness of the weather. In about an hour I was requested to follow the servant in waiting; but had scarcely got beyond the ante-room, when a person with a star made his appearance, desiring to see Sir Robert. I was therefore under the painful necessity of returning to the other expectants for half-an-hour longer, during which time three more gentlemen came in; no doubt all with silver and gold keys, and little packets for the secretary's enormous and very fashionable pocket. I was at length again summoned; and being ushered into the minister's library, found him sitting before a large round table, in an old carved oak chair, with a pen in his hand, surrounded by written and printed papers, and the moment I entered he began to write.—“You must not speak, sir, till he is at leisure, and speaks to you,” whispered the attendant gently in my ear. In a few minutes the great man laid down his pen, and without farther preface or ceremony, he addressed me, and the following dialogue ensued verbatim; for which I am not indebted to my memory, as will afterwards appear.

Sir Robert Walpole.—“I understand, sir, you want a grant of some island, or rocky islands, on the Spanish Main: I wish to know upon what grounds you make this request?”

Mr Seaward.—“I was shipwrecked, sir, nearly three years ago, on those rocky islands when on my passage from Jamaica to the Bay of Honduras. We had been driven out of our course by a hurricane; the vessel struck in the night: the captain and crew took to the boat, and no doubt were lost. Next morning the brig drifted in over the reef, and I with my wife were the only persons saved. We landed on the largest island, and remained there alone, making the best arrangement I could for our future comfort. In about six months afterwards, two negro men and three women who had escaped shipwreck from a Spanish schooner were also cast upon the island. We then all laboured industriously to propagate yams and maize, with some other seeds and roots I had taken on board the vessel, for

my use at the Bay of Honduras. Some months after this, having seen vessels pass, we took the brig's fore-top-gallant-mast and ensign, and erected a flag-staff on the highest point of the land : very soon after it was done, I heard guns in the offing, and on ascending the height saw a Spanish armed brig chasing an English schooner, and firing at her with her bow-chases : I immediately hoisted the colours, and the schooner made for the inlet. We had three or four muskets, and some boarding-pikes, I had brought from the vessel, which we carried with us for our own defence, should it be necessary. But, sir, I could not stand by and see the Spaniard firing at an English schooner directly under our flag without making a return upon his decks ; on which he hauled his wind and stood off. The schooner, which was of Norfolk in Virginia, came then safely to an anchor, and the Spaniard came to in the offing. In the night, however, he sent in his boat to take the schooner ; but we met his boat with all the force we could collect, namely, six or eight of us altogether, armed with the muskets and boarding-pikes, and some axes and bill-hooks ; and we succeeded in not only repelling him, but in taking from him ten muskets, with his ammunition, and two Bermudian negroes, his prisoners, that he had put in the boat as being good rowers. The officer gave up his sword ; and I sent him and his crew back, thus disarmed, to their commander with a message, saying that the conduct of the captain of the *Guarda Costa* was unpardonable, and it should be represented.—“I am afraid, sir,” continued Mr Seaward, “I am tiring you with a long story ; and if you please, here it shall end.”—Sir Robert replied—“Go on, sir.”—Mr Seaward resumed—“After repairing some damages the schooner had sustained, I took a passage in her to Jamaica, and there purchased a Bermudian vessel, in which I carried to the rocky island a new main-mast, a suit of sails, a captain and a crew for the brig in which I had been stranded ; and also some artificers and negroes, with stock and implements, to settle a little colony where Providence had placed me. I applied to the Governor of Jamaica for a commission as captain-commandant of the islands ; that I might be legally authorised to repel any attack of the Spaniards against us, and to give protection to any vessel taking shelter from them among our rocks. And having obtained this credential, I took a twelve-pound gun to the island, which is now mounted on the height near the flag-staff ; and I have trained the people to arms for defence, and have taken possession of the group of rocks and islands in the name of our most gracious Lord the King. I am, therefore, desirous

to have a *grant* of all those rocks and islands under the seal of his Majesty."

Sir Robert Walpole.—"This is a very serious business, sir; I have heard your version of it: the court of Spain may have occasion to represent it very differently. When the necessary enquiries have been made, my secretary shall have directions to require your attendance."

Mr Seaward.—"Sir Robert Walpole, I should despise myself, and one I love dearer than my life would despise me, and the God I desire to serve would abhor me, if I could lie to you or to any man, or in one tittle deviate from the truth. If I had not loved and honoured my King, I need not have taken possession of those unpeopled rocks in his name. The Spaniard would have gladly acknowledged them and me! And in what way can I more substantially show my allegiance than by offering to pay for a *grant* of that which is, in point of right, my own? Neither England nor Spain, nor any other country, had ever thought it worth their while to take possession of those rocks; and, as I am not a courtier, I hope you will pardon my free declaration, that if I am to be pushed by, and put off with the answer you have now given me, I will immediately go to Madrid, and try how the matter will be received there. Recollect, Sir Robert, if the King is to have a right in those islands it comes through my right: yet I wish to come to you for a grace; but when I have grace, to ask as a favour, that which is a right, I do not see much grace in refusing a right, as if it were a favour."

Sir Robert Walpole.—"You are very warm, young man. If you were to go to Madrid, they would send you to the Castle for firing on their Guarda Costa, and in all probability you would be executed as an uncommissioned pirate. Call on me to-morrow morning at ten o'clock, and I will see what can be done."

I called on the minister the next morning according to appointment, but instead of seeing him I got no further than his secretary. This gentleman was abundantly courteous, telling me I could not see Sir Robert, but that he would do everything in his power to serve me and promote my views; he even overwhelmed me with compliments, said I ought to be made governor of Seaward Islands, with a handsome salary, but that the hands of the minister were absolutely tied: Pultney and Wyndham, and some others, kept up such a continued alarm, that nothing could be done: however, he could assure me that the minister was well disposed towards me; and if I could call in a few days, he would let me know when I might call again. But

he insinuated that Sir Robert was rather displeased with my freedom of speech, and that he (the secretary) feared unless we could make a friend of a person who has the ear of the minister, that he saw no end to my difficulties.—“Then, sir,” said I, “you have no instructions to arrange this business with me?”—“O, bless you, sir,” he replied, “businesses are not done in the kind of way you anticipate. At present I can do no more than promise my good offices, and I have done so, relying on your good sense to make a grateful and proper use of them.”—“I don’t understand your way of doing business, sir,” I rejoined; “and I have, therefore, only to beg you will accept my best acknowledgments in the same spirit you have offered me your best services.” The secretary stared at me, and each bowing very low to the other, I retired.

On returning home, I detailed to my dear wife all that had passed. She commended me for my true and upright spirit; saying—“If you can secure the islands to our people by honest and direct means, even at the cost of a considerable sum of money, do it; but disdain, as you have done, any admission of bad conduct; or any overture of bribery to secretaries or go-betweens.”—“Spoken like yourself, my best love!” I replied: “I desire nothing more than your commendation in all I say and do, which never fails to secure to me my own approbation, and assures me of the approval of Him who tries all hearts.”

On the following day I had a visit from Mr Powis. After the usual complimentary conversation, he said—“Well, I knew how it would be; you had an interview with Sir Robert, and it terminated just as I should have anticipated.”—“And how do you know what turn it took, or how it terminated, Mr Powis?” I replied.—“On your honour, Mr Seaward, you will not disclose while I live any communication I may make to you, and I will tell you more than you could suppose. I do not deceive you by saying that you won on my friendship the first day I had the pleasure of meeting you at Mr Child’s; and I am, indeed, anxious to serve you. I told you that the minister has two ears, which, perhaps, you think a very foolish observation. You did not speak to him through the right ear; although, I understand you were very impressive, so much so, that he said—‘I must know something more of this young man; I should not like him for an enemy.’ But this sort of Puffendorff reasoning, my friend,” continued he, “with a prime minister won’t do. Therefore, if you desire to gain your point, be advised by me; lower your tone, and get the right ear of the minister;—which, by the by, he does not wear on his own head; only having there the

left and t'other ear." Mr Powis appeared to be so fond of this joke about the right ear, and seeming to lay so much stress on it, which being coupled by what the secretary had said about making a friend of a person "who had the ear of the minister," that I really began to believe there was an auricular pivot somewhere, on which only this business, and perhaps all others of a similar kind, could favourably turn.—"But," resumed Mr Powis, "you have not promised to preserve inviolably, during my life, whatever I may impart to you."—"I faithfully promise," I replied.—"Do you remember," returned he, "what passed between Sir Robert Walpole and you at the interview?"—"I certainly do remember the substance of it," I replied.—"Is that anything like it?" he resumed, putting a sheet of paper into my hands. It was the dialogue itself. After reading it attentively,—"The very words," I replied: "you have astonished me, Mr Powis, how is this? there was not any person in the room."—"You are right," said he; "there was not any person in the room but Sir Robert and yourself; but there is a listening door, or rather a person within hearing behind a door, that takes down correctly the conversation held with every one admitted to an audience; and this is one of the minister's vouchers, for the uprightness and integrity of his conduct, which he always preserves in person. And I do believe he is an honest man, and means well," continued Mr Powis, "but he is so beset, and finds so much difficulty in managing Parliament, that he must preserve appearances, however ready he may be, under the rose, to grant through other channels anything for a hope of parliamentary services; and, indeed, he is so hard driven in this way that he has been necessitated to establish a sort of fund, which is fed by such means as I have hinted at, for the purpose of securing votes from that quarter of the world 'from whence,' the Psalmist says, 'promotion cometh;' and the treasurer of this fund is the person who has his right ear. Do you understand me?" I thanked Mr Powis with much sincerity for the disclosure he had made to me, and I gave him credit for the purity of his motives towards myself; but I did not feel that I could act upon the information he had given me; it would be a direct violation of my principles, and of the principles of one, whose approbation I courted in all matters involving the question of moral right. He endeavoured to laugh me out of my resolution, but it would not do.—"Why is all this, my good friend?" said I; "there is no absolute favour asked. A grant of some barren rocks in the Caribbean Sea is desired; and an equivalent ready to be paid. Lands were granted on the same

principles, the other day I may say, in the island of St Christopher."—"You don't understand it," replied Mr Powis: "there is always, in these cases, an abatement in the ostensible and visible price, which is to be accounted for to Parliament, in consideration of a secret sum, or invisible influence, to support the minister in power." The problem was now solved; and he had nearly talked me over into the necessity of compliance, if I would carry my point, when my dear Eliza came in. He appealed to her, and went over his arguments again. She reflected a few minutes on what he had said, and then replied—"It is altogether morally wrong, Mr Powis; the path is crooked; and to my mind those considerations are quite sufficient to decide against all indirect overtures, whatever might be the result."—"Pardon me, madam," he replied, "if I say, it appears to me you and Mr Seaward are too fastidious to accomplish any point of importance in life."—"There is no point, Mr Powis," she replied, "of sufficient importance to call for the sacrifice of singleness of intention; without which, all is perplexity ending in remorse. And if Sir Robert Walpole cannot manage the Parliament in any other way than you have explained, he is a foolish and a wicked man." Mr Powis was not prepared for this honest eloquence, and here the subject dropped: but I felt I could not do less than ask him to dine with us in a friendly way, which he courteously accepted.

After dinner, the subject turned again upon obtaining the grant; and as the conversation I had had with the minister served to let Mr Powis into a good deal of our history, I took care to make him comprehend that I had no pecuniary interest in the success of my application; that it was set on foot solely for the security of the people located there; and, if I were pertinaciously refused my request, I would first turn the place and people over to the Crown of Spain, and then, as I had an ample fortune, and should have nothing else to do, I possibly might get a seat in Parliament, and trouble the Right Hon. Baronet in a way not quite agreeable to him. "I am, Mr Powis," continued I, "a Whig in principle; but I feel that all the honour I bring to my king is reflected on myself; yet, loyal subjects and faithful servants must not be treated like dogs." Our friend was mute for some time: perhaps he had thought me rather an object of helplessness than otherwise, and as such had stepped forward to serve me; and I thought his reply justified the conclusion; but I may be mistaken. "As this is the case, Mr Seaward," said he, "I might leave you to fight your own battle; for it is odds you do not beat the minister." A smile of inward

worth and strength passed across my dear wife's countenance; and putting claret in her glass, "Come, Mr Powis," said she, "we will drink the King's health, and all his true friends." Powis and I filled a bumper, as the monks would fill *au bon père*, and we drank the toast, like honest and true men. Mr Powis was a good-hearted man, at least I thought so; and, as I said before, believed he had taken a fancy to me; so, notwithstanding the issue of his kindly-intended visit, I was not surprised he took leave of us in perfect good humour.

On the 23rd, I got the box of valuables from the clutches of the custom-house officers, after paying the duties; and was glad to find the contents uninjured and correct. We now began to think seriously of giving up any further attempt to procure the grant, notwithstanding what Mr Powis had said as to my chance of beating the minister; as I thought very differently from him on that point, and principle stood immovably in the way of the only now apparent practicable road. To-day, however, I had a call from Mr Powis; who told me, as I liked straightforward business, he thought he could not please me better than by putting the declaration I had made at our last interview in a train to reach Sir Robert Walpole, to try its effect; and he knew the minister had, in consequence, written a note to Mr Perry, to enquire whether I were the man of property I represented myself to be; and that Perry had replied, "he knew nothing more of my property than that I had a very handsome balance in his hands, and held upwards of £60,000 in three per cent. stock." I thanked Mr Powis for his information, and told him that he and Mr Perry both had acted perfectly right.

I waited anxiously for a week, venturing to hope that something might come out of this; but, being in the end disappointed, I began to suspect the accuracy of the statement Mr Powis had made; and I therefore put the question to Mr Perry, with respect to the minister's note, which he acknowledged to be correct, but added—"I cannot imagine how you can have come to the knowledge of the communication; for it was endorsed private, or I certainly would myself have told you." I replied that I was quite satisfied with his conduct; and as the communication to me was also endorsed private, he must excuse my not disclosing it. He then turned the conversation to the subject itself, and said, he feared I was too inflexible in my principles to succeed with the minister; but deeply regretted the despicable policy of expediency that actuated all his measures. by which he surrounded himself with rotten sticks,

and often lost the support of a staff of true British oak, for a consideration in itself not worth a straw. When this discourse drew to a close, I told him, if nothing occurred to prevent it, I should leave town next week, and act according to circumstances.

On Sunday we visited Greenwich, and, after attending divine service at the chapel, had the gratification of seeing the beautifully painted hall, finished a few years ago by Sir Christopher Wren, now no more. It is all very fine, or rather imposing, excepting what I would call the altar-piece; in which two miserable portraits of his present Majesty and the Prince of Wales are introduced. Here, to my great surprise and joy, we met Captain James and his wife; with whom we had the pleasure of dining, and passed altogether an interesting and highly agreeable day.

On Monday, the 4th of October, we began to pack up for quitting London, to revisit our dear friends at Awbury. While thus engaged, a lady called and sent up her name—Lady Sundon. My dear wife was soon ready to meet her; which she did with that courteous ease and dignity that ever flows from a noble and ingenuous nature; apologising, nevertheless, for being obliged to receive her in such a place, not as yet having any home in England, and being at this moment on the move from London. The stranger replied that an apology was rather due from her for venturing an intrusion; but she hoped the object of her visit would plead her excuse. After being seated, she said she had called by command of the Queen; who, having heard that Mrs Seaward possessed some very rich gold tissue, superior to anything ever seen in Europe, Her Majesty had honoured her—Lady Sundon—with a command to purchase it at any price, if it were indeed what it was reported to be.—My dear wife smiled. “That cannot be, madam,” said she; “but I shall be most happy to present some pieces of gold tissue, or anything else I am possessed of, to her Majesty.”—“I fear,” replied the lady, “the Queen cannot accept of it from Mrs Seaward.”—“Then,” rejoined my wife, “I shall have to regret, for once in my life, that I am only Mrs Seaward.” After a pause, the stranger requested to be gratified with a sight of the gold web; and, in compliance with the wish, one of the richly wrought pieces (which the tire-woman had not seen) was shown to her. She was struck at once by its incomparable richness, and could not restrain her admiration; observing—“This, truly, is fit for a queen.” I now left my dear Eliza and the lady together. It seems they

soon became sociable, for I found her still with my Eliza, after an hour's absence. My well-judging wife had profited by the opportunity, to give her an outline of our shipwreck, and of our little settlement; and also told her, that our business in England was to purchase from the Crown a grant of the islands, so as to secure our people in the possession of their grounds and habitations; but as we could not succeed in obtaining it, we were going away, and would try to establish them as well as we could without it. She did not, in the course of this conversation, omit to mention how we had trained them to the observance of divine worship, and to reading on the Sabbath-day. Lady Sundon was a kind-hearted, and somewhat pious woman; so that she took great interest in the detail, and, on taking leave, promised to endeavour to persuade her Majesty to allow Mrs Seaward to present the tissue for acceptance. "But, at any rate," added she, taking my wife's hand, "I hope you will not leave town immediately. I am desirous of cultivating your acquaintance, and I would say your friendship." My dear wife returned her a suitable compliment, and I had the honour of handing her Ladyship to the carriage, which bore the royal arms.

After the departure of this lady, my Eliza and myself turned the matter over, and hoped it might prove one of those mysterious interpositions of Providence, to accomplish that for us which we had failed in ability to do for ourselves, and, in consequence, were about to abandon as hopeless; we therefore determined to wait the issue of this adventure.

On Tuesday, my wife had a second visit from Lady Sundon, who imparted to her the pleasing intelligence that the Queen would receive her at the palace on Thursday; and it had been arranged that her Ladyship, who now told us she was Mistress of the Robes and Lady in Waiting to her Majesty, should call in a royal carriage for Mrs Seaward, and accompany her to the presence. I soon begged permission to retire; and having left them together, Lady Sundon very kindly entered into all the minutæ, with my wife, of the honour intended her. The dress she was to wear was then settled, and the etiquette to be observed was pointed out; but there was a point on which her Ladyship had directions to be informed. "What is Mr Seaward?—is he a merchant?"—"He was a merchant," replied my wife: "he is no longer one. He gave up his business entirely to his brother, and is now in the possession of an ample fortune."—"I wish he had rank of any kind," replied Lady Sundon,—"The only rank he has that I can mention," returned

my wife, "is that of Captain Commandant of Seaward Islands; and I think I can show your Ladyship his commission, signed by the Governor of Jamaica." My Eliza soon laid her hands on the document, and showed it to her noble guest. "That will do," said she; "I am glad to know this; it may be of some importance to you, at least in your introduction to her Majesty, if nothing more."

The next day, I was surprised early in the morning by a visit from Mr Powis. "You will have a message this morning," said he, "to attend the minister; be therefore in readiness. He says you are like Cassius: he must be wary of such like men."—"Let him know," returned I, "that I am not like Cassius;—but," continued I, "you are indeed very kind, Mr Powis; you have acted towards me with a steady and persevering friendship, notwithstanding I have rejected your counsel."—"I esteem you the more, Mr Seaward," said he, "for having done so, although it proves you have little experience in life." He had scarcely finished the sentence, when the note arrived from Sir Robert's secretary, desiring my attendance at ten o'clock. I hastened to dress in my plain suit, in which I had paid my former visit, and was punctual to the appointment.

Mr Secretary was superabundantly courteous on the occasion; so that I was admitted at once into the library. The minister was not there; but came in presently, by a door that led from it into some other room or passage;—perhaps this was the listening-door spoken of by Mr Powis. "I am glad to see you, Mr Seaward," said he: "draw a chair by me, and we will talk over this business of yours." Then taking up a chart of the West Indies, that lay on the table—"Show me where the rocks and islets are situated, for which you want the grant." I looked on the chart attentively a little while, then said—"They are not laid down here, Sir Robert; unless the Seranhas are intended to represent them." I then drew cross lines through the latitude of $14^{\circ} 30'$ N. and 81° W., saying—"This is as near the spot as I can tell you. The latitude is correct, but the longitude has not been ascertained by observation." He then desired to know their extent; which I described to him with as much accuracy as I could. "Now," said he, "tell me honestly what is your object in seeking to obtain this grant?" I told him. He shook his head. "I am not surprised, sir," said I, "that you do not credit me in such disinterested conduct; but I speak the truth; and I will bind myself not to appropriate rents or profits to myself in any way from the grant, beyond freely bestowing its privileges on such per-

sons as I may approve, under the penalty of forfeiture of the money I may pay to the Crown, and of the grant also.”—“Well,” returned he, “I perceive you understand the strong side of an argument—the *argumentum ad res*; and I will take you at your word. Now,” continued he, “who is to estimate the value of this place?”—“Any one you please to name, sir,” I replied, “if you will have the kindness to settle a principle on which the valuation is to be made.”—“You are no contemptible diplomatist, sir,” said the minister. “Will you favour me,” continued he, “with a principle?”—“I know of none, sir,” I resumed, “that will apply; but, for want of a better, I would take the average price of the uncultivated lands of St Christopher’s, sold three years ago on account of the Crown.”—“That will do, I think,” replied he; “but how shall we estimate the extent?”—“I can supply that, sir,” said I, “as I have a rude survey of the rocks and islands, which can be measured; and I should wish my map, such as it is, to be copied, and appended to the patent.”—“Mr Seaward,” answered the minister, “it shall be settled in your own way; I am happy to meet your wishes. I have satisfied myself that you are not a needy adventurer, and I am disposed to serve you. My secretary shall wait on you, with proper persons on the part of the Crown, within a few days; and the business shall be done.” I thanked him for his kind condescension, and ventured to express a hope that I might find an occasion, at some future period, to show the sincerity of my professions. Sir Robert bowed, and I took my leave.

On my way home, I ruminated on the great change I had witnessed in the manner and conduct of the minister towards me, but could not satisfy myself as to the cause. It can never be that he has been frightened into the measure by Mr Powis’s report of my declaration. O no; it were presumption and folly to think so. Perhaps he is belied, in his desiring to make a market of this trumpery business, for the sake of getting a little money towards a fund for corrupt parliamentary purposes. He had a right to be on his guard against a stranger; and I think there is a sufficient explanation of his conduct in what he said as to his having instituted an enquiry, and that he was now satisfied as to my being no needy adventurer. However, be this as it may, said I to myself, “if the thing be but done, and honestly done, it is of little consequence to me how it was brought about.”

My beloved wife was rejoiced at my success, and not less gratified by the respectful civility I had received. She, too,

endeavoured to account for the wonderful change which somehow or other had been wrought in Sir Robert ; but was as much at a loss as myself to solve the riddle satisfactorily : I told her all I thought, to which we added many other surmises ; but of one thing only we were certain—that I had not waded through dirty water to the object.

My dear Eliza now entered on the subject of her *presentation*, to take place to-morrow ; and told me she had ordered a white satin dress, with a Spanish hat of the same, which was to be surmounted by two ostrich feathers, agreeable to Lady Sundon's arrangement. "Dear Eliza," said I, "you ought to wear pearls with this dress ; and I shall be highly gratified in presenting them to you."—"So I thought," was her reply ; "but as her Ladyship said nothing about them, I made up my mind to say nothing either, for they are expensive ornaments, and you have already laid out more money on my neck than it is worth ; therefore, I am content to go to Court in perfect simplicity of attire."—"Ah ! my sweet pet," I replied, "thy neck is worth more than all the pearls of the Pacific, and all the diamonds of Brazil ! we will go together to the jeweller's ; and I shall be happy, indeed, in contributing so small an addition to your innate value." Before dinner-time we made our purchases ; necklace, earrings, and a pearl loop, with a diamond star for the hat, and a pretty little brilliant ring besides, which I quietly put on her finger : for the amount of which, with unfeigned pleasure, I gave an order on my banker for 130 guineas.

On Thursday at noon, the royal carriage called with the Lady Sundon. My lovely wife was dressed, and ready to receive her. "Dear Mrs Seaward," she exclaimed, "you look like an angel just dropped from heaven."—My Eliza blushed, and taking her by the hand, said—"Then I must apply to my husband, and to you, the words of Mr Pope, to Orpheus and St Cecilia." Her Ladyship paused, not immediately recollecting the allusion : seeing it was so, my beloved and peerless one repeated the lines, turning first to me, and then to her—

"He raised a mortal to the skies,
She drew an angel down."

Something beyond the ordinary tone of feeling followed this, in which our noble visitor bore a part ; and she finished the scene in perfect keeping (as painters express themselves), by quoting from our new but admirable poet, Thomson—

"Oh, happy they, the happiest of their kind,
Whom gentler stars unite !"

I will tell the Queen all this," continued she; "I am sure her Majesty will be quite delighted."

The two pieces of embossed gold tissue had been wrapped in a piece of white satin; the original curious paper wrappers being previously folded round each piece. The parcel was placed in the carriage; and my dear wife then taking leave of me, by kissing my forehead as I bent my head towards her, whispered—"Do not be uneasy about me; I feel quite collected and assured under the protection of this kind lady." Lady Sundon made her precede her to the carriage, and I had the honour to hand them in.

After their departure, I received a visit from Mr Powis. He met the carriage just as it turned up into the Strand, and recognised Mrs Seaward.—"Well, my good friend," said he, "I am come to congratulate you on your success with the minister; but do tell me how you think it has been brought about?"—"I cannot tell you, my kind friend," I replied; "you know quite as much about it as I do; therefore, if you cannot explain it, I have not a ground to surmise on."—"It is very strange," cried he; "no *ear-tickling*—no *palm-tickling*; if he was not talked into it by what you said to him, or alarmed into it by what you said to others, backed by the result of his enquiries to Perry, I cannot account for it. His secretary cannot account for it; the thing is altogether out of common course: but," continued he, "I saw Mrs Seaward in one of the royal carriages; there may be something in that I don't know."—"If there be any in that," I replied, "perhaps Sir Robert having so much to do with Highland chiefs, some of them, or their seers, through the second sight, may have apprised him of what would happen, so that he has been beforehand with royal favour."—"Upon my life, Seaward," said Mr Powis, smiling, "you are too bold: what would Sir Robert say if he were to hear of this *repartee* at his expense?"—"I should be heartily glad of it," I replied; "nothing would make me more proud than that he should come to the conclusion that I am very unlike most men of the present day." My friend Powis seemed a little staggered what to make of me; and, indeed, so was I with regard to him. He began to think he had yet to make me out; and I began to think I had made him out. I don't know whether he took me for the Czar, risen from the dead, and in disguise; but I began to suspect him of being the right ear of the minister, or the whispering gallery appended to it: and, therefore, I put on my old armour of caution. He endeavoured again to agitate the question as to the cause of my success; and tried many indirect

questions to elicit from me where Mrs Seaward was going, and who it was that he saw with her in the royal carriage. I told him I did not deem myself at liberty to speak of Mrs Seaward's movements to my most intimate friends; there was a delicacy connected with every action of a woman that forbade it: he felt the rebuke, and here the subject ended.

After some trivial conversation, Mr Powis left me; but I must confess I was not easy after he was gone, lest I had wronged him in my mind; for he certainly seemed ever earnest in his desire to serve me, and had taken much pains to do so, as far as giving me information went; and it might be, that considering himself a connoisseur in matters of ministerial favour, and now taken by surprise at what had occurred to me, he was anxious to solve a problem to his mind out of all rule.

Reflections on Mr Powis soon gave way to a subject nearer and dearer to my heart; how it fared with my gentle Eliza in her new and trying situation: but I had confidence in her good sense, her fine discrimination of propriety in all situations, her native dignity, yet suavity of manner, and, not least, in her youth and beauty: for in truth, if the words of John Milton were ever applicable to any human being, they were to her, when she and Lady Sundon left me:—

“ Grace was in all her steps, Heaven in her eye,
In all her gestures dignity and love.”

At three o'clock my beloved returned. I received her with open arms. “Dear Edward,” she exclaimed, “we are met again!”—“But tell me about the Queen, dearest,” said I, “and how you got through your part of the interview.”—“O, quite well,” she replied; “but it was all ceremony. On our arrival at the palace, we were received by a gentleman in waiting, who escorted us to the ante-room. The parcel was brought up by some one, and placed on a marble table with gilt legs, which stood between two of the windows. In a few minutes another lady in waiting came to us, when Lady Sundon introduced me to her as the wife of Captain Seaward: this second lady took my hand, and while my friend (as I think I may call her) walked by my side, I was led into a room, where her Majesty was seated.—‘Courage!’ the lady whispered in my ear, and almost immediately after, letting my hand drop, courtesied gracefully to the Queen, saying, ‘I have the honour to present the wife of Captain Seaward to your Majesty.’—‘You are welcome, Mrs Seaward,’ said the Queen, ‘I am happy in seeing you here.’—‘I am too happy,’ I replied, ‘in finding myself in the presence of our illustrious Queen: I shall be happy in the recollection of

this day, until the latest period of my life.' I had scarcely finished the sentence, when Lady Sundon put the parcel into my arms, and, agreeable to previous arrangement, I then approached quite near to her Majesty, and, dropping on one knee, laid the parcel at her feet, saying—'If your Majesty will be graciously pleased to accept this small tribute of affectionate loyalty from the hands of your most devoted servant, your condescension will leave the deepest impression of gratitude on her heart.'—“Well done, Eliza!” I exclaimed, “Lady Sundon could not have played the courtier better herself.”—“Dear Edward,” replied my wife, “it was a set speech, dictated by her Ladyship for the occasion : but I certainly did feel what the words said.”—“Well, my love,” said I, “tell me all the rest ; I have been very rude to interrupt you, and have shown clearly enough that I never have been at Court.” My dear wife then resumed her account of the presentation :—“Her Majesty merely replied, ‘I have much pleasure in accepting anything from your hands, as a proof of my esteem for a good wife in trying circumstances.’ My friend Lady Sundon now took my hand and raised me, for I was a little affected by the compliment, then courtesying together before the Queen, her Majesty made a sign that we might retire : so we obeyed, but keeping our faces towards the royal person, until we got out of the presence, into the ante-room. Here my kind friend immediately kissed me, saying—‘Dear Mrs Seaward, you have acquitted yourself nobly : the carriage is in waiting for you ; hurry home to your husband, who will be made happy by the accounts you have to give him.’ I took leave of Lady Sundon in a manner her cordiality deserved, and at parting she promised to call on me in a day or two. A gentleman in waiting handed me to the carriage, and now, here I am, my dear Edward, with the sovereign of my heart.”

The week passed away without seeing her Ladyship, or hearing anything from Sir Robert's secretary relative to the grant. But it was soon known amongst our acquaintance that my wife had been introduced to the Queen, and she was in consequence pestered with visits from Mrs Child and her friends, now doubly pressing in their invitations, and not very delicate in their enquiries. But, strange as it may appear, the object of my wife's presentation was never known beyond the circle then present, all of whom were freemasons in petticoats. And, indeed, I have reason to believe that not even Sir Robert Walpole himself nor the prying Mr Powis could ever ascertain the precise matter, whatever suspicions might be entertained on the subject.

My dear wife could not but complain of the troublesome

daily visits of Mrs Child, on account of which I advised her to give the lady a rub that she richly deserved. "Say to her," said I, "that you are astonished to see people of fashion paying visits to a person in a hotel."—"That would not be like us, my dear Edward!" she replied: "I might have done so a little time ago, but now that a woman of quality has visited me here, it would carry an air of insolence in it, which, on reflection, I am sure you would not approve." I was convinced. "You are right, my love!" said I, and the subject being thus disposed of, we put on our things, and strolled out to refresh ourselves by a walk in St James's Park.

On Sunday, the 12th, we attended divine service at St Paul's, and were much delighted, both by the organ and by the chanting; and much edified in hearing an impressive sermon from one of the prebendaries. On our return from the Cathedral, my dear wife received a kind note from Lady Sundon, importing that she had been indisposed, but was now better, and would call at the Adelphi on Tuesday.

On Monday, one of the minister's secretaries made his appearance at my hotel, with two gentlemen on behalf of the Crown, to settle the conditions of the grant. After the usual ceremonies of introduction, we entered on the business; and I produced my chart. The deputy surveyor-general, who was one of them, said it appeared to be accurate; bearing internal evidence of having been done by a person who knew what he was about. To a question he put, I answered, "It was done by the captain of a schooner I kept to go occasionally to Jamaica." As there was a scale to the chart, the royal surveyor very soon measured and calculated the area of the islands. He made the peninsula promontory to contain two square miles; George's Island, beyond the isthmus, nine square miles, Edward's Island, six square miles, in all 7880 acres. This point being settled, I stated the principle agreed on by the minister and myself as to the valuation. The gentlemen said they were aware of it: and that 5s per acre was the average price of the lands granted at St Christopher's. The calculation on these data being soon made, it was found that the purchase-money would amount to £1970. An observation then fell from one of the gentlemen as to the detached rocks, and the long sandy isthmus not having been taken into account: "Well," said I, "let us put down the odd £30 in consideration of these, and all others in, near, or belonging to the said islands." After a little demur, my proposition was agreed to. "Now, gentlemen," resumed I, "the business is settled; requiring only to be carried into

effect."—"Just so, sir," said the secretary.—"Well, then," I rejoined, "when the deed is made out, and has received the royal signature, I shall be happy to pay the money, and such fees and charges as may be usual in such cases." The deputy surveyor-general requested the loan of my chart, to have two copies of it taken: one to append to the deed; the other, to lodge in the office: and the business being now quite arranged, they took their leave.

On the following day my wife received a visit from Lady Sundon; and the meeting was cordial. My Eliza said to her noble guest—"If I had not feared it might have been an intrusion, I would have come to see your Ladyship when you were sick."—"Come now," replied Lady Sundon; "if Mr Seaward will spare you one day to me, I should be most happy!" My dear wife looked at me—"Will you spare me, Edward?"—"Certainly," said I, "to that lady; who, I perceive, is really attached to you."—"Indeed I am," exclaimed her Ladyship, taking my wife's hand in the most kind manner. "You will not think strange of this hesitation on my part," said my Eliza to her friend, "when I tell you, that we have not been separated a whole day, at any one time, since I became Mrs Seaward! And indeed," continued she, "I am so happy, where every woman ought to seek her happiness, that I have no desire, except in such a case as this, to be absent for a moment." I took my Eliza's hand, and put it to my lips. She then begged permission to go and dress, which she would soon do; and left me with her Ladyship. The first words of this excellent woman were like sweet music to my ear.—"She is a divine creature!" said Lady Sundon; "so unlike all the women I see of the present day! and I assure you the Queen is quite charmed by her beauty, and her manner, and her propriety: and I rather think she will see her Majesty before we return; but not being certain of it, I do not like to say so to her, lest my sweet friend should be disappointed." Her Ladyship then asked me, if I had accomplished my business as to the grant with the Crown officers. I told her it was definitively arranged yesterday, and would soon be made out, and I hoped immediately presented to her Majesty, as Regent, to sign it. "Now, Captain Seaward," resumed the lady, "I will tell you a secret: the Queen has not been very well pleased with a certain person, for the course he intended to pursue with respect to your affair; she spoke to him on the subject, and soon became peremptory; and it is only in consequence of this that the business has been done. You therefore now know to whom you are obliged: and do take care,"

continued she, "not to throw away your money on persons who may endeavour to persuade you the obligation is in any other quarter. The Queen knows all that passed between the minister and yourself, and between you and other persons, on the subject, and expressed her admiration of your spirit, and of the sentiments you avowed on the occasion. He was a good deal piqued," added Lady Sundon, "when her Majesty gave him her commands : and he ventured to say, with a smiling bitterness, 'Perhaps your Majesty would approve of our sending him as envoy to Madrid,'—to which she drily replied, 'Cassius is not to our liking, Sir Robert : ' then receiving his leave to retire, he bowed, and withdrew ; evidently a good deal nettled. I believe, however," continued her Ladyship, "you have nothing to fear from him ; he has nothing to gain by annoying you, but may risk the royal displeasure : and I am quite sure you may count on her Majesty's protection, and his compliance." My wife now joined us ; and after thanking her Ladyship for her great kindness, I handed them to the carriage and saw them off.

Fidele—our dear little Fidele ! was the representative of his mistress to-day ; I therefore talked to him sometimes, by way of consoling both him and myself, in her absence. "Well, poor fellow," said I, "you were once our chief delight and care ; now you receive only a transient kind word, or a look ; but we do not esteem you the less, Fidele ; come here, poor dog !" He raised his fore-feet on my knee, and licked my hand ; and said all that a dog could say, in return. He spoke not with the tongue, that may lie ; but with the eye and demeanour, that generally speak truth. Being first favourite to-day, I helped him to the wing of a chicken. "You like that better than *pepper-pot*, old fellow !" said I : he looked very knowing as he took it from my hand ; which I interpreted, "Indeed, I believe I do." Thus I played the fool, as fools would call it ; giving a truce to all anxieties respecting the completion of my grant, or the favour of the Queen.

In the afternoon I took a walk to Palace Yard, to amuse myself : looking about me with interest or admiration on many of the buildings in that quarter ; but especially on the Abbey of Westminster. Then wishing to prolong my stroll, I turned towards the river, where a great many people were at work on the foundation of the new bridge. I here met Mr Powis, with two other gentlemen, one of whom had accompanied the minister's secretary, to arrange with me about the grant. Mr Powis expressed himself most happy to meet me ; and after some conversation, he proposed to go to the Bell and Sun, in

King Street, to take a bowl of punch. I objected to this, saying, "I should not like to be seen in a tavern."—"Bless you," cried he, "Sir Robert Walpole, and some of his friends from the country, dine at that tavern almost every day while Parliament sits, previous to their going down to the House of Commons."—"As that is the case," I replied, "I suppose we need not be ashamed to be seen there." So accordingly we went, and drank a couple of bowls of punch. We had scarcely sat down, when the conversation turned on the topics of the day ; during which a variety of political subjects were discussed. I took no part in it : but the debate soon ran high between the two gentlemen I knew, and the stranger. I soon perceived he was no friend to the minister, for he would not accede to any thing they said either in commendation of Sir Robert or his politics. In the course of this altercation, the stranger gave vent to the following philippic. "Sir Robert Walpole says he is a Whig : it may be so ; but I never could discover it in his politics, as far as I am acquainted with them. If I did not know that Pultney and most of his set are Tories ; judging by their sentiments, I should set them down as Whigs—and Whigs, too, of the first order. But all distinction is confounded by the different light in which situation places the leaders of party ; so that, I presume, we must consider public men to be in some respects like the chameleon, who changes his colour according to the ground he stands on : yet, I do not mean to say, that, like him, they are content merely to bask in the royal sunshine, and live upon flies." When the second bowl of punch was finished, the anti-ministerial man desired to call for another, and offered to pay for it himself ; but the question being put to the vote, he was left in the minority, as might be anticipated ; so his mouth was shut ; and having paid the reckoning, we forthwith quitted the house, directing our steps to Charing Cross : where I took my leave of my companions, rejoicing within myself that I bore no part in the conversation, and that my own affairs had not in any way been brought forward.

About eight o'clock my dear wife returned to me, highly gratified by her visit to the palace. She had dined with Lady Sundon, and her venerable aunt, who had been maid of honour to Queen Anne. The old lady was delighted with her niece's friend ; and my Eliza, who always took a peculiar pleasure in being kind and attentive to persons advanced in life, was particularly attentive to her. In the afternoon, her Majesty had desired to see Mrs Seaward, in a private manner, with Lady Sundon. When she went, the Queen received her affably, laying

aside the sovereign for the time, and, with expressions of great interest, listened to all the particulars of our shipwreck, and subsequent adventures, and improvements on the island. She laughed heartily at my wife's account of the *Battle of the Pecaries*: but a higher feeling manifested itself when the narrator described my attack on the Spanish Guarda Costa; and the result of the attempt made by him in his boat. And here, no doubt, my dear wife put forth her best eloquence;—as her feelings were always quite alive to every circumstance of that rencontre—"My brave and generous husband," was a favourite expression with her when speaking on this subject. "Nobly done!" exclaimed her Majesty; "he shall have the reward of the brave." As the day began to draw to a close, her Majesty said—"You must come another day, and tell me more: it is altogether a very interesting story:" then taking her by the hand, the Queen added—"I am delighted with your present; it will make me the richest dress in Europe; and I desire you will accept this from me;" taking a diamond cross from a little case, and fixing it with her own hands to the pearl necklace my wife wore on her neck. There was great dignity as well as delicacy in this act of the Queen. The obligation under which a valuable present might be supposed to place her was now removed by an equivalent in value; so that every future kindness from her Majesty became a free measure of grace and condescension.

My dear Eliza was deeply affected by this signal graciousness in a Queen of England to her, and could not help feeling proud of the attentions she had altogether received at the palace.—"But," said she to me, after giving way a little to feelings that might readily be excused, "it is God that disposes all hearts! and I must humble myself before Him, lest mine should fall into the snare of vain-glorying in anything earthly. I could not endure the thought that He might withdraw His face from us, my dear Edward." She had detected the condition of her own heart; and desired me to join her to-night in humbling ourselves before the Majesty of Heaven; which I did; and we found that peace in prayer which our Father and our God never denies to those who seek it with a true and faithful spirit.

Early the next morning, we had a visit from Lady Sundon. After a few minutes' agreeable conversation with my wife, which chiefly turned on the great affability of her Majesty, and the interest she took in our welfare, Lady Sundon told my Eliza that the Queen would fix an early day to see her again; and that her Majesty requested her to bring the little dog which had

fought by her side against the wild beasts. Lady Sundon then turned to me, smiling, and said—"But my visit is to you, Mr Seaward. I come to save you some unnecessary uneasiness. The Queen will throw aside the grant, when it is brought to her with other papers to sign. Mr Powis, most likely, will come and tell you this; and, as of course you would feel surprised and uneasy if you did not know how it had happened, I am authorised to tell you, that in a few days after it will be signed by her Majesty, under some particular alteration she intends." I thanked her Ladyship, and said—"I should be most happy to acquiesce in any alteration her Majesty might think fit to make." Lady Sundon smiled sweetly. "I fear, my Lady," resumed I, "you will scarcely be able to pardon the liberty I am about to take; but I throw myself on your kindness:—may I ask, who is Mr Powis?" She smiled again, but not as she had smiled a minute ago: in the former smile, a ray of delight seemed to dance in her eye; a sort of quivering now played about the mouth, curling up the angle of the lip. "I believe he is one of Sir Robert's jackals," she replied; "but to do him justice, he is not a mercenary. It is his passion to find out everything, and to tell everything: in doing which he has done incalculable mischiefs; but he entertains the vain hope of serving all parties. Vanity seems to be the main-spring of his actions; he is desirous to be thought somebody; and is never so well pleased as when he can do a little job for Mr Paxton, the secretary to the treasury, and bring some grist to their private mill."—"I thank you, my dear madam," I replied; "sometimes I suspected so: but really could not make him out; his friendship for me appeared so perfectly disinterested."—"He is not a bad character," she resumed; "but he is true to the game he has engaged himself to play; I say engaged himself, for he is a volunteer in the business. I suppose he talked to you about getting hold of the right ear of the minister! A paper appeared in *Fog's Journal* some months ago, 'On Ear-tickling, as practised by the Chinese;'—it is whispered he wrote it: but we know better: it is rather a satire on Sir Robert, and was not written by such a man as Powis."—"Well, how incredible!" exclaimed my dear wife, "I could not have suspected such double-dealing in any man."—"Ah! dear Mrs Seaward," replied our noble visitor, "any base coin of brass, impressed with the image of Virtue, is allowed to circulate for gold, and passes current here without much scrutiny."

The conversation having thus finished, her Ladyship left us; and we talked over what we had heard, wondering as to the

alteration the Queen intended to make in the grant, and what the matter meant altogether. It ended, however, in our feeling satisfied that her Majesty intended us no injury ; and, therefore, we dismissed its consideration from our minds, and were at rest on the subject.

On Friday, the 15th, I had a visit from Mr Powis, who came in with a very long face ; and, after as long a preamble, told me, I had been deceived in the quarter on which I had grounded my expectations ; that after all the trouble Sir Robert had taken, the Queen-Regent had refused to sign the grant, and had thrown the paper aside. I made no reply. "Now, my dear friend," continued he, "if you would have been guided by me, this could not have happened."—"Indeed, I believe so, Mr Powis," I replied.—"Well, then," he resumed, "be wiser in future, and I will put you in the way of rectifying your error."—"I thank you, my good friend," said I ; "but every man, I suppose, has a rule or principle of his own to guide him through life ; and mine says, 'Keep the straight path in all your doings, and leave the result to the Disposer of all things.'"—"Very well," returned he ; "that is the minister ! and if you continue in your folly, you will by and by be unable to get to him by any path at all."—"Thank you, Mr Powis," said I again, "for your good advice. But I am not born to shine in Protean wisdom ; I will leave the matter where it is." I am sure I could read on his brow—"What an ass that fellow is !" But whether the obstinacy or patience of the animal were meant, I could not in my own mind determine. My dear wife sat by the while, not a little amused with the conversation. Mr Powis appealed to her. "Ladies know nothing of these matters," she replied. And after a little more vain rhetoric from the confidant of the minister's confidant, he took his leave.

On Tuesday, the 19th, a note came from the palace, saying the Queen desired to see Mrs Seaward to-morrow morning, attended by the little dog ; and wished Captain Seaward to be informed there would be a levee at St James's on Friday, and that her Majesty desired him to attend in his uniform, and that Lord Harrington had promised to present him. The note was from Lady Sundon, addressed to my wife ; to which a suitable reply was returned, and our wits were now set to work as to what was to be done. Fidele must be washed with scented soap, combed, and not allowed to eat any animal food. My old blue and gold were got out, and put under survey ; we thought they might do : they were very good ; and, having been worn, we decided that this added somewhat to their respecta-

bility. A new hat, however, was to be purchased ; and as my knee and shoe buckles were of silver, they would not suit the present occasion, therefore gold ones must be got ; and I determined on having one of the Spanish gold sword-handles, with its lion's head, properly fitted up with blade and scabbard, and slung with one or more of the massy gold chains, selected from among the articles in the plate chest. No time was lost in putting these matters in forwardness ; and I applied to the jeweller from whom I bought my wife's pearls and diamonds, to get the sword mounted in the best mode, telling him the hilt was pure gold. He weighed it before me, and said he would do so again before the workmen to whom he was to entrust the job ; and would have it so fitted that he could take off the hilt and weigh it again when it came back. I approved his caution ; and then bought the gold buckles for my shoes and knees. We had encountered heavy expenses in this way of late ; but they were not to occur again, and therefore could not injure my fortune : for such expenditures are not like the life-drain of daily high out-goings, occasioned by an overwhelming establishment.

A royal carriage was sent for my wife on the next morning ; she was quite ready. "You are to go too, Fidele," said she : the dear little dog was quite overjoyed at the well-known words of his mistress ; and having been washed with violet soap, was quite in trim "to come before a queen." I caught the little fellow up in my arms, that he might not encounter the dirt on the pavement ; and taking the hand of his mistress, led her down, and placed them side by side comfortably in the carriage.

In my Eliza's absence, I brushed up the gold lace on my blue suit ; then walked out to buy my hat, and went to hurry the business of my sword : endeavouring to pass away the day as well as I could.

In the evening I had the happiness to see my sweet angel return, and greeted her with a joyous welcome. She told me of all the kindness she had received from the Queen, to whom she had related so much more of our history as she thought might be interesting. Her Majesty took great notice of Fidele, and had the curiosity to look at the scar in his throat, made by the tusk of the peccary. "You should have a pension, brave little fellow," she said. Her Majesty then put several questions to my wife, bearing on the various incidents she had just related ; and in her answers, the Queen expressed her hope, "that if we did not find the people grateful, for whose sakes we had taken so much pains, we might nevertheless find them

happy ; and that, perhaps, was all that any benefactor of mankind ought reasonably to desire." At length my Eliza had permission to retire ; her Majesty saying to her at the same time, "Your husband attends the levee on Friday? Lord Harrington will send his carriage for him, and introduce him ; and it may be well for you to accompany him, and remain with your friend Lady Sundon until it is over."—"Your Majesty is all graciousness !" replied my dear wife, as she took her leave.

On Thursday there was a great fuss about my ruffles and stock ; and it was judged right to have gold lace round the knee-bands of the breeches, and elsewhere, besides a richly embroidered waistcoat ; and, in addition, a fine pair of white silk hose, with elegant shoes of Spanish leather, turned up at the toes. At night the sword came home, and looked quite magnificent : so that now all was in readiness for the trying occasion of the morrow.

I put on my habiliments by good time in the morning, all excepting my wig, which I feared to discompose ; it being finely dressed, looking not unlike a gooseberry bush in a hoar frost. I also girded on my sword ; and walked about, then stood, and then sat, with it hanging by my side, so as to accustom myself to it a little ; lest I should be awkward in the royal presence, and perhaps get it between my legs, and tumble down. As the time of my departure drew nigh, I felt my courage fail me ; and the first time in my life had a qualm of the coward's sickness. My dear wife cheered me, but the palms of my hands continued cold and clammy. At length the carriage was announced. My beloved soul gave me a life-imparting kiss ; and helping me to adjust my peruke, we went hand in hand, with my hat under my arm, to the carriage, entered it, and drove off. I felt my blood beginning to circulate again pretty freely as we passed Charing Cross ; and was quite myself, or perhaps a little flushed, when we alighted at the palace. Lady Sundon took my wife from my hand at a turn of the grand staircase ; when, at the same time, I was introduced to Lord Harrington, who led the way for me to the ante-room. He talked to me about the West Indies, and Spanish America ; and, with great courtesy, said he was happy in having been requested to present me. I thanked him for his great kindness in sending his carriage for me, and for the honour he intended me. He then took me aside, and asked me if I knew the purpose of the Queen in desiring my attendance at the levee. I replied, it was an honour I had no right to expect, but her Majesty had been graciously pleased to command my

attendance, and it would afford me great pleasure to express my gratitude. "There is something more than that," said his Lordship, "or I am mistaken : however, I think it right to tell you, if her Majesty should hold out her hand when you are presented, drop down on your right knee and gently approach her hand with your lips ; but do not move from your kneeling position, until she retires a few steps from you ; and if she should desire you to do anything, do it, whatever it may be." Having said this, he took me by the arm, adding—"Now we must go in." There were many of the nobility present, and several officers, naval and military, all of whom formed a sort of half circle ; her Majesty being seated when we entered the levee room. After a little, her Majesty rose, and I had the advantage of seeing several officers and others presented ; to every one of whom she said a few words. Sir Robert Walpole was there ; who in a short time recognised his humble servant. He came round, and said something to the noble Baron, my introducer, who answered only by a smile. The minister, however, gave me a gracious nod, and went back to his place. It now came to my turn. His Lordship took me by the hand, and, as we advanced from the circle, the Queen looked steadily at me. She seemed in that moment to be making up her mind on a person about whom she had lately heard so much. "I have the honour," said Lord Harrington, "to present to your Majesty, Captain Edward Seaward, who, under a commission from the Governor of Jamaica, commands a small dependency on the Spanish Main."—"You are not unknown to us, sir," said the Queen ; "I am happy in an opportunity of evincing my satisfaction in what you have done for the service and honour of his Majesty." She held out her hand, and I did as the noble Baron had directed me. In an instant I saw a sword in the hand of my august Mistress : from whom she had taken it I had not seen, but she laid the blade upon my shoulder, with the gentlest grace imaginable, and said—"Rise up, Sir Edward Seaward." There were two persons thunderstruck ; Sir Robert Walpole and myself. I was too much absorbed in my own affair to see him ; but Lord Harrington told me afterwards that when her Majesty finished her address to me on being presented, Sir Robert looked round him with evident confusion, to the no small pleasure of some persons present. However, like a true courtier, he lost no time in coming up to me ; and giving me his hand, said—"Sir Edward Seaward, I congratulate you on the favour of her Majesty."

The levee being concluded, the noble Baron told me his car-

riage should wait to take me back to my hotel ; but he believed I might not yet return ; for he knew from Lady Sundon that it was the Queen's intention to see Lady Seaward in her private apartment after the levee. I am not ashamed to confess that my heart was expanded by a delightful feeling, when the words "Lady Seaward" fell from the lips of the noble Lord ; yet I hope it arose purely from the pride I always felt in seeing my dear Eliza honoured, and not from any indirect self-elevation, which perhaps the distinction I had just received might be calculated to inspire. Lord Harrington then accompanied me to Lady Sundon's apartments, and introduced me to her venerable aunt ; to whom he spoke a few agreeable things, and then wished me good morning. I sat and talked with the old lady about half-an-hour : she congratulated me on the Queen's favour ; and made me still more happy by praising my wife,—saying, I did not know how much they all loved her.

At last my sweet angel appeared, leaning on the arm of her friend ; who had been desired by the Queen to bring her into the royal private apartment, immediately after the levee, that her Majesty might have the pleasure of imparting to her the knowledge of what had just been done. As they entered the room where the Queen was, her Majesty advanced towards them, and taking my Eliza by the hand, said, with a beneficent smile—"Lady Seaward, I am happy to see you." My beloved looked up earnestly, with an inquiring eye, but did not speak. "I have added one more brave knight to our list a few minutes ago, in the person of your husband ; and I have reserved to myself the pleasure of communicating the intelligence to you." My tender-hearted Eliza was overcome ;—being ever alive to the most grateful feelings, even for the smallest kindnesses, she was now overpowered, and sunk at the feet of her Majesty ; but collecting herself in a moment, exclaimed—"My honoured husband ! Your Majesty has indeed made me happy by exalting him." The Queen raised her as she wept ; but they were tears of gratitude rather than of joy. Her Majesty's kind nature was conspicuous throughout : she made her sit down beside her, desiring Lady Sundon, at the same time, to give her a little water, which she offered to my Eliza with her own hand ; and would not suffer her to depart until her composure was quite restored. At length the Queen pressed her hand with great kindness, and gave her permission to withdraw.

My Eliza, on some occasions, would not be restrained by forms. The moment she came into the room where I was, she flew into my arms ; and giving full vent to her feelings, wept

unrestrained. The two ladies present understood human nature too well to interfere. In a short time she smiled and kissed me, saying—"Now I am better.—My dear and kind friends, pardon this weakness, and my rudeness."—"Thou child of nature!" replied Lady Sundon; "would to Heaven that all women were like thee!" We did not refuse a glass of Mountain and a bit of cake, which were kindly offered to us; and soon after, we returned to the hotel in Lord Harrington's carriage. On alighting, I felt it incumbent on me to behave handsomely to his Lordship's servants, and I desired them to wait. When I had handed my dear wife up stairs, I sent a guinea each to the two footmen, and a couple of guineas to the coachman. He who took the vail to the servants, brought back the news into the hotel of what had taken place at the levee; and we were not many minutes without receiving the humble congratulations of our hostess; and my dear wife was Ladyship'd before night by every servant that she had occasion to speak to, until she was quite sick of it.

We now made sure of the grant, and saw into the Queen's reason for putting it aside; no doubt, having had it in contemplation to honour us as she had done; and that, therefore, it would come to be made out for Sir Edward, instead of Captain Seaward. To make some grateful acknowledgment to our friend Lady Sundon, and to devise some offering of gratitude to her Majesty also, occupied our earliest thoughts. After some deliberation, my wife suggested the probable acceptability of the silver perfume boxes;—they were large and massy, and richly embossed with Scripture story; the one representing the Nativity, the other the going down into Egypt: a cow and calf near the manger where the infant Jesus lay, were well executed; and the ass, in the going down into Egypt, was a remarkable true copy of nature. It was resolved to have the former richly gilt, in dead and burnished gold, for her Majesty; and to have the other go through the hands of the silversmith, so as to give it a dead silvery white, on a smoothly refreshed surface, as the subject might require.

The next morning we went to the jeweller, who was a silversmith also, and gave him the necessary directions respecting the cases, and their internal boxes likewise, which were to be made to correspond with the exterior. During the day, the Lord Harrington sent his compliments, and Sir Robert Walpole sent his compliments; and our dear friend Lady Sundon, with the old lady, called to pay us their respects. They came in the same carriage my dear wife had been accustomed to go in;—

I therefore seized the opportunity of sending a couple of guineas to each of the footmen, and three guineas to the coachman ; which was not bribery, but reward.

The ladies remained with us all day ; and it was, indeed, one of the happiest days in my life. Lady Sundon was delighted at the issue of the affair, and with the heart her Majesty showed in it throughout ; regaling us with the many agreeable things the Queen said to her on the occasion, with respect to the triumphant manner in which she had carried me through. I told her Sir Robert had sent his compliments. She said that was a respect due to the Queen, but that I must return them by a visit. I told her that Lord Harrington had also done me the same honour. "He is my kinsman," she replied, "and will be happy to serve you in any way. If you will accept it," continued she, "he will lend you a carriage on Monday or Tuesday, to pay your visits." I said I should be much obliged, not having any carriage of my own. We persuaded our kind friends to stay dinner ; and the royal carriage was sent away, to return in the evening. The day sped away on halcyon wing ; the conversation never flagged. Her Majesty—the minister—his jackals—or something connected with our shipwreck and residence on Seaward Islands—afforded topics in abundance ; all, to us, most agreeable and interesting. My dear wife had put up the two plain gold pieces of tissue, which the tirewoman had extolled so highly, into two separate parcels ; one of which she directed to "Lady Sundon," and the other to "Lady Mary Wotton," her dear old aunt : she had also given orders to have the parcels placed in the royal carriage, when it should arrive. On parting, Lady Sundon kissed my dear Eliza ; who then said to her—"I have ventured to put something into the carriage, for your aunt and for yourself ; and if you do not accept it, I shall feel hurt." They then shook hands with us kindly, and took their leave.

On Sunday, we attended divine service at St Martin's ; and felt it our duty, if not altogether our inclination, to dedicate our afternoon to reading the Scriptures. "Ye cannot serve God and mammon ;"—we began to feel the truth of this saying of our divine Master. "Let us not, my dear Edward," said my wife, "lose the favour of God for all this world can bestow." We therefore read the Scriptures till late in the evening ; and prayed fervently to God in Christ, for forgiveness of sins, and grace unto future righteousness and holiness of life.

On Monday, the minister's secretary called with the grant, which had been signed by her Majesty as Regent of the kingdom ;

and she had ordered the clause to be expunged which entailed forfeiture on me, in case of my turning such grant in any way to my own profit, by sales of land or otherwise. I read it over, and expressed myself well satisfied. "I will pay you the money down, sir," said I, "and there is no occasion for a receipt; for I perceive the consideration money, £2000, is expressed in the deed."—"It is so, Sir Edward," he replied. I then drew out an order on my bankers for the amount, and handed it to him. He sat a while without saying anything; but I perceived there was yet something to be done. "Are there any fees, sir, to pay?" I asked.—"I am directed, Sir Edward," he replied, "to demand no fees."—"But, sir," I resumed, "you have had some trouble in this business; and I beg you will do me the favour to accept this rouleau of gold;" putting a paper roll, containing fifty guineas, into his hand: "and I desire my best thanks to Sir Robert Walpole, and that you will accept the same." He bowed courteously, and made some complimentary speech, which, like all such, vanished into thin air. When he was gone, my dear wife and myself congratulated each other on having at last obtained the object of our voyage; and we returned thanks to God, who by His power and influence over the minds and actions of His creatures had accomplished this great matter for us.

On Tuesday, the Lord Harrington sent his carriage for me. I took the opportunity of taking my dear wife to the palace; and after leaving her there, returned his Lordship's compliments by a call, and then drove to the house of the minister. I wished to leave my name and drive away, but it seems I was expected, and the porter had orders to say Sir Robert desired to see me. I accordingly alighted, and was shown into the minister's library, without using gold or silver keys. He arose when I went in, and took me cordially by the hand; complimented me, then joked me; said he had supposed I was a Protestant, and a Whig; but that some others thought they could prove me to be a Papist and a Jacobite. I comprehended the allusions and bearing of all this; and only replied by a smile. "But now, Sir Edward," said he, "to be serious; if you were in Parliament, whom would you support?"—"The Crown unquestionably," I replied.—"Then it follows," said he, "that you would support the minister of the Crown."—"So long," I rejoined, "as that minister endeavoured to uphold the dignity and prerogative of the Crown, with constitutional consistency, and by direct and honest means."—"Psha! said he, "that is the way all novices talk. If," continued he, "a minister could find men as they should be, and

not as they are, he could run at his business like a bull ; but my dear young friend," added he, "you do not know what a minister has to contend with." I could not answer him, yet I was not convinced : after a short pause, "I think," rejoined he, "you cannot do better than take a borough : there will be one vacated in a few days ; I know you can command it without injury to your fortune, and you owe it to yourself not to reject the opportunity offered ; for without flattery, I venture to say, I perceive you are not wanting in *nous*, and only require a little intercourse with public men to fit you for any honourable public employment ; and I will take my chance of your support, on the grand connecting principle of loyalty." I thanked him, but assured him my mind was made up to return to my trans-Atlantic domain ; and there I should be happy to make myself as useful to the King, and to his Government, as opportunity might permit. "Are you fixed in your determination?" he said.—I replied, "I am, if with royal permission."—"Well, then," said he, "would you like to hold your appointment from us direct ; or as you have it from the Governor of Jamaica?"—"That is as you may please, sir," I replied ; "I should be sorry to desire anything that might not be quite proper."—"That is quite proper," he replied ; "I will consider of it." The conversation now drew to a close ; he shook hands with me, and with a smile said, "I think I shall call upon you some day or other, to do service for us, among your Spanish neighbours on Terra Firma." I made my bow, and my exit ; not a little glad to escape from the wily statesman. I called for my dear wife on my return, and had the pleasure to sit and converse with her friends a few minutes ; after which we drove home, conversing on all that had passed between the minister and myself during our late interview.

A gentleman called on me to-day respecting the fees of knighthood. I made a thousand apologies, and really felt ashamed, the matter never having crossed my mind. He said in reply, it was quite time enough : and, at my request, made a list of the items, which amounted to £92. I begged his acceptance of £100, requesting him to make the disbursements for me, and apply the surplus as he might think proper. He received the money quite courteously ; and paid me many compliments, by way of change, which I as courteously accepted, and he took his leave.

By the middle of the week, I received a friendly note from Lord Harrington, with an official letter as Secretary of State ; enclosing a commission, signed by the Regent, but differing a

little from that which was given me at Jamaica. The present one appointing me Commandant (the word Captain being omitted) and Governor of the Islands denominated, &c., with right of admiralty, and power to grant commissions, and appoint courts, agreeable to the jurisprudence of the realm, &c.; but in matters of general interest, not immediately local, to obey any orders or instructions that from time to time I, or any person holding the supreme situation at the islands for the time being, might receive from the Governor of the Island of Jamaica. "Ah, very well, dear Eliza," said I, "this will do; I am glad to have this: I was never quite easy under my former commission; it came in a questionable shape." I lost no time in making my noble friend due acknowledgments and thanks; for I felt that he had taken this handsome way of putting me in possession of the commission, to save me the fees of office; as perhaps it was the Queen's wish that no fees should be taken from me for it. The many gracious acts we received at the hands or by command of her Majesty caused us often to reflect on the mysterious ways of Providence; by which our elevation in life, and I hope usefulness also, had been brought about. If the King had not been absent, perhaps I should not have succeeded in obtaining the grant. If the Prince of Wales had not lost the confidence of his royal father, the Queen could not have been Regent, but he would have filled that high situation; and it is most probable, in that case also, I should have been disappointed in the object we now had so happily attained; accompanied, too, by so many other marks of royal favour.

In the evening we got letters from Awbury, bearing our new titles on the cover. They were in acknowledgment of a few lines Eliza had written to her reverend and revered father, and to my sisters, just before the post went out, after receiving our unexpected honours. Her father's letter was such as might have been expected from such a man on such an occasion. "My beloved child, bear your good fortune and your distinction with humility; that you may receive heavenly gifts also from Him who is the primary giver of all things." The letter from my dear sisters was in a different strain. "Dear! how they should have liked to see the Queen!" and so on.—"Well," said my dear wife, "we shall soon be able to go to them now! and indeed, Edward, I shall be glad when we do so; for I feel myself becoming more and more attached to our friends at the palace; and, to own the truth, perhaps I could give up all our old friends at the island, to remain here, if you were to express the least desire for it; therefore, my dear husband, let us make haste,

for I am not insensible to the charms of this elegant and attaching society." I was not surprised at this declaration ; the condescension and even kindness of the Queen, and the unparalleled courtesies of Lady Sundon to her, were calculated to make a deep impression on the feelings of one possessing so sensible and noble a nature. But I had no such allurements ; I therefore felt no difficulty in backing her honest wishes, by assuring her I would do everything in my power to expedite our departure : still, however, I had some things to do for our yet dear little trans-Atlantic home before I could take my leave of London.

From what I had heard from a certain quarter, there was reason to suspect that a rupture with Spain might not be far distant. The Commissioners, although they had sat three years on the British claims, had not been able to obtain any equivalent redress or satisfaction from the court of Madrid, for the depredations committed on British shipping by the guarda costas : I therefore was anxious to send out ten guns for the battery I had ordered to be prepared on the open ground below the mansion ; as also some field-pieces, or transportable guns, and a few musketoons, to place on swivel stocks in the boats, should they at any time be required. Captain Tracey was drawing near the period of his sailing for Jamaica, so that no time was to be lost ; in consequence, I set off to go into the city, to consult my bankers about purchasing this artillery ; when, on the way, I met Lord Harrington coming out of Somerset House ; and as he condescended to stop and speak to me, I told him what I was going about. "They will cost you a great deal of money," he observed.—"I cannot help that, my Lord," I replied ; "I wish to be ready if anything should occur."—"I understand you," he replied ; "you are a near neighbour to the dons : but come with me ; I think I can procure an order for all these matters from the Ordnance ; and that, in your case, is nothing more than right." I thanked him, and returned with him, first to Whitehall, where he said he had something to do ; after which I accompanied him to the Master-General's Office, and the thing was quickly accomplished. I received the order required, and hastened back with it to the city, to give it to Captain Tracey if I could find him, which I did. He was right glad to meet me, having heard of the honour I had received at court, and undertook to take in the ordnance stores immediately if a lighter were sent with them from Woolwich. I desired him to hire a lighter for the purpose ; he took the order, which, beside the guns I have mentioned, included powder, shot, &c., &c., and he promised to see to it, without loss of time.

The next morning very early, Captain Tracey called on me, to say the order would not be complied with, unless I myself went to the Ordnance Office at Woolwich. I lost no time in addressing myself to the business ; so requesting my dear wife to accompany me, I sent for a chaise, and we set off, taking Greenwich in our way ; where I called on my old acquaintance, Captain James, to take him with me : fortunately, I found him at home, and leaving Lady Seaward with Mrs James, he posted on with me to Woolwich. The principal officer of the Ordnance was remarkably obliging, and not the less so on account of the presence of my friend Captain James. He said the order would have been complied with on its first presentation, but they could not make out exactly the sort of guns required ; he meant with respect to their carriages. I confessed the truth of his observation, and told him, the twelve pounders were for a battery *en barbette*. "Then they require high and traversing carriages," said he. "Well, sir," continued he, "as to the field-pieces, they are of brass, and rather valuable ; but we have a great many in store, and as the order is only for two, there will be no demur about it. Now, sir," he added, "with reference to the powder and shot, you shall have an order at the Ordnance at Jamaica if you please ; and as I understand the stores are to go out in a merchant ship, I recommend this arrangement." I perfectly agreed with him, and he wrote the order. "Now, sir," he resumed, "with respect to the wall-pieces, they are all at the Tower,—you want six of them ; I will give you a memorandum, by which you shall obtain them, by presenting it there." He asked me if I would like to pick out the guns, and carriages, and field pieces : for which I thanked him ; so he, and Captain James, and myself, went down to the wharfs, and made choice of those we most approved. "Now, sir," said he, "if you will give me a receipt for these things, they shall be sent off in one of the Government boats to-morrow morning, and shipped on board the Phoenix." I thanked him for his zeal and courteous conduct, and wished to pay any fees that might be required. "We don't know what fees mean here, sir," said he ; "we are something like you," continued he, addressing himself to Captain James,—“we are too glad of every opportunity to do our duty, without requiring any perquisites besides our pay.” I shook hands with this upright man, Mr Forester, and returned with my friend to Greenwich, where we dined.

As there was no time to waste, having to finish my business in London, I requested permission to proceed, pressing Captain and Mrs James to spend the day with us to-morrow, and ac-

company us to the Tower, which they promised ; and on our return home, while I went to look after Captain Tracey, my wife wrote a note to invite Mr and Mrs Child to meet them at dinner ; as we did not wish to go away without paying this sort of civility ; and as Tracey, although only master of a West Indiaman, was a very respectable man, I asked him also ; and left a note for Mr Perry in passing.

Captain and Mrs James came to us soon after breakfast, and we proceeded to the Tower. We saw all the curiosities there, so frequently described, besides three royal cub tigers, just whelped, the first that ever had been English born. After our visit to the wild beasts, I delivered my memorandum to the Lieutenant of the Tower, with whom we immediately went round the armoury ; and I picked out half a dozen wall-pieces, bearing the mark of his late Majesty. These pieces are precisely like a soldier's musket, carrying a three-ounce ball, and fitted with a pivot and crutch, to fix to the bore of a swivel stock ; so that a man can bring the butt of the piece to his shoulder, and take a sight, and fire, without receiving the least kick from the rebound.

I had ordered the best plain dinner that could be served in the English mode, *sans quelques choses* of French cookery ; and the best wines also, not however excluding the French. We sat down eight in number, the most comfortable party for a dinner table : we were not graceless, at which Mrs Child stared a little. The dinner went off very well, and every one seemed to enjoy themselves ; because there was no stiffness on our part, nor ridiculous ceremony beyond that which good breeding requires. The ladies continued a good while with the dessert, and our banker's wife did honour to the wine : she soon became very voluble : " Did not like to sit after dinner—hoped Lady Seaward would soon retire to quadrille—wondered how she could put up with the attendance of none but the servants of the hotel—and certainly expected, by this time, to have seen her fine taste displayed in an elegant and suitable equipage." Old Perry said, drily, " Sir Edward keeps his stables in the Bank of England ; " at which remark our nautical friend laughed heartily, and my dear Eliza and myself could not help smiling. The ladies at last retired ; and after taking some more wine and a bowl of punch, we joined them ; but Mrs Child could not make up a quadrille table among us all ; we, however, proposed a sober game of whist, at which she was quite shocked : yet not being able " to exist without dear cards ! " she was content to sit down to the old-fashioned alternative ; and having made two tables, we all entered the lists : old Perry saying, " Now I

like this, it is like old times." By ten o'clock our guests left us, excepting Captain and Mrs James, who remained in the hotel all night, and spent the next day with us, accompanying us to church.

On Monday I saw Captain Tracey again, and gave him the receipt, to be delivered at the Tower ; and a letter to the Master of the Ordnance at Jamaica, to take charge of the ammunition : and also letters for my brother and Captain Drake, and one for Mr Green, at Kingston. Having done this, and feeling that our business in London was drawing to a close, we congratulated ourselves on the subject, and could not be sufficiently thankful for the happy termination of so arduous, and at one time unpromising, an affair. We now turned our minds to finish whatever remained yet to be done ; and in consequence went to the jeweller, and got the perfume boxes, which had been elegantly completed according to order.

We had occasionally considered the subject of an equipage, so often pressed upon us by Mrs Child, and sometimes felt that we really ought to have a lackey at least, and my dear wife a waiting-woman. However, as we had all attendance requisite, at the hotel, we had determined to be quite unlike other people, and not have any servants of our own while in London. The subject now bore a different aspect ;—we were going among our friends, and we thought that something was due to the rank and station her Majesty had conferred on us ; and as our stay in England would be short, no great mischief could be done to my fortune by three months' expenditure, in making such a figure as at least would not disgrace us in public opinion. I therefore determined to purchase a good travelling carriage, to be driven by a postilion ; and, after some debate, we sent for our hostess, and requested her to recommend a valet to me, and a waiting-woman to Lady Seaward. After some little pause, she said, "There was a nice young Frenchwoman, (a relation of the tire-woman, who was a Parisian,) a good scholar, and a good milliner, and who sung and played the guitar charmingly, that wanted a situation."—"I shall be most happy," returned my wife, "to do anything to serve your friend, Madame Filibert ; send for the young woman, and your friend her relation, this evening, and I will talk to them."—"As for the valet, Sir Edward," resumed our honest hostess, "they are all such a pack of rascals about town, I would not advise you to hire one till you go down into the country." We thanked her for her kind and disinterested counsel, telling her I would profit by it.

We now went out, to seek about among the coachmakers

for a travelling carriage. There were carriages enough: but the new ones were without arms or emblazonry, and those that were second-hand bore the arms of other people. We had never thought on this, and could not help saying something about our dilemma. "Well, sir," civilly observed a coachmaker in Long Acre, "I can soon put in your honour's arms:—what are they?" I confess I felt extremely disturbed by the question; for I really did not know. My dear wife relieved me of my embarrassment by saying,—“If we take the carriage, we will call on you to-morrow with the escutcheon.” He bowed, and I rather hastily withdrew, glad he did not know who I was; indeed, to tell the truth, I was ashamed to go back to him again. However, I lost no time in obtaining the Seaward arms from the Herald's office, for which I paid five guineas; but whether those I got had been manufactured or not for the occasion, I could not tell: I was, however, well pleased, and so was my dear wife, to see a dolphin for a crest, supported on a knight's helmet; and as her honourable mind would not sanction anything like a scurvy trick, she sent for the coachmaker, and desired him to put merely the crest on the carriage, with the motto—“*Mon Dieu et mon Roy*,”—and to get it done as soon as possible, as we should leave London, perhaps, by the end of the week.

Madame Filibert, and her niece Rosalie, came according to appointment, and had a long interview with my wife. "I hope, madam," said the aunt, "you will treat her more like a companion than a servant, *comme une petite amie*; for she is of a good family, although I who say so am her relation. Her father was a Protestant clergyman, of the remnant of the Huguenots; but he and his brother, my husband, died poor; and she and I, and my daughters, have sought in your country that protection we could not find in our own." My dear wife was a good deal affected; and promised to be a kind friend to her niece, if she should at all merit it,—which she hoped and believed she would. Rosalie appeared modest and intelligent; possessing a light and agile figure; and, upon the whole, quite engaging by look and in manner. The terms on which she was to serve being arranged, it was further stipulated, that she should accompany her mistress to the Indies if we required it. My dear wife was not forgetful, in her own mind, that we owed all our present success with the Government to the unconscious firewoman; and she therefore was the more disposed to receive her niece on the most favourable terms; and, besides, was not indisposed to bestow some solid mark of her regard on the aunt. "Now, Madame Filibert," said my generous Eliza,

"Rosalie must come to-morrow, and assist me in packing my things ; and, as a token of my esteem for the aunt, and as a pledge of the kind treatment her niece may expect from me, I request that you, madam, will accept this small present ;" giving her, at the same time, five guineas. This unusual act of generosity surprised the good woman not a little, who returned a thousand *remerciments* to her Ladyship.

Early next morning, I gave a helping hand to my Eliza, to wrap the embossed perfume cases in two coverings of silver-paper with the most delicate directions we could devise placed between the first and second coverings. Soon after we had finished, Rosalie made her appearance ; and she and her mistress set to work packing. I selected a few articles, out of our gold and silver repository, to take with us ; and having the box containing the remainder then put into a hackney coach, I drove to Lombard Street, and deposited the contents at my bankers, in the iron chest. On my return, I found that Lady Sundon had just left the hotel : she stayed but a short time with Lady Seaward, seeing that she was busy : she, however, made her promise to dine at the palace on Thursday, and to bring me as her page. While expressing her regret that we were so soon to part, this amiable woman put a valuable and beautiful ring on my Eliza's finger, saying—"Keep this for my sake ; and when you are gone, be sure to write to me sometimes." I was much pleased with this fresh testimony of Lady Sundon's affection for her, whose honour was my greatest delight.

On Thursday we had the pleasure of dining with her Ladyship and her venerable aunt. After our dinner, my dear wife had a short interview with the Queen ; who, in the kindest manner, asked if everything had been done to my satisfaction, assuring my Eliza, at the same time, that it would afford her satisfaction, at any future period, to show us favour or protection, if we should require it. "Before I part with you, my dear Lady Seaward," continued her Majesty, "I wish to give you something, which I think you will value more than gold or jewels. When I passed through the Hague, many years ago, I met Saurin ;—I was then on my way to England. He gave me this excellent sermon, which is written in French by his own hand : I desire you to accept it, and sometimes to read it, in remembrance of me, and of the pious minister of Huguenot descent who wrote it ;—he was an excellent man ! At my request, he wrote a book for the use of one who has not profited by it as he ought ; but in God I trust." The Queen paused a second, then resumed—"I believe, Lady Seaward, that you are one of the few who give

glory and honour to God for whatever good awaits you in life ; and for this reason I lay aside the Queen when alone with you, and I confess to you, that when I met M. Saurin at the Hague, I told him I was grateful to the Disposer of crowns for that which I was about to wear ; and I feel happy, my dear young friend, in this opportunity of laying open my heart to one I believe worthy of knowing, that Caroline of England's proudest title would be that of a true Christian woman." My Eliza thanked her Majesty with a silent tear of gratitude ; and kissing the hand that was held out to her with the book, courtesied and retired.

Before we parted from our kind friends in the evening, my dear wife took occasion to ask Lady Sundon as to the Queen's allusion, when speaking of M. Saurin, and the little book that had been written by him at her command. "Ah !" replied her Ladyship ; "the Prince of Wales ; it was written for him ; but he has not profited much by it. God only knows what can induce him to act as he does ; especially to his royal mother ; who is both kind and just, and would lay down her life for his true interest and happiness : but he has bad people about him. I don't like that Lord Bolingbroke," continued Lady Sundon, lowering her voice, "and now I will tell you a secret. These bad people, by their intrigues, have contrived to throw a fire-brand in among us, which has lighted up a consuming fire in every royal breast, and has broken confidence which formerly was undoubted. Her Majesty has been informed that Sir Robert is in secret correspondence with the Prince ; and the information comes from a quarter that she may not doubt. Her Majesty has taxed him with it,—to which his answers have been rather equivocal : in consequence, she is much displeased with him, and takes every opportunity of showing it. This state of things vexes her the more, as, till then, she had entertained a favourable opinion of the minister.—But, moreover, he has contrived to send his brother to Hanover with the King, instead of Lord Harrington, to do the business of secretary of state there ; and they manage it so now, that the Duke of Newcastle does everything here ; so that nothing is known but at Claremont or Haughton. Dear Lord Harrington is, in point of fact, pushed by this cabal into the back-ground : although they dare not take from him his office ; and what is all this, as regards Lord Harrington, but some spiteful proceeding, on account of his straightforward, undeviating principles ? But the Queen knows his worth, and cannot be biassed ; and the King ought to know it too, by this time,—for he has been a faithful servant to the Crown for many

years. But for the present, at any rate, the Walpoles have managed to poison the mind of his Majesty against him; so that he is not permitted to take much upon him in public affairs; but our gracious Queen, nevertheless, seizes every occasion to show him favour and respect." My dear Eliza, unwittingly, had touched her friend on a tender point; by which much more was elicited than intended. We were truly sorry at what we heard, although it contained information of some importance to myself to know: but my dear wife thought only of what kind and soothing things she could say to her friend, that might induce her to hope eventually for such a termination to this deplorable affair as the wise providence of God would, in His own good time, bring about. Then, after taking a somewhat melancholy leave of our kind friends, we returned to the hotel.

By the end of the week, all our accounts were paid, our things packed, and every arrangement completed, including the carriage; and, on summing up all my expenditure, I found I should get out of London for £3120; taking in the amount paid for the grant, my purchases, and other expenses; but as such occasions were not likely to recur again, these disbursements, although heavy, gave me no sort of compunction or uneasiness. On Saturday all was ready; but, however anxious we might be to depart, not liking the idea of travelling on the Sabbath, we remained that day, and went to St Paul's.

CHAPTER XIX.

ON Monday morning, 8th November, 1736, I sent off our heavy trunks to Bristol by the carrier. I then paid Mrs Osborne's bill very cheerfully, not forgetting the servants; and with two small trunks and a band-box placed in the fore-boot of the carriage, and Rosalie, and our faithful little dog, and the two embossed cases, inside, we drove off with four horses, calling at the palace in our way, to take leave of our kind and dear friends. Lady Sundon saw me from a window hand my wife out, and she met us on the staircase: we were followed by Rosalie with the cases, who kept as close to us as she could, until we went into the inner apartments. The interview there, though short, was sufficiently demonstrative of the feeling that existed on both sides. "Edward," said my dear wife, "will you have the kindness to bring in those things?" I instantly obeyed. She then took the one from my hand that was intended for the Queen, saying,—"My dear Lady Sundon, implore her Majesty to accept this,

in remembrance of her most devoted servant." And then reaching the other—"Now this is for yourself, my best friend! and you must not refuse it as a sweet token of my regard, for it contains Indian perfumes. You will not be jealous of our royal mistress," continued she, "when you find hers more splendid than that I give to you."—"I cannot imagine what they are," replied her Ladyship, smiling kindly; "but believe me, my dear friend, whatever it is, I accept it for your sake! and however sweet the Indian perfume may be, its coming from your hand will make it doubly so. And I am sure her Majesty will not refuse your other sweet offering; for as you have my heart, I am confident you have hers also." Saying this, her Ladyship kissed my wife most affectionately; tears stood in their eyes; and for fear of playing the woman too, I suddenly caught hold of Lady Sundon's hand, and pressing it gently, faltered out—"Farewell!" and made my escape, leaving Rosalie to conduct her mistress down the first flight of steps, where I waited to receive her. Lady Sundon stood a little above, with many a tender parting word upon her lips; thus was our last farewell. We then hurried down to the carriage, got in, and drove off by St James's Street for Oxford, on our route for Gloucestershire.

The roads were excessively heavy and full of ruts, so that although we had four horses all the way, it was as much as we could accomplish to get into Oxford by bedtime, being much embarrassed by the darkness of the evening.

Although we were anxious to embrace our much loved friends, yet it would have been unpardonable to lose this present opportunity of seeing the renowned University of Oxford; and accordingly we spent the whole of Tuesday visiting the different colleges and the Bodleian Library, leaving Rosalie at the inn to keep Fidele company: he, poor dog! like some other famed travellers, having no great stomach for books. We were much gratified by all we saw, and made some notes of it, to enable us to call up again to our recollection, more distinctly, the one and the other of these celebrated nurseries of genius and learning.

Early on Wednesday morning, we drove forward to Woodstock; and after breakfast paid a visit to Blenheim. The noble founder of the house of Marlborough was no more, but his Duchess was still living. We admired the grandeur of this superb place, worthy of the object for which it was designed: but our chief pleasure arose from visiting the tapestry rooms, not however on account of the tapestry, for however curious and worthv it may be in point of the subject and fabric, and bright-

ness of the colours, yet the limning is altogether so wretched that it is impossible to dwell on any of the pieces with delight ; but the fine paintings of Carlo Dolce, and many other great artists, charmed us to the soul ; although untutored in estimating the character or value of pictures, we felt as if we could have remained for ever gazing on them. The person who went through the rooms with us named the painters as he described the pictures ; but he did it with indistinct rapidity, hurrying us unpleasantly along. My dear wife seemed particularly distressed by his haste, when she was rapturously engaged in contemplating a picture of a Madonna, whose hand appeared to stand out from the canvas in all the roundness of perfect life : seeing this, I touched him on the shoulder, and taking him aside, slipped a guinea into his hand.—“Give us a little time, my good friend,” I said.—“As much as her Ladyship pleases,” he replied ; so we then stood to admire whatever we thought worthy of admiration, and proceeded leisurely. At length we came to the library, built much on the scale of Noah’s ark : there was a fine statue of Queen Anne, in Parian marble, at one end, by an Italian artist, which we much commended. And having put my name down in a book on entering the mansion, we had nothing more to do on going away than to give some money to the servants ; and not having time to visit the noble grounds, we returned to our carriage, and drove off on our route for Gloucester.

The roads and inns were abominable all the way, and the horses and tackling bad as could be, after we discharged the postilions who brought us from Woodstock, sometimes finding it difficult to get the second pair ; We thought to take a late dinner at the village of Cheltenham ; but things promised so miserably that I ordered horses to be put to, with flambeaux-men, and drove on to Gloucester. We were comfortably lodged there, and had a good dinner or supper, or whatever else you please to call it, about six o’clock.

Next morning we felt rather stiff, and thought a bath would refresh us ; but the weather was too cold for anything but a warm bath, and there was no such thing to be had ; so we made a virtue of necessity, and left the stiffness to wear off as it came ; and as I had said to my Eliza’s father, in my last letter, that we should be with him a little after the noontide of this day, I hurried breakfast, and took care to have four good horses, with decent-looking fellows for postilions ; and about nine o’clock we set off in great spirits for our native village, after an absence of a little more than three years.

As we drew nearer and nearer to the cradle of our childhood

years, object crowded on object, claiming our recollections and regard. At length we saw the church through the leafless trees ; our hearts then rebounded with joy : the parsonage-house next appeared, and dear Mr Goldsmith standing before the door. "Sit on this side, dearest Eliza !" said I, hastily, "that you may be next to your father when the carriage-door is opened." She quickly took the place, and the postilions pulled up ; one of them dismounted like lightning, opened the door, and drew down the steps : he had scarcely got out of the way when my beloved was in her father's arms, but not one word from either. I saw my three sisters in the back ground ; and Eliza's two remaining sisters clinging to their father and his darling child. The old gentleman, supported by his children, gradually drew towards their house-door ; when my own sisters then came up to the carriage, from which I was descending, and received me with a like tenderness of affection. We followed into the house, where I embraced my only earthly father with all the warmth of feeling his own worth, and the worth of his incomparable daughter, inspired. Fidele did not wait for Rosalie ; he had sprung out after his mistress ; and now that higher emotions were softening down, the caresses of the faithful little dog were not unnoticed ; every one had something to say to him ; he seemed to know everybody and everything, jumping and dancing about as if he would leap out of his skin. "This is a happy day for us, dear Fidele !" said my Eliza ; still holding the hand of her father.

The things were taken out of the carriage, the postilions paid, and desired to leave it at Thornbury, to be taken care of there until I might want it. Poor Rosalie had been much moved by the scene she witnessed, for we saw her in tears. One object had touched her closely ; it was the father of Eliza, who reminded her of her own.

During the first week of our sojourn, nothing was talked of but our eventful history ; my sisters being particularly interested about James, and the sisters of Eliza equally so in everything connected with Amelia : for although they had all received letters long since our departure from Seaward Islands, yet the minutiae, the curious minutiae, of their situation and prospects were objects of amusement as well as of anxious enquiry. Dear Mr Goldsmith hung over our own story with a never-tiring avidity ; every now and then blessing God for His providential care of us, and for the grace He had vouchsafed to put into our hearts. We told our good father, privately, everything that had taken place in London ; but beyond him, we did not think

it prudent to make any disclosures. And we, moreover, confided to him the secret of our wealth, and all that had passed in our minds respecting it; telling him, that he was the only person in the world, besides ourselves, that knew it; which assertion even he considered scarcely credible, until by repeated conversations he was made acquainted with the cautious manner in which the business had been conducted throughout. The girls asked a multitude of questions about the Queen; but no answer seemed to satisfy them how it came about that Eliza should be made her Ladyship. All they said only caused a smile on her part: she was still the simple-hearted, single-minded daughter of the curate of Awbury.

One day my Eliza showed them the diamond cross, appended to the pearl necklace: and told them her Majesty gave it to her, and fastened it with her own hand. That appeared quite like a fairy tale, that the Queen of England would condescend to do such a thing: she might, indeed, give the diamond cross! But they wanted to know for whose sake, and for what reason, all this was done. "My father has already told you," replied my sweet angel, "that the Queen thought my brave husband deserved the honour of knighthood: and she conferred it on him, and thus, through his honour I am honoured, and have the title of Lady Seaward: all else was grace on the part of her Majesty, if she chose to be kind to me."—"Dear girls!" I exclaimed, "the Queen loves your sister with an affectionate friendship; and, perhaps, the truth is, that I rather owe to her what she says she owes to me—all our honours!" The old gentleman could not dissemble his exultation, and delight, at this my declaration.

On Sunday we had the supreme felicity of worshipping our God in the temple of our fathers; where every tender recollection was awakened, softening the heart, and exalting our devotional spirit. Many were the greetings we received in the churchyard, and on the way. It was gladdening to meet again our old schoolfellows and friends; and to be caressed by the aged, who had been kind to us in our youth. Some of the gentry bowed to us; and some said they would do themselves the honour of calling on us. Fame had magnified our riches; and the circumstance of having received a title, confirmed in the minds of many the most exaggerated reports. Early in the week, some of the most wealthy and respected of the country gentry called to pay their respects. These compliments we in due time returned; but refused all invitations to dinner, visiting and carousing not being our objects; yet

we were not of an unsocial turn, but it was that we aimed at higher pleasures.

The heavy trunks and packages at length arrived from Bristol, and we now began to consider what was to be done during our stay at Awbury. My dear wife, as well as myself, had always been attached to arrangement, and liked to lay out her time to advantage. We had talked over the possibility of learning the French language from Rosalie, and books had been purchased in London for the purpose ; they were now arrived, and Rosalie's guitar was come also. The days were short, to be sure, and cold, and the mornings dark ; but although these considerations affected out-of-door business, we had the same number of available hours within as at midsummer : therefore due portions of time were allotted to study, and the rest to business, and to the society of our dear friends, or an occasional visitor. Thus, our days became fully occupied, yet finding time to write long letters to my brother James and to Captain Drake ; and soon after our arrival, I sent a very kind letter to my uncle at Bristol, promising to see him very shortly. My wife fulfilled her promise to Lady Sundon, and received the most agreeable reply : in which she transmitted a gracious message from her Majesty. In this way the rapid week finished in the blissful day of rest, when we again met in the holy place of our childhood, hearing the word of God from the lips of our much-loved pastor. Not seldom we went to see my sisters, who occupied a neat small house in the village, but they more frequently came to us. Still, however, as the season was unfavourable to excursions beyond the threshold, much of our time was dedicated to reading, and more especially to the study of the French language under Rosalie, whose education had by no means been neglected. In this way our weekly hours were spent ; but on Sunday the 5th of December, we had the divine privilege of receiving the blessed sacrament of the Lord's supper : a rite which both my dear Eliza and myself had anxiously desired ; and if anything could have added to its welcome, it was that we received it from the hands of her venerable parent.

On Tuesday, letters were received from my brother James, with the pleasing intelligence that his wife had brought him a son. This was a subject of great joy, especially among the ladies ; but there was one little omission which somewhat marred the perfection of their ecstasy : he had not said what the child was to be called ! In his letter to me he stated that matters were going on well : several Spaniards had visited the islands, and one Dutchman from Curacoa : and that he had

turned the dollar pretty often to great advantage. He added, there had been some sickness, but no deaths; that they were much alarmed at one time for fear of the smallpox, it having been in one of the Spanish schooners: and he thought I ought to send a doctor to the settlement, for, in truth, he had been very uneasy on his wife's account, as there was no medical man at hand if required. He described the people as orderly and industrious; and spoke of my friend Drake in the highest terms; adding, that they all hoped soon to see us again, and that the mansion would be quite ready for our reception; and that three more houses had been built at Soldiers' Town, to complete the six allotments there, to be in readiness for any accession of settlers. This was all well, and it afforded great satisfaction to my dear Eliza and to myself.

We thought James right in advising a doctor to be added to the colony; but during our own abiding there we had not seen sickness in any shape; therefore the idea had never entered our mind. I, however, now lost no time in directing my attention to the subject, and had many conversations both with my dear wife and her father respecting it: in one of which it was further suggested by the old gentleman, that if I thought a clergyman could be supported by any means whatever, I certainly ought not to let the colony remain longer without one when it could be remedied: for the bread of life to the people should not hang on the contingency of my presence, or the disposition of any one I might leave to manage for me in my absence. His argument was conclusive as to the propriety of the measure. I, therefore, told him it should be done, leaving the ways and means for future consideration. The good old man said he could not desert his flock, or he would be happy indeed in going with us himself: but he would make enquiry, and had no doubt he should soon find a proper person. "He must be married," said I: "we shall find no difficulty in feeding his family. Marriage is our charter at Seaward Islands. They are all married, or to be married; and I think they are all nearly mated, except my friend Captain Drake; and I intend my own sister, Maria, for him, if they should like each other! and we must have our doctor a married man too." My dear Eliza smiled.—"Observe," said she to her father, "how ardent he is! This is ever the way with him: he never makes difficulties. Now I know him so well, that I can promise you houses will be built, and grounds laid out, and every comfortable arrangement made for the reception of the gentlemen and their families, before they reach the settlement. But, indeed, I have seen him, poor

fellow ! almost at his wits, end to locate the people comfortably, when they came unexpectedly in a shoal upon him : negroes, and artificers, and soldiers, and their wives and children ! he, however, did it.—Yes, my Edward,” continued she, “you did it ; and you did it well as you do everything.” From her this was no flattery, because she spoke the real sentiments of her heart. How far I deserved such an eulogium is another question : but it was pleasing to her to bestow it, and to me to receive it, and to her dear old father to hear it ; and Good Nature too, if of the party, could not but be pleased also.

We had made up our minds to pay the promised visit to my uncle at Bristol, by the end of the week ; and as I knew he would not suffer us to hide ourselves, some of our fine things were packed up for the occasion. Then having advertised him of our coming, we took Rosalie with us, and having ordered four horses to the carriage, we set off in a manner according with our station in life, and reached his door a little before noon. He was at home to receive us, and he did it quite in his old way. “Glad to see thee, Ned ! dang it, thee’s too fine ; well, never mind, if all’s right within.”—I smiled, and shook him cordially by the hand.—“How is my aunt, sir ?” said I : the old lady was not far off. “The better to see you, my dear nephew ; and you, my dear girl,” she exclaimed, meeting us in the passage, loading us both with kisses, and hearty welcomes. Rosalie remained without, to see the things taken in, but my uncle insisted on doing that himself. “I beg you will walk in ma’am,” said he.—“Not if you please, sere,” replied the girl. The old gentleman did not quite understand what she meant by “not if you please, sere,” and besides he did not clearly comprehend who she was, being very well dressed ; so he came back to us, and taking me by the uppermost button, whispered—“What is the matter with your wife’s friend ?—Is she huffed about anything ? She won’t come in ; I asked her, and she said, ‘Not if you please, sere : ’ what does she mean by that ?”—I had much ado to keep my gravity. “Let her see to the getting out her mistress’s things, sir,” said I ; “she is her waiting woman.”—“The d—l she is,” he replied ; “a French waiting woman, I suppose ; well she is a pretty maid, French or English ; she shan’t stand there ; call her in, Lissey,” cried he to my wife, “and I will see to your things, and pay the post-boys, and order the carriage to the Tolzey.”—“Thank you, sir,” I made reply ; “manage the matter just as you please.” Rosalie was called in, and my uncle was right glad at my having given him his own way. The old lady now asked us ten thousand

questions, almost altogether ; and among others, whether I had brought her any curiosities ? She, in conclusion, thanked her niece for the silver tissue sent by Captain Taylor ; then begged to be excused that she might see to the dinner, now ready. I was glad to find that no one had been invited to meet us to-day ; but on her return, being about one minute ahead of the first dish, my aunt gave me to understand, that the Mayor and one of the Sheriffs, with some other company, were to dine with my uncle to-morrow, to do honour to his nephew : and then I should see something like a dinner.

The old gentleman began his jokes before the cloth was removed :—"Why didst not bring thy French cook with thee, Ned ? I suppose thee hast a French cook, as thy lady has a French waiting maid. He would have knocked up some kick-shaws for our feast to-morrow." A smile was my only answer to my uncle's wit. Then he had at me about my money, and the galleon, at which I laughed heartily : but my Eliza, not much liking the jest, took the liberty of setting him right on that point. He, however, made several attempts to find out what I was worth, but I always baffled him. I must confess, nevertheless, that I did not myself quite relish his strain of odd humour, so long continued ; and I became in consequence quite disposed to make my visit as short as possible.

Next morning, after breakfast, my dear wife and myself went out to purchase some things, and draw for some money. On our way through the passage, we met a man carrying a couple of ugly-looking dogs in his arms. "What are you going to do with those dogs ?" said I.—"We've borrowed 'em from the neighbours," he replied, "to give our dog a bit of a help to turn the spit here to-day." I could not help laughing ; but Eliza thought the thing so strange, she wished to know more of the matter. We therefore turned back, and followed the man into the kitchen ; when, at my wife's request, the cook put my uncle's turnspit into the wheel, where he immediately fell to work like a squirrel in a cage, doing the business that a smoke-jack does in London, or weights and pulleys in other places. Her curiosity being satisfied we retired, and went forth on our projected errands.

On our return, we dressed for dinner in plain suits. A little before two o'clock, the Mayor arrived ; and soon after him, Mr Sheriff Elton. I really now felt uneasy as to my uncle's usual behaviour, fearing how he might conduct himself towards me on this occasion ; for although I am not fond of state or ceremony, yet there is a certain respectful behaviour,

at least before strangers, which should not be withheld even from junior relations; especially where adventitious circumstances have raised them in society. The old gentleman, however, to my great relief, behaved remarkably well. He had put on a laced waistcoat, and a new full-bottomed wig; and, perhaps, if he were not very scrupulous of respect for me in his own mind, he felt that he owed something to his waistcoat and to his wig. "Mr Mayor," said he, "I have the honour to introduce my nephew, Sir Edward Seaward." After a few words from the Mayor to myself and a reply, my uncle with great propriety took his worship to the end of the room, where my wife was sitting, and introduced him to Lady Seaward. He then went through the same ceremony with the Sheriff, and six other gentlemen whom he had invited to meet us. Precisely at two o'clock the dinner was on the table, which must have been upborne by the shoulders of Atlas, to support the weight of all that was put thereon. When I contemplated the sirloin of beef, and all the other roasts, I thought on the poor dogs we had met in the passage. The Mayor sat on my aunt's right hand, and my wife took post next to him. I was on the opposite side, next to the Sheriff; the gentlemen now sitting below, forced me into this situation. The Mayor, I perceived, was a gentleman of high breeding; and evidently knew much of the world, and something of books: he talked a good deal with Lady Seaward, on subjects by no means common-place; and I heard him say, that the Mayoress would do herself the honour of calling on her Ladyship to-morrow; and he hoped they should have the pleasure of seeing us at their house before we quitted Bristol. My aunt left the table soon after dinner, and my wife accompanied her. The old gentleman then passed the wine very freely for a couple of hours; about which time, two enormous bowls of punch were put on the table, which were generally resorted to; but I drank nothing but red Bourdeaux wine, and thus, if I did not contrive to keep my tongue quiet, I kept my head cool; while all around me not only gave noisy, but other evidence of the potency of their beverage. The Mayor often said he would like some tea, and desired to retire to the ladies; but my uncle would not allow him to budge; and by way of consoling him I suppose, about six o'clock Welsh rabbits were brought in, and a great cider cup handed round. Most of the company partook of this treat, but I would not touch it. About nine o'clock we broke up; when I was very glad to ask my aunt for some coffee, and soon after retire to rest.

In the morning the family was ready for church, my uncle not feeling at all the worse for his mighty dose the day before; but, on the contrary, seemed much more agreeable, now giving a truce to his jokes; so that we had a good deal of rational conversation in the interval of church-time. After supper, I endeavoured to give him some idea of the condition of the people and trade at Seaward Islands; and I took this opportunity of telling him I wished to send a respectable medical man there, who would be made comfortable; but nothing beyond that could be held out to him. He said, he "knew an ass of a fellow—a Scotchman too—who had been two or three yoyages to the coast of Guinea, in a ship belonging to a friend of his; but who would not go there again, on account of what he considered as cruelties practised on the slaves; although he and his wife were next thing to starving, for he had no other business nor dependence."—"He is the very man for me," I replied, "if he can show testimonials of education."—"Didn't I tell you he is a Scotsman?" exclaimed my uncle; "should not that be enough?"—"Not quite, sir," I replied; "but, in my mind, it is something in his favour."—"Thee art an apt scholar, Ned!" said he, drily; "how many lessons didst have from the minister? Mayhap, he took thee for a Scotsman! They say he finds them the best of servants."—"You would be a little severe, uncle," I replied; "but we pray you mercy, good sir." He felt himself now on an eminence, and laughed heartily at his imaginary triumph over his nephew and Sir Robert Walpole.

On Monday, I lost no time in sending a note to Mr Gordon, the Scotch doctor; stating, in part, my reason for requesting him to call on me. He very soon acknowledged my note in person; when I entered more at large with him on the subject: he was rather silent the while, and cautious in his answers, but occasionally putting to me a material question. After an hour's discussion, he said he would consult his wife, and consider of it, and would be glad to talk to me again about it; that it was altogether, as far as he could see, "an out o' the way business; but he might engage in it, if I could let him see his way clear."

In the course of the day, Mrs Blackwell and Mrs Elton, the wives of the Mayor and Sheriff, called; which visit my aunt and wife returned in due course; and an invitation to a dinner at the Mayor's, on Friday, followed.

On Wednesday, Mr Gordon waited on me again, and I was glad to see him. He appeared disposed to accept the situation; but he thought £50 a year a small salary in the West Indies:

and as to the accommodations of which I talked, that might or might not be, just as it happened; "he would like to have them specified."—"Mr Gordon," said I, "it is your misfortune to take great pains, in the present case, to misapply the good rule of *hard but honest dealing*: if you will throw yourself on my generosity, you shall have no reason to repent it."—"That may be true enough, Sir Edward Seaward," he replied; "but the teaching I have had tells me not to trust to the generosity of any man."—I said, "I was sorry to hear this;" adding, "I should like for your wife to wait on Lady Seaward, and perhaps they may succeed better than we do in settling it;" at which he smiled, saying, "he could not see much objection to that." He then got up to go away; on which I asked him, whether he had proper testimonials of his medical education. "Sir," he replied, "I have got my diploma in my pocket;" on which I bowed, and he took his leave. In the course of the afternoon, Mrs Gordon came; she appeared a nice little Englishwoman, and rather well spoken, and genteel in her manner. I left her and my wife together, to settle this unnecessarily troublesome business; and they were closeted for nearly two hours. When she was gone, my dear Eliza recounted to me the heads of the conversation. Suffice it to say, she had succeeded in making the Doctor's wife desirous of going on my own terms; and the following day was appointed for putting a finish to the business.

While at supper, we were all much distressed by an account that just reached us of a vessel from Chepstow for Bristol, with nearly a hundred passengers, having got on the sands last night; all of whom, excepting a few that escaped in the boat, had perished, and many of those lost were said to be people of Bristol, some leaving large families destitute. My kind-hearted uncle immediately said,—“While the story is fresh, it will be easy to raise some money for the afflicted survivors, and I will see to it to-morrow.” My dear wife and myself felt deeply on the occasion, and I desired him, in the event of a subscription being got up, to put my name down for any sum he pleased, not exceeding the chief magistrate's donation, whatever that might be.

Mr Gordon and his wife came to their appointed time. "Now," said I, "Mr Gordon, my uncle's brig will sail about Christmas, which is very near at hand; I will pay your passage, and your wife's, and take care that you have comfortable stores found you during the voyage. On your arrival at Seaward Islands, you shall be received into my brother's house, where

you will live as he does, free of expense, until a fit habitation be got ready for you : it will consist of a dining hall, and two bedrooms : and some little land attached ; and this you shall possess free of rent, so long as you remain practising your profession among us. I will advance you money to furnish your house : you shall have a male and female negro for your servants, so long as you behave well to them—which I flatter myself you will always do ; and for their services no charge will be made, excepting that they must be fed and clothed at your expense. I will stock your poultry-yard and your grounds, at my own charge ; and I will pay you a salary of £50 a year, for your attendance on all the people ; the medicines to be found at the public expense, or at mine. Will this do, Mr Gordon ?” continued I.—“It will do very well indeed, sir,” he replied, “but a written agreement is no bad *cationer* ; and I suppose you will make no objection to give it me under your hand.”—“My word is my bond, sir,” said I, rather warmly ; “but you shall have it in writing, as you desire it.” My dear wife fired at the request of Mr Gordon : she thought he had no right to require it ; that his having done so implied a distrust, which was highly insulting ; besides, many of the offers made to him were purely gratuitous, therefore should not be altered in their nature, by turning them into an absolute matter of bargain. I saw the force of her argument, and began to think that this man’s prudence, by running into the extreme, had assumed a vicious and rather troublesome aspect. After taking a turn or two in the room, I said to him—“I think we must break off this negotiation, Mr Gordon ; your mind and mine were not cast in the same mould : I fear I could not respect you, and hence I could not make you happy at the settlement ; therefore I break it off.” So saying, I bowed to the pair, and quitted the room, leaving them with my wife, to end it in any way she might think proper.

After I was gone, Lady Seaward spoke to him rather sharply on the suspicion he seemed to entertain of my integrity ; adding—“I fear, Mr Gordon, you must have met with very bad people, in your intercourse with the world, to be so suspicious.”—“I canna say but I have,” he replied ; “I was two years in a Guineaman.” His wife now set on the poor man without mercy, venting her spleen on him in no very measured terms. He took it all very quietly, saying at last to his wife—“I’ll do anything you like ; but there’s neither sin nor shame in a man’s desire to do business in a business-like way ; and for this cause, I am reproached by you, and Sir Edward Seaward, and his lady

here. I did not ask his name to a paper," continued he, "because I doubted him ; so I'll now do just anything you like, wife."—"Well, then," she replied, "explain yourself to Sir Edward, when you see him, and ask him to look over your folly, and give you the situation ; for let me tell you," added she, "there are many much better off than we are that would be glad to jump at it." Thus finished this interview of Mr Gordon and his wife with Lady Seaward ; and they then took their leave, the Doctor having left rather a dubious impression on her mind respecting him. He, however, wrote a note to me the next morning, which was meant as an apology for what had passed ; requesting I would blot it from my memory, and give him the situation on my own terms. In reply to this, I desired him to call on me with his diploma, and that the business should be done ; accordingly he came without loss of time, and the affair was concluded.

This day being Friday, we were engaged to dine at the Mayor's ; and thought it due to the occasion to put on our full dress. My poor aunt, not accustomed to go out to dinner parties, consulted Eliza about her finery : there was one thing the old lady much wanted, and that was a handsome necklace and ear-rings. "Now, my dear aunt," said Eliza, "when I was going to be married, my uncle sent me £100 which was very acceptable ; and which you, my kind aunt, assisted me to lay out to the best advantage. Now that it has pleased God to give us plenty of money, I wish to return the £100 in some way or other ; but I know, if I were to offer it in money to my uncle, it would affront him ; therefore let us go, and lay it out in diamond ear-rings, and a handsome necklace for yourself ; and when you have put them on, you can thank him for his elegant present." My good aunt required little more to be said ; thinking her niece as sensible as she was generous and honest : and while the old lady was getting ready, Eliza came to me, and told me what she had done. I was glad of it, and immediately gave her a draft on London for the money. They went out ; and I thought they never would come back : my uncle got out of all patience, for fear we should keep the Mayor waiting dinner. At last they made their appearance. My dear wife soon dressed herself, and sent Rosalie to assist in doing the same to my aunt ; who, however, did not make quite so much haste. We of the masculine gender were fully attired long before the ladies, or, at least, before my aunt was ready ; and were in waiting for them below. My poor uncle, not being able to sit quiet one minute, had been walking constantly up

and down the room, looking at his watch every now and then ; and sometimes going to the bottom of the stairs, he would bawl out—"Dorothy, we shall be too late !" till at length, fidgeted into fatigue, or despair, he sat down in his arm-chair, and began a stave of "George Riddler's oven." At last her quick foot-step was heard on the stairs, which set him on his feet ; and he began to chuckle and smile, just as she sailed into the room with all the airs and graces that the consciousness of fine apparel is said to bestow on the peacock. "Thank you, deary, for your elegant present !" she exclaimed, pointing to her diamond ear-rings and necklace. "Very grand, indeed," he replied : "I suppose your niece lent you those fine kickshaws."—"No, sir, my niece did not lend them to me, but bought them for me with your money, for which I am very much obliged to her and to you."—"Nonsense !" he ejaculated, with a querulous tone. "Come away, Dorothy, we shall lose our dinner !" so giving a truce to parley, we stepped into a hired coach, my own carriage not being large enough, and drove direct to his Worship's house.

In about an hour after our arrival, we sat down to a superb dinner, surrounded by a company equally well chosen, and sumptuously dressed. I had the pleasure to sit next to Gen. Grenfield's lady, who had been at Jamaica. She said she was enchanted with Lady Seaward, with whom she had conversed before dinner ; and wished much to cultivate her acquaintance : and as we were about to return to the West Indies, she would be happy to give her letters to an old schoolfellow of hers, Miss Crawford, who, by this time, she had reason to believe, was Mrs Trelawney. My wife sat next to the General, who was on the right hand of the Mayoress ; and I was happy to observe the great attention she received from him, and everyone near to her. The day went off uncommonly well ; we did not sit many hours after the ladies ; but, as soon as the grace-cup went round, retired to the drawing-room, where there was tea and cards. Here I had a good deal of conversation with General Grenfield : we talked much of Jamaica and the conduct of the Spaniards. He was both curious and minute in his enquiries about Seaward Islands : he thought in the event of a Spanish war, they might be made a valuable *point d'appui*, from which the enemy could be greatly distressed. He said, "In the event of a war, he suspected I should have more visitors than would be agreeable to me ; and that when the importance of the position was understood, it would be a bone of contention." We took leave of the Mayor and his lady

about ten o'clock, well pleased with our entertainment; and equally so with the company, among whom I made some agreeable and well-informed acquaintance.

On Saturday morning I entered upon arrangements with my uncle about sending Mr Gordon and his wife out in the *Mary* to the islands; and, by my request, Captain Taylor was invited to dinner, that I might talk that matter and some others over with him. In the course of the day, General and Mrs Grenfield called; and they were much disappointed when we told them we must leave Bristol on Tuesday; however, we promised to visit them on our return, previous to embarking for the West Indies. Captain Taylor came to dinner, as I had requested; which afforded me the opportunity I so much desired of talking to him on our trans-Atlantic matters. He made no objection to his passengers; agreeing to take them for £25 each, and find them in comfortable provisions. He was to carry out a considerable investment for my brother in merchandise, to be shipped by my uncle, with which I had nothing to do. But we settled a list of such things as I should want for my own establishment, and to dispense to others; which my uncle undertook to get, and Captain Taylor promised to take charge of. Among these were bedsteads and mattresses, and table and culinary necessities, for the doctor and parson.

On Sunday we attended divine worship at the Cathedral; and in the course of the day visited the fine equestrian statue of King William, which had just been set up in Queen Square, executed by Mr Rysbraek.

I sent for Mr Gordon on Monday morning, and told him the vessel would sail in a week or thereabouts; and desired him to order a medicine-chest to be fitted up to the amount of £20, to be marked with my name; the bill to be sent in to my uncle. "And now, sir," said I, "would a small advance of money be of use to you?" He replied—"I shall hae much need o' that;" adding, that he owed some money in Bristol, and could not go away without paying it. "If it is a fair question, Mr Gordon, how much may you owe?"—"Perhaps, sir," he answered, "about 50s or £3 at most."—"Well," I resumed, "you can have that sum; but you will want more."—"I dinna see that, Sir Edward," he replied; "you say we are to be found in necessities."—"That is very true," I rejoined; "but you may want some light clothing for yourself or for your wife; besides some additional shoes, perhaps, and many other matters: would you like to take £10?"—"I am not sure how that should be," he replied.—"Let Mrs Gordon, then, call by-

and-by," said I : "she and Lady Seaward shall talk the business over ; and whatever money she may think well to have in advance, you, I suppose, will not object to it?"—"Just that," was his answer. And just thus we settled it : and I saw him no more till I met him again at St George's Island. He, however, soon sent his wife to us, who understood better than he did what they might require, especially after having had some conversation with Lady Seaward ; when it was fixed that they should have £25, which were paid over to her, and for which I took her receipt.

We contrived, in the course of the day, to return General and Mrs Grenfield's visit, when that lady gave us the promised letter ; and afterwards to make a call at the Mayor's. Having now arranged everything with my uncle on matters of business, and giving him a draft on London for £250, which was calculated to cover the amount of the supplies to be sent on my account by the Mary, and also the amount of passage-money for the Doctor and his wife, we prepared for our departure next morning.

Breakfast being over, the carriage came to the door ; the trunks then being placed, and the other things got in, we took an affectionate leave of our hospitable friends. Feeling that I had forgiven my uncle for his rough and rather rude jokes, I presented him with a gold snuff-box as I shook him by the hand ; with which mark of my regard he evidently was highly pleased ; and after a few more good-bys, Rosalie having got in first by the desire of her mistress, we quickly followed, and our postilions drove off with as much speed as several obstructing carts and sledges would permit.

On our arrival at Awbury, I found a packet under cover of a secretary of state's frank : there was a letter in it for me, and a note for my wife. The former, from the under secretary of state, by command of his Grace the Duke of Newcastle ; the latter, from the Queen. After I had read my letter, I laid it down, saying—"Here is something for me to do, indeed!"—"You will not hesitate to do it, I know," said my dear Eliza ; "the Queen has written to me about it ;" then opening her Majesty's note again, she read a few lines of it aloud—"They are my country people ; I am sure you will use your influence with your husband to comply with the request of Government, and that you will be kind to them for my sake."—"Indeed, I will," exclaimed my wife ; "and I am sure you will be so to, my honoured husband!"—"What is it?" said Mr Goldsmith.—"Some German families," I replied, "that came over

to England to go to Georgia ; but who arrived too late to go out with a body of people just sailed for that colony. And you will perceive by the official letter, that I am requested 'to take them out, and locate them at Seaward Islands.'" My father-in-law read the letter ; and could not help observing that it was rather strange the request was not qualified by some intimation as to the manner of their transport from England, at least. "That is what struck me," I replied. "Well, never mind that," said Eliza ; "let us reply to these letters immediately ; assenting to the request in the handsomest manner. You can then state that if Government will convey the families to Jamaica, you will have a vessel there ready to take them to Seaward Islands ; and that you only have to regret your being obliged to give any trouble whatever, in a business confided to you."—"Well, dearest," returned I, "it shall be done as you say ; but you perceive there are twelve families ; in all, nearly forty persons ; and unless Government makes some provision for them, I must be at the expense of feeding them all for at least six months after their arrival, besides the cost of locating them."—"Do it, my dear Edward," she replied ; "without counting the cost, do it ; because they are wanderers without a home, and because they are the country people of the Queen, and the heart of your wife is with them." Her appeal moved me to tears ; I threw myself on her neck, saying—"It is done !" The old gentleman was much affected by what had passed ; and he gloried in the triumph of his daughter and humanity over cold calculating policy.

No time was lost in replying to these letters. My letter to the under secretary of state was written agreeable to my Eliza's suggestion ; adding, that I should be happy to know when I might expect to find the people at Jamaica : and that in case of their arriving a few days before the vessel from Seaward Islands, I would advise their being landed at Port Royal, and lodged in the artillery barracks, to be allowed army rations until I could remove them ; after which they should incur no further expense on the Government. My dear wife was pleased with my letter ; the perusal of which, she said, would enable her to write to the Queen in a proper frame of mind. She then sat down, and soon wrote her reply. It was an admirable letter for the occasion. I preserve the copy of it with great care. I was surprised to see with what ease she did a thing, which, to most people, would have been an undertaking of great difficulty.

Copy.—"May it please your Majesty to accept the grateful

thanks of her most devoted servant, whom she has just honoured with fresh proofs of confidence and esteem. The task your Majesty has confided to me shall be performed with assiduity and tenderness ; I will watch over the necessities of your country people with all the care your own royal feelings would suggest ; and it will be my happiness to think, that in so doing, I am but the proxy of your Majesty. Recommending my dear husband and myself to your Majesty's esteem,

“ I have the honour to be, Madam,

“ Your most grateful and dutiful servant,

“ ELIZA SEAWARD.

“ *Awbury, Gloucestershire,*

“ *Dec. 22, 1736.*”

Such was the letter, which the Queen afterwards showed to Sir Robert Walpole ; and, I know, accompanied by an expression worth repeating :—“ Sir Robert, somebody said, or it has been said for them, that women have neither head nor heart. I think here is a proof of both.”—“ No one could be guilty of such heresy,” replied the minister, “ in an age when your Majesty is so splendid an example of the contrary.”—“ Then they belie you, good sir,” returned the Queen.—“ My friends say some good things for me, may it please your Majesty ; and when my enemies undertake to say bad things for me, which they often do, I then should be happy if it might not please your Majesty.” The Queen, I am told, could not help laughing, and the conversation took the turn originally intended.

The letters were sealed, and sent off under cover to the Duke of Newcastle, from whose office they had been forwarded.

During dinner, my dear wife and myself had a great deal of deep conversation about locating the German families, and also respecting establishments for the clergyman and for the doctor : in all which Mr Goldsmith took great delight ; and, to enable him the better to comprehend the subject, I laid a map of the islands before him in the afternoon—to which he referred frequently during our discussion. I took this opportunity of telling him I had engaged a medical man ; who, with his wife, were to go out immediately in my uncle's brig : but that I proposed taking the clergyman with myself, so that there would be plenty of time to find a suitable person. “ And now,” said I, “ to-morrow I must occupy myself in writing long letters, ordering arrangements to be made for the reception of all the strangers ; and I humbly implore the direction of God to enable me to do it well.”—“ I like that spirit,” said the old gentleman : “ depend upon it,

Edward," continued he, "that is the fountain of all your honours, and your happiness."

Next morning I set to work upon my letters, which I wrote very much at length ;—one to my brother, one to Captain Drake, and one to Mr Green at Jamaica ; in which I endeavoured to embrace every point that the intended movements might require. I requested my brother to entertain Doctor Gordon in his house, until one could be got ready for him, and, as the Doctor was sent out by James's own particular desire, I thought he of course would not hesitate to give him this hospitality. I directed four acres of ground to be cleared for him, between Allwood's lots and the spring on Edward's Island ; and a house to be built for him there, on the original plan of our Mansion at the Fort. I called it the Fort, for I hoped, by the time he got my letter, the guns sent from Woolwich would be mounted. I desired Mr Green to provide frame-work and shingles for two houses, and whatever else Captain Drake might require, on my account. I entrusted Drake with the Germans, when they might arrive, desiring them to be located along the west side of St George's Island, upon the best land, divided into suitable lots, and to provide them with a four-oared boat ; and to bring a supply of yams, and Indian corn, and molasses, with him from Jamaica, for their use, when he came to convey them to the islands. I now wrote to my uncle, to send out by Taylor ten barrels of Irish beef, and as many of pork, together with forty bags of bread, on my account : and my letters being finished, I sealed them and sent them off, under cover to my uncle, with others from the family for James and his wife,—congratulatory, no doubt, on the birth of their son and heir : and this being accomplished, I was glad to give a truce for a while to business.

CHAPTER XX.

THE present week was to be full of the sacred season's festivities, with great doings amongst the gentry. The little boys and girls of the neighbourhood were already going about in the evenings, singing their Christmas carols at the doors of the village. Saturday would be Christmas-day, and all hearts were joyous in its anticipation. At different times I had conferred with Eliza's father on some mode of helping the poor of our native place ; but as yet we had not come to any precise determination : it was, however, agreed that the present season would afford a fit occasion of demonstrating my kindly feelings towards them.

Accordingly, he made a list of the poor cottagers and others ; for whom bread, and bacon, and beer, were now amply provided by my order, and served out to them by the beadle : a trifle in money, also, was added to the boon, by the hand of their worthy curate. Our young damsels kept the parsonage in a bustle, making mince-pie meat and plum puddings : my sisters were to keep Christmas at the parsonage ; and a couple of old gentlemen farmers, friends of the family, were invited to the dinner.

When the day arrived, the church looked quite a garden, dressed in its holly ; and we were happy to see again that well-remembered commemoration of the Nativity. On our return, the *yule log* was on, and the table laid : a hearty dinner was soon served up ; and great justice quickly done to the roast beef, and plum pudding, and mince pies. In the evening, Rosalie favoured us with some pretty French and English songs, accompanied by her guitar ; and my dear Eliza sung ; and the merriment went round. Then came St George and his train, desiring admittance : they were dressed in the most grotesque manner. One boy was St George, another was his horse, another the dragon ; then came his 'squire, and a doctor, and so forth. St George mounted his horse, and attacked the dragon nobly ; but the beast wounded him, and unhorsed him ; on which the doctor takes the elixir from his pocket, saying—

“ Here, take the spirit of elecampane ;
Rise up, St George, and fight again.”

In a moment he is restored—he mounts—the dragon falls, and is dragged off in triumph. The valiant knight, with Membrino's helmet, (the barber's basin of the village, borrowed for the occasion,) quickly returned to us for our favours ; into which some sixpences were thrown, besides halfpence, as a reward for the performance. After supper, we drank punch, and our young gentlemen played at snap-dragon. This dragon vomited fire fiercely ; but the ladies held him as cheap as St George had done, when encountering him in another shape ; nevertheless, they were obliged to have recourse to some latent charm in their own tongue,—applied, by licking their fingers, after every snatch at the raisins ; for they were lodged in the fiery jaws of the blue-burning dragon. Thus finished the festivities of our Christmas-day at Awbury ; happy in seeing every one around us happy.

Sunday followed ; a holy day rather than a holiday : but both days were holy : the first commemorative of His coming, to win for us that Rest of which the second is the type on earth, and into which He on that day entered, to prepare a place for those who love Him.

On the following morning, my good father-in-law and myself had some conversation on a subject mentioned by Mr Giles, one of the old gentlemen that dined with us on Christmas-day. He had said, that Colonel Tomlinson's estate was to be sold by auction at Gloucester, some time next month, to pay off a gambling debt he had got into at Bath. I stated to Mr Goldsmith, that I was anxious to invest some of my money in land ; for the funds, at present, did not give more than three per cent. ; and I felt confident we must soon have a Spanish war, and that then they would fall low enough. In consequence, we set an enquiry on foot, and found the rumour to be true ; for in a few days handbills were sent about, announcing the day of sale, at the Booth-hall in Gloucester. We lost no time in visiting the property, which lay about seven miles from Awbury ; and I took our two farmer friends with us, to explore it,—which investigation occupied us nearly three days, and then they made up their minds as to what it was worth. The land generally speaking was found to be good ; but the mansion rather mean, and the grounds round it in miserable condition.

On the 14th of January, the day of the sale, my dear Eliza, and her father, and myself, went to Gloucester ; and leaving her at the King's Head, we walked over to the Booth-hall. A plan of the estate was there exhibited : it contained 1750 acres. As soon as the company collected, the rent-roll, in which the leases, rates, tithes, &c., were stated, was then read : after which, the auctioneer declared ten per cent. must be paid down, as deposit money, by the purchaser ; and that a good and satisfactory title would be given, before the payment of the whole money was required. The estate was then put up, and the bidding soon became very brisk. I did not bid till it got up to £20,000 ; I then bid £500 more. No one seemed disposed to go further ; but a stranger coming in, ran it up to £23,500. I then bid another £500 ; on which it was knocked down to me. "It is yours, sir," said the auctioneer : "your name, if you please?"—"Sir Edward Seaward," I replied. On giving my name, there was a considerable buzz in the room ; and the eyes of the company, generally, were turned on the purchaser. In a second or two I heard a person not very far from me say—"Who is this Sir Edward Seaward?"—"Why, haven't you heard that he was a post-boy, or cow-boy, or farmer's boy, or something like, at Thornbury?" replied a red-faced squire, that made one of three who were discussing the point. Without saying a word to dear Mr Goldsmith, I instantly stepped across the room, beginning to speak as I advanced.—"Gentlemen, I

beg leave to inform you that I never was either a post-boy, or a cow-boy, or a farmer's boy, at Thornbury, or anywhere else ; but I was the son of a poor but honest farmer at Awbury, and now, by the blessing of God, I am what I am : but I should disgrace my father were I ashamed of what I was." As I spoke, you might have heard a pin drop ; and when I had concluded, several gentlemen introduced themselves to me, desiring the honour of my acquaintance ; among whom, a worthy Baronet stood forward, observing, that he could not sufficiently respect me for the manly way in which I had come forward on the present occasion.

The auctioneer now asked for his deposit-money ; which I paid by a draft on my banker. This being done, we went to an attorney in Gloucester, well-known to my father-in-law. I desired this gentleman to see the business properly settled ; and told him when the deeds were complete, and myself put in possession, the money should be forthwith paid down. Highly pleased with all I had done, we returned to our dear Eliza, and told her that I had purchased Hartland estate. Dinner was soon put on the table ; which to us was very acceptable, after the fatigue of an anxiety inseparable from so momentous an undertaking. After dinner I wrote to Perry & Co., advising them that I had drawn for £2400, being deposit money for an estate I had just purchased ; and that in a week or ten days I should have occasion to draw for £24,000, less the deposit-money ; and to enable them to meet my draft, I desired them to sell £20,000 stock. When my letter was finished and despatched, the day was pretty nigh shut in, so we determined to postpone our return until the morrow : we, therefore, drew comfortably round the fire, and ordered a bowl of punch ; enjoying the evening in delightful conversation—a happy trio—loving and beloved.

Previous to our departure on the following day, we visited the Cathedral, for the purpose of seeing what, Mr Goldsmith stated, could not be seen elsewhere ; the three successive styles of English architecture, comprised within the walls of one building. He seized the opportunity of explaining this perplexing subject to us ; by the examples which stood before us. Here was the more ancient, clumsy, Saxon arch and pillar ; there the equally solid Norman shaft, with its arch equally solid and semi-circular ; but being ornamented with the zig-zag and roses, declared it to be the production of a later era. The great body of the church, somewhat distinct from the rest, displayed fascies of small and beautiful shafts, supporting elliptical

arches towering and hanging as it were in the air. This, he said, was the last effort of monastic genius in cathedral architecture. The day being cold, and our visit being rather short, this is all I can remember ; excepting that we saw a fine recumbent statue, or effigy, of the unfortunate King Edward, who was murdered in Berkeley Castle about four hundred years ago, and whose body is reported to lie buried beneath this well executed marble.

We returned to Awbury to late dinner ; where my sisters were invited to meet me. They were highly delighted with the information they received of my having bought Hartland ; and I added to their happiness, by imparting to them an arrangement made last evening, round the inn's fire-side, respecting themselves. " As soon as I get possession," said I, " you three shall go, with Eliza and myself, to inhabit Hartland House. And as all the furniture is to be left, excepting plate, glass, china, and linen, there will not be a great deal to do, to render it tolerably comfortable. About the middle of April, we intend to return to Seaward Islands ; and it is our wish, dear Maria," continued I, addressing myself to my youngest sister, " to take you from your sisters, and that you accompany us, leaving Grace and Anne to take care of the house in our absence. And when we return, we will live all together ; unless some of us be otherwise disposed of ; or my elder sisters shall have a house to themselves, with a comfortable income as long as they live." Maria was delighted at the idea of going with us ; and the others were equally so with their home prospects. The morrow was the Sabbath, which to us is always a day of peace and holy joy.

Thursday brought letters from Messrs Perry & Co., with an account of the sale of my South Sea stock ; and most satisfactory it was : the great rise in the fund being quite unexpected, having reached 111 ; so that the £20,000 stock fetched £22,200 money.

But I received a private letter also from Mr Perry, congratulating himself and me on the handsome sum I had realised by the sale, not less than £5000 : and he would now most strenuously advise me to sell the whole of it, since it had got up so high ; for notwithstanding the defeat ministers had met with in the last session of Parliament, in their attempt to pay this stock off, it might not always be the case : and he therefore would advise me to purchase East India shares, which were now at 176, but which bore an interest of six per cent. ; a most advantageous transfer. My remaining £49,532 three per cents., say at 110, would purchase £36,956 in India shares, the interest in the threes on my remaining sum being £1485 per annum ;

whereas in the India shares, under existing relative prices, it would be £1854. I lost no time in replying to Mr Perry's most friendly letter; requesting him, without delay, to sell all my three per cent. stock, and purchase East India shares as he had suggested, thanking him for the great service his zeal and his intelligence had already rendered me.

On Monday, the 24th, we heard of the narrow escape of the King in attempting to cross the Channel, and of the great alarm of her Majesty on the occasion, but that he had now safely arrived, and that congratulatory addresses were pouring in from all quarters: and my dear wife also felt it her duty to write a congratulatory letter, through Lady Sundon, to the Queen, which not many days after, her Majesty most graciously acknowledged with her own hand; taking the same opportunity of thanking her "dear little friend," for her "inestimable letter respecting the poor Germans."

On the following day, Mr Wilson, my attorney, accompanied by the attorney of Colonel Tomlinson, called on me with the title-deeds of Hartland, which were duly executed, perfect, and satisfactory. My good father-in-law ordered dinner early; and in the meantime, I showed the gentlemen of the law my banker's account, to assure them there were funds. I then drew out the bill for £21,600 and put it in my pocket. The carriage and horses were sent for; and after taking a hasty dinner, my Eliza and her father stepped into it, the two attorneys being in a post-chaise. We all went over to Hartland: where I was put in possession before three witnesses, and the deeds delivered. I then paid over my draft on London, to the Colonel's attorney; and the business being thus finished, we returned to Awbury.

Next day, the Colonel's steward and all the tenants waited on me at the parsonage, which made a great bustle in the village. I received them with proper civility, but postponed entering on business of any kind. I told the tenantry, I would appoint a day for seeing them at Hartland House; but declined the offer of the steward's services, saying, I should have no occasion for them. He said, "A good steward was a necessary and useful person; he knew how to make the most of the estate; and never objected to advance half a year's rent to his employer, if required." I told him, I gave him all the credit he desired; but neither of the points he had put forward could be of the smallest importance to me; and that I had made up my mind.

There were no inmates in Hartland House but the gardener and his wife, whom I had told I should retain. And I then desired the wife to hire a couple of women; and get in a load of

coals, and some soap, and make fires in every room in the house, and scour it down from the garrets to the kitchen, as we should come over, to reside, on Monday next. I wrote to my uncle without delay, informing him of my purchase, at the same time requesting him to hire a footman for me ; and to give my wife's dear love to her aunt, wishing to have a good cook and two housemaids from Bristol. The servants arrived on Saturday morning, with a congratulatory letter from the old gentleman. They were immediately despatched to Hartland, accompanied by my two elder sisters, and a pannier of provisions, my sisters being requested to remain, and see that everything was put in order for us : and to give them more time we deferred our coming till Tuesday ; making use of the intermediate days, to order from Bristol such articles as would be required for house-keeping. By Tuesday the supplies were procured, and after dining with our good father, my dear Eliza, with Rosalie and Fidele, drove over to our new abode. They had made the place very clean, and we were much gratified by the improved aspect in which we now beheld it. A few days ago it was all gloom and filth, now it was all cheerfulness and cleanliness. The fires were bright, and the servants were about and smiling. The tea-things were on the table, and the candles ready to be lighted, and my two sisters right gladsome to see us, and to see us so well pleased with our reception.

In the course of the week, we made ourselves quite comfortable in our new home, and I wrote to Bristol, to job a couple of horses, and a coachman to ride postilion, for three months ; which was about the time I had allowed myself to remain in England. Liveries were got for the men, and everything arranged "*comme il faut*," as Rosalie had taught us to express it. On the first Sunday after our removal, which was the 6th of February, we brought back with us my dear sister Maria, whom we had left at the parsonage ; and on the following day Eliza's sisters, and their worthy father, came over and spent the day with us. I prevailed on him, during this visit, to undertake the stewardship of the property ; and we agreed on an outline of conduct to be pursued towards the tenantry, and, in making a new let, to take the price of wheat for our guide, now 4s. the bushel. I appointed the tenants to meet him and me at the house on Thursday ; when all points were explained to the general satisfaction : one of which was, that I intended to build twelve small cottages, with three acres of land attached to each, insuitable situations, for poor industrious families, and if I wanted a bit of land from any of my tenants, to accomplish

any part of that plan, I expected it would not be refused on equitable terms.

The grounds and the garden belonging to the great house were altogether in a most ruinous state ; I therefore hired a couple of men to assist the gardener, and I had the pleasure to see great progress made in putting them in order. By the middle of the month we were quite settled, and everything going on like clockwork : for my dear Eliza, as well as myself, was a great admirer of order, and method, and circumstantial arrangement ; which is the great secret of good and successful management.

It was not long before we received visits from all the first people in the neighbourhood ; and as it was no secret that my wife corresponded with the Queen, Lord and Lady Berkeley did not think us unworthy of their attention. We duly returned all the visits paid to us ; but, from prudential motives, and our love of domestic quiet, we uniformly refused all invitations to dinner.

On the 26th I had a letter from the under secretary of state, to say, that the Germans had sailed in a storeship for Jamaica, and that they would be lodged at Port Royal, agreeably to my suggestion, until one of my vessels could remove them to Seaward Islands ; also, that her Majesty had ordered them to receive a suit of new clothing each, on their arrival at Jamaica, and 40s in money on embarking for their ultimate destination : and he was commanded to thank me, in the name of the King, for the handsome manner in which I had complied with the request of Government respecting them. I was glad to receive this intimation ; and, indeed, much pleased with the whole tenor of the communication,—at once so gratifying and flattering.

A letter from Mr Perry announced that he had made a transfer of the stock, as proposed, and that it would turn out a very good thing. In reply to this letter, after thanking him, I requested him to open the iron chest, and put aside the gold sword handles, and eight of the gold chains, the four silver salvers, the two beakers, and the candlesticks ; and then to sell all the rest by weight to a goldsmith, and lay out the amount in elegant modern silver plate ; or as much of the money as might be required to purchase the articles enumerated in a list made out by Lady Seaward, herewith transmitted ; and to send the new plate, together with the Spanish things set apart, all properly packed in the iron chest, by waggon, directed to Mr William Seaward, merchant, Bristol.

During the time of our being at Hartland, my dear wife and myself held many anxious conferences on the subject of Seaward Islands; taking into our consideration every place, and person, and circumstance at different times: but since the arrival of the secretary of state's letter, we had made our discussions quite a matter of business; and I now sat down to write the result of our deliberations by the March packet; bearing on my former instructions to my brother James and to Captain Drake, with some important additions calculated to insure the future comfort of the settlers, especially of the Germans: and I desired that the schooner might be in waiting for me at Kingston, on the second week in June; and to take in there, as quickly as possible, the things I had ordered, and be in readiness to sail when I might arrive.

The month of March passed away, without anything important occurring; during which we kept very much at home,—devoting ourselves to books, and the study of the French language; my dear Eliza amusing herself sometimes in arranging her beautiful shells, while I visited the gardener and his men at their work: so that our time passed pleasantly, and I had the satisfaction to see that the grounds and garden would be left in very good order for my sisters. Some young wall-fruit, and other trees, were put into the ground early in the month; and I had the advantage of standing by while the gardener performed the operation of budding on others. This I treasured up in my memory, for the purpose of propagating any good sorts of shaddocks or oranges that might appear among the various sowings at the islands. Sometimes we took a drive, to recreate my Eliza and myself; and sometimes my sisters took their ride, while we remained at home.

About the end of the month I received the iron chest, which had been sent to the care of my uncle, as directed. Besides the gold articles, and pieces of old Spanish plate, it contained two tankards, six pairs of silver candlesticks, one very large and two smaller waiters, two bread-baskets, four small waiters, two coffee-pots, two tea-pots, two sugar-basins, two cream-ewers, with a considerable number of table and tea-spoons, and silver-handled knives and forks, two soup-ladles, four gravy-spoons, two punch-ladles, with a doubloon as a bottom to each, as had been directed, eight salt-cellars, two mustard-pots, eight butter-boats, sugar and pepper-boxes, salt-spoons, sugar-tongs, and some other trifling articles; the whole of which cost £657, being not quite one half of what the gold and silver articles sold for. Mr Perry sent me the particulars of the sale, which

amounted to £1342 ; so that after paying for the plate, it left a balance to my credit of £685.

The ladies soon decorated the side-board, and the tea-table was made resplendent with silver equipage. I was called upon the next day, when our good father-in-law dined with us, to let one of the splendid tankards go round ; and after dinner, the King of Spain's head was seen smiling from the bottom of the punch-bowl.

I was so well pleased with Mr Perry, when I considered the many essential services he had rendered me, and the quiet way in which he had performed them, that I wrote to the silver-smith who had made my things, and sent him four doubloons, desiring him to make two richly embossed silver tankards, of the value of £100, and put a doubloon on the cover, and one in the front, of each ; and to engrave on the bottom—"A small tribute of esteem, from Sir Edward Seaward to Thomas Perry, Esquire, 1737 ;" and to send them, when done, to that gentleman, with my respects. My dear wife highly approved of this act of gratitude, which his excellent conduct and eminent services amply deserved. About the middle of April I received a letter from Mr Perry, acknowledging the receipt of the tankards ; which, he said, he should value for the sake of the donor : but that I had taken care those who might come after him should value them for their own sake, for they were really superb. I got a banker's bill from Bristol for the £100, which I enclosed to Mr Harding, that the order for the payment might not be presented at Mr Perry's bank.

It was on the 14th of April I sent the bank bill from Bristol ; my dear wife, with my sister Maria, having accompanied me there, to order some suitable clothing for ourselves, together with low-heeled boots and shoes, and some new articles of furniture, besides an outfit of glass, and china, and crockery-ware, damask linen, and cutlery, grocery, and some other articles we might require at our trans-Atlantic home ; to be packed, and in readiness for our departure. I then engaged the whole cabin and state rooms of the *Hero*, for £300 ; and after passing rather a busy week, in which we contrived to dine one day with General Grenfield, we returned to Hartland.

My dear Mr Goldsmith had been indefatigable in his enquiries for a clergyman to go out with us ; and at last he met with a married gentleman, having two children, girls ; one three, and the other five years old. He had been recommended to go to a warm climate, on account of delicate lungs ; which, for some time, had prevented his performing the arduous

duties of a curate : but his finances were too low to enable him to profit by the advice : he therefore eagerly caught at our proposal ; and so glad was he to go with us, that he insisted on not accepting any stipend whatever,—at least, not until after we should see how his health might turn out, after his arrival. My good father-in-law introduced the Rev. Mr Rowley and his family to us, on Sunday, the 17th, a few days after our return from Bristol. I liked his appearance and his manner ; which, being much subdued, either by religion or want of health, stamped on him that air of meekness which seems the distinctive mark of a true Christian. My dear wife was much pleased with Mrs Rowley and her engaging children, and we requested them to take up their abode with us, until we all should leave Gloucestershire together, to embark for the West Indies ; which we had reason to believe would take place in about ten days. They, however, remained at the parsonage all night, and in the morning our carriage was sent for them, to take up their residence with us.

In talking to Mr Rowley one day about our dear little islands, I made some allusion to the Germans lately gone out to Jamaica in a Government store-ship, on their way to find a settlement and a home among us. "How came it to pass," said he "that those people were sent to the West Indies at all ?"—"They were to have gone to Georgia," I replied ; "but having missed their passage, the Queen placed them under the protection of Lady Seaward. They are sent out before us ; and I hope they shall have little reason to regret the event ; especially as they will now have the advantage of your ministry, in addition to what we may be able to do for them. But this reminds me," continued I, "of having heard a good deal in London, from a Mr Powis, about a reverend gentleman lately set out to where they were to have gone :—I think his name is Wesley. In speaking of him, Mr Powis called him a cracked-brained enthusiast ; relating a number of strange things he had done and said ; and that, to complete all, he had gone out to Georgia to convert the Indians. But this Mr Powis hinted that Mr Wesley had secret expectations of being ultimately made bishop of the province. Do you know anything of him."—"I remember," said Mr Rowley, "to have seen Mr John Wesley, when at Oxford, about seven years ago ; his conduct and opinions there certainly occasioned some conversation and discussion among the men ; but I knew very little of him personally : I think, however, it is likely he will be highly useful in Georgia ; for, whatever his peculiar views of

doctrine may be, his piety is unimpeachable. I never can forget," continued he, "an expression of Mr Gerard, the Bishop's chaplain, respecting him, when George Lascelles was launching out against the curator of the Holy Club. 'Whatever eccentricities John Wesley may have,' said the chaplain, 'I mistake much if he will not one day be standard-bearer of the cross, whether in his own country or beyond the seas.' Now, Sir Edward," continued Mr Rowley, "I take Mr Gerard to have had as good a light in this matter as the Jesuit Le Jay, when he said to his pupil, Voltaire, 'Young man, the day will arrive when you shall be the standard-bearer of Infidelity.' This prophecy of Le Jay is fulfilled, I think; and I firmly believe so will be that of Gerard. Le Jay saw in his pupil the most unrestrained scepticism and impiety—Gerard observed in Wesley a holy zeal burning within him, then restrained, but ready to burst into a flame."

The time of our departure was now drawing nigh, so that I thought it quite time to come to final arrangements with my kind and worthy father-in-law, with respect to the management of my affairs at home; and he came over to Hartland for the purpose. "Now, my dear friend," said I, "you will promise to comply with all I desire you to do."—He said, "I will."—"Then," I resumed, "you are to receive the rents of the estate half-yearly; out of which half-yearly rents you are to pay my sisters £100, and you are to pay yourself £100."—"For what?" he said, interrupting me.—"For your services," I replied; "or if you demur at the principle I have chosen, accept it because by so doing you will make Eliza and myself happy, and we can well afford it." After hesitating a moment, he said—"£200 a year, in addition to what I have, is too much for me: half of it is enough."—"Then give your daughters the other half, if you please, my dear and esteemed Mr Goldsmith; but I must insist on your taking it, as you promised to comply with all I should desire."—"Thank you, my dear son," he replied; "I will not refuse it; as I perceive you are in earnest that I should accede to your kind provision for my dear family."—"Out of which, my dear friend," I replied, "I have received the rarest jewel the sun ever shone upon. But now," I resumed, "there are one or two things more; let twelve cottages be built at a cost of £20 each; to which, attach three acres of good land, in suitable but in distant situations on the estate; and as they are finished, give them to poor industrious families, rent free the first year; but afterwards, at a rent from £1 to £4, according as you can find they can afford to pay. And now,

dear instructor of my youth, and father of my Eliza," continued I, "I request you to distribute, in her name, the sum of £50 annually, in such sums and at such times as opportunities may present themselves, for relieving the distresses of the poor in and about Awbury and Hartland."—"I will do it," he replied; "and God will bless you; and the poor will bless the name of my child, and the hand of her father commissioned to relieve them."

During the week, my dear wife and her sisters, and Rosalie, were busied packing; and such of the plate as we thought we might require was also put up: the key of the iron chest, in which three-fourths of it remained, was then given to my elder sister. The heavy trunks and packages, being completed, were then sent off to Bristol, with a letter to my uncle, requesting him to lay in our sea stores, and to purchase poultry and other fresh stock for the voyage.

On Sunday, the 24th, we as usual went to church at Awbury, where we had the pleasure to see the majestic venerable elm, so endeared from our infancy, in full foliage; and it now reminded us of our magnificent, and not less dear, silk-cotton tree, under whose hospitable shade so many happy and memorable events had taken place. After service to-day, my Eliza distributed five guineas among the poor of the village.

On Monday, she and myself entered into detail with my two elder sisters, respecting the management of Hartland in our absence. After our departure, all the servants were to be discharged, excepting the gardener and his wife, the cook, and one housemaid; and I then told my sisters that Mr Goldsmith would pay them £100 every six months, with which they were to support themselves and the house. But I now gave them £100 down; and told them he would begin his payments next Michaelmas; and that as there were two good fields attached to the mansion, besides the orchard, I wished them to purchase a couple of cows and a pillion horse. The gardener's wife would take care of the cows; and the gardener could ride before the one or the other to church, when the weather would not permit them to walk there together. They were quite satisfied with my arrangement; but hoped we would not stay long away from England. On the same day I sent forward some more things, and a couple of heavy trunks, belonging to the Rev. Mr Rowley, accompanied by a letter to the landlord of the Tolzey, to say how many bedrooms we should want, and when he might expect us.

I had now thought it right to apprise my noble and kind

friend, Lord Harrington, of my speedy departure from England, for Seaward Islands; and ventured to request a letter of introduction to the Governor of Jamaica. In conclusion, I thanked him for all his courtesies and kindnesses; and I subjoined my address at Bristol, from whence, I said, I expected to sail in a few days.

The following morning, we contrived to pack my sister Maria into our carriage, with the whole of the clergyman's family, and sent them forward. On Thursday, the 28th, dear Mr Goldsmith and his daughters came over to Hartland; and after taking a most affectionate farewell of them and my own sisters, Eliza and myself, accompanied by Rosalie and our faithful little dog, took our places in the carriage (which had previously returned from Bristol), and left our dearest friends, and our comfortable home, to pursue the line of painful and perilous duty, which we believed our heavenly Father required at our hands.

On our arrival at the inn, my uncle was there to receive us; he told me the ship was ready, and all things on board, and that she would drop down to King Road to-morrow. My dear wife instantly went out to purchase such matters as Rosalie or my sister might want, accompanied by Mrs Rowley, who bought low-heeled shoes and boots, and other articles of clothing which my Eliza pointed out to her as useful.

While they were thus engaged, I lost no time in paying my uncle for the provisions he sent out in the Mary, to meet the wants of the Germans; and every other his disbursements on my account. I then paid my passage-money to Captain Henderson, for the great cabin of the Hero; and wrote off to my bankers in London, for a statement of my account with them. I was anxious for a reply to this letter, but scarcely could expect it before we sailed. It, however, made its appearance on Monday forenoon, just as we were about to set off for embarkation; and right glad I was to see it, and to find a balance in my favour of between £4000 and £5000, viz., £4503 13s 6d, after being debited with £1475, the amount of bills drawn since I left London, independent of the purchase-money for Hartland.

On Saturday, I had the pleasure to receive a kind letter from Lord Harrington, enclosing a private letter of introduction, under a flying seal, to Mr Trelawney, who had been just appointed Governor of Jamaica. This mode of affixing his seal gave me an opportunity of seeing the handsome manner he had spoken of me to his Excellency. All things were now

ready, and the ship at King Road only waiting for a wind; but we were sadly afraid she might sail on the morrow, which would be Sunday: the wind, however, did not come round till the day following. Then, all was bustle: my letter from the bankers fortunately arrived amidst it all; my uncle and aunt being at the inn, to take leave of us. We were now summoned; and after a cordial embrace from each, and some tears from the old lady, which my sweet Eliza's eyes answered, we hurried off in two hired carriages, our own being sent back to Hartland, to be put up in the coach-house; and within an hour arrived at Lamplighter's Hall, an inn pleasantly situated near the embouchure of the river Avon; and there embarking in a fine boat that was in readiness for us, we reached the ship in a short time, and got safely on board. It was nearly high water; the wind was fair and fresh, the topsails sheeted home, and the anchor a-peak. In half an hour more we were under sail, standing down Channel with every prospect of fine weather.

CHAPTER XXI.

MONDAY, 2nd of May, 1737.—It was sometime before the hurry of our spirits subsided. As evening drew on, my dear Eliza and myself drew off from our companions towards the stern of the vessel, and there stood silently together, looking somewhat vacantly on the receding shore. A deep sigh from the bosom of my beloved awakened my attention: the image of her inestimable parent was passing across her mind, and the big tear trickled down her cheek; then, as if awaking from her reverie, she took my hand, saying,—“But you are with me! and the true and faithful One has said, ‘Lo! I am with you, even to the end of the world!’ and He never has forsaken us.” The appeal was balm to my heart; for even I was somewhat troubled at leaving England. She was thinking only of the friends she had left behind; I was considering the dangers into which I perhaps was about to plunge her and myself; and I had begun to repent that I had quitted a retreat, in which, with my ample fortune, we might have enjoyed comparative safety, and every comfort this world's goods can bestow. The selfish principle was in full operation, so that I was neither thinking of my duty to God nor my neighbour, when she made the seasonable appeal to my better feelings. “And thou art with me, dearest,” I replied; “and our God will never leave us, nor forsake us, although I feel I am most unworthy.” I

told her what had been passing in my mind, which she allowed to be nothing more than natural feeling ; adding, that through the influence of divine grace I soon would be again alive to the duties I was called upon to perform ; and that our heavenly Father would sweeten those duties by His approval and His presence, heretofore our supreme and abiding delight ; and compared with which, all other pleasures were but fleeting and joyless shadows.

Although the weather continued fine and the wind fair, the parson and his wife soon became sea-sick ; Rosalie was sick also ; but the two little girls, and my sister, ate and drank, and ran about cleverly. The *Hero* was a fine ship, with a poop, and a noble cabin, so that we had the most comfortable accommodation that could be desired. The wind continued fair for a week ; we then had rain, and westerly winds for a day or two, and some unpleasant weather : but it again became fine, and our invalids gradually recovered their sea legs and their appetite ; so that they walked the deck when it was fair, and enjoyed a good dinner every day when the dinner hour came : indeed, they who had been sea-sick made up for lee-way ; their appetites being proportionally greater than ours. We had prayers in the cabin on Sunday ; and on Thursday, the 12th, the ship anchored at Madeira, in Funchall Roads.

A few bales of merchandise were to be landed here, and but a few pipes of wine to be taken in. We therefore hastened to go on shore, and visit the place, as our time would be short. The town, being built of white houses and on an acclivity, with several convents and churches raising their belfries and domes majestically above the other buildings, had an imposing appearance from the bay : and this effect was much enhanced by the magnificence of the background, hills of high elevation, decorated with vineyards and lemon groves, and here and there beautified by a noble convent or a church. But, on going on shore, we found the town mean and dirty ; and even the convents and churches fell far short of that elegance which their appearance at a distance had led us to expect. The day was hot, and the roads dusty ; the place swarming with priests, and friars, and beggars : the priests wore black cassocks and hats. There were Franciscan friars in black, and Dominican friars in white, with red crosses on the breast : there were Capuchins in coarse brown woollen ; but all were tonsured and bare-headed. The beggars were dirty, and lousy, and lazy ; and there was nothing beyond the novelty of the scene to entertain us. We went into a church ; and certainly the first impression was imposing,—the

grandeur of its columns, its marble pavement, and the brilliancy of its decorations : there were many women on their knees, dressed in black, each with a rosary in her hand. Several priests and friars were officiating at the altar, on which two colossal candles stood : a little bell frequently rang ; and as often, one of the priests courtesied, or rather bobbed, before the altar, on which stood a representation of the Passion on Calvary. As the priest bobbed, the people crossed themselves : this was repeated many times while we remained. But Mr Rowley, getting out of all patience at such mummerly and prostitution of our blessed and spiritual religion, urged us to go ; and accordingly we left the place.

In a few hours afterwards I met Captain Henderson, and accompanied him to the wine vaults, where his wine was filling : I here tasted some of the best white wine I had ever met with, and contrived to persuade the merchant to let me have two pipes of what he called the "Doctor:" being of a superior quality, and kept for improving ordinary wines ; for which I paid him the large sum of £20 sterling each. But, indeed, all his wines for exportation, which he called "Particular," were very far superior to the best wine sold under the name of Canary.

The next day we weighed anchor, and proceeded on our voyage. In eight or nine days more we got into the trade winds blowing from east. It was now, indeed, quite delightful ; the weather so comfortably warm ; the wind so cooling and pleasant ; the sea so smooth ; and the ship, with all her canvas spread, going along with the wind on the quarter, steadily yet swiftly. In the evening we all sat on the poop, and listened to Rosalie singing to her guitar. The sun went down, as we were thus delightfully engaged, in unclouded majesty, decorating the horizon with all the hues and brilliancy of variegated and burnished gold.

On Sabbath days Mr Rowley read prayers on the quarter-deck, and delivered a short but impressive sermon : the crew appeared serious on these occasions ; and the weather being fine, and the breeze steady, nothing occurred at any time to disturb the solemnity of the meeting.

On Sunday, the 5th of June, we made the island of Antigua ; and passed near enough to see its fine hills and valleys, and rich plantations. The sight of this island brought to our recollection the narrow escape the white population had last October, when that most formidable and well-concerted villanous plan was laid for blowing up all the principal people at the Government House, where a ball was to be given in celebration

of His Majesty's coronation. But the Governor's son having died at St Kitt's, that event caused the rejoicings to be put off, and the plot was discovered : in consequence, many of the conspirator negroes were put to the torture ; on which one of them confessed, how that when the Government House should appear in flames, the whites in the town were to be attacked by negroes armed with cutlasses, from three different points, and men, women, and children put to the sword ; while, at the same moment, all the negroes on the estates were to rise and murder the whites throughout the island. The Judge of all men hath spared you this time, good people of Antigua !—Spare your slaves ; remember they are your brethren, though in bondage ; that they may not again seek the blood of their oppressors. Be their masters, not their tyrants.

Our course from Antigua was nearly before the wind ; which occasioned the ship to roll so much, although the sea was quite smooth, that it was impossible to walk the deck in any safety. The ladies were glad to put on their low-heeled shoes, and chalk them : but even with these precautions, they got an awkward lurch now and then (as the sailors term it), and sometimes an upset, so that they were glad to sit down in some secure place whenever they ventured out of the cabin ; and even there it was necessary to place covered ropes fore and aft, to prevent their falling.

On Monday, the 13th of June, we made the east end of Jamaica ; hailing again, with pleasure, the sight of those stupendous mountains we had beheld with so much admiration on our former voyage. In the evening we were becalmed off the upper White Horses, but about seven o'clock the following morning the sea-breeze reached us, which carried us round Port Royal Point, and brought us to an anchor off Kingston at two o'clock in the afternoon.

We had been visited by the men-of-war's guard-boat, and by the intelligence-canoe, from Kingston, before we entered the harbour, so that it was known at the town what we were, before the ship anchored. My dear friend Drake was the first to come on board ; and so glad was I to see him, that I could scarcely withhold the impulse of throwing my arms around him. I, however, greeted him with all the demonstrations of gladness permitted to an Englishman: I shook him cordially by both his hands; my Eliza did the same, and I then introduced him to the Rev. Mr Rowley and his wife, and to my sister : but Martin and Purdy and the New England blacks were in the boat, and, without ceremony, they had sprung on deck, making a party in the in-

interview, embracing my knees, and, falling on the deck, kissing the feet of their mistress. We turned to them, and raised them and spoke kindly to them, enquiring after their wives and their welfare. They had all a great deal to say, and each in his own way. Purdy was the same honest, funny fellow as ever: he said his wife had brought him a boy "bigger than Drake's Head."—"Do you mean the promontory?" asked my dear wife, smiling.—"Oh, no, lady ma'am," replied Purdy, "I only mean the captain's head, there," and having had his joke, he skipped off into the boat, and the others followed, after making many bows, and giving vent to their expressions of joyous welcome.

Mr Rowley turned to me—"These are some of your people, Sir Edward: the King might envy you: it is delightful to see such love between the negro and his lord: why is it not so everywhere?"—"Because," I replied, "I am not their lord. I teach them, as you will teach them, that God is their Lord, and I only His servant, though their benefactor." There was some bustle upon deck at this time, clueing up the sails, which induced Captain Drake to take the ladies into the cabin; and our short dialogue being finished, we quickly followed them. After this I took Drake aside, and had some engaging conversation with him, during which, I found that the Germans were safely arrived and were now locating themselves on George's Island; that my instructions had been punctually obeyed in all things: the guns were got and mounted; but, by some inadvertency, the ammunition had not been received from the Ordnance, for want of my receipt, which was specified in the order. "Go on shore, my good fellow," said I, "and take Mrs White's house for us for a week, where I lodged before, and if you cannot get it, ask her to recommend you to some other; we will remain where we are until you return." Captain Drake came back in half-an-hour, with the agreeable intelligence that the brown lady's house was unoccupied, and that he had taken it. Dinner having been provided on board, and the sails being furled, I thought it might be just as well to dine on board, and remain until the cool of the evening. We were just going to sit down as Drake returned: he joined us at table; whence we were in no hurry to remove; but sat over our wine, and some fine fruit that had been brought on board, to a late hour in the afternoon. We then all disembarked, our boat's crew, meanwhile, having been employed in taking our light trunks, and some other things, on shore to the lodgings.

Our hostess was very glad to see us again, making many fine speeches to my wife, but when she heard Mrs Rowley address

her as her Ladyship, she cried—"High! These buccaras come back very grand, for true. I very glad, ma'am, to hear somebody call you Ladyship: you go now to Governor's ball!" So much for Mrs White, who was as brown as gingerbread. I laughed at the *naïveté* of our hostess, and my dear sister Maria, with the eagerness of curiosity, enquired of her when the Governor's ball was to be given: but there was no ball; it was nothing more than a phrase usual at Jamaica, signifying, "You are now above common people." Everything around us appeared strange to the new comers; but more especially the negro population: however, our dear friends soon felt quite at their ease; the kindness and assiduity of our hostess leaving no cause for complaint. She was quite delighted to see poor Fidele again, and the dear little dog seemed to remember her. There was a room for us, one for the clergyman's family, and one for my sister and Rosalie, who had been bed-fellows ever since we left England, and were much attached.

Next morning I desired Drake to equip himself in his best attire, and hire a kittereen,—a sort of one-horse chaise,—and go to Spanish Town with a despatch for the Governor. I therein enclosed the letter from Lord Harrington, and also the letter to Mrs Trelawney which my wife brought from Mrs Grenfield; saying, I should be happy if his Excellency would appoint an early day for me to pay my respects to him, as I intended to leave Jamaica for Seaward Islands on Tuesday next. In giving the packet to Drake, I said—"If the Governor should ask you what you are,—as I have put 'By Captain Drake' on the cover,—tell him you command my yacht, and if you have any scruple about that answer," continued I, smiling, "you shall have your commission before you go; for I have authority to grant it, and if I don't do it now, I will do it before we sail."—"Thank you, sir," said Drake, "I'll look well up, on the strength of it."

After he was gone, I had a visit from Mr Green, who complimented me on the honours I had received in England, and said he had been happy in executing punctually the commissions entrusted to him. I was sorry to learn from him that there was at the present time a good deal of sickness in the island, and that the smallpox, notwithstanding the late introduction of inoculation, had been very destructive among the negroes. On hearing this account, I felt grateful to God that our little colony had enjoyed, if not uninterrupted health, at least an exemption from any epidemical scourge. Before he left me, I settled his accounts for lumber and the other supplies.

Resolved to give my English friends a treat, I desired our hostess to provide us a turtle dinner ; to which I invited the captain of the *Hero*. The brown lady sent up her turtle dressed in various ways, but each was excellent. We all agreed in commending the aldermanic taste, as we did justice to the feast. Captain Henderson made himself particularly agreeable on the occasion ; exhibiting a vein of pleasantry and mirth he had not thought fit to open on shipboard. The day was altogether pleasant and recreating : and just before our guest took his leave, I told him I did not mean to act shabbily towards him, but, as I had another voyage, although a short one, instantly to perform, I stood in need of our stock and poultry left on board the *Hero* ; and as they were there, I would not think of purchasing any other, but would make him a compensation in money, if he desired it. "Certainly not," he replied ; "I lived at your table all the way out ; you paid me handsomely for the cabin ; do not leave a feather ; I do not expect it." This was generous, and I took him at his word ; feeling that it was but right. Next morning Martin was ordered to remove two sheep, and some fine fowls, from the *Hero* into the schooner.

Just as we were thinking of retiring to rest, Drake made his appearance. He brought a letter for me, and another for Lady Seaward. "Well, Drake," said I, before I broke the seal, "what sort of a reception had you?"—"The Governor was truly kind to me, indeed, sir," he replied : "he instantly desired me to stay and dine with him ; saying, I might take the answers to your packet after dinner."—"Well, that was civil indeed !" said I. I now opened the Governor's letter, in which he expressed his earnest wish to see us at the Government House as soon as possible : and as he understood from Captain Drake that I had no carriage with me, he would send us his own, as soon as he knew when he might expect the honour of our visit. Mrs Trelawney's letter to my wife was to the same effect. Drake told us the Governor asked a thousand questions about the settlement ; and it was a long time before he could be made to comprehend where it was : he had never heard of it before. "Nor Governor Ascough," I replied, "I dare say, who signed my commission." It was now quite time to go to bed ; so I made our friend take some weak brandy and water, in haste, saying—"When we go to St George's Island, I won't put you off this way ; we will then have a cigar together : but I have not smoked since we last met."

Early next day I sent off a messenger with letters to Government House ; in which I said we would avail ourselves of

the Governor's carriage, and requested to have it before daylight the following morning, so as to arrive at Spanish Town before the heat of the day : the distance being only thirteen miles, I knew we could do it very well before breakfast. Drake came to me just as the messenger left me : I then gave him instructions to get our heavy trunks, and packages of furniture, and supplies, also the two pipes of Madeira wine, out of the *Hero* into the schooner ; and to drop down to the Ordnance wharf in the Lagoon, where he was to present my receipt, and there take in 500 cannon shot, and twelve barrels of gunpowder. "After you return," said I, "you are to make my lodgings your home ; where I expect you will render every assistance in your power to the parson, and to the ladies, during our absence."

The Governor's carriage was at the door, a little after daylight on Friday morning. My dear wife and myself stepped in, followed by Rosalie, a trunk, a wig-box, and a band-box. Our postilion was black as jet ; and there were two negro footmen behind, not very elegant in their apparel : however, we got on at a good pace ; arriving at Spanish Town in about an hour and a half. Mr and Mrs Trelawney and secretary were in the breakfast-room, ready to receive us. There was no ceremony, but the proffered hand, with "We are very glad to see you ; we hope you had a pleasant ride ; the morning has been delightfully cool." Our reply was in unison with our reception :—"We enjoyed our ride very much : we are indebted to you for so kindly sending your carriage for us." Breakfast was soon brought in ; during which we conversed on light and trivial subjects. After it was over, the secretary left us : the Governor and myself, retiring to a balcony on the west side of the house, walked in the shade, conversing on matters of business.

We touched slightly on the subject of the commission I had received two years ago : I then gave him an outline of the circumstances which had taken me to the islands, and brought them under the notice of the Crown ; I pointed out the importance of their situation in the event of a Spanish war, and related to him my conversation with General Grenfield. He replied, it was most extraordinary that the place had not been seized long ago, either by us or by the Spaniards. I told him, it was not at all extraordinary ; for it was so beset with shoals and reefs, for thirty or forty miles round, in almost every direction, that unless a local knowledge had been first acquired, by accident or otherwise, every vessel, on perceiving the breakers, would haul out of the way, and never have a chance of seeing,

much less of making their way to the islands. We then talked a good deal about his Majesty's escape, near Helvoetsluys ; of the marriage of the Prince of Wales ; of the coolness between him and the King ; of the excellency of the Queen's government during the absence of his Majesty ; of Sir Robert Walpole ; of the haughty and unprincipled conduct of Spain ; and various other topics of high and general interest. He then made many observations about the Maroons, their daring conduct, and the great difficulty he would have in bringing them into subjection ; hinting, at the same time, that I might serve him essentially, if I could procure about 200 Indians from the Mosquito shore, to assist in hunting them down. I replied, that as yet I was a perfect stranger to the Mosquito Indians ; but, if he would give me written instructions, I would send Captain Drake, in my schooner, to carry them into effect ; and I was sure he would do it, if practicable. "Drake is a fine fellow," said I : "he served his time in the navy for lieutenant, but has not obtained promotion ; he has been in my service nearly two years, and never made a difficulty in any business on which I have had occasion to employ him."—"That's the sort of spirit I like," said Mr Trelawney. "We will talk this matter over by-and-by, in detail ; and, if agreeable to you, I should wish to see Mr Drake again before you sail. I was much pleased with him," continued the Governor, "the day he dined here : he spoke of you in a way that gave me a very favourable opinion of his gratitude, yet manly independence."

"I'll tell you what, Sir Edward," resumed Mr Trelawney, after some pause ; "you stand well with the ministry : they will not refuse you a small favour. It is come into my mind, that we can prevail on the Commander-in-Chief here, to take your yacht in on the list of the navy, and give an order to Mr Drake to act as lieutenant in command of her. If we can accomplish this, your interest at home can very easily get the act confirmed. It will serve him, and it will save you a vast expense ; the vessel will be refitted at the dock-yard here, and stores allowed, and Mr Drake will have lieutenant's pay." I thanked him most sincerely for the suggestion ; which appeared to me of such importance, that I said I should like to set about it immediately. He agreed to my proposition ; and we walked directly from the balcony to the library. He there instantly sat down, and wrote a letter to the Commodore. "Now," said he, "if you have no objection, copy that, with any alterations you please ; sign it, and direct it : and I will write another from myself to the same effect ; and we shall see what can be done."

These letters set forth the advantage that would accrue to his Majesty's service by commissioning the yacht employed by the Governor of Seaward Islands ; and recommending Mr Francis Drake to command her, who had served the required time in the navy for a commission as lieutenant ; the projected service on the Mosquito shore being introduced as a special reason for the request. These letters were then sealed, and sent off to the Commodore. In the evening, a short but friendly reply was received from Commodore Gunman, saying, he would come to Government House to-morrow and talk over the business, for he was at a loss how to act. He did not wish to disoblige the Governor of Jamaica ; but he was rather afraid to comply with the request.

But to return : after the letters were despatched to the Admiral, Mr Trelawney entered fully on the subject of Spanish depredations ; and expressed a wish that I would keep a look out on the Spaniards, and get all the information I could. Then, advertng to something Sir Robert Walpole had said, about the probability of employing me on some service on the Spanish Main, he thought it might be well for me by-and-by to visit Santa Martha, and some other of the principal places : and he hoped I would keep up a regular communication with him on all these subjects ; adding, that he would state these views in his first despatches to England. So he was certain, that his representations and my own interest must secure the object in hand respecting the yacht : indeed, he thought Government would purchase the vessel, if I chose to ask it. But I immediately rejected this idea, saying, I should be too glad to accomplish the arrangements proposed, without asking anything more.

We joined the ladies a little after noontide. My dear wife had charmed Mrs Trelawney not a little : they had talked much of Mrs Grenfield ; and, with a pardonable vanity, my Eliza had shown her the Queen's letters. Immediately on our going into the saloon where they were, Mrs Trelawney said—"My dear Lady Seaward, you must show my husband the letters of our most excellent Queen ; she is a divine woman." My dear wife, without any hesitation, put them into Mrs Trelawney's hand, who gave them to the Governor. He read them, without any comment, and presented them to their owner, saying—"Your Ladyship may be justly proud of the friendship of her Majesty : " then turning to me, he said—"You have not told me anything about these Germans." I then related the business to him from beginning to end : on which he remarked, that there was negli

gence somewhere ; for that he was not informed of their having been at Port Royal.

We now retired to lounge away an hour in the heat of the day in our bed-room, and to dress for dinner. My dear wife and myself then talked over the heads of our conversations with the Governor and his wife ; and it delighted her to hear that Drake was likely to get a commission as lieutenant in the navy, and our schooner to be made a King's vessel. I then went into an adjoining apartment to change my dress, having had on my plain suit in the morning, but I now put on my embroidered velvet. Rosalie was in attendance to assist her mistress, who dressed in the white satin, with hat and feathers, and pearls, just as when she paid her first respects to the Queen.

On coming into the drawing-room, Mr and Mrs Trelawney, Doctor Kane, and the secretary, were already there ; and soon after, Colonel and Mrs Wilkinson, and Sir Charles and Lady Price, were announced. These people were all remarkably well bred, courteous, and free from untravelled stiffness, and all ill-concerted ceremony. We therefore conversed with every one by turns in the most unrestrained and agreeable manner ; and I could not but envy the elegant manners of Sir Charles Price, who by his affability and great information raised himself high in my estimation. The dinner was neat but not sumptuous, the wines excellent, and the conversation highly instructive, lively, and agreeable. Coffee was served early, followed by liqueurs. During the evening's conversation, Sir Charles and Lady Price invited us to visit them at the Decoy, a fine and beautifully ornamented estate on the northern side of the island ; but we could not make a promise to do so. Between eight and nine o'clock the company took their leave.

After they were gone, the Governor opened the Commodore's note, which he read to me. "Now," said he, "I will not ask any one to dinner to-morrow. The old boy hates a large party, which he designates a mob : so we will sit down as we are ; and, by being alone, there will be a fair opportunity to talk him over, if it should be required."

Early the next morning, Mrs Trelawney took my wife and Rosalie out in the carriage, to enjoy the cool air, and make a little excursion into the country along the banks of the Rio Cobre. Mrs Trelawney had heard Rosalie's history from Lady Seaward ; and being a good French scholar, took much delight in conversing with her ; the fashions in Paris, and London, forming no small part of their chit-chat during the ride.

The Commodore arrived about one o'clock, accompanied

by his secretary, who, it seems, lives with him at a pen, allowed by the Island of Jamaica for his shore residence. Mr Trelawney introduced me to him. "I am very glad to see you, Sir Edward Seaward," said he; "but I fear you want to get me into a scrape with the Admiralty."—"That is far from my wish, sir," I replied; "if you and the Governor of Jamaica do not think the measure called for, as necessary for the good of his Majesty's service, I should not deserve his Majesty's commission and confidence, were I to urge it."—"Why did you not apply to the Admiralty," said he, "before you left England? then I should not have been placed in a cleft stick, between their Lordships and my friend the Governor here." To use a seaman's phrase, I was taken rather aback by this unexpected question. Mr Trelawney looked at me, and I looked at the Commodore. "I am surprised, sir," said I at last, "that you could suppose I would forget myself so much as to put such a slight upon the Commander-in-Chief on this station, even if I had contemplated the measure before I left England. But the truth is, that the necessity of it has only become apparent to his Excellency and myself since we have had some conversation here on our relations with the Spaniards, and the part I may be called upon to act after my return to Seaward Islands."—"Well, then, gentlemen," he replied, "we will adjourn to the library, and put this business in an official form; and I will see what can be done." We accordingly retired; the Commodore taking with him his secretary. Our letters were then re-written, making the representations more full, and the request more pressing; and the Commodore being satisfied with them, promised to comply with their requests; at the same time desiring the secretary to make out an order for three of the captains of the squadron to examine Mr Francis Drake as touching his qualification for lieutenant; which order was made out instantly, and handed to me. "Now," said the Commodore, "as soon as Mr Drake passes his examination, I will give him an acting commission as lieutenant, with an order to hoist his pendant in the Porghée. Your yacht, which, you say, is a fine new Bermudian schooner, will then be taken into the service; a midshipman, and twelve men, and four guns, shall be allowed: but whether this will be ratified or annulled by the Admiralty, must depend entirely on the interest you, or your friend the Governor there, can make in England; he is a great favourite with Sir Charles Wager."—"The measure requires no interest to confirm it," replied Mr Trelawney; "it is of too much importance in its application to want backing at home."—"I lay you £5," said

the Commodore roundly, "if the measure is not well backed by influence at home, that I shall get a severe rap over the knuckles for the good of the service."—"Well, well," rejoined his Excellency, "don't be uneasy on that score: Sir Edward Seaward has interest enough at court to make half-a-dozen post captains, if it were required; therefore we need not be in doubt about his getting a poor dog of a lieutenant confirmed."—"I am afraid," said I, "your Excellency far over-rates my influence; I will, however, hope it is sufficient for the present occasion."—"Ah! that's all we want now," replied the Commodore; "let him bottle up his interest for making post captains to another occasion. And now," resumed the old son of Neptune, "that our business is brought to a close, and I am half broiled by the sun in riding over here, I will thank you for a glass of *sangaree*, or *sangarorum*, if you please." Having said this, he shook up his waistcoat, to cool himself; adding, "By-and-by I will go and change my shirt, and cool my coat and waistcoat, and wig; and when I put them on again, I shall be dressed for dinner."

I lost no time in writing to Drake; telling him what had been accomplished, desiring him to take the earliest opportunity of thanking the Governor. I also enclosed the order, directed to the three captains of the squadron before whom he was to pass his examination; and expressed my great joy in making a communication to him so promising to his prospects. I directed him to get the thing gone through on Monday, if possible; and then wait on the Commodore's secretary with the certificate: on presenting which he would receive his commission, with instructions to take in guns and a crew for the schooner. I added that Mr Dilke, the present mate, should be borne as midshipman. And I requested he would immediately desire Mr Finn to look out for another schooner, which must be purchased for my brother, and into which, for the present, we might turn over our own crew. I also bade him tell our friends that this business most likely would detain us a week longer than I had anticipated. I then despatched my letter; and joined my dear wife, who was dressing for dinner, and who was most happy to hear of all that I had done.

At dinner, the Commodore was remarkably gallant to the ladies. It appears that all sailors look up to women of virtue and good breeding as a sort of deities: there is nothing they would not do to please or gratify them. "You shall have a sloop of war," said he to Lady Seaward, "to accompany you. I will send the Honourable Captain Townshend, Sir Robert Walpole's nephew, in the Shark, to escort you. You might,

perhaps, find better accommodation in it than in Sir Edward's yacht : though, indeed, we are going to make a man-of-war of her." My dear wife thanked him with that sincerity which gives a sterling value to acknowledgments of kindness ; but she said she would prefer going in the schooner—the accommodations being sufficiently good, and, as the navigation was extremely dangerous among the reefs, she should feel more safe.—" Indeed, sir," continued she, "if you would send the sloop of war merely to honour us, I feel I ought to endeavour to dissuade you from it, lest any accident might happen to it. But if you think it right to make some of your squadron acquainted with the place, there cannot be a better opportunity than the present : for I am sure, if your captain will follow in the track of the schooner, no danger can occur ; and Sir Edward will take care that the pilot boat shall see him clear of all danger in returning."—"Well said, my little queen !" exclaimed the old boy ; "the Shark shall be sent, then, on his Majesty's service ; and you shall guarantee her safety."—"Against all negligence on our part," replied my wife.—"On our part !" re-echoed the Commodore ; "now I like that," continued he, "that's all one as a timber head in the ship ;—you are well mated, Sir Edward !" The Commodore had said a good thing ; so he laughed heartily, and enjoyed it.

Immediately after breakfast on the following day, which was Sunday, Commodore Gunman left us ; and soon after his departure we went to church with the Governor and his family. There were few people there, excepting the military ; with whom it was nearly filled. After church, Sir Charles and Lady Price called at Government House : and they again pressed us to visit the Decoy. In so hospitable and noble a manner was this invitation given and pressed upon us, that my dear wife thought it right to tell her Ladyship we would be most happy to accept it ; but that the clergyman and his wife, who were going with us to Seaward Islands, together with a sister of her husband, were staying at Kingston, waiting our return, which they were led now hourly to expect : but as circumstances had arisen that would delay us another fortnight, if Sir Charles and she would receive us all for a few days, we should be most happy to visit the Decoy. Lady Price in a moment met the proposal in the kindest manner, and said she would send a carriage for them. My Eliza fixed Tuesday morning, at daylight ; and it was settled with Mrs Trelawney that they should spend that day at Government House, and proceed the next morning. Sir Charles had a house in Spanish Town ; to which

he invited Mr and Mrs Trelawney and ourselves, to dine *en famille* the following day.

Letters were sent off on Monday morning to Mr and Mrs Rowley and to my sister, informing them of our wish for them to join us at Spanish Town, and thence to pass a few days in the country with us, until we should be ready to sail. I also apprised them that Sir Charles Price's carriage would come for them at daylight the next morning. We had the honour this day to dine with the worthy Baronet. His dinner-table was magnificently arranged, with a complete service of silver gilt plate. A fine full length portrait of his Majesty hung at one end of the saloon : and everything that hospitality and elegance could contribute, attended us while under his roof this day.

On Tuesday morning, our friends arrived to breakfast ; and met with a kind and gracious reception from the Governor and his lady. Our first inquiry was about Drake. They had not brought any letter from him ; but informed me he was to go to Greenwich this morning to present himself before the passing captains. And he had desired Mr Rowley to say, that, as soon as the thing was over, he would post off to Spanish Town, to pay his respects to Governor Trelawney and to myself. And sure enough, a little before the dinner-time, he made his appearance ; and in his old midshipman's uniform, to our no small amusement. He came in with an honest smile on his face. "Your Excellency will excuse my being so badly rigged," said he, "but I thought it better to make sail as I was, and return you my best thanks for this commission, (taking it out of his pocket and holding it in his hand,) which it had always been my proudest wish to attain ; and now having got it, I hope I shall not disgrace it." I shook him warmly by the hand ; and after Mr Trelawney had paid him a suitable compliment, in return for what he had said, he cordially invited him to dinner. Drake begged to be excused ; said he must return immediately, having so much to do ; but if he could speak to Sir Edward for half-an-hour, he should be happy during that time to take a biscuit and a glass of sangaree. We then had permission to retire ; which opportunity Drake eagerly seized to take me by both my hands, and tell me how much he was overjoyed, how deeply he felt my kindness, and how proud the business altogether had made him feel. Some slices of cold ham and sangaree were brought in : I then desired him to occupy his mouth otherwise than in talking ; and while he refreshed himself, I would sit down and write a string of memoranda for his guidance. I did this ; and then took another sheet of paper, and drew out a set

of bills of exchange on London for £100. "Here, Drake," said I, "here are the memoranda, containing the outline of all I wish: you must fill up the detail yourself. But I am now desirous to pay a debt: here are the 100 dollars I promised you when I left Jamaica for England: and do not marvel if you find every dollar a pound; for it is my pleasure to make it so." He took the papers—he looked at them—then at me—he then looked at them again; I saw his lip falter, and a tear come in his eye. He put them in his pocket, saying—"Thank you, sir!" at the same time holding out his hand, with which he grasped mine in a manner that spoke more eloquently than the tongue could speak: in fact he was not able to speak. He then made his way out of the house, and departed without any more ceremony.

Sir Charles and Lady Price had gone to the Decoy; and our friends set off thither by daylight next morning, with letters from us. My dear wife remained with Mrs Trelawney; but the Governor and myself went to Greenwich, to pay our respects to the Commodore at his pen. "I like our new lieutenant," said the old gentleman, as we entered; "he is a sailor every inch of him; and I have no doubt will make a good officer: I like his name, too," continued he; "another Sir Francis Drake belike, before he pops off; who knows?" We thanked the Commodore severally for his conduct in the affair; and I told him I would immediately write letters to Sir Robert Walpole and to Lord Harrington; and Lady Seaward would write one to the Queen also, to request that the commission might be confirmed.—"That will clinch the business," he replied: "her Majesty knows how to get the weather-gage of the Admiralty, if required."

After breakfast the Commodore told me he understood there were twelve barrels of gunpowder going in the Porghee from the Ordnance, for the use of a battery at Seaward Islands; adding, he would order the Shark to take the powder into her magazine; for it would be a dangerous shipmate stowed in the hold of any vessel. "But I hope," continued he, "you will soon be ready, for I shall want the sloop of war back as quickly as possible. An officer will be sent in her, to make a survey of your reefs and islands, which I intend to transmit to the Admiralty."—I assured him every possible despatch should be made, as far as depended on us; and that I would let him know by the end of the week on what day I could be ready.

As we were not far from Kingston, Mr Trelawney was so kind as to comply with my wish to drive there, that I might see Mr

Drake, to make some new arrangements with him, in consequence of the Commodore's anxiety that there should not be any delay in sailing. We got quietly to my lodging, without the Governor being recognised. It was then agreed we should dine here, and return to Spanish Town in the cool of the evening. As soon as I could get hold of Drake, I told him of the Commodore's wish; and that, in consequence, the business of my brother's schooner must be left for the present. I then proposed sailing with our own crew, and said he might come back with or without my brother, as he pleased; when he could turn over our crew to the new schooner, and get the Porghee properly fitted at the King's yard, and take in the man-of-war's men and the guns. "I think, Sir Edward," returned he, "that will be our best plan; and in that case we can sail on Monday." I invited him to dine, but he said he had too much duty to do, so he took his leave, having come to an understanding that our departure was fixed for Monday morning; so I immediately sat down and wrote a note to the Commodore to that effect.

Mrs White soon discovered she had the honour of having the Governor of Jamaica in her house; and as she excelled in making a pepper-pot, to which his Excellency was known to be partial, she put forth her best efforts to deserve his commendations, and she received them. A little after sunset we got into the carriage, and reached Government House before nine o'clock. Mr Trelawney entertained the ladies with an account of all our proceedings; among which was the brown lady's pepper-pot, with the great respect we paid to her and it.

On Thursday morning we set off for the Decoy, in a light carriage belonging to the Governor, which he politely desired us to detain at the foot of the hills, in Sir Charles's keep, until our return, which was fixed for Saturday; at the same time requesting the whole party might dine at Government House, on our way back to Kingston. But this last kind request I was obliged to decline; stating, that we should wish to get home as soon as possible on Saturday, to complete our arrangements for sailing on Monday; that nothing might be left to be done on the Sabbath-day.—The morning was cool, and the open carriage delightful. Rosalie was enchanted at her drive, and the many curious objects that presented themselves on the way. She had been quite idolised at Government House; so that she could not help acknowledging how much happier she had been in Jamaica than ever she was in England: the people were so like the French:—"point de tout taciturne et beaucoup de politesse." Our route was nearly north for about twelve or thirteen

miles, through St Thomas in the Vale, along or near the course of the Rio Cobre. We then quitted our carriage, and commenced the ascent of the mountain range, on mules and horses that were ready waiting our arrival; attended by a numerous escort of servants, who carried our trunks and band-boxes on their heads, making altogether an extended line, which reminded us of the description of an eastern caravan, winding its way along the steep sides of the Persian hills, in their progress from Bagdat to Samarcand, as we read in Arabian story-books. Having gained the summit of the hills, we descried the sea that bounds the island on the north, with a beautiful and highly cultivated valley lying between.

On our arrival at the Decoy, we were most hospitably received by its noble proprietor. Our dear friends, also, were most happy to meet us again; for a few days of separation, in a strange land, appears an age. After resting, and dressing, and dining, we walked out, in the cool of the evening, to view the beautiful fountains and groves with which the taste and opulence of the possessor had decorated this delightful place. Sir Charles told me we were now at an elevation of 2000 feet above the level of the sea: that the Rio Nuevo takes its rise here, from the fine piece of water in front of his house; a little Nubian lake; but, in truth, all around appeared more like some fabled residence of Genii than the actual residence of men—the varied avenues of tropical trees, intersected by arches, terminating in temples or in orange groves. The long lines of plantain walks, relieved by clumps of the ornamental cabbage palm—the fine piece of water—the clear sky—the cool atmosphere—the extended and beautiful landscape—the interminable ocean in the distance—altogether contributed to make an impression scarcely to be imagined, but never to be forgotten.

My dear wife and myself dedicated part of Friday to writing our letters to her Majesty, and to Sir Robert Walpole and Lord Harrington. She pleaded for the man who had conveyed the Germans to Seaward Islands; and who had been indefatigable in settling them comfortably there; a detail of which she soon hoped to have the honour of communicating: she even ventured to speak of his merits, and make an allusion to his illustrious name, but confessed that her only hope arose out of her Majesty's great kindness and favour. I took up the subject in a very different way to the minister. The benefit that would result to his Majesty's service, the honour it would confer on myself, the facility it would afford me of carrying the Governor of Jamaica's wishes into execution with respect to the Mosquito

Indians ; and, moreover, the expediency of my vessel being enrolled with his Majesty's navy, and commanded by a King's officer, if I were to hold any official intercourse at any time with the governors or other officers belonging to Spain. And, finally, I requested, as a personal favour, that he would direct the Lords of the Admiralty to confirm Lieutenant Drake's commission : but to my Lord Harrington I only pleaded the wishes of a friend.

We remained at this enchanting spot until early on Saturday morning ; when, yielding to my earnest representations, Sir Charles allowed us to depart ; carrying along with us a deep impression of agreeable and grateful recollections. We then returned in the same manner that we came, merely resting ourselves and horses for a few hours at Spanish Town ; but during this short stay at Government House, my dear wife and Mrs Trelawney talked over all that was wonderful and delightful at the Decoy, while I profited by the opportunity to put into the Governor's hands the letters we had written there. On perusing them, he said they would certainly accomplish the end in view ; but that he would write also on the subject, and forward all the letters together : we then proceeded to Kingston, where we arrived late in the afternoon. I ordered the servants to put up the horses for the night where they would have the best care taken of them ; then, giving them money, dismissed them, with a kind message to their respective masters.

Drake soon joined us, with a satisfactory detail of all he had been doing ; everything was on board, and he had taken care to provide a large quantity of fine fruit. He had also duly paid his respects to Captain Townshend of the *Shark*, who was now at anchor off Port Royal, waiting to join us on Monday morning. Having little ourselves to do, we finished it in the course of the evening, and retired early to rest.

The following day, being the Sabbath, we all prepared to go to church. Drake appeared at the breakfast table in a new suit of lieutenant's uniform, attended by Martin and Purdy, and the two New England blacks, in white jackets and trowsers. We congratulated our friend on the occasion ; in which our faithful servants joined us, with a profusion of good wishes for their captain, and for their kind master, whom, they rejoiced to hear, King George had made Governor ; "the same like Governor of Jamaica, and their good lady, Lady Governor too !"

We made a sort of procession to the church, there being eight of us, followed by Drake and his four men. Many of the people were more intent on looking at this novel sight, than at

their prayer books ; it being known to some who we were ; and some strange and extravagant stories having been circulated respecting us, excited curiosity. There being no service at Kingston church in the afternoon, Mr Rowley gave us prayers at home ; and some of our men were present, the New Englanders having relieved John and Harry, the morning ship-keepers. Their new pastor was much pleased with their demeanour and attention on the occasion. After prayers my dear wife and myself retired to our room, and wrote letters to Awbury and to Hartland, with an account of our safe arrival, and the pleasant manner in which we had passed our time at Jamaica ; and that to-morrow we should sail for Seaward Islands.

We rose before daylight on Monday, and found our crew in readiness to take the trunks and boxes to the vessel. In their absence we had breakfast ; and I then paid our hostess out of my bag of dollars I brought from London. The Porghee's boat not being large enough to stow us all comfortably at once, I requested Mr and Mrs Rowley to take their children, and go with Captain Drake, who had now come up to escort us, which they did. In half-an-hour he returned : then giving my sister Maria his arm, led the way. We followed, having Rosalie on one side and our dear little Fidele on the other ; and soon arrived at the place of embarkation. Here I stopped a moment, to speak to Mr Green and Mr Finn, who were waiting my coming ; then stepping into the boat, where my companions were already seated, we rowed off towards the schooner.

She had been recently painted ; her colours were hoisted, and the pendant, incident to her having been made a King's vessel, was just beginning to stream out on the first of the sea breeze. "She looks well, my friend Drake," said I ; "you are entitled to my best thanks :"—we soon got on board. The decks were clean and clear ; nothing in the way beyond the two hen-coops abaft, and the two wedder sheep taken out of the Hero, that were to be removed into the boats as soon as stowed. The anchor was quickly up, and about half-past nine o'clock we hove to off Port Royal, on the Shark's quarter. Her topsails were sheeted home, and she was ready to weigh :—Captain Townshend, however, came immediately on board the Porghee, to pay his respects to me ; and that ceremony being ended, he returned on board, and in five minutes after, his brig was under sail, standing out to sea, the schooner keeping in his wake.

It was a delightful day, the weather fine, and the breeze steady ; so we went cheerily along. On Wednesday, at noon, the

colour of the water altered a little ; and soon after, some breakers were discovered from the mast-head. Drake then hailed the Shark, requesting Captain Townshend to drop astern about a quarter of a mile, and keep in the Porghee's wake, on which we stood in boldly towards the breakers ; knowing there was deep water close alongside of them, and when nigh enough, that he could run down with a flowing sheet. But when we drew near Captain Townshend became alarmed, and made a whiff in his ensign ; which was a signal to speak us. We hove-to for an instant, when he hailed us, saying "he could see nothing but breakers, and no land, and that he was afraid both vessels would be lost."—Drake replied, "There was no fear : the water was deep all along outside the reefs ; and they must follow the schooner with confidence." We filled again, and stood on to the westward. About three o'clock we saw the north end of St George's Island, and the reef trending here to the southward ; we then gradually altered our course, and a little before four o'clock opened the channel ; when the promontory, which we had called Drake's Head, became discernible. We now crowded sail, and hoisted our colours, the Shark following our example. Drake had put up a flag-staff on the northern summit of George's Island ; from whence we were now descried by the look-out, and their union jack hoisted. As we approached, the colours on the promontory went up, accompanied by a gun. Our friends on board were now in high spirits, seeing these demonstrations of our home being near ; but the hearts of Eliza and myself were too full for speech ; stretching themselves, as it were, to the shore, where so many affectionate but humble human beings (our fellow-creatures) were waiting anxiously to bless our return, as the agents of Heaven, for their safety and happiness.

CHAPTER XXII.

JUNE, 1737.—"This, then, is the scene of your shipwreck and providential deliverance, Sir Edward," said Mr Rowley. "On the other side of the islands, my dear friend," I replied : "I will show it you in a day or two." Our vessel at this moment was in stays, having to make a tack on rounding the southern extremity of the reef, which we had called the Dragon, to weather a small high rocky islet, between which and St George's Island is the main channel. In doing this, we were closely followed by the Shark, reaching over to the shore where the Germans had been located. On our approach, they all

came down to the beach—men, women, and children, accompanied by our four carpenters, and their negro apprentices. This animated body gave us a noisy hurrah, which the brig, as well as ourselves, returned with a hearty cheer. The carpenters, who, I afterwards learnt, had gone every morning in the Avon to assist these new comers, now hastened back into the boat and made sail after us. I was glad to see all this: it gave an appearance of life to the strangers I brought with me; who, perhaps, expected to see little else than barren rocks, and a few meagre-looking inhabitants. But Drake had taken care that something more than this should excite our attention. He had intimated to Corporal Craig, that it would be proper to salute me with thirteen guns from the battery, whenever I should arrive: and when he called on Captain Townshend at Port Royal, he told him of the compliment that would be paid on our entering the harbour, expressing his hope that the Shark would return it. I knew nothing of this; and therefore was surprised when, as soon as we fairly came in, and had a full view of our mansion and the fort, I perceived the first gun fire. "What does that mean, Drake?" asked I. "A salute, Sir Edward," he replied. Then the second gun—"I hope they may not hurt themselves!" said my dear wife. The parson and Maria looked a little afraid. Craig fired his first ten guns in very good time, but when he had to reload, he made rather slow work of it: however, he finished his salute; and the brig took it up, returning the thirteen guns in good regular time, although he too had but ten guns. When the Shark had done, we answered with three cheers, and then prepared to anchor.

At the close of the salute, Diego made his appearance in the six-oared boat, with his men neatly equipped in white frocks and trowsers, and straw hats; he himself sitting in the cockswain's box, dressed in nankeen: the men rowing a good stroke, the old fellow steering with great judgment. This to me was the most pleasing part of the exhibition. My dear wife, as well as myself, rejoiced to discern our old faithful servant again, while he was yet at a distance, and to see how well he had fulfilled my instructions, to perfect the negroes in rowing that boat.

I had put on my uniform, ready for landing; and as the Porghee let go her anchor, Diego's boat rowed up alongside; we all soon got in, not forgetting Fidele, our former, and once, only companion on these then lonesome shores. This idea crossed my mind at the time, and as if to give more force to it, Diego landed us on the very spot where he and his friends

first stepped on shore from their canoe. Our brother and sister were on the beach to receive us : and close behind them our people stood in groups. The sun was then just setting, so that his last rays shone full upon them, and, perhaps, added to the look of gladness that brightened every brow. The greeting was hearty, but tumultuous : we could scarcely exchange caresses with our relatives ; some of the people kissing our hands, or embracing our knees, Rota, and Mira, and Anne, hanging upon their mistress, shedding tears of joy. As we were walking up the side of the dell towards the mansion, we encountered Doctor and Mrs Gordon, with whom we shook hands, inviting them to accompany us. Corporal Craig touched his hat as I passed him, and two sentinels, that he had placed before the door presented arms. All this was seen from the Shark, which made a favourable impression on its captain and crew, as to the state of our infant settlement, and the feeling that subsisted between me and the people.

I was much pleased with the complete manner in which the mansion had been enlarged, and finished. A piazza had been affixed all round, and the whole was handsomely painted. Our vigilant and attentive Rota had laid out the table for coffee, on hearing of our approach ; and we were delighted to see everything in its place, ready for our reception.

Thursday, 30th.—My dear wife and myself recommenced our early habits. We were up before the sun : Diego was already in waiting, and dear old Rota and Anne were come into the hall. My sister Maria and Rosalie were called ; and, as soon as dressed, my dear Eliza took them, followed by Anne, to the bath below the rocks ; and there initiated them in the most delightful and healthful of all practices in a tropical climate.

When they had departed, Diego commenced what would be called in the House of Commons, "a clear and luminous *exposé* on the state and condition of the settlement." He complimented me on the honour King George had bestowed on me ; which he had heard, and which he believed, by seeing a king's ship come with us. He heard say, too, now, that Captain Drake was made a king's captain ! And he felt that all this should make himself something, though he did not know what, but he hoped I was pleased with his boat, and with the men, and with himself ! "I am well pleased with your boat, and with your men, and with yourself, Diego," I replied ; "and you shall be called the '*Governor's Cocksawin*.'"—"Thank you, sir," answered Diego ; "but it is very long and hard name ; though it

sound very grand, every people won't speak it all."—"Well, then, if any one would call you Diego, it shall for the future be *Don* Diego, or *Master* Diego, whichever you like best."—" *Master* Diego, Governor Sir, if you please," he replied; "for if Spaniards come here, they will all only laugh to hear black man called *Don* Diego."—"It shall be as you please," returned I. He then proceeded to state all that had been done in the settlement, since my departure this time twelvemonth. His detail, in general, was highly satisfactory; and it is wonderful, without we recur to a unity of spirit as a bond of peace, how so many months could pass away, and so much be effected, without murmurings, or thefts, or immoralities of any kind, as far as he could discover. Some of the people had been sick, but none had died; and the births, altogether, had been seven, although, till now, we had not heard of any but our nephew, and Purdy's bouncing boy. "You remember, sir," said he, "that you apprenticed Peter and Paul to the two Allwoods; and Matthew and Mark to Xavier and to Derrick the carpenters; and Luke, to Hart the bricklayer. You gave two of my patriarchs, as you used to call them, Jacob and David, to turn the ground for your brother; and you gave him Felix for a servant. I have in the boat the four last new negro men, Patrick, Dennis, Murphy, and Darby; and also one that came before them, called John; and having Noah and Abel to choose between, out of our first people, to make six, I took Noah into the boat, and Abel is left to look after the stock, and keep the grounds in order. The soldiers behave very well, sir," continued he; "and the sawyers cut up great many fine plank, sir: but I do not know what my master the Governor will do with all them German people: they don't know anything, only make stockings; and if somebody want shoes, perhaps they never want stockings, only for great gentlemen or ladies; and one German woman can make more than everybody here will use." Diego finished, and I thanked him as he deserved: but he had not done until the bathers returned. For I have done but little justice to his speech, it having been five times as long as I have made it, though, perhaps, not five times more comprehensive.

"*Master* Diego, my lady," said Rota (just beginning a speech to my dear wife as she entered), being more full of exultation, than her mistress was when she first spoke of her husband as Sir Edward! "*Master* Diego, my lady," repeated she, "has just been telling Master Governor, all the men have done since he went away; and he made very fine bows, and said fine sayings about King George. And Master Sir Edward Governor

inmates with my brother, were also of the party. Three turtle were now sent from the craal to the Shark, as a present to the ship's company, together with an abundant supply of pumpkins and melons; which were produced everywhere on the island in great abundance.

Mr Dilkes was now ordered to land all the household goods from the schooner, and in our absence to place them as directed by Mrs Rota: Derrick, with his apprentice, having received instructions not to go to German Town to-day, but to remain to put up the bedsteads, and do such other things as might require the hand of a carpenter.

We left Rosalie to take care of Mr Rowley's children, and Fidele to bear them company. Drake took a seat with us in the boat, and complimented Master Diego on the appearance of his boat's crew. The Shark's boat put off from the ship soon after we put off from the shore, lying on their oars till we came abreast of them: there were three officers and a midshipman with Captain Townshend. He said,—“Show us the way!” Master Diego was very proud to lead; but he was not insensible of the inferiority of his men, as rowers, to the sailors in the boat astern. Every now and then he would say,—“Look to white sailors, men! Long pull—you Murphy, feather your oar, sir!—Quite shamed of some of you!” Then he finished, by saying,—“Beg Master Governor's pardon, for talking to the people before him; but if king's captain will make his boat row for pattern sometimes, Master Diego will talk to his men then.”—“You shall have the king's boat for a pattern,” I replied; “your men do better than I could have expected, and I am sure they will now soon perfect themselves.”

Our friends met us on the beach at Peccary Field, and we all walked up together. The strangers admired the place much, and the beautiful prospect from it, which the surrounding shores, a fine sheet of water, and the view of the noble promontory, presented. On going up to the house, we came upon the ground where my dear Eliza and myself, with our faithful little dog, had fought the peccaries; and I seized on the occasion, to tell them the story on the spot. The eyes of all the officers were instantly riveted on my Eliza, to whom Captain Townshend paid a handsome compliment on her true heart. On our arrival at the house, the young stranger, my nephew, was presented to our notice; and soon after, the Reverend Mr Rowley proceeded to the offices of baptism. The child was named James, and everything proper was done on the occasion.

My brother had not neglected to add many things of convenience, and even elegance, to his residence during my absence ; and I was agreeably surprised by these demonstrations of taste and wealth. We sat down fourteen to a well-covered table, at which Felix acted as butler, and four of the women, neatly dressed, attended. He gave us good wine and excellent punch ; and by help of a present of fruit from Jamaica, a handsome dessert crowned the feast. Xavier had been detained from going to work at German Town to-day : he and Hachinta being ordered to regale the boat's crew of the Shark, as also Master Diego and his men, with dinner, and coffee and cigars.

About nine o'clock we all returned home, well pleased with our entertainment ; and Captain Townshend said, he was very glad to find his men all sober. I assured him they never should be otherwise during their stay here ; but that his whole ship's company should have fish or turtle, and such fruits and vegetables as the islands produced, every day sent to them. It had been arranged after dinner for Messrs Otway and Drake to set out on the morrow, in the Avon, to prosecute their survey ; and, of course, preparations were to be made early in the morning for their departure.

About ten o'clock of the day the surveying party set sail, taking a midshipman and four sailors from the Shark, besides two sailor lads, John Stone and Harry Rock. The mansion not being yet quite in order to give a great dinner, I proposed to Captain Townshend to accompany me to-day in the schooner to visit the Germans ; and, in truth, my Eliza was extremely anxious to see them, on account of her promise to the Queen. She therefore was rejoiced to go ; leaving Rosalie to superintend the unpacking of plate, and china, and so forth, and Mistress Rota to get a comfortable dinner for our guests.

Diego and his crew were taken on board the Porghee, in addition to the four men belonging to the vessel. We were soon under weigh ; and as the harbour with its two extremes stretched north and south,—George's Island lying on the east, and Edward's Island on the west,—we sailed with a flowing sheet to the German settlement between them, and in less than an hour anchored in a little bay to the southward of the place. As soon as the schooner was anchored, we went to shore in our boat, and were met on the beach by all the people. They stood nearly in a row, at a short distance from the spot where the boat landed ; but the eight carpenters, who had gone over in the morning in canoes, had come down before the boat touched the shore, and hauled her bow well up out of the water.

inmates with my brother, were also of the party. Three turtle were now sent from the craal to the Shark, as a present to the ship's company, together with an abundant supply of pumpkins and melons ; which were produced everywhere on the island in great abundance.

Mr Dilkes was now ordered to land all the household goods from the schooner, and in our absence to place them as directed by Mrs Rota : Derrick, with his apprentice, having received instructions not to go to German Town to-day, but to remain to put up the bedsteads, and do such other things as might require the hand of a carpenter.

We left Rosalie to take care of Mr Rowley's children, and Fidele to bear them company. Drake took a seat with us in the boat, and complimented Master Diego on the appearance of his boat's crew. The Shark's boat put off from the ship soon after we put off from the shore, lying on their oars till we came abreast of them : there were three officers and a midshipman with Captain Townshend. He said,—“Show us the way!” Master Diego was very proud to lead ; but he was not insensible of the inferiority of his men, as rowers, to the sailors in the boat astern. Every now and then he would say,—“Look to white sailors, men! Long pull—you Murphy, feather your oar, sir!—Quite shamed of some of you!” Then he finished, by saying,—“Beg Master Governor's pardon, for talking to the people before him ; but if king's captain will make his boat row for pattern sometimes, Master Diego will talk to his men then.”—“You shall have the king's boat for a pattern,” I replied ; “your men do better than I could have expected, and I am sure they will now soon perfect themselves.”

Our friends met us on the beach at Peccary Field, and we all walked up together. The strangers admired the place much, and the beautiful prospect from it, which the surrounding shores, a fine sheet of water, and the view of the noble promontory, presented. On going up to the house, we came upon the ground where my dear Eliza and myself, with our faithful little dog, had fought the peccaries ; and I seized on the occasion, to tell them the story on the spot. The eyes of all the officers were instantly riveted on my Eliza, to whom Captain Townshend paid a handsome compliment on her true heart. On our arrival at the house, the young stranger, my nephew, was presented to our notice ; and soon after, the Reverend Mr Rowley proceeded to the offices of baptism. The child was named James, and everything proper was done on the occasion.

My brother had not neglected to add many things of convenience, and even elegance, to his residence during my absence ; and I was agreeably surprised by these demonstrations of taste and wealth. We sat down fourteen to a well-covered table, at which Felix acted as butler, and four of the women, neatly dressed, attended. He gave us good wine and excellent punch ; and by help of a present of fruit from Jamaica, a handsome dessert crowned the feast. Xavier had been detained from going to work at German Town to-day : he and Hachinta being ordered to regale the boat's crew of the Shark, as also Master Diego and his men, with dinner, and coffee and cigars.

About nine o'clock we all returned home, well pleased with our entertainment ; and Captain Townshend said, he was very glad to find his men all sober. I assured him they never should be otherwise during their stay here ; but that his whole ship's company should have fish or turtle, and such fruits and vegetables as the islands produced, every day sent to them. It had been arranged after dinner for Messrs Otway and Drake to set out on the morrow, in the Avon, to prosecute their survey ; and, of course, preparations were to be made early in the morning for their departure.

About ten o'clock of the day the surveying party set sail, taking a midshipman and four sailors from the Shark, besides two sailor lads, John Stone and Harry Rock. The mansion not being yet quite in order to give a great dinner, I proposed to Captain Townshend to accompany me to-day in the schooner to visit the Germans ; and, in truth, my Eliza was extremely anxious to see them, on account of her promise to the Queen. She therefore was rejoiced to go ; leaving Rosalie to superintend the unpacking of plate, and china, and so forth, and Mistress Rota to get a comfortable dinner for our guests.

Diego and his crew were taken on board the Porghee, in addition to the four men belonging to the vessel. We were soon under weigh ; and as the harbour with its two extremes stretched north and south,—George's Island lying on the east, and Edward's Island on the west,—we sailed with a flowing sheet to the German settlement between them, and in less than an hour anchored in a little bay to the southward of the place. As soon as the schooner was anchored, we went to shore in our boat, and were met on the beach by all the people. They stood nearly in a row, at a short distance from the spot where the boat landed ; but the eight carpenters, who had gone over in the morning in canoes, had come down before the boat touched the shore, and hauled her bow well up out of the water.

Having, therefore, stepped out easily on the sand, we walked up to the people, my dear wife being under my arm.

I instantly commenced a fine speech to them, in which I promised them my protection, frequently alluding to the interest her Majesty took in their welfare: and, occasionally pointing to Lady Seaward, told them they would find a valuable friend here, not only because they "were wanderers and without a home," (using her own words to me when pleading their cause,) but because they were the country-people of our most gracious Queen. I had become quite animated, and even eloquent, and had hoped to have excited a lively and sensible joy among them by my oratory; but, to my great disappointment, they all looked grave, and uneasy, and discontented: a momentary silence ensued, followed by a murmur. Soon after, two of the men stepped a little forward, and said a few words in German. "What can this mean?" said I to the carpenters, who stood behind me. "They don't know any word Massa Governor have spoke to them: they very ignorant people, sir," replied Allwood. I looked at Captain Townshend, who could not help smiling. "Your fine speech," said he, "has been thrown away."—"Yes," responded my dear Eliza, "and I am much disappointed at their knowing nothing of English; the more so because no one among us can speak German. It will be a great drawback," continued she, "on their comforts, during the separation which this ignorance on both sides may occasion:" then turning round to Allwood, as she continued to speak; "but we have no more right to despise these poor people for not knowing English, than they have to despise you, Mr Allwood, for not speaking German."—"Lady Ma'am," replied the carpenter, "you never saw fellows handle a piece of wood like them; and then they call a tree a *boom*, and every one of us *zimmerman*,* as if we had but one name among us." My dear Eliza smiled, and Captain Townshend and myself could not help laughing at Allwood's criterion of talent.

There was now a pause, when my Eliza whispered to me,— "Perhaps some of them may understand French: do you think you would venture to ask the question?"—"Captain Townshend," said I, "do you speak French?"—" *Pas beaucoup*," he replied, "and so badly that I cannot venture to attempt it."—"I am sorry for that," was my answer, "as I am but a novice myself, and if I were to attempt it, I certainly should blunder."—"I speak more imperfectly than you do, my honoured hus-

* It may not be impertinent to observe, that *baum* is German for a tree, and *zimmerman* signifies carpenter. This is a key to Mr Allwood's wonderment.—E.

band," rejoined my Eliza; "yet let us walk among them, and I will try to address the women." I obeyed her wish, and as we passed along they made their obeisance to us. The women and children were together at the further end of the line, some of whom were pretty in spite of their national dress; but there was one among them, whose air, and manner, and apparel, differed somewhat from the rest. She caught my wife's eye in a moment, and advanced a step. "*Parlez-vous Francois?*" said my Eliza, at the same time taking the woman by the hand to assure her. "*Oui, madame,*" she replied; "*moi-même, je suis de Tionville, sur la Moselle; quoique mon mari, soit Allemand.*" — "*C'est la même chose!*" said my dear wife; "*je me suis bien content, vous à trouver parmi les autres;*" and then she proceeded to desire the woman to tell them, that the Governor would afford every protection and comfort in his power; also, that the Queen of England had recommended them to her special care; and that she would lose no opportunity of doing them a kindness, so long as they conducted themselves well. As the woman of French Flanders turned the French into German, the other women shouted, and the men showed some sullen signs of dubious satisfaction; and that is all that can be said of them. Captain Townshend and myself now took our turn to put questions to the interpreter; but he quickly discovered himself to be the only tolerable French scholar among us. "How are they off for tobacco?" asked Captain Townshend. "They have not any," answered she. "Tell them," said I, "that I will send them some." She did so; and the moment they heard it, joy seemed to take possession of the men, transforming them instantly into beings of a social aspect: the fact was, they wanted tobacco, and were therefore miserable.

We now proceeded to visit their cabins; which occupied nearly a mile of a fine fertile slope, each having a distance between of nearly a hundred and fifty yards from its neighbours. Eight of the cabins were fully built, and the other four in great forwardness. Each cabin consisted of two apartments; which were sufficiently neat and clean, in the finished habitations, and furnished with wooden bowls and coarse crockery, and a few cooking utensils. My dear wife kept the Flanders woman close to her: and now, by the assistance of Captain Townshend, various questions were put as we proceeded from place to place. They had received the Queen's bounty, viz., ten dollars and a suit of clothes to each person, just before embarking at Port Royal, so that they had spent but a small portion of their money. After satisfying ourselves as well as we could as to their feelings

and their wants, we took leave of them, commending their industry, and renewing the promise of some tobacco to-morrow, with which both men and women were well satisfied.

Jack Martin had taken upon himself the office of cook on board our little vessel, and had provided a good fish and a boiled fowl for our dinner; to which we sat down upon deck with the awning spread, while the schooner lay at anchor. Dinner, or any other repast, taken under shade in the open air, is always agreeable; and we certainly had a practical proof of the truth of this observation to-day, for we enjoyed our scrambling meal infinitely more than we did our dinner yesterday, when we ate and drank with every convenience, not to say elegance of accommodation. Our naval guest seemed to have imbibed a new life by this excursion: he hitherto had been reserved in conversation, but now he talked freely on every subject; not sparing his uncle, Sir Robert Walpole, for his backwardness in giving the *Dons* a "good licking," as he expressed it; which, he contended, they for a long time had justly merited. But it was now our turn to be a little reserved, when *the minister* became the subject of conversation, whom, although he might choose to blame, it was not likely he should take pleasure in hearing him censured by others. I should have liked, however, to smoke a cigar, by way of dessert, on the deck; but my ever-considerate Eliza dissuaded me from doing so, saying, that "the poor Germans might see the smoke, which would make them the more uneasy for the want of their tobacco." About five o'clock we got under weigh, and coasting along close to the shore of Edward's Island, by Long Bay, had a sight of our sheep; which had increased to a pretty flock. After this we stood for the anchorage, and landed a little before sunset. My sister and our guests, with their two little daughters, followed by Rosalie with Fidele, came down to meet us; and we all returned together, accompanied by Captain Townshend, to coffee.

I had forgot that to-morrow would be Saturday, and muster-day, until reminded of it by Diego. "Do the Germans come over?" said I. "Yes, sir," he replied; "they row themselves over in their own boat every Saturday, and after muster take back the week's allowance."—"That is well," I replied; "but on this occasion you must give two pounds of tobacco to each man. And now, Master Diego," continued I, "one of the sheep brought from Jamaica must be killed to-night, also a couple of large turtle; and desire some of your men to make a torch fishing. Let Mistress Rota have a fore quarter of the sheep, and the calapee and fins of one of the turtle, and provide

her with a couple or three fine groopers from the fish pots ; then see that the hind quarter of the sheep is sent on board the Shark to the captain, with my compliments ; and let the other half, and the remainder of the turtle, and a sufficiency of mullet, with plenty of yams, be dressed, for all the men to dine under the shade of the promontory near the spring, when muster is over ; and you must find cooks among the women. But don't forget," added I, "to send turtle every night, or early every morning, on board the king's vessel ; and if you can furnish them with one hundred mullet daily, without depriving our people of their proper complement of fish, do so." After my conference with Diego was over, I joined our friends at coffee, and told Captain Townshend, that my black cockswain, Don Diego, had reminded me that to-morrow would be our muster-day. I then promised our guest he should see the *Trainband* exercise and fire ; requesting the pleasure of his company, and that of his officers, to dinner after it was over ; which invitation he politely accepted, soon after taking his leave.

My brother had been at the mansion in our absence this morning, but not finding me at home had returned. Having now made up my mind for the events of to-morrow, I sent a canoe immediately, with a note to him, and another to Doctor and Mrs Gordon, to invite them to the parade and to dinner. My dear wife and myself then consulted on further measures, among which, Mrs Allwood was to be put in requisition for Guinea fowl. Matters being thus arranged, Rota was sent for, and closetted with her mistress, where she received her instructions in detail as to the dinner.

We were all astir at the cotton-tree plantation before daylight, and great preparations going on, both without and within the mansion. At eight o'clock Diego sounded the bugle ; and before ten the boats had arrived from Allwoods, and from German Town and Peccary Field, and the schooner's crew were already on shore. By eleven o'clock, the men had put on their regimentals and accoutrements, and were under arms at the Fort, to the number of forty ; besides my brother, who was their captain ; and Mr Dilkes, their ensign ; and Corporal Craig, with his regulars of three, who constituted the non-commissioned officers to the body : Drake, who was their lieutenant, was absent. Captain Townshend, with some of his officers, favoured us with their company on the ground ; and all our other friends were present. The men acquitted themselves very well, all things considered : after which they were marched to the isthmus ; where they fired six rounds of ball each, at a

target, with tolerable effect : they were then paraded and dismissed.

At one o'clock their feast was ready. We had all returned to the mansion as soon as the military business was over, but now we again proposed paying them a visit. The ladies, however, declined being of the party ; but Captain Townshend and his officers, together with my brother and Mr Dilkes, and the parson and doctor, walked off with me through the woodland region ; and we arrived at the spring just as they were sitting down to their feast. They were seated on planks, raised a little off the ground by large stones, all in a row, with their backs to the rock ; a line of planks being, by way of table, placed before them, supported in a similar manner. Each man had his knife, but there was neither fork nor plate. A biscuit, a great piece of yam, a lime, a green capsicum, and some salt in a sea-shell, were placed before every person. The women handed boiled mullet round in a great basket, from which one was taken, and laid on the board before each man. After they had satisfied themselves with fish, six large brown deep dishes with turtle were placed before them, and a small half calabash and spoon given to each person by way of soup-plate. In a very short time they demolished the turtle ; and while the calabashes were removed, and the clean sides of the planks turned uppermost, a cup of lime punch was served to each. And now the half sheep was brought in, on four coarse brown round dishes ; shoulder, breast, loin, and leg, all roasted. The people did ample justice to this their third course,—the greatest rarity in the tropical world, good English wedder mutton ! leaving scarcely anything on the bones, for our good watch-dog, Lion ; who would have been sorely disappointed, had he known how those bones had once been covered ! They finished their feast with coffee and cigars : giving three cheers to King George and the Governor.

At the appointed hour we sat down to dinner at the mansion : but our feast, being much like a great dinner in England, shall be passed over without further notice ; with this difference, however, that all that remained, when taken from table, was ordered to be distributed among the women and children of the soldiers, and others in our immediate neighbourhood.

Sunday, the 3rd of July, was our first Sabbath among our people, after an absence of more than a year. "My dear Edward," said Eliza, "we must not suffer the observance of this holy day to be a matter of less importance to us now, than when we walked with God in this peaceful paradise, in the full

enjoyment of each other, and of His divine presence. But, indeed, my beloved husband," continued she, "I do not desire to deceive you, or my own heart, or to dissemble with my heavenly Father; but rather to acknowledge that for a long time past I have been sensible of the briars and thorns which have sprung up in our path,—the cares and riches of this world,—which have interposed themselves much between even our most kind and tender affections: and have in a great degree separated me from the only true blessing, the abiding presence of our God!" She wept: I was silent: but my heart went along with every word she said; and I almost wished that I were again building up our plank house by her side, with none to behold us, but our faithful little dog, and the Eye that delighteth in innocence and humility.

There was not room in the halls of the mansion for all the people, now quite a hundred; besides, it was arranged that Captain Townshend should send half his ship's company to prayers. Boards were therefore placed on bricks, like so many benches, close round the spurs of the silk cotton tree; and there we assembled, by the ringing of the bell, at ten o'clock. Every one, not excepting the Germans and their wives and children, appeared in clean clothing; and, for the most part, they were neatly attired. The King's sailors were dressed in white jackets and trowsers, with small white straw hats. The clergyman took his place between two of the spurs, where a chair was placed for him, with its back to the tree. The prayers were read with due solemnity; and if there was not a general devotion in his congregation, there was every appearance of it. But to the poor Germans, alas! it was like the Latin service to its papal worshippers.

Mr Rowley concluded with a most instructive and impressive sermon; taking some of the first chapter of St John for his text,—"In the beginning was the Word," &c. He held up to our contemplation the Divine Being creating all that our eyes behold, and lastly, ourselves. And then he proceeded to show that the same Creative Power, "*the Word and Wisdom of God*," came down from Heaven at the appointed time, and became incarnate in the person of *Jesus*. By which union of *perfect God* and *perfect man*, he became the *Christ, full of grace and truth*: dispensing *sight to the blind, hearing to the deaf, speech to the dumb, motion to the palsied, cleansing the leper, and even raising the dead*. The preacher, moreover, showed, that these miracles were typical of the Saviour's power over the destructive maladies of the human heart, which bring forth sin and spiritual

death; and that having left His blessed Gospel as our inheritance, to guide us in the path of life, He died on the cross, making an atonement for our sins, saying,—“*It is finished.*”

After the service was over, my commission as Governor and Commandant of the islands, was read to the people. I then addressed them on their duties to God, and to all persons put in authority over them, and to each other: and said, it would be my endeavour, as it was my duty, to set them a good example in all Christian and moral duties; that I would make their welfare my chief care, as it hitherto always had been; and that in a little time, I would arrange a plan with their pastor for the education of their children, and such others as might choose to avail themselves of it. Several of the people, when I ceased speaking, invoked a blessing on me: and surely it is a delightful thing for kings and governors to hear themselves blessed by the people.

They now betook themselves to their respective boats, and returned to their several settlements; the sailors departing at the same time to their ship. Captain Townshend expressed himself as highly pleased, and deeply impressed, by the scene he had just witnessed. “I am convinced, Sir Edward Seaward,” said he, “that religion is the basis of every genuine virtue; and a due reverence for the Sabbath, the foundation on which all sound discipline, and good order, must be raised. You may flog men into the appearance of being orderly, but then it is only an appearance: and sometimes, when order is most required, it then is nowhere to be found. “I was glad,” continued he, “to see my men so attentive; and they will all be the better for it for a while. I wish they could have such an opportunity more frequently.” My dear wife said to me, in a sweet low voice, as we walked homewards, which no one heard but myself,—“How gracious was the sight to-day! Yes, my Edward, that dear silk cotton tree is to us like the *Oak of Mamre.*”

We dined quietly to-day, having no addition to our table but Captain Townshend, whose intelligence and gentlemanly conduct had won much on our esteem.

Early on Monday morning the ship carpenters were sent from the Shark, at my request, to fit up a powder magazine within the cave, with double doors; a pane of glass to be fixed in the inner one, and a place to contain a light behind it. These doors were to occupy the breach by which I had passed from the outward into the inner cave, where the treasure had been deposited; and this was to be done for the purpose of

making the inner cave our powder magazine. Hart, the bricklayer, attended the carpenters, to do his part in fitting in and building up the door posts : and I was glad to be able to accomplish this necessary job, without taking off our own carpenters from the completion of the Germans' habitations. In two days the magazine was completed ; and the twelve barrels of gunpowder landed from the Shark, and lodged ; as were also our other ammunition, and blank cartridges.

On Tuesday afternoon Mr Otway and Drake returned from making their survey of the reefs and shoals which surround these islands ; and also of the different channels, by which they are accessible. The period, therefore, drew near for bidding adieu to the Shark. My dear wife had written her letter to the Queen, and one to Lady Sundon. Neither did we forget to make our acknowledgments to Governor and Mrs Trelawney ; and we also embraced the opportunity of writing to our friends in England. With these packets from us, and many good wishes, Captain Townshend took his leave on Wednesday at noon ; and, agreeable to our promise, Mr Dilkes, in the Avon, saw him into safety clear of the reefs, and laying his course for the north end of Jamaica.

CHAPTER XXIII.

WE had now leisure to attend to our immediate affairs. The two pipes of Madeira were landed, and rolled into the cave, and there housed. Drake was desired to get the shot on shore from the schooner, and pile it up in form on the battery ; and, with the assistance of Corporal Craig, to see that a due quantity of powder was filled, and everything relating to our ordnance properly regulated. My brother and myself now went industriously to work, to make up the accounts of each individual in the colony, which cost us the labour of some days ; but by the middle of the ensuing week, all these were arranged, and that between him and myself also. This latter, however, was involved in such complexity, that it could only be settled by a liberal disposition on either side ; and as he acknowledged to have cleared upwards of 25,000 dollars during my absence, he was in a condition to act as handsomely towards me as I was disposed to act towards him. On my leaving Seaward Islands last year, he was indebted to me 2050 dollars. It was agreed that I should receive this sum ; and also 1000 dollars for Pec-cary Field, the wood, and lands adjoining, as marked out on

the plan of the estate; that I should charge him nothing for the use he had made of the *Porghee*, but that he should pay the wages of the captain and crew, as had been stipulated. He then paid me over the money, and our business was completed. On the 14th we settled with all the people: many of whom, especially the carpenters, received a pretty good sum, after deducting the amount due for their supplies.

It was arranged that the *Porghee* should sail for Jamaica on Monday the 18th, or within a few days after; and that my brother James should take a passage in her, to buy the vessel Mr Finn had been desired to procure. And it was determined that Mr Dilkes should be his skipper, with the *Porghee's* crew; and that Drake should endeavour to procure a mate and midshipman from the men-of-war, with the twelve men the Commodore had promised. Doctor Gordon having had little to do since his arrival, and being a great favourite with my brother, in whose house he had resided nearly six months, frequently accompanied James to the store, where he had assisted him materially, especially on two late occasions, when Spanish vessels visited the islands for commercial purposes. This was fortunate as to the present conjuncture; for he could, in consequence, confide his business to him while absent; it not being possible for me, from my official situation, to intermeddle in such matters.

On the 21st the *Porghee* sailed; my brother taking with him nearly 20,000 dollars, about £4760 sterling, the greater part of which it was his intention to remit to England. I wrote letters by Drake, to the Governor of Jamaica and to the Commodore; and sent by him two Spanish gold sword handles, for their acceptance. On our friends taking their leave of us, Mrs James Seaward shed some tears on parting with her husband; and a tear stood in my dear sister's eye, ready to drop. Drake took her gently by the hand; she held her face aside, saying,—“Take care of yourself and James.”

There was not an order for supplies of any kind by the *Porghee*, the settlement not being in want of anything necessary either for the industry or comfort of the people. But I sent for a lot of small change, from the sixteenth of a dollar upwards, to the amount of 200 dollars; as I wished to establish an internal traffic with a money medium, as a means of facilitating that industry which it was my intention to foster as far as it might be practicable.

The cabins of the Germans were now completed; and on Friday, Mr and Mrs Rowley, accompanied by my sister and

Rosalie, and our faithful little dog, (not to be despised nor forgotten, because we have now other company,) embarked with my dear wife and myself in the Avon to pay them a visit. The tobacco had put them in good humour, having dissipated, with its cordial smoke, that sullenness we could not but observe at our former visit. Rosalie was of much service to us, in communicating with the Flemish woman; through whom alone we could converse with her friends. They were well satisfied with their habitations, but were nearly ignorant of tropical husbandry, having received only a short and incomplete lesson from Diego and his men, about the time of the last May rains; when ten acres of land were cleared, hoed, and planted by their joint efforts. Most of them, however, had been brought up to forest or agricultural labour. Yet, luckily, one was a weaver; but another had been a sausage-maker, or a beef and ham smoker. I hoped in time to find work for the weaver in his own way, as all the women could spin as well as knit; but in a hot country, the other man's occupation seemed totally unavailable. After taking a careful survey of them and their wants, we made a note of everything: and informed them that on Monday they should be supplied with all things necessary; that fishpots should be made for them; and as their cabins were now finished, they must do everything in their power to diminish the quantity of beef and pork drawn from the store; that each family should have a couple of goats given to them, and four fowls, and as many ducks; that as soon as their own little harvest was got in, they should be supplied with pigs also: that they must each cut hurdles, and enclose a piece of ground for their yams and cocoas, and corn, pumpkins, melons, and tobacco, &c., as the crops could not otherwise be safe from the stock, especially the pigs; and I promised to send persons to show them how to proceed in the various operations that would be required. Our colonists seemed well satisfied with what we had done, and with all we promised to do; and before we left them the men began to fill a pipe, and regale us with the smoke, as the best incense they could burn on the occasion.

We returned to the Fort to dinner; after which we entered on some very minute discussions respecting the people. I perceived that I had committed an error, in not mixing the Germans with the others, that they might have an opportunity of learning our language, and many other necessary matters peculiar to the climate in which they were placed. But as I did not see how I could, with the appearance of consistency, alter my plan suddenly, I determined to correct the error as future occasion might

allow. However, Mr Rowley kindly undertook to go to German Town three times a week, from nine o'clock till two, to instruct the children. And the ladies suggested the utility of sending some of the children of the soldiers, and of the bricklayer, now and then to visit the Germans ; and for them to receive, in return, some of the German children, as a means of facilitating the general intercourse, by spreading a mutual knowledge of each other's language. And it was agreed, as preparatory to this step, that Mr Rowley should take the soldiers' children with him hence, the three days he would attend at German Town ; and on the other three days, on which he would keep school here, the German children should be sent for in the morning, and sent back at two o'clock. I congratulated myself on these arrangements, and on the great kindness of Mr Rowley, whose health now, by the influence of this genial climate, was perfectly restored.

On the morrow, after muster, the plan of education was explained to the people ; to which they made no sort of objection. And I told Herbert, the tailor, that I wished him to go every morning by daylight, with some of his family, by canoe to German Town, to assist the settlers there in remaking their clothing and in cutting out and making such new garments as they were to receive from Lady Seaward ; and I would pay him and his family for whatever time and assistance they might give them. This measure had a twofold object,—to assist them, as was proposed, and to do a little towards rectifying the error I had committed in isolating them from the other settlers. My dear wife now made out a list of such things as were wanted from the store for the Germans ; which she sent to my brother's *factotum* ; and the Queen herself could not have desired them to be more completely supplied, even down to scissors, needles, pins, and thread.

These poor people made their appearance as usual on the Sabbath, and attended divine service with as much regularity as if they understood all they heard : but as they were all Protestants we ventured to hope, that by the divine blessing, and our best exertions, the day would soon come when they should profit, in common with ourselves, by the excellent ministry of our worthy pastor.

On Monday morning, Doctor Gordon was ready to deliver the multifarious order to the Germans ; but he requested that some one should be sent to witness the delivery. And he took the trouble to come to the mansion, to explain to Lady Seaward, that it would be of importance to divide the things fairly among them, and not leave it to be done among themselves ;

for that she might be assured they would quarrel about it. His suggestion was approved : and he was desired to take Rosalie and also to ask Mrs Gordon to accompany him, to assist in making the division according to the number in each family ; excepting in the case of house utensils, which had been noted down for whom they were respectively intended. These arrangements being made, Doctor Gordon and his wife, and Rosalie, embarked in the Avon, with the presents—for such they were—amounting in value to 120 dollars, besides the goats and poultry. Herbert and his family had gone before, and they proved a useful addition to the distributing commissioners ; Herbert's measure and shears being frequently called upon to execute justice. In the course of a few days, Master Diego supplied the Germans with fish-pots ; and they received at the same time, from my own store-house, spades, hoes, and bill-hooks, in sufficient number ; the use of which Diego endeavoured by practical language to explain ; and, with the help of his men, he also made a hurdle in their presence ;—a pattern from which they were to copy, and make their enclosures.

The carpenters being now all disengaged, I turned my attention towards building the house intended for Doctor Gordon, in the northern angle of Allwood's Bay ; which had, indeed, been begun just before the Germans arrived, but the workmen were obliged to desist, for the purpose of erecting their habitations. The sawyers had worked constantly on the timber that had been cut down at Allwood's Bay, and at Peccary Field ; so that, besides the great supply which they had contributed, to build the cabins at German Town, there yet remained a considerable quantity of boards for any other building. Before my brother went away, he signified to me that he should like Doctor Gordon to have a house, with some land allotted to it, in his neighbourhood ; that such vicinity would be pleasant to both the families, and that his assistance at the store would be more available. I stated this to my dear Eliza, and after some conference it was agreed that I should state my brother's wish to Doctor Gordon, and ask him if he would like it ; and if he assented, I should then give orders for his habitation, according to my brother's desire. And that after it was done, I should still commence building a house at Allwood's ; but on an improved scale, as if for myself, and give it to Drake in case of his marriage with my sister. I lost no time in opening the business to Doctor Gordon, who, with his characteristic caution, requested time to consider of it. But, after a day or two, he called on me to say, "he would accept it, all conditions remaining the same, the change of situation excepted." And the

following morning was fixed on for selecting the spot, and dining with our sister afterwards at Peccary Field.

We went over at an early hour, leaving no one at home but Mrs Rota and her black domestics, to take care of the mansion. Mrs Seaward was delighted by the coming of the whole family; Fidele being no insignificant a member; having fought bravely here against the Peccaries, whose name the field now bears.

Attended by Master Diego, the Doctor and myself went forth to fix on the site of his future residence. We proceeded eastward, until we crossed the little rill that empties itself into the head of the creek. "This is the boundary of my brother's property," said I; "now look about, and we will build your house wherever you like, and attach a piece of land to it for cultivation." The Doctor said, "Very well, sir." Setting forward at a good pace, he thus kept Diego and myself going, for more than a couple of hours, in the heat of the sun, sometimes doubling like a hare, but never coming to any determination. During this walk of exploration, I had frequent occasion to observe the young fruit trees of the shaddock, and the orange, and the lime, grown up, some to five, some to eight feet in height; the seeds of which, my dear wife and myself put into the ground in February, 1734, on the very day we fought with the Peccaries! and I as frequently endeavoured to draw Doctor Gordon's attention to these luxuriant and promising plants. But he was more intent on finding a piece of profitable ground, than fruit trees, or a pleasant situation for his house. I had proposed two different positions for him; but the one "*was bare*," that is, rocky; and the other was "rank with bushes." At length I sat down under the shade of a large tree by the rivulet's side, and desired Diego, who cared little for the rays of the sun, "to whom he had been long a neighbour, and near bred," as Othello would say, to go on with the Doctor, wherever he might please to take him. They had scarcely proceeded ten yards from me, when I heard Master Diego begin to lay down the law to the Doctor; whom I heard very soon reply, "You don't know anything about it, sir." The end of it was, they returned to me in half-an-hour, without anything having been determined, the Doctor dripping at every pore with perspiration.—"We will walk slowly home," said I, "and take some weak rum and water, and strip and rub ourselves well with dry towels, and shift our clothes." "I like your practice, Sir Edward," said he, "it is most excellent prophylactic treatment." After our return, the Doctor was made comfortable;

and, although I less required it, I pursued the same measures. My kind wife assisted me, and Mrs Gordon did the same needful office for her husband. But my dear wife laughed at my description of Gordon's procedure, while his own wife was very angry at him for having behaved in so absurd a manner.

After our grooming, we sat down to an excellent dinner. A roast kid, a pair of Guinea fowls, and a pepper pot, besides the usual dish of fish. We were all remarkably cheerful. The baby was brought in with the dessert, to amuse the ladies; and at my dear wife's request, Rosalie came also, and played and sung, while the parson's two little daughters danced to her guitar. When the ladies retired, the Doctor, the Parson, and myself regaled ourselves with a bowl of lime punch; and before we saw the bottom of it, the Doctor had come to a conclusion, in his own mind, as to the site of his dwelling. "Sir Edward," said he, "I have concluded on the spot we first came to, after crossing the *burne*, just above the creek where you catch the cray fish. There is good drinking water close by, and some of the land is not very bad."—"Very well, Doctor Gordon," I replied, "that shall be the place. The workmen shall set about the house early in the next week; and in the meanwhile you may mark out the exact spot yourself, by driving pegs into the ground, forty feet by sixteen; if such should meet your wishes."—"Just that," said he; stretching his hand at the same time across the table, for me to take hold of; that thereby I might put my hand, if not my seal, to the contract.

In the cool of the evening, before returning to our boat, the whole party made a *détour* of my brother's plantation. All the ground-provisions, as they are called, looked remarkably well. Being completely hoed, they were clean and luxuriant. The sugar-canes were few, but flourishing; and as there was no intention of carrying their propagation further than having a few for the people to eat by way of a luxury, cuttings had been given to the settlers at Allwood's Bay, and to the soldiers. The pine-apple plants had been multiplied by the transplantation of offsets, and many of the old ones were in full bearing. There was a large field of maize and Guinea corn, and a considerable plot of fine tobacco. The fruit trees raised from the pips sown by the hand of my dear Eliza and myself, were five or six feet high in several directions; and the two shaddock and orange trees, brought from Jamaica in tubs, were beyond a man's reach to their topmost branches, and now in blossom. Some plantain and banana trees were already loaded with fruit; and pumpkins and melons might be seen in every direction. There

being nothing now wanting in the vegetable kingdom, to perfect the beauty of this enchanting spot, but the maturity of the orange trees ; whose golden fruit, richly glowing in beautiful contrast amidst its dark green foliage, reminds the spectator of the classic garden of the Hesperides.

Master Diego and his crew were in waiting for us. Having finished a most agreeable and refreshing walk, in the cool of the evening, through my brother's grounds, we then enjoyed an equally pleasant row of a short hour to our own home. Coffee awaited us on our return ; and while sitting over this agreeable beverage, smoking my cigar, the children of the colony were made the subjects of our conversation. We counted up fifteen children, seven boys and eight girls, belonging to the tailor, mason, and the four soldiers, between four and twelve years of age ; and eighteen belonging to the Germans, viz., eleven boys and seven girls, between the ages of two years and fourteen. These were large numbers to be transported a distance of six miles morning and evening. But it was concluded, that as the soldiers were located at the northern extremity of the isthmus, and Herbert the tailor occupied a house there also ; and that as Soldiers' Town was more than four miles from the fort, and only two miles from German Town, it would be advisable to cut a footpath through a defile, now thickly grown with acacias, prickly pears, aloes, and other thorny plants, which hitherto had prevented overland communication between German Town and Peccary Field ; a distance of not more than one mile. And also to build a schoolroom at the back of the Black Rock, between Soldiers' Town and the Doctor's allotment. I had no hesitation in adopting this plan ; for, independent of the daily responsibility of transporting all these children, I could not well spare a boat's crew to do it.

I sent for Diego before I went to bed, and told him, he must take his boat's crew, and the two sawyers, and two of my brother's men (Jacob and David, who formerly had worked with him), early to-morrow morning, and commence cutting a footpath between the hills, from Peccary Field to German Town. Also, to send the four carpenters to me, who with their apprentices, and Hart the bricklayer and his apprentice, were to set about erecting a schoolroom at the back of the Black Rock, opposite Peccary Field. And I said, that I would go in his boat to my brother's house, as soon as he might be ready in the morning.

Soon after daylight we were up and dressed, and the men ready. I told Allwood, the room must be thirty feet long, and

twenty feet broad, and fourteen feet high in its sides; and to pick out timber, and boards, and planks accordingly, while Hart prepared the foundation. Mr Rowley and myself embarked with Diego, while Hart and his apprentice followed in a canoe. On our arrival I explained my business to Mrs Seaward, and to Dr Gordon; requesting the latter to pardon me for delaying his house for another fortnight, as I conceived the occasion a public duty, and somewhat pressing, having seen sufficient reason for abandoning the plan of carrying the children to and fro by water. "*Jus bonum dicis. Just that*, as we say in the North," said the Doctor, without demurring; "all private right must needs be set aside for the public good. And I shall be glad enough," continued he, "to see a school-room near to Mr James (meaning my brother), and to myself, which might be a great advantage to this neighbourhood." I thanked the Doctor for the handsome way in which he had received my proposition; then, after taking breakfast, we set off from Pecary Field House, and walked round the head of the creek, where the Doctor stopped us to look at the spot he had fixed on for his house: the very spot we had first arrived at, on the day he walked forth to make his selection. Hence we proceeded to the north side of the Black Rock, where we met Hart. The choice of the site for the school was left to Mr Rowley; who, without much hesitation, fixed on a rocky hillock about two hundred yards to the northward of the rock; the intermediate space consisting of wiry grass and shrubby plants. I approved his selection; and at once, with the assistance of Hart, we marked out the angular points. That done, we returned by the way we came, leaving our very capable builder to go to work in making a level foundation. About mid-day the carpenters arrived at the head of the creek, in the Avon, with a cargo of materials; which they had to carry round the rock, to the site of the intended schoolroom. In the evening, Mr Rowley and myself were piloted home by Master Diego, who gave us a good account of his own progress.

On the following day I felt a degree of leisure and rest of mind which I had not experienced since my last arrival. The German men were set to work fishing, and making their hurdles for enclosures; their women, under the guidance of Herbert and his family, were employed on their clothing. The carpenters and bricklayer had occupation given to them for at least a fortnight; and Diego, with the disposable force of the settlement, would have enough to do to cut the new way between the hills, within the same period. The soldiers had

their alternate day of guard at the plank house; while Corporal Craig took the look-out at the flagstaff, and did duty as a sort of town-major, where in truth there was yet nothing worthy of the name of a town.

On the evening of this day we all went out to refresh ourselves by a walk towards the southern part of our domain: here we met Abel, as he was driving home his flock of goats, to pen them for the milking, and for the night. It was a goodly sight: upwards of a hundred were then just issuing from among the trees, beyond the open ground. As they approached, we observed a part of them run bleating before the rest towards the pen. The kids of these impatient ones, confined within the stoccado, hearing their mothers, now answered them with an incessant clamour; but the poor little urchins were destined still to *baa* till their dams had first submitted themselves to the hands of the milkers.

When we considered how many of these animals had been given to the settlers, it was surprising to behold such an offspring from the single pair that had been wrecked with us; the six she-goats subsequently brought from Jamaica having been given away, so that no part of their progeny had increased our own flock. But now, perhaps, the total increase on the islands exceeded two hundred; none having been killed up to the present time, one solitary kid excepted. Our poultry also was in excess. But the milk of the goats and the eggs of the poultry, if superabundant to ourselves, nevertheless found ample consumers among the women and children of the settlement. The pigs had become absolutely a nuisance: their numbers and their noise were insufferable; so that to diminish this noisy and noisome population, some were ordered to be killed from time to time, and served to the new settlers in lieu of salt provision. Having reflected on the survey of our stock, my dear wife requested that two dozen of geese, three dozen of ducks, and two dozen more of fowls, and twelve additional goats, might be divided among the Germans. I approved the proposal; and instructions were given to Abel on our return from our walk, to have them all in readiness on Saturday morning.

In consideration of the pressing works on hand, orders were issued, signifying that there would not be a muster on the morrow; but four of the Germans were to come over, nevertheless, for their supplies; one of whom was to be Hinklemann, besides the Flemish woman his wife. On Saturday morning these people came; Hinklemann's wife soon after making her appearance at the mansion, where she received some special marks of

favour; after which she was made to comprehend, for the information of her friends, what was going forward for the benefit of their settlement. The stock being then delivered to the men, the mode of distribution was correctly explained to her, and the party departed; well pleased to carry back agreeable tidings, and a welcome present of live stock, to the people.

On Sunday the 31st, we all assembled under the silk cotton tree to prayers, every person well dressed for the occasion, and an unexceptionable demeanour observed. After service I remarked, that although the Germans had on clean clothes, their skins generally seemed far from clean. I suspected they had no soap, but on enquiry found this was not the case. I then thought fit to remonstrate with them on the subject. They complained that water was at a great distance, and that it was quite one person's business in each family every day to fetch it. Now, this had been a great oversight in locating them; therefore, on hearing it, I took my wife aside, to advise with her on what could be done. She would not allow me to say they were a dirty people; adding, with her gentle disapproval of the charge, "that we should be so too, if we were deficient in water."—"But what is our remedy, dear Eliza?" said I; "they must be clean, cost what it may."—"Well, then," she replied, "get some asses from Jamaica, for the poor people to fetch their water; and meanwhile I will take the women aside with Rosalie, and talk over the matter; telling them, until the asses come, they must do as well as they can; but at anyrate, they and their husbands and children must bathe in the sea, at least every Sunday morning before coming to prayers." Having made this arrangement between ourselves, the Flemish woman was desired to say that something would speedily be done to remedy the inconvenience; after which, my dear Eliza, with Rosalie, took all the German women into the mansion, where, as it has been elsewhere expressed, "there was a *grand palaver*," and all things explained to their satisfaction.

By the middle of August the schoolroom was finished; and Diego having completed his task rather sooner than he expected, had an opportunity of replenishing the turtle craal; and of doing many other things required at the cotton-tree plantation, where there was a fine growth of all the vegetable productions I had from time to time brought into the island.

On Monday the 15th, early in the morning, all the children were assembled in the schoolroom, to the number of thirty-three; at which meeting we took care to be present. It had been arranged that every child should bring a bag of provisions

for its dinner; and we were glad to see that the rule was so judiciously complied with at the outset: we had also directed that a woman from each respective settlement should escort its children to school in the morning, remaining with them all day to take them back in the evening. Hinklemann's wife was desired to perform this service for the first month; and during that month Rosalie was deputed to attend school with Mr Rowley: and we had much pleasure in hearing Mrs Gordon offer her services likewise. The instructors were now left to commence their labours; and my dear wife, with Mrs Rowley and Dr Gordon, walked round to Peccary Field House, where we spent the day; and in the evening returned with our good pastor, and his family, and Rosalie, to the mansion.

The carpenters and bricklayer were again making the necessary preparations to commence Dr Gordon's house; and on Wednesday they were all fairly at work, with the addition of the sawyers, who rendered great assistance in cutting and squaring the timber.

About noon this day, Corporal Craig reported a vessel off the south channel. I went with him to the signal post on the promontory, taking with me the soldier on guard; the vessel was a galliot, lying to, with Dutch colours flying. Our colours were hoisted; and, on my return to the fort, a canoe was despatched for Doctor Gordon, whom I requested to accompany Diego in the six-oared boat to board her, the Avon being with the carpenters, and at this time full of planks. The boat stood out to sea under sail, and piloted the galliot in to the anchorage a little before six in the evening. I put on my laced coat to receive the Dutch skipper, who soon came on shore. He told me his vessel was from Curacoa on a trading voyage; that he had called here to see what he could do, having heard of the place from a Spaniard. He spoke English tolerably well, and began to enumerate his cargo. I told him, I had nothing to do with that, but desired to inform him that "there were no harbour charges exacted here; that trade was free, excepting in spirits, wine, or beer, which could not be sold or landed without my permit." With this understanding, he retired with my brother's *factotum*, Doctor Gordon, to enter upon business: and I had little fear, novice as the Doctor might be in matters of this kind, that he would allow the Dutch skipper to over-reach him in a bargain. He was in possession of invoices and prices current, so that he knew what his own goods should fetch, and what he could afford to give the Dutchman for his.

Thursday and part of the next day were spent by the Dutch-

man and the Doctor in trading negotiations, but nothing had been concluded between them. I had in the meanwhile sent a turtle and some fish and vegetables to the crew, as an act of hospitality, for which they were thankful, and behaved very orderly. But it unfortunately happened that some of the Germans found their way on board the galliot, and as they could make themselves fully understood, they quickly discovered that there was Hollands Geneva on board ; a few cases of which belonging to the crew, our new settlers as quickly laid out in the purchase of them most of the money they had reserved of the Queen's gift ; and contrived to take the liquor away, without the Captain's knowledge. The consequence was, that all the men at German Town got drunk, and went over to Peccary Field by the new-made road, in a very disorderly manner. A canoe was immediately despatched to me with the intelligence ; on which I ordered Diego's boat to be manned ; then putting Corporal Craig and the three soldiers on board the galliot, to keep possession of her till my return, I rowed with all possible haste to Peccary Field : and found the delinquents there quarrelling with the carpenters, who had come from their work on the Doctor's house to endeavour to make the drunken men return home. By this time some of the German women had come over, and they were sadly distressed at the scene. I sent Diego with two of his men immediately to German Town, to break every bottle of the Hollands they could find ; and, partly by entreaties and partly by force, I contrived to make eight of the delinquents return. Three were so drunk they could not now walk ; and one had been so beastly so, before the rest set out he could not accompany them ; On Diego's reappearance, he reported to have found three cases ; the bottles of one were quite empty, and also five bottles in another. But he had broke the twelve full bottles, in the remaining case, and also the seven full ones left in the other ; and he learned through Hinklemann's wife, who had now picked up a little English, that the men had paid three dollars for each case.

After setting this matter to rights in the best way I could, I desired all the carpenters to sleep that night at Peccary Field, to make Mrs Seaward's mind easy. I then returned in the boat ; and after landing, sent Diego to the galliot to bring the Captain on shore. On his arrival, I told him what had been done, in despite of my regulations, to the incalculable mischief of some of the people. He protested his innocence of the affair, and total ignorance of what had happened, until the soldiers were put on board ; but said, he had since discovered

that four cases of Hollands had been sold by his men, besides twenty pounds of tobacco ; adding, that he was ready to make any atonement in his power. This was all, perhaps, that could be required of him. But I told him, the guilty persons must be punished. To this he made no objection ; and accordingly the men who had sold the spirits and tobacco to the Germans, were ordered on shore. I spoke to them myself, telling them that as they had presumed to do this against the regulations of the place, their Hollands should be confiscated ; and that they must return the money for that which they had sold. The men instantly laid down the money for the Hollands, and also the amount for the tobacco. But I bade them take up the latter sum, as there was no order against the sale of tobacco. Just as the business had drawn to this point, Diego came in, to say the Porghee was standing in to the harbour with another schooner. Having now done with the skipper and his men, I ordered them on board ; and sent word to Corporal Craig to leave two of the soldiers in the vessel until the morning.

My beloved wife was exceedingly distressed at this affair. She felt that the Queen's honour was sullied by the conduct of her countrymen, and she feared that they might hereafter prove a source of disquietude to the settlement, and of repeated vexations to me. I said everything in my power to assure her, that I considered the act as the result of barbarous ignorance, and not of a rebellious or vicious spirit ; and that I already forgave it, although an appearance of displeasure would be required, and measures must be taken to prevent the recurrence of such an offence again.—“You are always kind and good,” returned my dear Eliza, “and I believe all you say ; but still such an act leaves a stain behind it that never can be completely removed ; and I should be doubly grieved if anything so disgraceful to her people were ever to come to the ears of the Queen. I think,” continued she, “in looking into my own mind, it is for her Majesty, rather than for those ignorant boors, that I feel so sharply.”

In the morning the Doctor was sent to German Town, to see in what state the debauchees might be, so as to render them professional assistance if required. He took with him the twelve dollars, of which I mulcted the Dutch sailors, to be returned to the wives of the blockheads who gave it for gin. He recovered the fourth case full, which the women had hid away, and he brought it to me ; at the same time giving an account of what he had seen and what he had done. I desired him to deposit the case by the side of his medicine chest, and draw on its

contents medicinally, when any sick person might require it.—We were all glad to see our friend Drake again,—a fellow of sterling worth, being all that he seemed,—honest, enterprising, and gentlemanly. He delivered his letters—not a few—from the Governor of Jamaica, and from the Commodore; one also from the Honourable Captain Townshend; others from my bankers in London, from my excellent father-in-law, and from my sisters and uncle. There was much consequential matter in these communications, which at present I shall not notice. The Commodore had received the sword-handle, thankfully in his way. Drake told me what he said: but I may not repeat it. However, the Porghee was repaired, and fitted out in the best manner, with a midshipman who had served his time as mate, and also with a youngster, besides a carpenter's mate, a boatswain's mate, and twelve men; and with six guns, four pounders. This was more than was promised—more than I could have expected: but the Commodore himself had taken the trouble to go on board; and having visited her, said, "she was a fine vessel, and deserved the equipment he would order." His letter was to the same purpose.

My brother visited the Dutchman on board his galliot, on the same evening of his arrival, notwithstanding the *bruit* he had occasioned, and the unpleasantness which still in some measure existed at Peccary Field. The Dutchman did not find the master so inflexible as his *factotum* had been; so they arranged for commencing business the next day; which was done to a considerable amount.—But I did not relax in keeping a guard on board the vessel; and such I made a standing order with respect to all traders that might hereafter enter the port.

On Sunday morning the Dutchman sailed: that was his business, therefore I did not interfere; and, in truth, I was glad he was gone; for my brother had thought fit to purchase a quantity of Hollands and Rhenish wines from him, for which I could not refuse a permit; although, after what had happened, I was sorry he had done so. Some of the German men were too sick to appear at church: but they who came expressed much contrition for their conduct. In the afternoon Doctor Gordon returned with them to visit the settlement. He found three of the debauchees attacked with fever, and he wrote to me to that effect, but did not leave them. One of these, Rudolph Schnieder, died on the Tuesday following. The other two gradually recovered. On Wednesday, Mr Rowley consecrated a piece of ground near to their town, in which the remains of the unhappy man were on that day deposited; all

the colony being present, and the funeral service devoutly performed. This was the first death that had taken place in the island : a sad mark for August, 1737.

Our letters, and the dismal occurrence that had just happened, occupied our attention during the present week. My brother, however, was engaged in landing his cargo brought down by his own schooner, the *Tom Cod*,—a fine New England vessel, well suited for commercial purposes—very different from the *Porghee*, which was less calculated to carry bulk, but more of a flyer.

In consequence of my letter from Governor Trelawney, in which he returned me many thanks for my superb present, I ordered Drake to hold himself in readiness to sail immediately for Bluefield's River, on the Mosquitto shore, to treat with the chiefs there to supply two hundred Indians for the subjection of the Maroons at Jamaica. I quickly furnished him with instructions, and a copy of Governor Trelawney's letter ; also gave him money to purchase twelve asses and two riding mules, with saddles and bridles for the latter, at the nearest Spanish port he could obtain them ; and desired him, if possible, to procure a person that could teach our people to make Spanish plait and hats from the leaves of the palm-tree. He sailed on Thursday, the 25th, for Bluefield's River, which may be distant from Seaward Islands about one hundred leagues.

All the women of the settlement, besides all the men excepting the carpenters, were now employed in getting in and housing the second harvest, which was most abundant everywhere ; and as the Germans had yet but little to do on their ground, for so many of them, they were engaged elsewhere as their services were required, for which they were paid a fair remuneration.

In less than three weeks Drake returned, bringing with him two Indian chiefs. He had also procured the asses and mules, with some awkward riding furniture, at a small Spanish port to the southward, called *Alvos*. He, however, failed in getting any one to teach us the straw manufactory, which the Spaniards only understand to perfection. I entertained the chiefs in the way I thought most agreeable to them ; and by way of conciliating their respect, I presented each of them with a couple of doubloons, on taking their leave. Drake landed the asses and mules the very day he arrived ; and next morning he sailed again for Jamaica with the two chiefs, taking a letter from myself to Governor Trelawney ; having no other commission than the purchase of two young new negroes, a man

and a woman, for Dr Gordon ; which I desired him to do, that I might be enabled to fulfil my promise to the Doctor, when his house should be ready to receive him.

On the Saturday following, September 17th, a parade was held. The Germans had become more industrious than heretofore ; and now seemed anxious, by their observance of cleanliness and every other regulation, to retrieve their character. After parade, I gave them to understand that it had been my intention to stop their tobacco for three months, as a punishment for their late bad conduct : but I looked upon the death of their comrade, to which that conduct had been accessory, as a punishment from a higher power ; therefore I should bury the whole affair in his grave, and behave to them as if nothing of the kind had happened. My dear wife shed a tear when she heard me say this, and turned aside.

On Monday, twenty-four pigs were selected for the Germans, as they were now in a condition to feed them ; and six of the asses also were appropriated to their use. Two more were given to the soldiers, two sold to my brother, and two retained at the silk cotton-tree plantation. The Reverend Mr Rowley mounted his mule to-day, for the first time ; taking his ride through the woodland region, and by the water's edge of the sandy isthmus, to the seat of his daily labour. Mrs Gordon, as yet a guest at Peccary Field, still assisted him ; but the services of Rosalie and the wife of Hinklemann were no longer thought necessary.

Our Scotch grass, which grew luxuriantly to the height of from three to four feet in and about the water-run, that overflowed from the reservoir below the great tree, now came into use to feed our mules : the asses did not require such nutritious food ; they would feed with the goats on the scantiest herbage.

Towards the end of this week we were thrown into great consternation, by the small-pox appearing on board my brother's schooner, in the person of Harry Rock, Anne's brother. The Doctor, highly approving the inoculation plan introduced from Turkey by Lady Wortley Montagu, immediately set about preparing all the people for it, both old and young, who had not experienced the disease. Everyone under preparation was washed with soap and fresh water, then physicked for three days, then inoculated ; and after three days more, when the arm showed signs of the inoculation having taken, they were made to bathe in the sea three times every day, until the pustules filled. These were then all pricked with needles, to let out the matter, and the patients again well purged, but not

bathed. Much praise is due to Doctor Gordon, for his great judgment, and wise departure from the ordinary destructive practice in treating this hideous and fatal malady. In consequence, we did not lose a single individual. Yet poor Rock had a narrow escape, having been almost at the point of death. I may here remark that the success of Gordon's practice was subsequently sent to Jamaica ; but the chief of the faculty there discountenanced the whole proceeding as empirical ; and, consequently, few ventured to follow it.

This sickness among us gave my dear wife and the other ladies enough to do, as well as the Doctor ; but all that kindness could conceive, and humanity could bestow, was provided for the comfort of the people ; and early in October every one was well, and all things going on in their usual routine.

Our friend Drake made his appearance on Friday the 14th. He had met with a gracious reception from the Governor, from whom he brought me a letter of thanks. The Porghee had been again at the Mosquitto shore, where he had landed the two Indian chiefs, to make the required levy. He brought from them to me a present of four beautiful deer, and eight fine turnkeys of a peculiar breed. The breasts of these birds are of a deep orange colour, the wings and tail black, but the extreme ends of the wing and tail feathers are tipped with orange also ; so that when the cock bird showed himself off in his pride, the expansion of his plumage exhibited the orange on the tail feathers as forming a golden iris. The commission I gave him for the purchase of the two young negroes, intended for Doctor Gordon, had been duly executed ; and indeed, after the humane, skilful, and unwearied attentions of that gentleman, I was happy in the opportunity of presenting him with these useful domestics for a term of seven years ; after which it was understood their labours would be their own, and themselves to all intents and purposes free. He received them thankfully ; and being a man of an honest and good heart, expressed himself much pleased with the conditions of their servitude. "I am no friend to slavery," said he ; "and if you please, Sir Edward, we will call the man *William Wallace*, and the girl *Joan of Arc*."—I cheerfully approved the nomination, falling in with the Doctor's patriotic whim. The beautiful deer were now turned out into the woodland region, where they had plenty of shade, and I may say a fine park to range in.

On Monday morning, Drake sent some of his men to spread an awning from tree to tree in the cocoa-nut grove, where we were to dine, and entertain all Mr Rowley's scholars in the

afternoon. As Drake was resolved to make it a day of pleasure, he requested to have the other mule, and ride over to the Black Rock with Mr Rowley early in the morning: "for," said he, "I have not crossed ass, horse, or mule, since the day you saw me show off in that way at Spanish Town."—A mule's usual pace suited the parson very well, who was content to go on quietly; but our friend Drake was desirous of a gallop, so by way of spurs he fastened a corking pin to the heel of one of his shoes, and made the jade feel it, just as they were setting off. The mule perhaps had belonged to some sober-minded friar, who being satisfied to eat and sleep, and most likely to take a nap, after eating, upon his mule, she was not accustomed to such a salutation; so in the moment she felt the pin, up went her heels, and in spite of the close Spanish saddle, threw the gallant sailor over her head. When I saw that he was not hurt, I could not help laughing; but my dear wife and Maria ran out immediately to his assistance, and the rogue, seeing this, kept his ground that they might help him up. Poor Maria had screamed, and now she wept upon his neck. He did not intend, or expect this: he rose therefore, quickly saying, "Dear ladies—dear Maria, if I may call you so—this is too kind."—Maria was vexed at being so taken in; therefore turned away without reply, and came into the house. Drake quickly followed her; and after an interview of a few minutes, long enough to make up a lovers' quarrel, he returned and remounted the mule; taking the precaution, however, to remove the pin from his heel. He and the parson then bid us adieu, and jogged on cosily together.

Mistress Rota furnished an ample repast, to take with us to the cocoa-nut grove; where we were to meet all my brother's family, including Doctor and Mrs Gordon. A little after twelve o'clock, I sent Mr and Mrs Rowley and children, together with my sister and Rosalie, in Diego's boat, taking with them all the good things, saying we would follow. My dear wife and myself had a fancy in our heads, to realise which was our object in remaining behind. I had desired Diego to get the old punt down to the rocky point, which he did. And after the party had gone, my dear Eliza dressed herself in the old island garb of our former days—boots, trowsers, short tunic, and buntin sash, with a turbaned mouchoir on her head; I also dressed myself as in the habit of those times, with pistols and a hatchet in my belt, having the canteen with water, as formerly, slung over my shoulder. I gave my wife a pike in her hand, and then took up a basket, into which she had put a piece of salt

beef and some biscuit, and likewise the old gaskets, for the occasion. We had religiously preserved these memorials of our early days. Then taking the hand of my beloved, followed by our faithful Fidele, who, after smelling to the end of the pike, and to our old leggings or gaiters, jumped about, frisking his tail, as if the old days of his prowess against the iguana were to be renewed again.

We bent our steps through the woodland region ; where soon we became like those who are said to be under enchantment. Scarcely had the trees shut out every other object, when all that had passed since our earliest days here appeared as a dream. "Oh Edward !" my wife exclaimed, "I am now indeed again happy !—do we dream ?—or have we dreamt ?—If we have only dreamt ; all that seemed lately so real, then, is passed. Yet if it were but a dream, it had the full evil of life ; for I suffered both cares and anxieties, and a painful estrangement from you !—Oh it were enough to suffer so, even in a dream ! But I fear ours has been, and is, one of those day-dreams to end only with life."—She threw her arms upon my neck, and I knelt to receive the embrace, and the tear that her tender heart swelled to bestow upon me. This was a moment of too much bliss to last beyond a moment, but it was as the visit of an angel to the drooping spirit of man ; it was the fountain in the wilderness ; and soon we felt refreshed and joyous, following the path till we passed the well-known spring and the rock. As in old times, I then placed her in the stern of the punt : followed by Fidele, leaping and skipping by her side, as in days of yore. The two skull oars were quickly in my hands, when cheerily I rowed along the beach, to the foot of the cocoa-nut grove.

Diego was the only person who knew us when we leaped on shore. He gave a great shout on seeing us, and fell on his face upon the ground. We were in the dress he first saw us in, when he and his hesitating friends prostrated themselves before me. Diego's conduct caused much commotion among our friends, for he quickly sprang up again, crying out, "Senor Don Edvardo !" and "La Senora Donna nuestra !" —This only increased their embarrassment, while we advanced with pike and basket arm in arm, towards them. Rosalie was the first to perceive the dog, exclaiming "Ah, Fidele !" On reaching the astonished group, they appeared much amused by our appearance, as if in masquerade. But when Diego told his story, a deeper interest was excited ; our dresses were examined with the most minute attention ; the pike in my Eliza's hand, looked at over

and over again ; and even the punt, on which no eye had hitherto deigned to look, became an object of curiosity and respect.

The collation was already spread out. We desired our friends then to sit down to it, but permit us to dine as we had done in former days ; promising to join them afterwards when the children came. Our party had good feeling and good taste enough to comply with our whim, and while they sat down to a sumptuous feast, under an extended canopy, my dear Eliza and myself retired to the ledge of rocks a little above them, where we spread out our simple fare. The capsicums she had sown with her own hands were growing luxuriantly around us, so that we had no more to do but pluck one of them, to give a relish to the beef ; but we now only pretended to eat, the keen relish was gone for such food : and perhaps if the experiment had been made of our lonely island being restored to us, we should have found ourselves equally disqualified for the enjoyment of that solitude, which our present little pageant was intended to recall and celebrate. When our friends had nearly dined, and were calling out to us to join them at their dessert, I took the gaskets from the basket, and to their surprise ascended a cocoa-nut tree, and with my hatchet sent the fruit tumbling to the ground. Some of the party came to scramble for the nuts, while I gravely descended, and taking a couple under my arm, returned to my dear wife : I then clave these nuts, that she and I might drink ; afterwards collecting the others that had fallen into our basket, we presented them to our friends, and joined the party in their festivities.

The poor dear children made their appearance about three o'clock, and were delighted by the sight of so many good things. They were instantly placed round the remains of our rural feast, and made happy by the helping hands of all the party. Rosalie, who was a joyous, sweet-tempered creature, soon after sung to her guitar ; the children then danced, or attempted to dance, the ladies walked about, and looked on, while my friend Drake and myself lighted our cigars, and took post on the ledge of rocks above. My dear Eliza soon joined us there, chatting and looking on, delighted with seeing so many happy, and the more so by being where she was.

In the evening Diego was sent with his boat to take the German children home, to save them a long walk ; but the others returned on foot. My brother, with his family, crossed over to Peccary Field with his boat ; but to our other friends a choice lay between the two mules, the punt, or a walk. I suggested that the parson should take up his own wife, and Drake

should take up my sister, behind them on the mules, and go home. The ladies laughed at this joke of mine, for such it was; but excused themselves, saying they could not ride without a pillion. I then proposed that the whole party should walk; but Mrs Rowley replied, she would like to go in the punt with her girls; and Maria expressed the same desire. "Very well, then, Drake," said I; "you may have the honour to row our Argos back: for, in my eyes, this humble craft is to us what the renowned Argos was in the eyes of the Greeks; and who knows but, Jason-like, you may take with you in it a golden fleece." He instantly met the wish, but I think without perceiving the allusion I had made to my sister. The parson now gave the mules to Drake's midshipmen, who liked a ride as well as their captain; Mr Rowley himself, and Mr Dilkes, choosing to walk. My dear Eliza and myself followed, once more treading the beach of the isthmus leisurely together, arm in arm; while Rosalie and Fidele kept behind us at a distance, amusing themselves with whatever presented itself on their way. "This has been a happy day, dear Edward," said my sweet angel, as we retired to rest. "Yes, my love, it has indeed been a happy day," I replied,—“a gleam of sunshine through the clouds of life.”

CHAPTER XXIV.

ON Thursday morning, the German look-out, on the northern height of George's Island, hoisted the Union Jack, as a signal for a sail; and nearly at the same time, Corporal Craig hoisted his colours on the promontory, with a gun; and, soon after, he made his appearance, to report two sail in the offing. I did not know what this might mean; having lately had accounts of very unfriendly, not to say hostile, proceedings on the part of the Spaniards towards the commerce of England; accompanied by that insolent and menacing conduct, which left little doubt of war between the two countries being near at hand: and as my position might be deemed the outpost in the West Indies, I could not tell how soon we might be attacked. I therefore ordered the bugle to sound: and, like the Scottish clans of the year 1715, our people quickly came to the gathering. Drake got the Porghee under weigh, and stood out to the southward; while Dilkes, with the Tom Cod's crew in the Avon, sailed through the northern channel, taking the precaution to be armed. My caution proved to be unnecessary on this occasion; but caution, like secrecy, is a friend that seldom will betray

you ; and therefore, though not always wanted, should never be disregarded.

The strangers soon came in, and anchored. My uncle's brig, the *Mary*, and a Spanish merchant schooner, were the two vessels seen from the promontory ; and the other, the most important, was a king's cutter from Jamaica, with despatches to me from the Governor and Commodore.

Our old friend, Captain Taylor of the *Mary*, was delighted at seeing the improvement of our settlement, and the respectable appearance of our military guard : but he did not much like a soldier being put on board his vessel ; which, however, he cheerfully acceded to, when I told him what had happened, and that it had become, in consequence, a standing regulation of the port ; another sentinel, at the same time, being stationed on board the Spaniard.

The Commodore's despatches contained an admiralty confirmation of the admission of the *Porghee* on the list of the navy ; and with it, a confirmed commission for Lieutenant Francis Drake, now appointed by the Lords Commissioners to the command of that vessel ;—an event highly gratifying both to Drake and myself.

But the letters from the Governor were of serious and immediate importance : they went to state the horrible depredations committed on our trade generally by the Spaniards in the West Indies ; expressing a wish that I would go to Porto Bello in my yacht, accompanied by H.M. cutter *Seagull*, and, in the name of the British Government, demand restitution of two ships, with mahogany and logwood, captured off Cozumel by an armed vessel belonging to Porto Bello, and reported to have been brought to that port. After some private conversation, first with my dear wife, who was to me what the *Czarina* had been to *Peter*, and then with Drake, my excellent captain, I determined to sail without loss of time, on the business confided to me, and fixed Saturday for our departure. My Eliza then entreated me to take her along with me, saying "It is a civil mission, Edward ; therefore I hope it may not be improper for me to accompany you." I appreciated this kind and meek appeal to my feelings and understanding ; so without hesitation I consented to do so, expressing, at the same time, the happiness her request had given me. I must now do Drake the justice to observe, that on my communicating to him my business at Porto Bello : he said,—"It is not likely that vessels taken off the island of Cozumel should be brought to Porto Bello : however," continued he, "I have no business to think

about it: my business is to obey orders." So saying he left me to get the Porghee ready for sea.

Some English presents were put on board for the Governor of Porto Bello:—half a dozen hams, two immense Gloucester cheeses, one hundred weight of double refined sugar, and three hampers of London porter. All necessary arrangements being completed, we sailed early on Saturday forenoon; my wife taking with her Rosalie, who, she thought, possibly might be of use to us in transacting any written official business with the Spaniards; for as I have before stated, this girl was a good French scholar. I would have taken honest Diego with me too, but was afraid, lest they might seize him as soon as he was discovered to be a Spanish negro; for we all knew right well, they were not very nice about laying hands on anything, or anybody, to which they could advance the shadow of a claim.

On Sunday, at noon, we made the island of St Andero, which lay in our way: and, about two o'clock, stood in on the west side, upon pretence of desiring a pilot for Porto Bello, and anchored outside the reef: but my real design was to see a place not fifty leagues distant from our own settlement,—and a wretched place it appeared to be, as far as we could discern with our glasses,—cannon without carriages, soldiers without appointments; two monasteries, but no fortification worth a rush; and a miserable looking population; with no trade, but a guarda costa lying in the roads. This fellow was far from courteous: we had no sooner anchored, than he sent a boat on board, in which there was a man who spoke tolerable English, a native of Gibraltar; and through whom he gave us to understand, we must not anchor there; that he had orders not to allow any English vessels, whatever, to come within what he pleased to call *the Spanish jurisdiction*. I told him, in reply, that these vessels not only belonged to the King of England, but that I was going on a mission from the British Government to the Governor of Porto Bello; and, being strange to the coast, we wanted a pilot. "Then," said he, "*you may want a pilot*: for the King of Spain does not desire to see any of you in his seas, and if you do not take my warning, and go back, perhaps the Governor may send the crews to hard labour, and the Cabalero's officers to Gloria Castle!" If our two vessels had not overawed this hidalgo, I think it not unlikely he would have proceeded to still ruder measures. After a few hours we weighed and steered for Porto Bello, leaving the guarda costa at his anchor.

On Wednesday, 26th of October, about ten o'clock in the

forenoon, we made Punta Gorda, and worked up nearly all day for Porto Bello, to the northward and eastward, against a strong current. None but strangers to the coast would have made this mistake ; in consequence of which we could not get in that night, but by the morning we were off the high land to the northward of the port. The vessels had been seen during the previous day, and our colours had declared what we were. Early in the morning an armed boat with an officer was despatched to us, as we lay becalmed under the land. This officer spoke French, so that I readily made him understand who I was, stating my business. He said we must remain where we were till he went in and returned. About ten o'clock he appeared again, accompanied by another officer of superior rank. This officer, whose name is too long to write (the name of the governor being long enough), said that "his Excellency Don Francisco Martinez de Retez desired that I should communicate my business to him, who would then impart it to his excellency." I told him in reply, to go back to his Excellency Don Francisco Martinez de Retez, and tell him that a man, not inferior to himself in rank and fortune, and equal to him in honour with his sovereign, was here ; and that in consequence of his message, I should send the cutter into the port, with a letter to demand an audience ; at the same time signifying to the officer that he might, if he chose, go in the cutter. He, however, declined the honour I intended him, saying he did not know whether his Excellency was aware of what I had told him ; but that he had only obeyed the orders he had received ; adding, that he thought it might be well to allow him time to return and explain the matter to the governor, before I sent in the cutter, lest any mischief should come out of it. I replied, that I would lay to another hour, the breeze having now set in ; but at the expiration of the hour, if due respect was not paid to my representation, the cutter *should* go in ; as it was the right of every ship or vessel belonging to his Britannic Majesty so to do ; but that my coming in person or not, would depend on the conduct of the governor of Porto Bello on the occasion. In about an hour another boat was seen coming off, and I awaited her arrival. She brought no message, but put a pilot on board each of our vessels, and we instantly made sail, and stood into the harbour. It had been agreed that the cutter should fire a salute, on passing the fort on our larboard hand ; but not the schooner, lest the Spaniard might not choose to return it : and so it fell out.

A letter written in English and in French was now des-

patched to his Excellency, requesting an interview at his earliest possible convenience. And, that I might fall as little short as possible of Spanish pomp, I gave my name and titles at full length : on which occasion, for the first time in my life, I reflected on my godfathers, that they had not given me two or three names besides Edward ; to have made me somewhat on a par in that way with his excellency of Porto Bello. I intrusted this letter to Drake, desiring him to deliver it to the governor with his own hand.

Soon after he went on shore, a boat with soldiers came alongside of each of our two vessels, and the soldiers, very unceremoniously, were preparing to step on board. The cutter was the first to perceive their intention, while the boats were yet at a distance ; on which Captain Thomson hailed the Porghee, to know how he should act. "Do not allow it," was my reply. The crews of the vessels then seizing their boarding pikes, prepared to repel the intruders. The Spanish officer, on finding he could not put his order into execution without violence, drew off and returned.

In the course of the afternoon I received a reply from his Excellency, written in Spanish and in French. It was prolix, being replete with unmeaning compliment ; but he could not, he said, appoint any time for an interview, until he knew the purport of it. A Spanish officer, who came back with Drake, delivered this note, by whom I returned a pretty sharp answer :—"If his excellency should refuse an interview with an officer who came as *charge d'affaires* from the British Government, it must be considered as an insult to the Crown of England ; and I desired to know what he meant by attempting to send Spanish soldiers on board his Britannic Majesty's vessels."

The time was, and not many months ago, when I should have feared to incur the displeasure of my Government, and receive a reprimand, for thus upholding the honour of my country ; but I now knew that his Majesty had made up his mind, in spite of Sir Robert Walpole, to take hostile steps against the Spaniards, if they persisted in their aggressions and insults ; I was therefore induced to follow the bent of my own feelings on this occasion. The Spaniard, however, had been too long accustomed to lord it over us, to care anything for my threat ; nor did he deign to make any explanation respecting the attempt to put soldiers on board. I must confess I felt excessively chagrined at the haughty and contemptuous conduct observed towards us ; and not a little vexed, also, at having failed completely in my mission. My Eliza perceived

my vexation, and regretted that it was a case in which kindness from her could give but little consolation.

We remained nearly two days without receiving any further communication from the governor. In this interval we had learned, by a piece of paper given to one of the midshipmen while on shore with the boat, that there were five masters of English vessels, and one merchant and his wife, confined in a small tower about four leagues to the southward of Porto Bello, not half a mile from the shore. This information seemed to give me new energies, so that I immediately sat down and wrote again to the governor, stating what had come to my knowledge, and demanding that the people should immediately be given up; referring him to his instructions from the King of Spain, bearing date January 10th, 1732, wherein he was directed "not to molest nor abuse, nor suffer to be molested nor abused, by any of his Catholic Majesty's subjects, the English, or any of their ships;" and I desired to know whether I was to understand that he refused the interview I had requested, on behalf of my master the King of England. To this communication, he replied, "that the people incarcerated had been caught trading within the Spanish seas without a licence; and that the vessels, therefore, had been condemned, and the people put in confinement: that he found this exception, in the circular to governors, to which I had referred, and, therefore, he would not give up the English demanded. And as he thought it would be acceptable to the king his master, not to give encouragement to English ships of any kind, or on any pretence allow them to come into the ports of Spanish America, I had permission to depart as soon as I might think proper." This was enough. I had received my dismissal; and with it a general answer to the requisition I had come to make, which, of course, included the two particular captures I had been sent to represent, and for which I was to ask restitution. His Excellency Don Francisco Martinez de Retez had settled the business on which I came, without knowing it. But he was, moreover, ignorant of the good English fare he had missed, by his abominable conduct, and also of what was to follow.

On receiving my dismissal, no time was lost in getting the vessels under weigh, and we stood out to sea. The sea breeze soon died away after we got clear of the port; and as we lay becalmed, a canoe came alongside in the middle watch of the night, from Point Cocal, with three English sailors and the master of a brig, which had been taken some weeks ago by the Spaniards. It was the master himself who had sent the note

to us, having trusted it to a woman, to whom he gave his only shirt for taking it. Drake called me up, the moment these people came on board, who soon gave me every particular respecting the persons incarcerated ; and the situation, and slightly guarded state of the place of their confinement. I instantly determined to release our unfortunate countrymen, if possible, and speedily sent for the commander of the cutter, to confer with Drake and myself on the measure. It was soon settled. A boat from each vessel, well armed, were to go in ; that the business might be done effectually and at once, before any alarm could be excited ; Drake and Thomson volunteering to go themselves on the expedition. Drake took the master of the captured brig, and one of his men with him ; the other man going in the Seagull's boat, the canoe in which they came being now set adrift. About three o'clock in the morning, a light breeze came off the land, when the vessels were enabled to stand along shore to the south-west, in the track of the boats. During this time, one and all of us suffered under the greatest anxiety for the fate of our adventurers, as well as for the daring adventure itself, it being altogether an irregular proceeding ; so that failure, and capture of our brave fellows, would certainly be visited by barbarous severity on the part of the Spaniards ; and by a pitiless condemnation from our own Government. But when the day dawned, we were relieved from our fears ; the boats were seen a little distance from the shore, pulling towards us, now again lying becalmed ; and by the help of the glass we could discern several persons with them, beyond their own number. On making this discovery, we rejoiced in the success of the generous undertaking, and the boats reached us just as the sea breeze set in. The whole party of strangers were then put on board the *Porghee* ; and without loss of time both vessels filled, and stood to the northward, lying their course for Seaward Islands.

Five masters of merchantmen, one supercargo, and a Dutch merchant and his wife, had been rescued. The accounts these people gave of the barbarous treatment they had experienced at the hands of the Spaniards, were shocking to civilised society, and the circumstances under which they had been taken, and their vessels condemned, would have been an outrage against the independence and dignity of the lowest power in Europe.

If Seaward Islands had not lain directly in the track to Jamaica, I should not have determined to go there in the first instance ; being desirous of furnishing Government with the mass of evidence now in my possession against the Spaniard,

without delay. But as a copy of my correspondence with the governor of Porto Bello would suffice to show the feeling that existed, practically exemplified by the appearance of persons rescued from an imprisonment inflicted in the face of treaties and political justice, I did not consider it requisite to go myself to Jamaica; therefore I had determined to land at our own place, and send the Seagull forward with my despatches.

We arrived at our own anchorage, on Wednesday the 2nd of November; and I instantly set about writing my despatches, while the poor unfortunates were invited on shore, and supplied with clothing and all other necessaries. The Dutchman and his wife seemed much distressed, and the account they gave of themselves was this:—They had got together some little property at Bonaire, with which they intended to return to Amsterdam and retire. But a great part of it being in European goods, taken in payment for debts, the unlucky fellow conceived a plan of making a voyage to the Spanish Main, to a place where a smuggling business was carried on between the Spaniards and the Dutch; but although he succeeded there in converting much of his goods into dollars, he was laid hold of on the sea by a guarda costa, and the sequel we know. This man's name was Van Kempen, and a very honest fellow he was: his wife, also, was of a better order of Dutch women; and seeing their forlorn condition, without money and without resources, my ever kind Eliza proposed to me to offer them an asylum, until they could communicate with their friends, and see their way to the next step in life. This unfortunate couple received our offer with much thankfulness, declaring it would be a second saving of them to allow them to remain with us. The three rescued seamen not being at all necessary at Jamaica, or in England, to the proving of the case, were also induced to remain with us, and ship themselves in my brother's schooner; this accession enabled me to take out the two lads, and Martin to be permanently attached to the Avon. On Thursday, the Seagull sailed for Jamaica, well supplied with turtle and vegetables; taking on board the five masters, the supercargo, and my despatches for the governor and commodore.

There had not been any fighting in rescuing the prisoners from the tower in which they were confined. Our fellows caught the guards napping, whom they awoke with three cheers: the Spanish soldiers took to their heels, as soon as they could get upon their legs; and so weak was the outer door of the place of confinement, that one of the seamen literally made a

breach in it, something in the same way that the lion treated the knight of La Mancha.

Notwithstanding the happy result of our expedition, in rescuing our imprisoned countrymen, and the exultation it occasioned generally amongst us, yet I could not help continuing to feel much chagrined at the insulting conduct of the Spanish Governor, and at my total failure in accomplishing the object of my mission. My dear Eliza observed this with deep regret, and took every opportunity to satisfy my mind that there had been nothing wanting on my part; that if the King's ministers had shown half the zeal and firmness in preserving the honour of the Crown that I had done on the late occasion, the insults, which I was now so deeply lamenting, never could have occurred. "And, indeed, my dear Edward," continued she, "I do say it in honesty, that you did all a man could do under existing circumstances; for which circumstances you are in no way responsible." In this way she would talk to me day after day, whenever she perceived me brooding over the subject. At length she completely succeeded in her endeavours to compose my mind, and set my feelings at rest respecting it.

In a few days I turned my attention to the affairs of the settlement. Doctor Gordon's house was finished, and he had commenced moving his furniture and other things from the storehouse, which he had brought out with him from England. My brother being now about to send his vessel to Jamaica, with the merchandise he had obtained from the Dutch trader and Spaniard, I sent an order by it for lumber, and other building materials, as much as she could carry. The Doctor's family having now left Peccary Field, my brother very kindly received Mr Van Kempen and his wife to take up their abode with him; and he found in these strangers useful, if not agreeable, inmates. The husband spoke English quite intelligibly, and possessed great knowledge of commercial affairs, as connected with this part of the world especially; and, moreover, the wife being a notable woman, and a resident for many years in the West Indies, instructed Mrs Seaward in many things of no small importance as to the management of her house, and the produce of the grounds. Our new Dutch friend was of great use to me, too, not only in communicating with the Germans, but also in pointing out the best modes of directing their industry. He soon made himself master of our situation, and saw the great commercial advantages to be derived from it. He was frank, but respectful, in his communications; and ventured to say, that if there were more merchants there would be more trade.

My brother, however, would not agree to this proposition, and at no distant period began to look on the Dutchman with a jealous eye. But his arguments were nevertheless convincing to my mind; and as I felt certain that my brother's success in life could not be injured, I resolved to give a facility to every person that chose to embark in trade, or in any other business, except tavern-keeping, at the settlement.

Van Kempen approved entirely of my project to establish a manufactory for straw hats from the palmetto; and he suggested, also, the cultivation of the Indian arrow-root, as there were fine runs of water to prepare the flour from it, which brings a great price in Europe. And besides, he was sure the German sausage-maker could make capital sausages of the turtle, if he were well supplied with spices; and if these were packed in jars, or small casks well covered with lard, they would sell not only in Europe, but even in the West Indies. So by these means, and others which afterwards would present themselves, he thought the industry of the people might be made relevant to the original stock of the island, and some wealth, however little, acquired. But without resorting to this principle, he said, whatever the people gained, I or my brother must lose. The Dutchman evidently understood his subject; and, therefore, notwithstanding the reluctance of my brother, whose views were narrow, only for want of knowing better, I determined to be guided in all my measures by the principles which had been so wisely stated and explained.

Our Sabbaths continued to be duly kept, our muster days observed, the school regularly attended, and the people daily occupied in their respective callings and avocations. When my brother's schooner returned, the carpenters and bricklayers were set to work on the house I had planned on the northern part of Allwood's bay. Drake had twice visited the Spanish Main, near to Cape Gracias a Dios; and during the second time succeeded in procuring a family who understood, in perfection, the making of plait, and fine hats, from the leaves of the palm-tree; and when he brought them to us, they were accompanied by a large supply of the material which he had collected, but of which we had an abundance on our own islands. The vessels of the colony were laid up in Peccary Creek during the short period of the stormy season; and after the rain ceased, the whole strength of the settlement was engaged in putting in roots and seeds for the ensuing harvest. Spanish vessels arrived now and then with merchandise, and dollars, of which my brother made a good account. Van Kempen kept the

German women at work, with their wheels and distaffs spinning cotton, by which more thread was furnished than our weaver could consume at his loom. At the school-house, the time of the children was divided between learning to read, and learning the straw work. Besides these new matters, a considerable quantity of the "*Arundo Indiana radice esculente*" was planted in January; and also an apparatus made, consisting of boxes, communicating with each other by hollow bamboos, to be ready when the plant should attain maturity, to convey the water to wash the grated root, and to receive the amylaceous deposit which constitutes that rare article called *Indian arrow-root*. Thus a system of general industry was instituted, and, at no distant period, carried into productive operation.

On the 10th of February, 1738, we received the melancholy intelligence of the death of our most excellent and amiable Queen; which was communicated by a letter to my dear wife from Lady Sundon. I will not attempt to describe the affliction this information occasioned. It was a day of sorrow I never can forget.

In March, the house at Allwood's Bay was finished. In the contemplation of its completion, I had sent the Porghee to Jamaica; and as furniture is not merchandise, I then requested Drake "to bring me such things as I thought I should require for this my intended country *chateau*!" On his return, the house was put in order, with all the neat and convenient furniture he had brought; and, when all was completed, I took him over with me to Allwood's Bay, to look at it. We both admired the situation in which it was placed,—the front looking towards the sea,—having a screen of finely wooded hills forming the back ground, as if to shelter it from the January storms. "Indeed, Sir Edward," said Drake, after we had gone through the halls and other rooms, "I think you will like this place so much better than the mansion at the fort, that you will make it your constant residence."—"I don't think that is likely, my dear friend," I replied; "but at home we shall hear what someone else may say on the subject." We returned to dinner, and my Eliza met us in the piazza. Drake began a eulogy to her on the chateau, the moment we came in. "I am well pleased," she replied, "to hear that you are so much delighted with the place, and I am not the only one that will feel happy in your being so." This was a puzzler for Drake. "I am at a loss, Sir Edward," said he, looking earnestly at me, and perhaps somewhat astounded, "to make a reply to my friend, Lady Seaward, for she is not used to pay compliments."—"She means

what she says, my dear friend," I rejoined; "she and I are both happy that you are delighted with the place. The house was built and furnished for you, and not for us; and I desire you will accept it as a mark of our regard." His surprise now increased his perplexity, so that for some time he was unable to make any reply. At last he stammered out, "My friend! my dear friend!"—then rallying a little, smiled, and added, "your great kindness has given me courage to ask a favour."—But here again his courage failed, and he could say no more. But my kindhearted Eliza took up his theme for him.—"You would say," added she, taking him kindly by the hand, "I should not only wish to call you friend, but brother!"—"Is that the case, my dear Drake?" I exclaimed; "is this the favour that so much embarrasses you to express? If you and another person desire it as much as I do, there will be no impediment; and I believe you may be happy." The brave and tender hearts are seldom severed. The gallant Drake could not restrain the tear that now glistened in the sunshine of his eye. My dear wife made no delay in communicating the subject of our interview to Maria, and had the happiness to add another joyful heart to the present hour.

On Sunday the 19th of March, the nuptials were performed by the Reverend Mr Rowley; after which, three couple of our domestic negroes were married; and several black children baptized, besides all the adult people who had not undergone the rite of baptism. The whole population was entertained in the afternoon with flour cakes and coffee, and cigars. After which, the happy couple, attended by Rosalie for the occasion, and two of my wife's domestic women, Clara and Hebe (whom she desired my sister to consider in future as her own servants), were rowed over to their residence by Master Diego in his barge; which he requested to be permitted to have the honour of doing, rather than allow it to be done by the white sailors of the yacht.

In the course of the week, visits of congratulation were made. And my dear wife sent a supply of goats, and poultry of every kind, to the *château* to stock the place. I now thought this a fit time, though out of the ordinary course of doing such things, to tell Drake what I intended to give my sister, now his wife. And I gave him a memorandum, whereby I engaged myself to settle £2500 upon her and her children, with the usual conditional provisions. "And now, Drake," said I, "you and your wife will have to sign this instrument as well as myself, by and by, when it is drawn up agreeable to legal forms :

but you may perceive, I hereby give you nothing, excepting that I enable your wife to pay her mess."—"And a very good mess," he replied, "it will enable us to keep, with my pay, and the Penn; for all which you are entitled to her husband's best thanks at least."—"That is very well, on your part, my dear friend," I replied, "but not enough on mine:—you want two or three young negro men to keep your grounds in order, and I have none to spare you; and there are many other things you will need, notwithstanding all that has been done for you."

On an early day, when Drake and his wife came to take a family dinner with us, I called to my Eliza, as she and my sister, Mrs Drake, were talking together in the piazza. "Do you think, dearest," said I, "you can find five hundred dollars for Drake, to set him up in the world?"—"Yes," she replied, "a thousand, if you wish it."—"That's well," I exclaimed; "bring them forth, if you can carry so many, and he shall have the thousand,—a joint present from us to our gallant friend, on this happy occasion." Drake bowed, but said not a word; and walked into the piazza to his wife. When the bag of dollars was put upon the table, I called them in, and gave it to him, with the best wishes of my dear wife and myself, for his prosperity and happiness. My sister kissed me, and, in a broken voice, thanked me for what I had done for her. At this moment my brother James came in. "Just in the nick of time, brother!" said I; "fellow this bag, if you please, with some of your Spaniards' dollars: it is a wedding present from us to Drake."—"I cannot afford to give as much as you, brother," he replied: "if I give half that you do, I think I shall not do amiss."—"I do not desire you to do so much," I rejoined.—"Oh yes," returned he, "I shall have no objection to give half what you do."—"I do not desire that you should do that, dear James," rejoined our sister; "for Edward has settled £2500 on me for my portion; and this bag of dollars is a present to my husband." On hearing this, James felt himself in somewhat of a dilemma, endeavouring to extricate himself by saying he would pair the bag; but Drake declined accepting it, saying, he already had quite enough; and his pertinacity in the business exceeded that of my brother, so nothing more was done; but we endeavoured, notwithstanding, to pass the day in good feeling, and with some little hilarity.

The society of Mr and Mrs Rowley, and their two dear little girls, was so agreeable to us that we could not desire to part with them; and they being perfectly contented with their situation in the mansion, the building of a parsonage house was

yet deferred. In the interval of time I allowed to pass without making a daily record of occurrences, many minor arrangements had been made and carried into execution : among which is an extensive circular shed, covered with thin boards, extending forty feet every way, put up by the carpenter and seamen of the *Porghee*, around the base of the great silk cotton-tree ; radiating from the trunk of the tree at an elevation of fourteen feet, and terminating at its circumference, at an elevation of eight feet, resting on thirty-two wooden pillars, answering to the thirty-two points of the compass. And it was under this magnificent canopy, that the people were regaled on the celebration of my sister's marriage.

By the advice of Van Kempen, some houses were to be built between the barricado and the spring, so as to come close upon the woodland region. There were to be twenty in all, and to front each other, intended to form a street ; ten of which were to be placed with their backs to the west face of the promontory, and ten with their backs to the black rock ; leaving a space of sixty feet wide between their fronts : the street to extend four hundred feet. These houses were intended for shops and such like, and to be built on a small but convenient scale. And without demurring on the matter one way or other, the eight carpenters and two sawyers, and the bricklayer and his apprentice, were set to work under the superintendence of our Dutch friend, to accomplish, as speedily as might be, this somewhat formidable undertaking. Indeed, my brother had become tired of Van Kempen and his wife, so that they were glad to look forward to the occupancy of the first of the houses that might be finished.

Early in April, Drake sailed for Jamaica with the yacht, and took his wife with him. In less than three weeks he returned, having purchased two new negro men and two girls. He brought letters from the Governor, and others also from England. My friend Commodore Gunman had been recalled, and in his stead Commodore Brown was appointed to the command on the Jamaica station.

Our affair at Porto Bello had become a matter of public importance ; but the parties concerned in it, I mean the two naval officers and myself, narrowly escaped the most consummate disgrace. The arrival in England of the rescued captains, happened just at the time when the whole country was pouring in petitions to Parliament and to his Majesty, complaining of the outrages of the Spaniards. At this crisis, Sir Robert Walpole was doing everything in his power to smother the com-

plaining voice of the people, by throwing doubts on the truth of the many representations that were set forth by the petitioners. Therefore, when these rescued prisoners arrived, the minister was desirous of keeping them out of the way. But the secretary of state being obliged to lay before his Majesty the Governor of Jamaica's letter, which comprised within it a copy of mine to him, containing a report of all that had passed at Porto Bello, the king's attention became fixed on that point, in spite of Sir Robert's shuffling to divert it, and he ordered the five masters, and the supercargo, to be examined before a committee of the privy council. The result of this examination led to measures of strong remonstrance on the part of our Government to the Court of Spain; and to do the Duke of Newcastle justice, he was glad of it. But this only made the prime minister more angry with me, calling me a rash and obstinate blockhead: he also seized an opportunity to advise his Majesty to appoint Colonel Hervey to the government and command of my islands; and at the same time took occasion to request permission to instruct the Lords of the Admiralty to order Lieutenants Thomson and Drake to be tried by a court-martial. The King, however, indignantly refused to do either of those things; saying, "If I could do this, sir, *Philip* may very soon spit in the face of my ambassador, for his pastime! But no one shall hurt *Seaward*; no one shall hurt *Drake*; no one shall hurt *Thomson*! All men! Sir Robert Walpole, all brave men! and I speak for *them*."—This information came to me from Lord Harrington, who was present at the interview. And he further stated in his letter to me, that when Sir Robert retired, the King spoke to him (Lord Harrington) on the subject; on which the noble lord reminded his Majesty that I was the person whom her late Majesty had knighted. On hearing this, the King called Walpole "Dog!" and expressed great indignation at the persecution intended us.

Yet notwithstanding the royal favour, the Governor of Jamaica had received a reprimand, through the secretary of state, for sending the mission to Porto Bello; and I had the honour of a similar state compliment, for what I had done there. I was much vexed at this business; and I confess, if I had not received, with the official letter, a kind and friendly communication from the noble Harrington, the affair would have occasioned me serious distress of mind.

After the rainy season in May had come to a close, and the consequent cultivation finished, I resolved to go to Jamaica, to have a conference with the Governor; and hastened to make

all necessary arrangements, for carrying forward the works of industry and improvement, in my absence. Drake, in consequence, received orders to hold himself in readiness ; being desired to lay in a good sea-stock, and not to neglect taking on board some English fare for presents ; such as had been vainly carried with us to Porto Bello, as I intended to touch at St Domingo, as well as at Curacoa. For although I knew foreigners now began to despise us for submitting to the insolence of Spain, yet I had reason to believe that our flag was still sufficiently respected, both by French and Dutch, to secure at least a courteous reception to a person of any pretensions holding a commission from the King of England.

As I proposed visiting Curacoa before my return, Van Kempen requested to accompany me. My sister Drake also was to be of the party, as we had some business to do at Jamaica, in which she was the person specially concerned. With these and my dear wife, and her *fille de chambre*, leaving Fidele with Mrs Rowley, we embarked on the 5th of June, after having devoted the previous day to a more than ordinary devout observance of the Sabbath, the blessed sacrament having been received by us and all others of the colony, who were deemed capable of comprehending its import and comfort.

Nothing can be more agreeable than being at sea, in this climate, at this season of the year ; and the superior manner in which the vessel was now tacked, and otherwise managed, by the white seamen, added to the pleasantness of the voyage. Not being pressed for time, we kept the open sea, speaking several vessels for our pastime : so that we did not make Jamaica till the ninth day.

At noon the yacht anchored off Port Royal. The Shark was there, and Captain Townshend immediately paid me a visit. We soon talked over all the Porto Bello business. He censured his uncle freely, saying—"a general disgust was felt on the subject of the reprimand sent out from England." He was highly delighted, however, when I told him what the King had said, although I would not tell him how it came to my knowledge. "Let me repeat this to Lieutenant Thomson, when he comes into port?" cried he, "it will be worth a galleon to the poor fellow, for he fears his promotion is stopped."—"Do it," said I, "and welcome."

On Wednesday we anchored off Greenwich, and paid our respects to the new commodore, proceeding afterwards to Kingston. Here an attorney was quickly set about preparing the deeds for my sister's settlement. Then leaving Drake to take care of

his man-of-war, I, and my dear wife, with his wife, and our handmaid Rosalie, paid a visit to Spanish Town, where we were most kindly received by the Governor and his lady.

During the few days I remained, Mr Trelawney and myself discussed pretty freely the conduct of the minister, on the late business at Porto Bello ; also his general pusillanimous conduct with respect to the Spaniards. His Excellency was well pleased to hear the King's sentiments respecting myself, and the naval lieutenants who were implicated in the late affair ; to which he gave implicit credence, although I could not disclose my authority. He said, laughing,—“That is just the King's way.” When I repeated, “Nobody shall hurt Seaward ; nobody shall hurt Drake ; nobody shall hurt Thomson ;”—“That is so like his Majesty,” continued Mr Trelawney, “that no one could mistake it.” In the course of conversation, my dear wife and Mrs Trelawney frequently lamented over the memory of our excellent Queen : of whom the Governor's lady told many anecdotes that were highly to her honour. While I was here, I saw the two Indian chiefs from the Mosquito shore, who had returned with two hundred Indians, to assist in putting down the Maroons. I thanked them for the present of the deer and turkeys, and made the more substantial acknowledgment of presenting each of them with some money. Before I took leave of the Governor, I requested him to procure three artillery-men as gunners to the fort at Seaward Islands ; and a drum and a fife also, that is, a drummer and a fifer for the train-band ; all of which he kindly promised to do, on the return of the yacht, whenever that might be. And having received letters from him to the Commandant at Cape Francois in St Domingo, and to the Governor of Curacoa, we took our leave, much pleased by his attention and great kindness.

On our return to Kingston, the deeds of settlement were executed : making Mr Perry, and my brother, trustees for Mrs Drake. I now wrote a letter to the former, informing him of the circumstance, desiring him to lay out £2500 in Government four per cent. annuities, in his name, and the name of Mr Seaward, for her benefit ; and having written the letter, I showed it to Drake, and with his consent the deeds and the letter were forwarded to Mr Perry.

We sailed again on the 20th, and beat to windward for several days, making Cape Tiberoon in St Domingo on Sunday the 25th ; and on Friday we had the pleasure of coming to an anchor at Cape Francois, having seen the most beautiful scenery that can be imagined, as we stood along shore. The fortifica-

tions were imposing; and the town, which stands on the star-board hand, looked well. There were many vessels at anchor off the town, besides three line-of-battle ships, and several smaller ships of war, at anchor beyond it.

I sent Drake on shore with my letters, from which mission he soon returned, accompanied by an officer of rank, and a polite invitation from the Commandant. I made my visit without the ladies, attended only by Drake; and as I went in uniform, we were received with an officer's guard, a drum, and presented arms. I confess I was highly gratified with this reception from the French, especially after the insulting treatment I had received from the Spaniards.

On the following morning, the Commandant returned my visit; and as we had no guard to receive him, he was saluted with thirteen guns from the yacht, which, after a while, was returned by a fort on our quarter. He invited us all to dine; but Lady Seaward intimated she could not accept the invitation without previously receiving a visit from the Comtesse d'Anvers, the Commandant's lady. It was therefore arranged that we should go on shore to the hotel to dress, and that the Comtesse would make the visit before the dinner hour, and then send her carriage for the ladies.

This visit of ceremony was made. But there is not much ceremony with a Frenchwoman even of quality. The Comtesse talked of everything, and to everybody; was charmed with Rosalie; desired she might be allowed to attend her mistress; chatted to the girl as if she were her equal, joked with her, and said things that none but a Frenchwoman would say, and none but a Frenchwoman could like to hear.

However, we had a most kind and unrestrained reception at Government-house, and sat down to dinner with a numerous and elegant company. The removes were rapid, the conversation more so. I looked round me with astonishment: the Frenchmen contrived to eat and talk incessantly, without losing a word or a mouthful. There was a bottle of wine, and a decanter of water, placed between every two persons, with tumblers to each, but no wine glasses, of which they all drank freely. Those near me frequently saying, "Sir Edward!—*Un coup du vin! il faut boire!*" then putting a dash of wine into their own tumblers—"A votre santé!" and in this way I was compelled to empty nearly the bottle that was placed at my right hand, in drinking with my challengers. I trembled for the consequence, although the wine was weak; looking forward to a hard set-to after the departure of the ladies. The whole party, however, sat nearly

three hours, with the cloth on the table; and to my surprise, when the bottles, and tumblers, and other things were removed, a cup of coffee, without cream, was handed round to each person; after which, small glasses with liqueurs were presented; and with this conclusion, ladies and gentlemen rose together, retiring into a large saloon, where cards and music were provided for the entertainment of the evening.

It gratified me exceedingly to witness the attention my dear wife received from everyone. The politeness of the Frenchmen in their behaviour to her, carried with it a respect such as I had never seen before. But the ladies exhibited a different sort of manner; they examined every article of her dress, and descanted on it freely. She bore this rudeness with great good nature; and it was pleasing to me to hear her converse with them in French, without difficulty or embarrassment. La Comtesse admired "mi-lady's" diamond necklace; to which, on this occasion, she had suspended the royal cross. "*C'est superb ce collier-ci!*" exclaimed the Comtesse.—"*Vous êtes une bonne Catholique, miladi; n'est-ce pas?*" continued she, smiling, the next moment pushing her face into my wife's bosom, to kiss the diamond crucifix. My dear Eliza made her no reply. The appeal involved two subjects of deep interest to that bosom on which the bauble rested;—her much-loved lord,—her dear departed Queen: subjects not to be named before the gay and thoughtless. If she had made any reply, it would have been a sigh or a tear.

I met Commodore De Roquefeuille at the Commandant's dinner; from whom I afterwards received a visit at the hotel, when he invited the whole party to visit his ship *L'Achille*. On our going on board, I was received with a guard and a salute of thirteen guns. My Eliza took great delight in witnessing these honours paid to her husband; not having yet forgot the mortifying scorn with which he had been treated by the Spaniard at Porto Bello. I must confess, however, that I was not favourably impressed either with the discipline, or the cleanliness, observed on board the French ship. The men were standing or lying about, hail fellow well met, among the officers; and the decks neither clean nor clear.

After having made these our visits of ceremony, we remained a few days longer at Cape Francois; living agreeably at the hotel, where we had the comfort to find good baths, and were rather surprised to learn that they were in general use throughout the island of St Domingo: a luxury not known at Jamaica unless at the Decoy, and perhaps a few other places belong-

ing to persons of delicacy and taste. Cape Francois, like Kingston, is built regularly ; the streets being in straight lines, intersecting each other at right angles. But the superiority of the French shops induced us to visit them frequently, and purchase some trifles, such as hair-powder, scented soaps, and other perfumery, a few fans, and a variety of the like toys and nick-nacks. There we should have shut up our purses, had not Rosalie found out some elegant point and blonde lace, on which the ladies expended 100 dollars.

When on the eve of departure, Monsieur le Comte sent me six cases of superb Bordeaux wine ; and, in return, I begged his acceptance of as many hams, and two double Gloucester cheeses, for which he thanked me by note, saying they were highly acceptable.

On Wednesday the 5th of July, we put again to sea, beating to the eastward along the northern shore of St Domingo. In four days we doubled Point Caronge, and in a week more got fairly into the Mona Passage, the same strait by which my dear wife and myself had entered the Caribbean Sea, when on our first voyage from England. As we here passed Cape del Engans, a Spanish man-of-war brig was seen in shore of us. He hoisted his colours, and made sail towards us ; but as we had no inclination to hold any intercourse with him, the yacht stood on her course ; and having the wind a-beam, and a fine breeze, the Spaniard dropped astern quickly, and gave up the chase. We steered hence direct for Curacoa, distant about five hundred miles nearly south of us, and without accident or interruption made that island on the 19th of the month. As our vessel rounded Fort Amsterdam, to pass into the harbour, we could almost shake hands with the muzzles of the guns ; while on the other hand, I observed a chain lying on a rock opposite, ready to stretch across, for the purpose of securing the entrance against any hostile attempt to enter the port : although so narrow is the passage, yet the harbour is fine and capacious within.

Poor Van Kempen jumped as high as a Dutchman could jump, for joy, as we passed the Fort. The instant the anchor was dropped, a boat went on shore, to say who we were. Salutes were then fired, and arrangements made for my visit to the Governor. This piece of ceremony was also soon performed. His Excellency Mynheer Van Spengler, not having quite recovered from a fit of the gout, received me in his big chair. I made my visit short : and he sent an officer of rank to return it, who brought a message, inviting us all to dine at Government-house the next day.

On the morning of that day, taking Van Kempen with me, I waited on his Excellency by his own request. I then told him as much of the Porto Bello story, as a conservator of English honour might be supposed to do ; to which part Van Kempen bore ample testimony. Mynheer Van Spengler listened with sparkling eyes to the account of the rescue of the prisoners, getting fairly up upon his legs ; then turning to Van Kempen, struck him on the shoulders with a familiarity that rather surprised me, at the same time saying something to him in Dutch : on which Van Kempen fell on his knees, kissing both hands of the Governor. "I have got 4000 dollars for this fellow," said his Excellency to me, "from the Spaniards, on account of his vessel they captured. When we heard of this capture," continued he, "and also of two others, our frigate went out, and, by way of reprisal, brought in a Spanish vessel, with the Governor of Santa Martha on board, returning to Europe. They remonstrated, and desired to be released ; but I told his Excellency Paternos, that when they released our vessels, or paid for them, they should also be released ; but not till then. And as I chose to make a sure bargain, and get something, if I did not get the whole value of our captured vessels, I ordered the amount of manifest to be furnished by the Custom-house, and the probable value of the hulls estimated : for which amount his Excellency Don Gonsalvo de Moncado Paternos paid down the money, and he was then allowed to depart. This is our way ; and the attack you ordered on the tower near Porto Bello is your way," continued the Governor of Curacoa, laughing ; "and such is the only way to bring those saucy dogs to their senses."

Before I took my leave this morning of Mynheer Van Spengler, he told me he had no wife, but that the Commandant's lady would be here to receive Lady Seaward and her sister at dinner ; and that some of the ladies of the place were invited to meet them. Van Kempen soon left us, after having received the happy and unexpected tidings of his good fortune. He went to regale himself with a pipe, and to ruminate on his future plans of turning the dollar.

At two o'clock Drake and his wife, with Lady Seaward and myself, went to Government-house. I was received by an officer's guard : and there was besides a considerable display of ceremonious pomp. The Commandant's lady, attended by several others, greeted my wife on the steps, and we all walked into the first saloon together ; where, to my surprise, I saw several servants richly dressed, some of whom were negroes, with pipes and cigars in their hands, and each with a lighted cigar or

pipe in his mouth. As the guests passed, they were offered these odoriferous tubes by the servants : we, of course, declined accepting any ; but the Commandant's lady, and another, and several officers, who came shortly afterwards, each took either a pipe or a cigar ; not appearing very nice whether it had come from the servant's mouth or not : and when we arrived in the second saloon, the greater part of the company collected there were also smoking. However, these favourite fumes became suspended for a few minutes, immediately on our arrival, to give time for introducing the company to us ; after which they recommenced with fresh vigour. In about half-an-hour, servants came round with silver ewers and basins ; the smoking then ended, and water was poured over the hands of every one that chose, and a clean napkin presented to dry with. Old Van Spengler hobbled off with Lady Seaward, as well as he could ; I took the Commandant's lady ; he gave his arm to Mrs Drake ; and my worthy captain escorted a noble looking *wrow*, fat as a duchess, the wife of Mynheer Henkledorft, the fiscal of Amsterdam.

The dinner was more in the English than the French style : yet some of the dishes were French, and the cooking excellent. We did not rise after dinner, as at Cape François, but drank in the English fashion. There was an abundance of Hockenstein at dinner ; also Spanish and French wines, both then and afterwards. The ladies soon left us, when I began to fear that both Drake and myself would succumb under the rude pressure of Dutch hospitality ; the health of the King of England, their high Mightinesses the States General, and all the great men of both nations, being toasted in bumpers. There was great festivity, but little ceremony observed at this part of the entertainment ; so I was right glad when we were allowed to leave the table, and join the ladies. We found with them some additional company, and an execrable band of music in full clangour. The *contre-danse*, too, was in full operation. Most of our dinner party fell in ; but some fell out, and more than one fell down. Drake and myself sat very quietly looking on, endeavouring to sober ourselves by silence, quietness, and coffee.

On the following day we made a boat-excursion to the further end of the inner harbour, to the country-house of the Fiscal, where we dined ; and had an opportunity of seeing a little of their rural economy. Indeed, there was no lack of hospitality ; for during all the remainder of our stay at Curacoa, we were the guests of some one or other among the principal officers of the place, having only to complain of too much of it

At the great dinner given by the Governor, and at every other place we dined, it was regretted that they could not treat us with London porter after cheese ; which circumstance I did not forget on my departure, taking occasion at that time to distribute six hampers I had brought with me among our friends.

Van Kempen told me, the day after our visit to the Governor, that he had made up his mind to purchase a galliot, which was for sale, and carry on a trade from Seaward Islands, if I would promise him my protection, so as to compete fairly with my brother, and any other merchant of the place that might come there. I gave him that promise, and he in consequence bought the galliot, and laid in a cargo ; when, at my request, he purchased for me a few cases of old hock, a quantity of fine tea, some spices, and other things, which were sold here at a much lower price than at Jamaica or in England. I was obliged to wait nearly a fortnight for Van Kempen's vessel ; in the course of which time the yacht made an excursion with the Commandant's family, to the little island of Amba ; where I obtained a fine Cape of Good Hope ram, with a tail like a Cheshire cheese, and two ewes of the same breed. Van Kempen took with him two families ; one of which were Spaniards, cigar-makers ; the other Dutch boors of Curacoa, from the country, skilled in preparing cassava bread from the root of the *manioc* ; and also that valuable article, flour from the Indian arrow-root.

On Tuesday the 1st of August, we loosed from Curacoa with the galliot in company. And as that vessel sailed well before the wind, the passage was made in seven days, a distance little short of one thousand miles. On Wednesday the 9th we descried *Drake's Head*, the promontory of George's Island ; at the same instant saw broken water showing itself at no great distance from us : a sufficient demonstration of the danger of approach to these islands. In a couple of hours we saw the colours go up on the height ; and at three o'clock in the afternoon, came to an anchor off the Fort, after an absence of seven weeks.

All our friends were in readiness on the beach to receive us when we landed : foremost of the first was our dear little dog, who sprang from the side of Mrs Rowley, and lying down amongst our feet, alternately licked the one and the other, actually uttering cries of an inexpressible ecstasy. Diego and his wife Rota followed with their welcome, and all their heart was in it. I could not but feel that the tie which bound them so closely to us, should also bind us to them. " Kind Mistress

Rota," said my Eliza, as the old negress embraced her knees, "rise, and kiss my cheek, for I love you as a child would love its nurse." The good woman rose, but kissed the hand of her mistress, saying, "The blessing of our God upon my lady!" My dear wife now took my arm; and although the people were crowding round us, she whispered to me—"Dear Edward, did you hear what Rota said? All I have seen, and all I have heard, since we have been away, has not afforded me such heartfelt pleasure, as the kind and pious greeting of that good old creature."

My brother could not conceal his chagrin, when he was informed that the galliot belonged to Van Kempen; nor could anything I said to him on the subject put him in good humour. I was sorry to observe this, but having no sinister object in view, I resolved to act with kindness to my brother, yet with strict justice to every settler in the colony. After a while, however, he seemed to take some interest in the detail of our voyage, on which I had entered with our good friend the parson; the ladies, the while, having congregated in the piazza, where my sister Drake was holding forth on all the extraordinary things she had seen at St Domingo, and Curacoa.

In the morning I visited the rising village, where I found Van Kempen's wife in all the transports a Dutch woman may be capable of exhibiting, at the good fortune of her husband, yet busy in making preparations for the people he had brought home to her. There were only two rooms, and a small central hall in her house, so that it would be impossible, with any kind of comfort, to lodge these two families. But, perhaps, Van Kempen's wife did not care about comfort, if she could but manage the thing in any way. However, I saw the difficulty, and told her the new comers should have the adjoining house, if her husband chose to take it; with which information the lady was much pleased, and expressed her thanks in the best English she could muster on the occasion.

On my return to breakfast, Diego requested to know what he was to do with the broad-tailed sheep, which, for the present, he had turned into the woodland region with the deer. I told him, I thought he could not dispose of them better; therefore to allow them to remain.

After breakfast, I went into consultation with my dear wife, on the state of the colony. I saw, with deep regret, the elements of strife introduced; and I stated to her my misgivings on the subject. After some conversation, she said,—“Straight forward, dear Edward; follow the dictates of your own mind,

which are just and upright. Call the gentlemen together to-morrow ; explain your views, and avow your sentiments, and make your pleasure known to them : you are not bound to consider the humour, nor the particular interest of any one, not even your own brother, in opposition to your public duty. Take the King's motto, '*Dieu et mon droit*,' and you cannot do wrong." Thus spake my Minerva ; and I resolved to follow her advice.

On the following day, I summoned my brother James, Mr Van Kempen, the parson, the doctor, and Captain Drake. I said all that I thought was requisite to convince my brother, as well as every other person present, that justice and impartiality, and the good of the whole population of the colony, and the duty I owed to the King and to myself, were the principles on which I desired to found all my proceedings. I then stated, that the time was now come to make some arrangements and regulations, which hitherto had not been necessary. I signified, in consequence, my intention of putting a duty of *one per cent. ad valorem* on all goods sold, bartered, or landed in the islands : out of which a colonial fund should be made, for the purpose of paying the clergyman, the doctor, the soldiers, and the artillery-men shortly expected, and other public expenses. But on exports, there would be no duty. I then informed my brother James, he must build a storehouse for himself ; and I gave permission to Van Kempen to do the same ; adding, that until they should complete their buildings, I would allow both of them to warehouse their goods in the Government storehouse.

Before we separated, I was glad to see my brother take Van Kempen aside ; soon after which they asked me if I would permit them each to build storehouses within the palisadoes of the avenue to the Cave storehouse. I did not hesitate in acquiescing with the request ; but with this reserve—"I must have a ground rent from each of you, of fifteen dollars a year." To this proposal they agreed.

I now requested Drake to send us some men, to assist in clearing one end of the great store-room, for Van Kempen's cargo. And thus ended our meeting ; during which my brother and Van Kempen had become friends, because the measures I had taken seemed to bear hard on each of them, and on them only. In consequence of which, I suppose, my brother intuitively directed his attention to Van Kempen, as the only person present likely to sympathise with him, in being made to contribute so largely and unexpectedly to the expenses of the island establishment.

On muster-day, the Saturday following, after a grand display of firing and field exercise, I held a general meeting of the people, to whom I repeated some of the fundamental laws of the settlement. And I then expressed my wish, that all tradesmen should live in the village; and purchase provisions with their earnings, from those who have no trade beyond the produce of the earth. In conclusion, I said, that it gave me great pleasure to observe the progress many of the children and others had made in the manufactory of plait and hats; and I ventured to hope, that in a short time we should have abundance of money circulating among us, and every comfort we could desire.

On Sunday the 13th there was a full meeting of the colony at prayers, under the spacious canopy erected beneath the towering shade of the venerable and gigantic silk-cotton tree. It was highly satisfactory to witness the devotion of all present, and the great good order and cleanliness of old and young, Protestants and Catholics, Spaniards, Germans, Dutch, English, whites, blacks, and mulattoes—a motley group; soldiers and sailors, artificers and husbandmen; yet one flock, under one shepherd; brought, and kept together, by the unity of that spirit in which alone we may hope to find a bond of peace.

Early in the ensuing week I sent for Doctor Gordon, who had long established his character in my mind for scrupulous integrity. I told him it was my wish he should take upon himself the office of fiscal to the colony, the duties of which I explained to him in a few words. After the consideration of a day or two on his part, and some more explanation on mine, he agreed to accept the commission, with a salary of 200 dollars a year; which, added to his medical stipend, made up a comfortable income.

Towards the end of the month, the fruits of the earth were got in; Drake sailed for Jamaica; my brother's schooner returned from Virginia, with lumber, and flour, and some other merchandise; Captain Taylor arrived in the *Mary*, from Bristol; two Spanish schooners, from the Main; and Van Kempen's galliot sailed, in company with the *Mary*, to the Bay of Honduras. The carpenters, and sawyers, and masons, were kept constantly at work; the storehouses were in progress; and something was continually doing to the houses of the village. Good Mr Rowley gave strict attendance at the school; and the business of making plait and hats went on industriously. The German women were not idle; they produced a good deal of yarn, and no inconsiderable number of stockings; and the weaver's loom was kept going.

In September, Van Kempen's boors turned out some excellent Indian arrow-root flour, and they made cakes, twice a week, from the *manioc*, which were sold at the village. Van Kempen bought plait, hats, stockings, or anything else that was offered for sale; and he sold whatever could be wanted, from a needle to an anchor, from a skein of thread to a bale of cloth, and groceries of all kinds. There was abundance of small money in circulation; and thus the commercial wheel had been set going, and it promised speedily to bring grist to the mill.

On Drake's return from Jamaica, he brought with him two bags of cotton seeds, by Van Kempen's suggestion; which, subsequently, were planted throughout the sheep-walk on Edward's Island; the soil and situation being well adapted to the growth of cotton; and, in consequence, the sheep were removed to East Field, a fine pasturage opposite the Turtle Islands. The Governor sent me, by this opportunity, three artillery-men, all married men, two of whom had families, the other none; also two mulattoes, young free men, tolerably well trained to the fife and drum. I was glad of this accession to our military corps; for by his letters, as well as others I now received from England, I saw many reasons to expect that we must soon come to blows with the Spaniards.

The artillery-men were located in the village; but the two mulatto young men were lodged with Diego, and appointed to attend on me at the mansion as servants, when not called out on military duty.

Towards the end of the year, Allwood the younger, Hart the mason, Herbert the tailor, Gerrard Onder the weaver, William Gortz the pork-butcher, Pablo Ximenes the straw man, Pedro Nomez the cigar maker, occupied houses respectively in the village, and my two sawyers, with their wives, occupied another. Van Kempen possessed two, and one had been allotted to the artillery-men. The elder Allwood retained his lot and house at Edward's Island; and as he seemed to have set his heart on it, I would not insist on his removing to the village, nor adopt any measures of rack-rent to force him to quit his original dwelling. The two New Englanders had left my brother's schooner, and now took up their permanent residence at Allwood Bay, where Purdy, also, was located; and Jack Martin, with his family, had been added to the number. So that Drake had for his neighbours his old companions, the original crew of the *Porghee*. Their old captain supplied these men with a boat; and at his request I rented to them the

turtle fishery of the islands, on condition that none were to be exported without licence ; and for everyone brought in, they were to pay one dollar to the fiscal, and supply Gortz the butcher at one penny per pound live weight ; whose price to the settlers was fixed at half a rial ; thirty-two of which pieces amount to one dollar. Gortz proved a very useful member of society, although I remember when I thought his trade could not be made practicable in the island. He bought live pigs, killed and sold the meat ; goats also ; and now and then I ordered Diego to sell a sheep to him. I bought all my meat from him, which was a great accommodation, as no sort of animal substance could be kept well in this climate beyond one day after being killed. Gortz was a capital fellow at making sausages, not only of pork but turtle, and being well seasoned, they were much esteemed : but Van Kempen was out of his reckoning in expecting to make them an article of export ; for with all the spices that could be given to them, they uniformly spoiled in a tropical climate within a fortnight after being made.

From the great quantity of work that had been done, the carpenters had received large sums of money. Old Allwood bought two young negro men at Kingston ; and the younger Allwood bought a woman ; and Xavier bought a young negro man. But these purchases were made under the recognised law of the colony, that after seven years' servitude, they were to have their freedom ; and all children born in bondage, to be made free, on attaining their one and twentieth year. My brother, also, had purchased six new negro men, and four girls ; and these new servants were brought from Jamaica, in the *Tom Cod* early in December.

In consequence of these accessions, I removed Xavier, with Hachinta his wife, and master George, the first-born of our islands, together with the apprentice Matthew, whom I had placed with Xavier, to the lot at Edward's Island, vacated by Hart the mason, now removed to the village. Xavier was my old friend, and I was happy in an opportunity of conferring on him a kindness : I gave him the house, and allotment of land, in perpetuity, for the consideration of one head of Indian corn yearly. My dear wife participated in the pleasure of settling our old friends so comfortably ; and seized on the occasion, to express her wish that something might be done for our most faithful servants and friends, Diego and Rota. But these excellent people were too useful, and even necessary to me, to be alienated from us ; we therefore agreed to give them a salary of one

hundred dollars a year, and a handsome suit of clothes annually.

When these intentions were made known, Master Diego and his Donna were much gratified; perhaps more by the mark of our regard, than by the reward that accompanied it. Yet nothing less than my old blue and gold uniform coat, remade into something of another form, would satisfy Master Diego; to which the old cocked hat, with a cockade, must be added. These were for days of state, and I rather expected he would desire a peruke also. My dear wife gave one of the negro girls to Mistress Rota, to keep her house in order; and it was now thought right to disencumber them of the two mulatto lads; who were, therefore, turned over to lodge with Derrick and his wife, then occupants of the house at the other corner of the poultry-yard.

The fiscal's receipts had been considerable, especially from the one per cent. duty *ad valorem*; and the impost on turtle, also, had contributed some hundred dollars. Seeing this, I determined to advance the pay of the soldiers: and accordingly, I gave Craig a halbert, with sergeant's pay; and made Andrews and M'Nabb corporals; the other, Finlayson, remained a private, and assistant drillman to the train-band, with an extra sixpence per diem. I found it necessary, also, to give each of the artillery-men sixpence a day besides the King's pay, to enable them to live; as their wives and children had not as yet been able to learn the plait and hat work sufficiently well to add anything considerable to their support.

Thus something like a system was established: and that solitude which my dear wife and myself trod alone five years ago, had become the busy haunt of men, producing all the necessaries of life abundantly. All living creatures had increased amazingly; and the products of the earth were more than the colony could consume. The fruit trees, which our own hands had planted, bore fruit in many places. Plantains and bananas had become plentiful; pine-apples were no longer a rarity; melons were thrown, from their superfluity, to the pigs; and Indian corn was little used, except in feeding the poultry. Manufactures on a small scale had been commenced; and a lucrative commerce had found its way into our harbour. All the people were getting money, which no longer was drawn from my private resources only. Our laws were few, but wholesome; and we desired to make our holy religion the rule of our conduct. In consequence, the population was healthy, orderly, industrious, and contented.

On Monday the 25th of December, all the people of the islands assembled by previous summons, to attend divine service under the sacred canopy of the great tree. After which they betook themselves to the isthmus ; nearly half a mile of which at this season of the year, is thrown into shade soon after mid-day by the promontory ; where a variety of amusements were set on foot,—our isthmean games ! Asses were made to run races, and Drake's sailors were the jockies. Some planks had been pierced in their centre, and placed on a pivot, with their ends connected by pieces of board at equal distances, so as to form a large horizontal wheel : the boys and girls, and some of the younger negroes, got on them, and were whirled round with more or less velocity, to their great delight. The drum and fife kept the dancers going ; and to regale the whole party, my dear wife had taken care to provide tea and coffee, and lemonade and cigars in abundance. We gave a grand dinner at the mansion, and a royal salute was fired from the Fort, in commemoration of the Nativity. The day was made a day of joy to ourselves, and to the people.

The following Sabbath brought the year to a close, when we returned thanks to Almighty God for all the blessings He had given us to enjoy.

CHAPTER XXV.

IN January the rains were heavy, but unattended by those horrible storms to which we had been accustomed ; yet every precaution had been prepared to secure the vessels, and the buildings, against their expected violence. Advantage was taken of the season, to put in the roots and seeds, and other articles of husbandry growth ; I myself undertook to graft and inoculate several of the fruit trees, with cuttings or buds from those approved plants I had received two or three years ago from Jamaica in tubs : and February saw us rest from our agricultural labours, throughout the island ; but in the course of which I had assisted Van Kempen with Diego's men, to plant the Indian arrow-root and cassava : and I desired Nomaz, on the present occasion, to make a large sowing of the sweet-scented Vanilla peas, against any tree excepting the fruit trees, so that the vines might run up ; he having obtained a bag of them from one of the Spanish traders, for the purpose of mixing with tobacco when put together for mellowing : with this improvement to our unrivalled tobacco, he bid fair to turn out the best cigars

in the world. The other settlers were able to manage their own business.

On the 14th of February, Drake sailed for Jamaica. And during this month, four Spaniards, one French, one Dutch, and two English vessels arrived in St George's Harbour; for so I now denominated it. Sale or barter was the object of these vessels, and both they and our merchants found the trade to their liking. But I was most gratified in seeing the ready vend Van Kempen had made for the straw hats, and yarn stockings, and the other little manufactured things, products of our island industry. My care was to preserve peace and order, and prevent the landing of spirits. Doctor Gordon, as fiscal, was faithful to his trust; and took special caution to collect his duties without vexation or embarrassment to the traders: the amount of which soon exceeded all expectation.

In this month we had an accession of four families from Charles Town, Carolina. They were English emigrants, who had sailed from Hull, with an intention of going to Georgia, but did not reach it; for having met the captain of my brother's vessel at Charles Town, where they had been obliged to put in, he persuaded them to accompany him to Seaward Islands, instead of persevering to go forward. I settled these people at Soldiers' Town, excepting one family sent to occupy a vacant house at Allwood's Bay.

Early in March, Drake returned from Jamaica, bringing letters with him that had arrived there from England. The accounts we received from Awbury, and Hartland, were of the most comforting nature; and not less so a letter from Perry & Co., enclosing a statement of my accounts. It appeared that I had now a balance in their books of £5476. On quitting England two years ago, I had left in their hands £4503; since that period, they had received for interest on my stock, £3708. Mr Goldsmith had remitted to them, in the two years, £800, being half the rents of Hartland; less, £50. Besides, I had credit for £160, being interest of the money left floating in their hands. I had drawn, since I quitted England, £3695, including the amount of the settlement made on Mrs Drake. Such was the state of my account: yet, I thank God it has neither been by meannesses, nor by exactions, that my circumstances were brought into so flourishing a condition.

In April a Spanish guarda costa chased a small French schooner upon our coasts, that had been carrying on a smuggling traffic in the Gulf of Darien, and drove her among the rocks of our outer reefs, to the southward. On its being

discovered by Craig at the flag-staff, he fired a gun, and hoisted the colours, supposing that the schooner was English. The Porghee got instantly under weigh, accompanied by the Avon. It, however, happened not to render assistance to the schooner, but to the Spaniard, for he, being the larger vessel, struck upon a shoal, over which the other had passed; and by the time the Avon got alongside of him, he was throwing his guns overboard, and preparing to cut away his masts: but the Avon took out one of his anchors, and they hove him off.

The Frenchman, the while, ran up close to the Porghee, and requested a pilot to take him into the harbour; but Drake very wisely advised him to stand out again to sea, and pursue his voyage, his enemy being no longer in a condition to follow him; and as most likely it would be necessary to bring in the Spaniard to refit, their meeting in the port might be attended with some unpleasant consequences. The Frenchman profited by the advice, and made the best of his way, having told what he was, and where he had been, not concealing that he now had twelve thousand dollars on board. But the prize escaped; and the guarda costa, leaking apace, was glad to come into our harbour to be repaired.

When it was reported to me that the Spanish vessel was approaching, I ordered the bugle to be sounded, and the train-band to be put under arms. I did this merely for the sake of appearance, wishing to impress the stranger with a respectful idea of our situation, though perhaps our wall of rocks and reefs was our best defence. On the vessel's coming to an anchor off the Fort, I perceived she was of a large class, being pierced for twenty guns; I therefore ordered the captain to be received with a guard; and I then thought it proper to dress myself and those about me in a manner suitable to the occasion. In a short time he was introduced by Drake. Master Diego, being attired in the old suit of blue and gold, stood behind my chair in waiting, ready to officiate as interpreter. After many compliments from the Spanish captain, and an assurance on my part that his ship should be speedily repaired, I desired him to be seated; and finding he spoke French, I dispensed with Diego: then, after some general conversation, and a further assurance of rendering him efficient service, I requested his company at dinner.

Diego, who was always at hand on these occasions, came in on being called. Before I had time to speak to him, the Spanish captain, who now was on his legs, addressed him thus:—"Senhor Diego! I have the happiness of being your name-

sake."—"Don Diego!!" replied my sable friend, bowing low and courteously, before he answered. "I am much honoured ; but your Excellency has many other names, no doubt, besides Diego."—"No, indeed," answered the caballero, "only Freza."—"I like you for that, good master," replied old Diego ; "I never knew very good people have very many names." I now ordered Senhor Diego to attend on Don Diego, and to inform me as to anything he might wish to be done. Drake and the Spaniard, with the Spaniard's namesake, now took their leave, and set immediately to work to arrange matters for repairing the bottom of the damaged ship.

When they were gone, I desired Sergeant Craig to signify to the people that they must all do military duty so long as the Spanish vessel remained : I told him also to keep a full sergeant's guard constantly at the plank-house : from whence a relief of sentinels, at the landing-place, at the Fort, and before the mansion, were to be supplied night and day ; and to plant the two field pieces before the palisadoes, with an artillery sentinel ; and to fire the gun at the flag-staff, every evening at sunset ; and to beat off with drum and fife night and morning at the Fort. Such was our display of military matters, and they were punctually attended to.

Two large tents or booths were erected on the isthmus, for the men belonging to the guarda costa ; and he was requested to plant his own sentinels in charge of them. A newly-finished house in the village, was appropriated to the captain and officers for their accommodation ; and not only these gentlemen, but the crew, were supplied daily with fresh provisions and vegetables in abundance. In a few days the ship was hove down at the black rock ; and putting on Derrick, and the carpenter of the Porghee, in addition to the Spanish carpenter belonging to the guarda costa, a new plank was soon put in and caulked ; and the ship again fitted, by the help of Drake's crew, within ten days, and made ready for sea, to the no small surprise of the Spaniard at such despatch of business.

Before his departure, he offered to pay for what had been done, and for the supplies he had received ; but I declined allowing him to do so for either. On going away, however, he made Drake a magnificent present—no less than a box of cigars, worth about five dollars ! which my noble-minded friend very properly turned over to his carpenter. On the 23rd, the Spaniard was escorted out to sea, clear of the reefs, by our boats ; of which I was heartily glad, having been subjected to great inconvenience by his visit. But on the departure of this

Don, we resumed our usual peaceful and industrious occupations.

Early in May, my dear wife and myself proposed making a regular visit to every place in the islands. On Monday the 7th, we commenced our "*Progress*," as it was called in the days of good Queen Bess. But instead of travelling with a large retinue of courtiers and retainers, my sweet vice-queen, and her maid of honour Rosalie, myself, and master Diego, with our faithful little dog, were intended to constitute the whole *cortège*. Early in the morning, just as the day had dawned, our two mules were brought to the door; and the two asses also, which had been trained to carry Mr Rowley's children. They were gorgeously caparisoned with a velvet back cushion, and a richly fringed bridle for the occasion. The lady and Rosalie were soon seated. I then mounted my mule, and Master Diego, in his best attire, bestrode the other; and thus in cavalcade, with Fidele running in advance, we set forth for the foot of the steep path that leads to the flag-staff on the promontory. We did not proceed direct for our destination, but turned off in the contrary direction, making a detour of the silk-cotton tree. If this were to be a journey devoted solely to feeling, we might have stopped here; there being food enough, without going further, to dilate the heart, and give birth to reflections at once the most delightful and absorbing; but we proceeded. On approaching the little spring where once Fidele and his mistress killed an iguana, he instinctively ran up to it. "It is there," said Diego, "where I first drank water here! and it was under that tree I took my first sleep! and they are as holy places to me, good master Sir Edward."—"And it was under that tree, Diego," rejoined my dear wife, "that your kind master, and myself, were sitting, when we first discovered you in the canoe; and it is an event I look back upon with a grateful pleasure."

We had now come to the north-east corner of the open ground, finding ourselves among the orange trees bearing fruit; and immediately after, among the shaddock trees in full blossom. "These are the groves, my dear Eliza," observed I, "which our own hands planted, when this was our paradise."—"And it is so yet," she replied; "are we not *both* still here?"—I well understood her allusion; and stooping from the back of the gigantic mule on which I rode, stretched forth my hand which she caught, and pressed affectionately. Then pushing forward, we trotted along the margin of the slope; having the high crags above us on our left, thickly wooded with palm trees, but skirted

below by the native Indian fig, and here and there a few orange and lime trees, we had planted some years ago. We rode in this direction for a quarter of a mile; the mansion, with its outhouses and fort, being upon our right. This brought us to the southern extremity of the open ground; whence we proceeded along a fine beach, for another quarter of a mile, with a thick skirting of wood on our left; having a bold but barren hill, shaped like the head of a bald-pated man, nearly three hundred feet in height, rising abruptly over it. This brought us to the spot where the winding path leading to the summit of the promontory commences; that path which my dear wife, and myself, and Fidele had discovered, and indeed had partly formed, five years ago, when in search of our shipwrecked companions. Here we dismounted, to give Diego an opportunity of tightening the saddle-girths, to fit them for the ascent. And while he was so occupied, my dear Eliza and myself visited the little bay beneath us; where we had landed in the punt on that occasion. Here we now sat down under the same tree, beneath which we then had placed our basket. The recollection of these events, ever dear to us, was now made doubly so, by being on the spot where they had taken place.

The girths being tightened, we all remounted our cavalry, if mules and asses may be so called; but they are the only sort of cattle that could achieve the rugged ascent. These sure-footed steeds never make a halt nor a stumble; the rider having no other care than to give the animal his head, and keep fast hold of the pommel of the saddle: and so we did; and thus we proceeded upwards at ease and in safety. It was pleasing to see the fruit trees on either side of us, as we ascended; the work of a few minutes of recreation, when my Eliza with her husband and her dog made her first ascent. We also marked the spot in our way, where Fidele had surprised the armadillo, now lost, and almost forgotten. After a steady climb of half an hour, the party arrived at the flag-staff, where I found Sergeant Craig before us, on duty for the morning look-out.

At this commanding position we halted, and looked round in ecstasy, over land and sea in silent admiration. But Rosalie could not long restrain her feelings on the occasion, whatever they might be. "*Voilà !*" dit elle, "*tout le monde au-dessous !*" Her exclamation reminded me of one of our Germans, who cried out, "*Gortz Ueberhalb !*" when the pork-butcher climbed up the rock, after one of his pigs. It must be confessed, however, that the association did an injustice to the sentiment of Rosalie: she alluded only to the expanse of earth and water,

but the German dealt out a sarcasm, by double entendre—*Gortz above all the world.*

Having rested our animals, and satisfied our wandering and admiring eyes, we proceeded along the crest of the promontory, towards the isthmus. Something less than a couple of miles brought us to the edge of the precipitous face of the rock that overshadows the sandy position below, during the winter solstice ; here we halted, looking with pleasure over the cocoa-nut grove, towards the cultivated grounds beyond the long extended neck of land, the fine grounds of Peccary Field, and those attached to the soldiers' habitations. The Doctor's house and grounds were concealed from our view by the high mass of rock that forms the eastern side of the Peccary Creek, and this gigantic object also prevented our seeing the school-room. We had a goodly prospect of German Town from the flag-staff ; but from this place it also was screened from sight by a finely wooded hill that lies to the west of Peccary Field, forming one side of the pass thence to German Town. Before we quitted this position, my dear wife and myself stretched our eyes along the reef, to the spot where, by the mercy of God, we had been delivered from the perils of shipwreck ; and then, with one spirit, we lifted up our hearts to Heaven, and blessed God audibly, saying at the same moment, "Thou art gracious, O Lord !"

On our return the cavalcade surprised a large herd of wild goats, the product of some stragglers from the tame goats below ; but these had breathed the mountain air long enough to own none but the genius of liberty for their master, and therefore scampered off to their craggy dwellings, on the instant they perceived us. We had now a grand view of Allwood's Bay opposite to us, and Rosalie thought she saw Captain Drake and his lady walking ; it might be so, for I certainly soon after discerned something like a blue and white pigeon perched on the rock below his house ; but as I had only a bird's eye view of them, I would not call in question the accuracy of our young hand-maid's piercing glance or quick conjecture ; and it is well I did not, for it turned out that she had been correct,—it was even they watching our return.

The forenoon was far advanced when we made our appearance at the mansion. Dear Mistress Rota had laid out a nice breakfast of fruit, and wine, and tea, which was in waiting for us ; with which we refreshed ourselves ; but being tired, we then laid down for a few hours to rest. During our repose,—for we did not sleep,—our attention was awakened by hearing

Rosalie talk to Mrs Rowley's little girls, sometimes in French, in which she had well instructed them, sometimes in English, describing to them all the wonderful events of the morning. The pass was impassable, the mountain was stupendous, the rocks were terrific, the *coup-d'œil* was sublime. Unfortunately there was neither *giant* nor *castle* to finish her romance. "*Mais assurément,*" dit elle, "*la montagne chauve soit la tête d'un géant avant le déluge.*" When I heard this I could not help exclaiming, "Bravo, Rosalie!" on which she and the little girls set up a joyous laugh, and ran off from that part of the hall, which, for the credit of her story, was too contiguous to our door.

On the following day, the asinine cavalry were sent over early in the morning, in the Avon, to Allwood's Bay; and we soon followed in Master Diego's barge, having on this occasion a St George's flag in the bow, presented to me by my friend Drake. My dear sister and her husband, attended by his old crew, and the other settlers there, received us with three cheers, which were as gallantly returned by Diego and his men before we landed. The first object that arrested our attention, was the fine growth and far extended double lines of the Barbadoes palm, planted by Diego about three years ago. It is a beautiful tree, the queen of all the palm trees, and not unfrequently attaining the height of one hundred feet. It is that palm, with a swell in its trunk, which is to be seen introduced, on account of its beauty and magnificence, into most views of Indian landscape.

Our row across the harbour had given us an appetite for breakfast; we therefore proceeded at once on foot to Drake's *château*.

As soon as breakfast was over, the same party set forward, mounted as on the preceding morning, Fidele being his own horse. We first made a detour of the bay, and were much pleased with the neatness of the people's grounds, and habitations, the abundance of fruit trees, and live stock. On finishing the circuit of the bay, Mrs Allwood presented us with a bowl of goat's milk; and took that opportunity of telling us, that, in spite of all her care, she could not prevent the Guinea fowl from running off in great numbers, and that, in consequence, she had no doubt we should see many of them in other parts of the island.

Having finished the circuit of the cultivated grounds, we directed our course to the northward; passing out from this settlement, round the foot of the conical hill, at the point where the beautiful little fountain pours forth; having on our right the

large black rock that projects here into the sea, forming, with the beach, a natural cove or snug boat harbour, directly under Spring Hill; and this was the rock on which we saw the two turtle doves, from the promontory on the preceding morning.

After riding through this narrow but romantic pass, we came suddenly out upon Long Bay, where the sheep had been placed for three years. A multitude of young cocoa-nut trees, planted in groups, had now grown up sufficiently high to give a pleasing appearance to a tract naturally dull in its aspect. As we rode along, Diego frequently stopped me, to observe the young cotton shrubs, some of which had attained a height of twelve to eighteen inches. "They grow fast now, rains soon come, sir," said he; "two year more, plenty cotton for all German women to make stockings." This remark of honest Diego gave an additional interest to the objects that presented themselves. A couple of miles brought us to the northern extremity of the bay, which terminates by a rocky *cul-de-sac*, enclosing some acres of very good soil, in which acacias were growing luxuriantly. But I was still more pleased to see in this place the orange also, and the lime, planted no doubt by Diego's patriarchs, when they were sent round the island in a canoe, to put in the seeds of fruit trees and peppers in every spot fit for their reception near the shores.

Hence we made our way between the southern point of the horse-shoe rock, and a sand-hill; proceeding onward to the west side of the island, with the intention of riding southward as far as the high hills behind Drake's *château*. But we were soon stopped in our progress, by trees and underwood, extending from the lower hills to the water's edge. Paroquets were here in abundance, and some of Mrs Allwood's gallenas, for anything I know to the contrary, making a hideous screaming; then to our terror, Diego thought he saw a herd of peccaries, on which he very sagaciously dismounted, and took up Fidele with him on the mule. We, in consequence of this obstacle, retraced our steps; and arrived at the chateau time enough to dress for dinner. Here we were met by our friends from Peccary Field, and our worthy guests from the mansion.

In the cool of the evening the whole party visited the settlers, and did not lose the opportunity of making some little presents to the wives and children of the English emigrant family; to whom my dear wife also promised an addition to their live stock, and some other things necessary to their comfort. Before we returned, Drake took us to a natural grotto in the side of the conical hill. By accident he had discovered it in his

rambles ; and thinking it a pleasant cool retreat, had made an agreeable walk through the trees to it, sloping gently upwards in a winding direction. It was indeed a delightful spot, with which we were all charmed ; but my poor sister was rather too much fatigued to enjoy this enchanting termination of the walk, her situation being peculiar, and rather advanced.

When reseated over our coffee and a cigar, Drake explained to me a plan he had projected, of making a corkscrew walk up to the summit of the conical hill : he said it could be done by an ascent of one foot in twenty, extending the spiral line to the length of a mile, or thereabouts, from the base to the summit ; which he truly imagined would educe a novel and beautiful effect from the surrounding scenery upon the eye, at every step of the ascent. We all returned by starlight to our respective homes ; but the cavalry had preceded us, at the going down of the sun.

The following day we rested at home, being somewhat fatigued by riding,—an exercise to which we were totally unaccustomed. Early this morning, after my dear wife, and Mrs Rowley and her children, returned from the bath, I accompanied them to the pen, to inspect the goats and poultry. She here took occasion to desire Abel to send a supply, not only to the newcomers at Allwood's Bay, but also to those located at Soldiers' Town, to which many other things were added, by the same kind command, when the stock was despatched. The women were milking the goats on our arrival at the pen, previous to their being led forth by Abel to browse. It was surprising to observe the quantity of fine milk that streamed from the udders of these little creatures ; a large bottle-shaped calabash of which was despatched by a canoe every morning to the further end of the isthmus for the children, and one was now ready filled to send away.

On Thursday morning, arrangements having been made for a general examination at the school-room, we arrived there at ten o'clock. Nearly every individual of the colony was before us : and the number of children under tuition now exceeded fifty ; besides some women. The heads of the classes read to us, and they all exhibited their writing, which did much credit to Mr Rowley, and to themselves generally. After this, specimens of their work in plait and hats were shown : on which occasion Van Kempen said,—“ The best proof that can be given of their success is, that they who some time ago could make a hat worth no more than one dollar, can now make a hat worth two dollars ; ” and to show his sincerity, he purchased some of

their manufactures on the spot, at the high prices he named. The whole business was over by two o'clock ; when the books and straw-work were removed, and the table spread with plantain tarts, cocoa-nut cakes, pine-apples, melons, and oranges for the refreshment and encouragement of our young scholars and straw-workers. Pablo Ximenes and his wife did not go without commendation ; and, as a reward for their good conduct, they were now settled permanently in a house at no considerable distance from the school-room. My brother gave us a magnificent dinner at Peccary Field on the occasion, to which all the principal people in the island had been invited, not excepting Van Kempen and his wife, whom I was happy to see there, and apparently on very good terms with their host : the duty on imports, and some other arrangements, had united them. Their interest having been made the same, their feelings soon became the same also.

By the additional strength of six negro men and four girls, that Mr Seaward imported in October last, he had been able to cultivate a large field of tobacco, besides doing justice to all the other crops. Two of the women I gave him, had married to the two negro sawyers, my bondsmen, which diminished his servants two in number ; but he now had nine men and seven women ; and as I saw he was putting them all to field labour, while we had but three negro women servants, independent of Mistress Rota and the girl my dear wife gave to her for an attendant, I therefore gave my brother a hint that he might return two out of the three remaining girls he had from us, which would make our numbers equal. Like a good and proper husband, he said in reply, that "he would consult Mrs Seaward about it." In a few days after, she sent two of her new negro girls to the mansion, in lieu of the others, "whom," she said, "she really could not spare !" My dear Eliza only laughed at this manoeuvre, saying, "Never mind: Rota will soon make them as useful as the others already are ; but I am sure my sister forgot that the girls she has retained will have their freedom three years sooner than those she has sent to us. I will remind her of it, if you please ; and we shall then see how she will act." In the sequel, my dear wife did remind her of it ; and it fell out as she had anticipated. Our former servants were returned to us, and, agreeable to request, the two new negro girls sent back to Peccary Field.

The night after the school examination, was passed at my brother's ; on the following morning we set forward, mounted and escorted as before, to make a visit to German Town. After

riding through the plantation, which at this season of the year was in great beauty, we soon entered the pass cut by Diego and his men between the hills. On emerging from the defile, we suddenly opened the fine district occupied by the Germans. They had profited by the goodness of the soil and the aspect: their crops were highly promising, and their grounds in the best possible order. Their houses, and everything within them appeared neat, and clean, and orderly: the women were all employed either in knitting or spinning. The widow of Schneider lamented that she was entirely indebted to the goodness of her neighbours for keeping her grounds in order; and gave me to understand that Herman Brandt, one of Van Kempen's sailors, would marry her, if he might leave the galliot, and live with her. I promised her my best services on the occasion; which, not many days after, I had an opportunity of rendering effectually; and Brandt took possession of Schneider's widow and allotment. Gortz's house and grounds were vacant, the stoccado of which was converted into a sort of piggery, his house being filled with wood and old casks. I therefore resolved to offer it to one of the emigrant families now at Soldiers' Town, there being three families in two houses. In a few days after my return, this arrangement was carried into effect by their drawing lots; and the prize fell to David Empson, a worthy man with a wife and three children, one of whom, a boy of twelve years of age, promised fairly soon to become a good agriculturist.

Before I quitted the German settlement, we paid a visit to the tomb of the unfortunate man who had fallen a victim to intemperance, and contemplated his fate, I hope, with that compassion which is ever due from one frail mortal to another. From this spot we attempted the ascent to the flag-staff on the northern height of George's Island; but were obliged to desist, for here to us the pass really was impassable: so that the fancy of Rosalie was left at full liberty to see "in its mind's eye" whatever it pleased as to the wonders of the unexplored mountain. On our return, Matthew Hinkleman's wife, the Flemish woman, had prepared a welcome collation for us, of roasted plantains, an omelet, and coffee; with which having refreshed ourselves, and made her a suitable compliment, we rode once more round the settlement, delighted to see the abundance of the goats and poultry, and the forward state of the fruit trees, besides a plantation of the cocoa or chocolate nut, that was expected to bear next year. By one o'clock we arrived at Pecary Field, and, being rather fatigued by our ride, reposed for

an hour before dinner; returning after it, in the barge with Diego, to our own home.

These excursions afforded my dear wife and myself much matter for reflection, and even more for discussion. But there was one reflection, and one sentiment, paramount to every other,—the pleasure we derived from seeing ourselves successful in making so many happy, and the desire of seizing every opportunity, which the late survey afforded us, of adding to the comfort of such as we perceived in any way requiring our assistance or good offices.

Saturday was a grand field day at great guns as well as small arms. And on Sunday, after divine service, Brandt was married, as were also two couple of negroes; and five children were then baptised.

Early in the ensuing week, my dear wife and myself visited the village, and were entertained by Van Kempen's vrow with great hospitality. She showed us the progress they were making in the manufacture of arrow-root: and accompanied us to the house of Gerard Onder, the weaver, Pedro Nomez, the cigar-maker, and others, with whose success and industry I was much gratified. The carpenters had made great progress; there were fifteen houses finished, and some others begun.—There was, notwithstanding, a regret mixed up with this display of colonial prosperity. The face of the place was changed. The beautiful stream of water, which we had discovered gushing freely from the rock, and where Fidele and our ducks used to drink and bathe delighted in its clear rill, was now covered in or directed to flow unseen; a vessel was unloading at the rock which before had stood in such romantic solitude; boats and canoes were at the landing-place behind it; people were going to and fro to the storehouses: the thicket was no more; its place was occupied by storehouses, field-pieces, and a kennel for our watch-dog: the wooden palace, once our pride, and our happy and silent retreat from labour, was now converted into a guard-room, before which the sentinel stood with firelock and fixed bayonet. We turned our back upon this scene, with something like a feeling of self-condemnation at what we had done.

On entering the woodland region, the unchanged face of the hill, and ample shade of the surrounding trees, refreshed our spirits; and as we lingered on the way, our four beautiful deer, with three pretty fawns, approached closely to us. With these we held communion quite to our taste; and during the hour in which we stood gazing on them, it brought back our minds

to that tone of delightful composure, which to us constituted the chief charm of life.

Before the middle of the month, all the harvest that this season of the year produced was well got in ; and soon after the rains fell in torrents for nine days. On the cessation of which the agriculturist again put in his roots and seeds, trusting them with a perfect faith to Him who gives the increase.

During the month of June we frequently made excursions of a morning after the bath, taking Mr Rowley's two dear little girls with us on the borricos, while my dear wife rode one of the mules, and myself the other. Our worthy parson, on those occasions, was content always to go in the canoe that took the milk to the school-house, and return to dinner by the same conveyance.

A great part of every day was necessarily dedicated to the business of the colony, both by my kind-hearted helpmate and myself to watch over the tempers, morals, and wants of the people individually, which required unremitting attention.—Still we found time to read and to write ; and my Eliza sometimes amused herself with enlarging the sketches she had made at different times of the places and objects which, on our first coming here, excited in us the greatest interest. We kept as much aloof as we could from the bustle incident to the arrival of my brother, or Van Kempen's vessel ; or that which was always greater, occasioned by the coming in of a foreigner. Retirement was our delight, and we courted it as much as lay in our power. Our home was a happy home ; Mr and Mrs Rowley were good and sensible ; Rosalie and the little girls were joyous and merry ; Fidele also contributed not a little to our pleasure by his attachment and attentions, and by associations, whenever he offered himself to our notice, that never failed to warm the heart with kind and otherwise delightful feelings. Thus our time passed agreeably, and I hope usefully, until an unexpected event called us forth to a very different scene.

CHAPTER XXVI.

A BRIG of war arrived in the last week of June, from England and Jamaica ; which, by the way, was nearly wrecked in her approach to the islands. By this vessel I received orders to proceed to Porto Bello, and deliver letters to the Spanish Governor, from Sir Robert Walpole himself ; and from the Spanish ambassador at London ; the tenor of which was—"That ami-

cable arrangements having been made between the two Courts, in January last, and a convention having been signed to carry the same into effect, Sir Edward Seaward, Governor and Commander of Seaward Islands, is commanded to proceed to Porto Bello and *offer any apology and reparation required*, for the attack that had been made on a certain tower or fort there, by two of his Britannic Majesty's vessels, in October, 1737, for the rescue of certain person then in the custody of his Excellency the Governor of Porto Bello, which had in consequence been effected." My *instructions*, however (to which translated copies of the letters to Don Francisco Martinez de Retez were annexed), went no farther than "to *offer a proper apology*," and any reasonable reparation, for the alleged aggression.

On reading these despatches, every honest and manly feeling within me rose up in rebellion against this base and sneaking policy. I could not but suspect that Sir Robert Walpole had seized on this occasion to mortify, if not to disgrace me. I knew he hated me, because the Queen had been my friend; and now the more so, because his Majesty had promised me his protection. After I had read these infamous papers, silently in the presence of Captain Knight, I retired into my wife's room much agitated. My dear Eliza was already there, having left the hall on the Captain's approach. I quickly communicated to her the business they commanded me to do. On hearing it, she was equally indignant with myself; saying,—“I am sure such proceedings are without the knowledge of the King; I would not insult him so much as to think otherwise. Observe,” continued she, “how this business is managed, to place you in the most unpleasant situation possible. The Spanish Governor is led to expect from you any apology and reparation he may desire: while you, by your instructions, are left to be the judge of how far you ought to go. Sir Robert Walpole must know that the Spaniard will demand what you cannot, either in fairness or in honour, concede; and that therefore one of two things must happen to you; either that you will fail again in your mission to Porto Bello, or that you will compromise the interests of your country, and the honour of your King; so that disgrace is the only wages you can receive for going on the service required at your hands. Let Captain Knight,” continued she, “do the business himself, if he please; but do not stain your name, my honoured husband, by such an embassy.”—“I feel precisely as you do, my own sweet angel!” I replied; “but I must not decide too hastily. The order is peremptory; and you may perceive it says—‘Proceed in your yacht to Porto Bello.’”

—"That must never be done!" exclaimed my faithful and clear sighted counsellor. "If the Spaniards get Drake into their hands, who knows but they may imprison him, if not hang him?" I was deeply impressed with this awful suggestion, and could only reply, that it was an infamous business altogether.

On returning to the hall, I requested Captain Knight to dine with me; and desired Drake who had accompanied him on shore, to be of the party; on which they took their leave, and left me to digest the bitter potion my friend Sir Robert Walpole had prescribed for me. After consulting with my dear wife for nearly two hours, turning the subject every way, and looking at it in all its bearings, at last we reluctantly concluded, that it was my duty to go to Porto Bello, and that therefore there was no alternative. But at the same time, I was so thoroughly satisfied of the truth of her suggestions respecting Drake, that I resolved to use a discretionary privilege in leaving the Porghee in the offing, and to proceed myself into the harbour with the sloop of war only, until I should be assured that no hostile intention existed in the mind of the Governor towards my friend and his crew.

Having made my mind up before the dinner hour arrived, as to the course to be taken, I was pretty well myself again; but my dear Eliza could not so readily subdue her feelings of indignation against the minister; so that when his name came on the tapis, she could not help breaking out with the following observation:—"If his Majesty has any fault, it is giving his confidence to a man who must be either a fool or a knave. But, indeed, all knaves are fools," continued she, "and such his whole conduct towards the Spaniards will prove him to be. The King, glad to get rid of him at any rate, will one day or other dismiss him, either with a fool's cap or a coronet." This explosion of feeling, at least the latter part of it, amused our guest a good deal; and being, perhaps, as little in the habit of disguising his sentiments as some other persons present, he laughed heartily. Mr Rowley said, he could not condemn Sir Robert Walpole's policy, as it always had for its object the preservation of peace: and if the Spaniards were faithless, that should not be laid to his charge. My dear wife had too much respect for Mr Rowley, to say anything in reply to his remark; but she told me afterwards, that if any other person had offered such an apology for the minister, she would not have let it pass so easily. "Yet, my dear Edward," added she, "perhaps there is no one less capable than myself of forming a true judgment respecting Sir Robert Walpole, for I have long disliked him;

and now, the only sentiment I can entertain towards him must be that of indignation."

On the following morning I saw Captain Knight, having deemed it proper to enter fully with him on the subject; I therefore made him acquainted with all the circumstances of the case; and concluded what I had to say, by signifying my intention to proceed in two or three days. He then told me, that on his arrival at Jamaica, he received orders to hold himself in readiness to proceed with his despatches to Seaward Islands, and then return; but on the arrival of a frigate from England, he was informed that there was also another service for him to perform. At length he received his despatches for Seaward Islands, and at the same time was charged with a letter to the Governor of Carthagena. "I understand," said he, "the official letter goes crying *peccavi*: but I believe the whole business of these apologies to be a *ruse*; for I have received a Mr Rentone on board, who came out from England in the frigate, by order of the Admiralty. He is instructed to make himself master of the localities of Carthagena and Porto Bello, and the adjacent coasts, with which already he is pretty well acquainted; and I am directed to give him all the facilities in my power. Surely," added he, "this looks something like an Irish apology—'Coffee and pistols for two.'"—"I am glad to hear this, Captain Knight," I replied; "for I now feel strengthened in the determination I had made, not to compromise the honour of my sovereign and my country, by any dirty concessions in the name of the King; which baseness, I perceive, all parties by this time are pretty well convinced, tends only to increase the insolence of Spain and her officers towards us."

It was then settled that I should accompany him first to Carthagena, that place being to windward, from whence we would go down together to Porto Bello. But I gave him to understand that I had resolved to leave the Porghee outside, until I could discover the real mind of the Spanish Governor. When these important matters were arranged, I sent for Drake, and ordered him to be in readiness by Monday.

On Saturday we had a grand field day; and on Sunday, the captain, and officers, and the greater part of the seamen belonging to the sloop of war, attended divine service.

I could not dissuade my Eliza from accompanying me on this hateful duty. The more I pointed out to her the possibility of something unpleasant occurring, the more she persisted in her desire to go with me. In vain I pleaded my sister, Mrs Drake's critical situation. She only replied to this that she

would leave Rosalie with her, and that, besides, my sister would always have other kind friends at hand ; but that her duty was to be always near to me. I could not but appreciate her affection, and therefore I yielded to her wish.

On Monday the 2nd of July our trunks were put on board, in which I did not neglect to place some bags of dollars, and a few doubloons, lest I might find occasion for them. We embarked soon after, and with the first of the sea breeze sailed out of the southern passage ; then, after a pleasant run of three days, we made Punta Galera, on the Spanish Main, falling in with the land to the eastward, whence we reconnoitred its coast to the west for a couple of days ; during which time, almost every day, there was a heavy fall of rain, with violent gusts of wind from the land. Notwithstanding the badness of the weather, the vessels rounded Point Galera, and stood into the bay ; Mr Rentone keeping a sharp look-out on the line of coast, for some days. When off Point Canoa we stood out again to sea ; and on the 12th stood in for Carthagena, and received a pilot. The vessels passed through the Bocca Chica (a narrow passage, with strong castles or batteries on either hand going in) ; then, after some awkward tacking, occasioned by the baffling winds and squally weather, the vessels in a couple of hours sailed with a flowing sheet into the inner harbour, passing through a channel much narrower than the Bocca Chica, and almost as strongly fortified ; having a magnificent castle on the right, with fifty pieces of cannon, and also a formidable battery on the left. In a few minutes after passing this strait, or rather a large shoal that lies beyond it, we came to an anchor, Fort San Lezars bearing north.

The weather being unsettled, detracted much from the pleasure we should have received from the many striking objects that now presented themselves. The buildings appeared superb, the fortifications grand and imposing, the harbour spacious, and the country beyond luxuriant. In the course of a few hours a salute was fired by the sloop of war, and returned by the Castle. Soon after this, Captain Knight went on shore with his letter.

On his return, he came on board the Porghee, and told me the reply he received from the Governor, which was, that he would transmit the letter to Old Spain : his Excellency adding, that, however painful for him, he was obliged to desire that the King of England's vessels (now that they had done the business on which they came) would quit the seas of his Most Catholic Majesty. "This was what the interpreter told me," continued

Captain Knight; "but I am sure he did not tell me all; for I heard the Governor repeat, more than once, '*Ah, bellaco!*'" and when the interpreter asked his Excellency what he said, he replied, '*No digo nada,*'—I say nothing. I suppose," added Captain Knight, "the old *Don* has twigg'd us, and he was muttering to himself, *bellaco*; which, I take it, means *war* in Spanish."—"I will tell you what it means when we get out to sea, my good friend," I replied; "but not till then."

Having made but a superficial reconnoitre of Carthagena, our two vessels were ordered to quit the port at daylight next morning. And accordingly, by break of day, several Spanish boats took the two vessels in tow, and we had the honour of being escorted by two of their men-of-war brigs, towed out in the same manner. As soon as we were clear of the channel, the boats returned, but the brigs stood out with us to sea. To get rid of these unwelcome companions, Captain Knight made all sail to the northward; and before night we ran them nearly out of sight. As the day closed, our vessels altered their course to south-west; and before day-light we stood in again for the Spanish Main, making the land in the evening. For ten days we reconnoitred the nearest shores of the Gulf of Darien; during which time we saw several traders,—most likely smugglers, for they always ran from us; but it was not our object to speak with them. Another week was employed in looking at the coast between the Gulf of Darien and Porto Bello; and having effected this, our vessels stood out at sea ten leagues from the land; stretching in again to make the Isle of Orange, to leeward of the port, so as to afford a full opportunity of observation to Mr Rentone. This was on Thursday the 2nd of August.

My dear wife and myself now went on board Captain Knight's ship, leaving our things behind in the Porghee, which immediately afterwards stood off to sea, while the sloop of war worked up to the entrance of the harbour alone. Knight now seized the opportunity to ask me what the Governor of Carthagena meant by the expression he had used? "He meant," I replied, "to call somebody *rascal*? but whether you, or Sir Robert Walpole, or his Majesty, I cannot tell."—"If I had known that, when my ear caught the expression," replied the honest seaman, his eye flashing with indignation, "I would have knocked him down, if I had been sure to hang for it." The trial of his mettle, poor fellow! was nearer at hand than he expected. On our arrival within the shot of Iron Fort, the Spaniards fired, and we hove to, our colours having been

hoisted all day. Soon after, a boat came on board to demand our business ; and the officer having heard it, answered, that his orders were to warn any English vessels of war, as well as others, off the coast, and he was sure the Governor would not allow us to go in. However, we might anchor where we were, until he should take in the letters sent from England ; after which we should know the pleasure of his Excellency.

I received no communication from the Governor until the next morning. Our situation in the night, from severe gusts of wind, attended by thunder and lightning, had been extremely unpleasant ; but it was paradise to the situation that awaited us. Boats were sent at ten o'clock to tow us in, the wind blowing directly out of the harbour. We were brought to anchor near the shore, close to the town on its western side, under Gloria Castle. Preliminary arrangements were now made for my reception at Government-house ; but the salute which Captain Knight offered was refused ; at least they would not promise to return it, which amounted to the same thing.

My audience was fixed for the afternoon, after the great *Dons* had dined, and smoked, and taken their *siesta*. So, accordingly, at half-past three o'clock, after receiving an affectionate and cheering word from my beloved Eliza, I accompanied Captain Knight in his pinnace on shore, where we were met by an officer, who attended us to the *Alcazar* or Government-house. We were ushered in here without the least respect ; no guard turned out—no person whatever in the ante-room to receive us, but negroes in livery. The officer who had accompanied us from the landing-place (it seems merely to show us the way) now walked into the audience chamber, desiring us to follow him. Here we saw the *great man*, and ten or a dozen other persons, in blue uniform with red lining, walking about. As soon as we made our appearance, three or four of them sat down. The situation in which we were placed thus became at once extremely disagreeable. I looked at Captain Knight, and he at me ; but not a word was spoken for a considerable time. At last, not under the influence of the best feelings, I addressed the Governor in plain English :—" Is your Excellency disposed to receive my mission in the spirit of friendship,—in the same spirit in which I am directed by the minister of the King of England to wait on you ? " To which I received the following reply, through an interpreter present :—" You are sent to me by the English Government as a culprit, to make apologies and restitutions for the insults and injuries committed by people under your orders two years ago.—What have you to say for

yourself?" On hearing this, Captain Knight stood forward, "with fire in his eye and defiance on his front." "Do you know, Governor," said he, "that you are speaking to Sir Edward Seaward, a person equal in rank to yourself, and holding most honourable commissions from his Majesty the King of England?" The interpreter was embarrassed; but did, I believe, explain faithfully. "Equal in rank to me!" was the Spaniard's reply; "I do not consider the King of England himself equal in rank to me!—what is he?—he is little better than a Dutchman!" At the moment the reply was made known by the interpreter, the honest and gallant sailor broke out,—“You d—d blackguard! do you dare thus to speak of my King in my presence?” The interpreter on hearing this ran out of the room: Knight followed him, and brought him back, saying,—“Tell him: d—n him, tell him what I said.” By this time the Governor and the three other *Hidalgos* were on their legs. The trembling interpreter repeated the exclamation of Captain Knight, in Spanish. The Governor, without hesitating, then called in some soldiers, that were conveniently placed in an adjoining hall, and ordered them to secure the English captain. “*Tenez! Tenez!*” said I, following up what I had to say, in French; “if you take this step, here ends the conference; and look *you*, Don Francisco Martinez de Retez, to the consequences; for you were the aggressor, by insulting the King our master.” The soldiers stood off. “Then, sir,” replied the Governor to me, “what is it you desire to offer as an apology and compensation for the insult and injury we sustained at your hands?”—“What is it you desire of me, sir?” I replied.—“You must ask my pardon for yourself,” returned he, in the most contemptuous tone; “and the pardon of our most august monarch, the King of all the Indies, on the part of the King of England; and pay down ten thousand dollars as the ransom of the people you dared to take away.” I hesitated for some time before I made a reply. “Surely, Sir Edward,” exclaimed my gallant companion, “you are never going to comply with this!” I made *him* no answer; but as soon as I could make my mind up to the subject, seeing the situation in which we were placed, I said,—“I will ask your pardon, *Don Francisco*, as far as respects myself, and I will pay you the ten thousand dollars; but so far from asking pardon of the King of Spain, on behalf of my august master, I tell you that unless you ask my pardon for the insult you have just offered to the King of England, by what you have said, I have only to say to you, that I will depart.” I spoke this in

French : he desired me to repeat it in English, which I did ; and immediately on the interpreter giving it in Spanish, he ordered both Captain Knight and myself to be arrested. There were a dozen soldiers at this time in the hall, besides the officers waiting on the Governor ; and although we repelled all manual insult, yet seeing that it would be worse than useless to offer further resistance, we allowed ourselves to be marched off out of his presence. We, however, could not believe that this savage was in earnest, to act so in contumacy of all established law between nations ; therefore expected that after having thus shown his power over us, he would send us away : but we were mistaken ; the guard lodged us in a horrible prison, in two separate cells, for they could not be called rooms, and a sentinel was placed at each door.

In a very few minutes after my incarceration, I felt all the horrors of my situation ; but they had reference only to the distress in which this transaction must involve my beloved wife, and the dreadful uncertainty of what might ensue to her. And about this time I heard the firing of cannon, which added much to my embarrassment and misery. After a while I wrote a note in pencil to the Governor ; I wrote another to my wife, and sent for the keeper of the prison. When he came, I gave them to him, with a promise of reward should he deliver them safely and quickly : but they never were delivered at all. Two of the most miserable and sleepless nights and days ensued, without my being able to obtain the slightest information of my life's angel. I could not eat ; I could not think ; I could not even pray ;—all my faculties were benumbed, or absorbed in the sense of my present wretchedness.

At a moment when I was first inspired to raise my heart to God, my beloved wife burst into my cell, followed by the keeper of the prison as in pursuit. Speechless, fainting, and out of breath, she threw herself into my arms. Almost at the same instant, the gaoler, who followed close at her heels, laid hold on her by the neck : instinctively, I fetched him a blow with my clenched hand, that stretched him on the floor ; from whence he arose, muttering, and departed. I closed the door after him as quickly as possible, and fastened it on the inside as well as I could. Our time was but short together : it was passed in tears, and embraces, and silence. The door, soon and suddenly, was forced open. The gaoler and a body of soldiers as suddenly rushed in upon us. The miscreant I had struck held a rapier in his hand, with which he instantly made a lunge at me, and wounded me in the side. The soldiers, at the same

instant, seized my dear wife, and bore her away, leaving me no consolation but the hope that she did not perhaps know I was wounded. My wound was a blessing to me; it attracted my attention in some degree, and thereby gave some relief to the agony of my mind, which otherwise would have been intolerable. No one came near me all day. I bled a good deal; but I soon felt satisfied that the sword had not passed into my chest, but only through the outer flesh of the ribs; and I therefore ventured to hope, as I was likely to survive this violence, that our God, in mercy, would in the end restore me to my beloved and faithful wife; and finish this awful dispensation with grace and blessedness:—"If not in this world," said I to myself, with a deep sigh, "certainly in the next."

I now fell asleep. After it was dark I was awakened by an officer, who had brought a surgeon with him. My wound was examined and dressed. I asked these visitors some questions in English, and in French, and tried the effect of a Spanish word or two that I happened to know; but I could get no reply. They ordered some lemonade, which was brought to me while they were present; and they then went away. The blood I had lost tended to cool the fever of my brain; I prayed to God for the preservation of my dear Eliza, and again went to sleep.

In the night I awoke to all the agonies of my situation; I fancied a thousand horrors as to the fate and situation of my best beloved on earth. A fever supervened; and I recollect no more, until I recognised her one day, sitting by my side on a couch, in an apartment I had never seen before. On the return of consciousness from a state of delirium, I looked up at her with a sensation of overpowering joy and amazement which, no doubt, gave to my look the air of distraction. "Do you not know me, my own Edward?" she said in a voice of anxious tenderness that went to my soul; at the same time stooping and kissing my forehead, as she was often wont to do in happier days. I could only press her hand, as a token of my returning sense, while the tears unconsciously rolled down my cheeks. From this moment my eyes, which had been either red or glassy, began to assume their natural moisture and expression; and soon I became sufficiently alive to the past, to enquire what had befallen her; and then to ask about our companions, and the sloop of war, and whether anything was known respecting Drake. To all of which she only replied,— "All is well, my honoured husband; we are in the hands of God our Father, who will not suffer His people to perish. When

you are a little stronger, I shall have great satisfaction in answering you to all these, but not now." She then kissed my cheek, and gave me a dose of medicine, which the Spanish doctor had prescribed for me.

In a few days I recovered strength enough to sit up, and soon after to go to the windows. I felt no little surprise in seeing thence the town and harbour of Porto Bello, at a distance below me on the one side, and nothing but trees and hills in every direction on the other. My dear wife informed me that we were in a deserted monastery, to which the Spaniards had sent me, on some other persons being committed to the prison; that she, on being torn from me by the soldiers, had been conveyed to a nunnery; and that, on my life being despaired of, the Lady Abbess had made intercession with the Governor, through his confessor, to permit her to go to me. "And I bless God, my dear Edward," continued she, "that the living principle of Christianity is to be found among those who desire to be devoted to Christ, even among Papists."

My recovery was slow; for the place in which we were had been abandoned by the Friars, its former occupants, on account of its unhealthiness. This solitude in the wilderness was almost always enveloped in a dense atmosphere until noon. Vegetation and reptile life seemed to claim the unmolested dominion of so sequestered a spot. No animals were to be seen; but the trees were most luxuriant, yet choked with every kind of underwood and weeds; while the serpents hissed, and the bullfrogs croaked horribly in every direction. Mosquitos, too, incessantly buzzed around us, while the centipedes, and the scorpions, and the ants, disputed with us the possession of every morsel of food or fruit that might be put away for a future repast. One old lay brother and one negro woman had, indeed, been left to look after the place; but infirmities and indolence made either of little use. However, the kind ladies of the nunnery supplied us liberally with everything I could desire; while my beloved wife watched over me with a tenderness that nothing on earth but the kind heart of woman can bestow. Yet the air was bad, and therefore everything else was unavailing. My beloved, too, began to have ague, and to droop; on seeing this, the little strength I had acquired gave way, and my heart sunk within me. Now humbled before God, I became calm and resigned, and seemed to feel no wish beyond that of being laid with her in the same grave, and meeting her in heaven.

When all appeared lost on earth, the good Lady Abbess,

with the Governor's confessor, Padre Guircino, came to us with a *letiga*, and some mules, by which we were conveyed to the house of a fisherman near the sea. They had bargained with this honest man for our lodging; who, together with his wife, received us in the kindest manner. My dear Eliza was carried on the *letiga*, or *lechiga*, a sort of bed, between two mules. She not only bore the journey well, but seemed to inhale new life as we approached the sea-shore. In a few weeks she was able to walk out a little; and my strength had considerably improved; but both of us still had ague; sometimes every third, sometimes every fourth day, in spite of *Jesuit's Bark*; with which we were most kindly supplied by the Spanish doctor, who continued to visit us occasionally. The fisherman's hut was situated about a quarter of a mile from the extreme end of Point Cocal, having a little bay on either side of it, as well to the northward, as to the southward. Some islands lay off the Point; and shoals and reefs appeared nearly all round, finishing only about half a mile to the southward, where there is a small tower. In one or other of these bays, our kind host went early every morning, to cast his nets for sprats, which swarmed on the coast, and it was our amusement often to accompany him.

At intervals, during this period, my dear wife made me acquainted with the circumstances, as far as she knew, of what had taken place after Captain Knight and myself were sent to prison. Immediately on our arrest, soldiers were sent off to take possession of the sloop of war, but were repulsed by the crew. On which Gloria Castle fired into her, and several of her men were killed or wounded. The brig instantly cut her cable without firing a shot, as she could not bring any of her guns to bear on the castle, without firing on the upper part of the town; and at this moment a boat came off, to tell the commanding officer, if he did fire on the town, the Governor would hang every Englishman in his power. My dear wife, thinking alone of me, jumped into this boat, and the brig made sail to get out of the harbour; which she might have effected; but foolishly heaving to, to return the fire of Iron Fort, was hit by the shot; then falling to leeward, got on the shoals to the southward, nearly opposite, where she struck her colours, and surrendered. However, before the ensign was hauled down, she contrived to send off a boat with Mr Rentone, in hope of falling in with the Porghee; and soon after, it is supposed, the brig filled and foundered. My dear Eliza had been escorted to the Government-house by the Spanish officer who

conveyed her on shore. But even her celestial influence produced little effect on the savages who inhabited there, the Governor's wife included ; so that all she could accomplish, was a permission to retire to a convent until the Governor might be pleased to release me. And it was on her way thither that she had been able, by the power of a doubloon, which she had in her pocket, to prevail on the persons who accompanied her, to go with her to the prison, and find out where I was lodged.

She had been told, moreover, that some English had, some time ago, landed in the night, about half a mile to the southward of Point Cocal, and there surprised a small tower, making the officer and guard prisoners ; that the party afterwards pushed on for the town of Porto Bello, round the Block-House Hill. But, being forewarned of their danger by approaching daylight, returned, without being able to accomplish their purpose. "This place, then," continued she, "was the scene of the exploit, and that tower we now see, the post that was surprised and taken." This she concluded to have been Drake. And it was in consequence of this, her informant said, that all the officers of the sloop of war were sent to share my prison. But I apprehend *Don Francisco Martínez de Retez* did not require any motive beyond his own barbarity, for this further act of severity to my countrymen.

Three months had passed away since our unfortunate visit to this place, when we had the additional misfortune to hear, what perhaps would have given me pleasure in any other situation, that hostilities had actually commenced between the two countries, England and Spain, and that a declaration of war was daily expected.

I now began to contemplate some scheme of making our escape ; and I suggested to my dear wife the expediency of raising money somehow or other, to enable us to do so : but she advised me to be still, and put my trust in the providence of God ; for at present we were placed in a peaceful and healthy obscurity by the kind interposition of that providence. "And perhaps," added she, "the least stir might throw us back amidst those horrible woods, or into that prison from which you have been so mercifully delivered." I readily yielded to this pious, and therefore wise counsel ; and having nothing better to do, we continued to amuse ourselves in accompanying the fisherman, and in assisting him to mend his nets.

On the morning of Wednesday, the 21st of November, the

weather being now settled and fine, my dearest Eliza and myself arose early, and went down with the fisherman to the beach. Before we had reached it, he pointed out some ships in the offing, not, however, making any remark as to what they might be : but went into the boat with his son, and took out his nets. My wife and myself sat down the while upon a large stone, regarding the ships with wistful eyes, yet scarcely daring to hope they were come for our deliverance. As the breeze freshened, the ships approached the opposite coast, the smaller vessels standing in ahead of the others ; and, O ! how it cheered my heart to recognise the Porghee, at that very moment among the foremost.

The Spanish fort soon began to fire. The smaller vessels came over near to the side where we were, when some of them anchored close to the edge of the reef, hoisting at the same time a chequered flag at the fore. The large ships kept on the other side, and soon closed one after another with Hierro Castle. The firing was awful. Our affrighted friend, the fisherman, quickly returned to the beach, asking me what all that could mean. Then calling aloud on *San Gieronimo* for succour and protection, he entreated us to leave the beach, and come up to his house as a place of greater safety. But my eyes were rivetted on the scene of action ; my heart beat high in witnessing the noble efforts of my countrymen. And while the fisherman invoked *his saint* my Eliza called upon *Him* who has said, "*Vengeance is mine,*" to punish the oppressors. We kept our position, looking steadily at the awful combat, till the firing ceased ; and the instant the smoke cleared away, we discerned the English colours flying on the walls of the Spanish castle. On seeing this, my Eliza and myself both raised our hands to Heaven, in token of the feeling that actuated us, but we spoke not a word. The firing was now heard by us in the direction of the town, where some of the ships were evidently engaged with the other forts. The firing continued nearly all day, during which, notwithstanding the success our eyes had witnessed, we were agitated to a degree not to be described—we trembled for the safety of our friend Drake, but our whole soul was moved for the result of the daring enterprise.

In the evening, Padre Guircino came to the fisherman's hut and told us the place was taken by the English ;—O, what blessed news for us !—and he begged of me to go with him immediately to his monastery ; and lady Seaward to go to the Convent of St Anna, where the lady Abbess impatiently awaited her arrival, as they expected nothing less than a general pil-

lage and misuseage. Almost without power of utterance,—though our eyes and our hands clasped in each other, told our happy feelings,—we accompanied him, and disposed ourselves according to his request: for we owed our lives to him, and to the charitable woman who now desired the protection of my wife's presence.

In the evening the Castle of Gloria opened its gates to the *British flag*, and the redoubtable *Don Francisco Martinez de Retez* surrendered himself and *Porto Bello* to the gallant *Vernon*! But there was neither pillage nor misuseage.

On the morning of the 22nd I had the heartfelt delight of seeing, from the windows of the monastery, the English colours flying on Gloria Castle and at Fort Jeronimo, and six fine two decked men of war, besides smaller vessels, all bearing the British flag, riding proudly in the harbour. Is not our country's glory every man's glory? How my heart swelled with honest pride, when I beheld this glorious sight!

Towards the afternoon I wrote a note to the Admiral, stating my case and situation to him as concisely as possible. To which I received an immediate answer, requesting my presence at the Government-house as soon as convenient. I only stopped to send a few lines to my dear wife, and then waited on the Admiral, dressed in my old tattered uniform, dirty and blood-stained, accompanied only by the officer who brought me the welcome reply. Captain Knight was there before me. He also had been ill: we were shocked when we looked upon each other. The Admiral came in at the moment of our meeting, and Commodore Brown was with him, who had seen me at Jamaica. Without preamble, the brave Vernon expressed his indignation at the treatment we had received; then instantly summoned the Spanish Governor to attend. This *hidalgo* shortly after entered a prisoner of war, into the very room where we had last seen him so haughty and vindictive, attended by some of the very men who were now with him sharers in his captivity.

A sort of ring was now formed, with the Spanish Governor in the centre, his interpreter standing by his side.—“I have no quarrel with Don Francisco Martinez de Retez,” said I, “on my own account; but I have, and ever shall have, a quarrel with him on account of the King, my master; whom he most grossly insulted, by disrespectful words, in the presence of Captain Knight and myself; and for the resenting of which, we have endured, as it was our duty so to do, the severest treatment at his hands.”—“What did he say?” exclaimed the Admiral.—“He first insulted Sir Edward Seaward, by the most

insolent and contemptuous behaviour," replied Captain Knight; "and when I remonstrated, telling him that he should recollect that Sir Edward Seaward was equal in rank to himself, holding honourable commissions under the King of England, he replied — 'I do not consider the King of England himself equal in rank to me; for he is little better than a Dutchman.'" Old Vernon, on hearing this, instantly turned round upon his Excellency Don Francisco Martinez de Retez, with a voice of thunder, — "You d—d poltroon! with all your long yarn of hard names, what shall I call you? Down on your marrow-bones, you scoundrel, and beg pardon of these gentlemen, and of the King our master, or I'll kick you from Hell to Hackney! Tell him that," said he to the interpreter. The interpreter was dumfounded: however, the looks and menaces of the Admiral left little to be interpreted. After some pause and explanation, this mighty Don asked pardon of Captain Knight and myself, but he would do no more. This would not satisfy the Admiral, who insisted on his eating the words he had spoken disrespectfully of his Majesty, at the same time taking a guinea from his pocket, he threw it on the floor, saying, — "There is the King's picture! down on your knees, you blackguard, and ask forgiveness;" laying hold of the Spaniard by the neck as he spoke, and bending him to the ground. The astounded Governor took up the guinea from the floor, then putting it down again, said, in a muffled voice, — "*Yo he ofendido.*" This was considered as sufficient; and the question, so far, set at rest. I now demanded my sword, which was valuable to me, not only on account of its gold hilt, but because it had been touched by the hand of her Majesty, the late Queen, who had curiously admired its workmanship. I immediately received an assurance that it should be returned; and it was, together with the side arms of Captain Knight.

On quitting the Government-house with my fellow-sufferer, we met Drake, crossing the Prado, who had been making enquiry for us everywhere. On seeing me he stood still; but as we approached near to him, he burst into tears. "Cheer up, my good fellow," cried Knight; "all's well! you see we are alive and kicking." Drake threw himself on my neck, saying — "I hope all is well! is Lady Seaward well?" — "All is well, my dear Drake," I replied: "you shall soon see her." We now bent our steps to the Convent of Santa Anna. On our way, among other questions, Captain Knight asked Drake if he knew anything of Rentone; for he was not here among the prisoners from the Marten. My friend told him he had picked him up

at sea, and that he was now here in the fleet. On our arrival at the convent, we were met in the vestibule by my happy wife, and the Lady Abbess. She brought us some sweetmeats, and cool drink made of red sorrel; by which, and this blessed meeting of long separated friends, we were much refreshed both in body and mind.

I took this opportunity of walking apart with Drake. He told me, that after he had picked up the Marten's boat with Mr Rentone, he made an unsuccessful attempt to assist us. But on seeing the destruction of the Marten, he made the best of his way to Jamaica, with the account of what had happened. "Yet," he added, "up to this hour, I do not know how or why it did happen!—however, I reported the business, as much as I knew and could conjecture of it, to the Commodore and Governor of Jamaica; and asked permission to be permitted to embark all the force of Seaward Islands in the vessels that belonged to the place, and make an attack on Porto Bello, to attempt your rescue. But I was told," continued he, "that the scheme was a mad one; and I received something like an assurance that there should be no occasion for it. I then received orders to visit Seaward Islands, but to return to Jamaica; which I did before the end of September. On my arrival there, I learnt that orders of reprisal had been issued against Spain; and I became desirous, of course, to get out to sea, for a chance of making prizes; but the Commodore would not allow me to stir. I confess I was much chagrined at this usage, while all the other vessels were sent out in every direction; nor could I surmise what was the cause of it. But on the 23rd of October, Admiral Vernon made his appearance at Port Royal; and I was then informed why I had been detained. It was to accompany the Admiral's squadron to Porto Bello, to assist, by my local knowledge, in the meditated enterprise. "This information," exclaimed my gallant friend, "was more acceptable to me than a thousand galleons; and I now rejoice, my dear Sir Edward, in seeing the noble prize before me—You and She, whom we all devotedly love."

"We must leave this hateful place, my dear friend," said I, "as soon as possible. Have you any money on board?"—"I have," he replied; "and the money and clothes belonging to you and Lady Seaward, which were embarked when you came here." I then desired him to send us some clothes, and a bag of dollars; and told him I would write to the Admiral, to give us permission to depart, without loss of time. Drake now left us: and as the ships were in too great confusion, in consequence

of the late action with the forts, to receive us, I was glad still to leave my dear wife with the Lady Abbess; and I took my friend Knight with me to the monastery of the Franciscans, where he, as well as myself, was well received by Padre Guircino and his associates.

In the afternoon some clothes arrived for myself and Lady Seaward, and a bag of 1000 dollars. I shared my clothes with Captain Knight; and after much entreaty, prevailed on him to accept 100 dollars, to meet his present emergencies. But he would only take this small sum as a loan, although I had wished him to accept 500 as a present,—in consideration of his having suffered the loss of all his things, his ship, and his health also, on my account: but he objected, saying,—“It was only in the way of his duty; and as he had more than six months’ pay now due to him, he should have money enough by-and-bye. But if I chose to lend him the 100 dollars, he would thank me.” He therefore had them on his own terms.

We now treated ourselves to a shave and a good wash, and put on some clean linen, and a suit each of handsome clothes. The good Friars sent into the town, at my request, and procured us some excellent Spanish shoes, and a couple of *sombreros*, or cocked hats, in their fashion. In the evening we went to the convent, taking with us two lay brothers of the Franciscans, one of whom carried my dear wife’s small trunk, and the other a bag containing 500 dollars. We were met, as before, in the vestibule, and there complimented by the Lady Abbess on our good looks and elegant apparel. The trunk was sent into the convent; and, after the lay brothers had retired, I whispered my dear Eliza,—“Here are 500 dollars, which place at the pleasure of that good lady: but tell her we wish the lay brother, and the negro woman at the deserted monastery, to have 50 each: and we desire that the fisherman and his wife may have 100 each. The other 200 are at the disposal of the Lady Abbess, to relieve the distressed.”—“I will give them to her now,” returned my dear wife. She then addressed the good lady in French, handing her the bag, which was graciously received, with many commendations for our generosity, and a promise of faithfully applying it. Our hostess gave us chocolate; and as we sat taking it, and conversing, I often saw the nuns peeping at us through the gratings, with an ardent curiosity.

On the following morning I sent for the doctor to the monastery, and presented him with 100 dollars, in the presence of Padre Guircino. The worthy *medico* had never seen so large a fee before; therefore his grateful acknowledgments were

proportioned. The good Father present, also added his best thanks for my noble conduct towards him, and to all my late benefactors. "But how can I return your kindnesses?" I said. "I am the servant of God," he replied; "you owe me nothing." This was true religion, worthy of imitation by many who despise all that are not so happy as to enjoy the light of our reformed church.

A little before noon, Captain Knight and myself made a short visit to the convent; from whence we went down into the town, to pay our respects to the Admiral. At first he did not know us; and, on recognising us, he affected not to do so. "Who the devil have we got here?" said he, turning to Captain Knight: "you are a Spanish hidalgo, I suppose!" Poor Knight looked embarrassed, and bowed; then pointing to me, said,—“Sir Edward Seaward has kindly given me a suit of his clothes.” The old gentleman laughed heartily; immediately afterwards saying, "Sir Edward, I beg your pardon: it was your long-toed shoes, and *three-cornered scrapers* that puzzled me." In turn, I made my respects, but in a different way; and concluded by requesting him to allow the Porghee to return with Lady Seaward and myself, to our place of residence as soon as possible, my wife's health being in a precarious state. He instantly complied with my wish; and seemed pleased to take the opportunity of speaking with warm approbation of Lieutenant Drake's conduct, in buoying the entrance to the harbour, under a heavy fire from the fort; regretting that, as so few Spanish vessels of war had been found here, there was no promotion for him, although he well deserved it. After this discourse, it was arranged that I might sail to-morrow; and I then took leave of the brave old Admiral, wishing him success in further humbling the haughty spirit of Spain.

In an hour after I had left him, Drake received his orders; and in the evening he came up to the monastery to tell me so. Captain Knight and myself carried the welcome intelligence to my dear wife; and I had then the pleasure to see our kind friends, the fisherman and his wife, in the vestibule, receiving the two hundred dollars from her own hand.

Early in the morning of the 26th, I took leave of the worthy Padre Guircino, and with some difficulty persuaded him to accept a small offering to distribute among the poor lay brothers of his order. Then calling for Lady Seaward, whom I found in waiting for me at the convent door, we bade an affectionate adieu to the benevolent Abbess, and hastened on board our dear little vessel. The sails were already loose, and the anchor

a-trip, and in an instant we were under weigh, standing out to sea with a fine breeze. I could not but remark the great number of men on board; on which Drake told me that his complement had been increased to thirty men, and I might observe that he had mounted two of our wall-pieces on his quarter.

As the high land above Point Porto Bello receded from our view, we descried a ship on our weather bow, steering in. Drake asked me if I thought he should take a look at her, or keep on our course. I answered,—“Certainly, take a look at her; she may prove a prize to you: but take care you are not brought to action by a superior force: recollect who we have with us.”—“I will take care of that,” he replied. Then taking me at my word, he wore and stood athwart her, having previously hoisted Spanish colours. In less than an hour he came within hail of her: she was a Spanish merchant ship, but mounted eight or ten guns. I confess I did not much like the appearance of this business; but as we stood across him, Drake ordered our proper ensign to be hoisted; then wearing short round, boarded him on the quarter in a moment, and carried him in five minutes, without firing a shot. He was from La Guira, with indigo, cocoa, Peruvian bark, and other merchandise, bound to Porto Bello, having a complement of twenty-four men. The prisoners were soon secured; a prize-master, with a sufficient number of hands, being then put on board, the two vessels stood on quietly to the northward. We rejoiced greatly at the success of our friend Drake, and in the gallant manner the capture had been accomplished.

On the evening of the 29th, the promontory of St George's Island was discovered by the man at the masthead. We ran in towards it, until the sun had set; when Drake thought it advisable, having the prize to take care of, besides his own vessel, to stand off until the morning. At the distance we were from the land, the sea breeze blew all night; and in the morning it carried us through the channel to within a league of the headlands, before it died away. About eight o'clock it reached us again, and we again made sail; the Porghee having hoisted my flag, the St George's jack, at the fore, but showing a blue ensign, in honour of the gallant Vice-Admiral we had lately quitted. The prize hung out her own colours, with a union jack over them, which now streamed gaily forth from the mizen peak. The colours were up on the promontory—and our hearts were up also.

Before the vessels came within a mile of the harbour's mouth, we saw boats and canoes, large and small, between the

headlands, sailing and rowing, and paddling out towards us. The breeze being fresh, the vessels shortened sail, for fear of running them down. In a very short time we passed through amongst them, while they lay by, gazing and cheering, as I waved my hat, and my dear wife her white handkerchief, from the quarter deck on which we stood.

The Porghee had scarcely anchored, when the deck was crowded by those we loved, and by those who loved us unfeignedly. They who could not embrace us, embraced one another, and wept, or looked silently on us, endeavouring to conceal their tears. We were much altered. The sickness and sorrow I had endured at Porto Bello had made a deep impression on my frame and features, and the people saw it. My dear Eliza, too, worn almost to a shadow, looking not like a thing of earth, but in semblance of a disembodied spirit, stood by my side. Her eyes sympathised with the people; and I, too, was unmanned by the scene. I am not ashamed to confess it.

CHAPTER XXVII.

ONCE more restored to our happy home, with feelings that might be envied by the monarch of a throne, we disembarked; landing hand in hand, amidst the caresses and greetings of our dear relations and not less dear friends and dependents. On reaching the mansion, kind Mr Rowley and the Doctor pressed us to retire to rest for a while, that we might be relieved from the further excitement of seeing any one, until we had recovered from our evident exhaustion. I felt the force of their advice, and immediately complied.

By dinner time we were sufficiently refreshed to meet our friends, and converse with them on the subject of our late sufferings, and our glorious deliverance. Drake, meanwhile, had merely given them a brief outline of what had happened to us. He had very little time to spare for talk, having to moor his prize, and unbend her sails; so that she might neither be driven from her anchors by the wind, nor be carried away by the Spanish crew in the Porghee's absence, if they dared to rise on the prize-master. I was, therefore, under the necessity of going somewhat into detail; but my dear Eliza took up the theme, and then every one present was moved even to tears.

After we had brought the subject to a close, I could not suppress my anxiety to know the posture of our affairs at home. But Dr Gordon thought, for the present, I ought to be satisfied

with knowing that all things had gone on tolerably well ; that there was not anything of so much importance to need attention as the re-establishment of my own health : and he was of opinion I should not engage in any business matters whatever, for some days at least. "I look worse than I am, Doctor," said I ; "we shall see what to-morrow may say."—"Then, Sir Edward," whispered Van Kempen, who had stood silently by my chair for an hour, "I shall be right glad to say a word to you to-morrow."—"Say it now, my good friend," I replied, "if it be a matter of any moment to you."—"It is of immediate moment," he replied, "to us all. We must not lose this chance, sir ; and if we would not lose the chance, we must not lose the time."—"What is it, Van Kempen ?"—"The Porto Bello market, sir. I saw the thing the instant Captain Drake told us the English had taken the place, and I directly spoke to your brother about it : but he left it to me to break the matter to you. I hope, therefore, you will consent to our loading his vessel and mine with all the merchandise in our stores, and proceed forthwith ; for all the world will be there in a few weeks." I consented to this proposal, without hesitation, complimenting Van Kempen on his commercial acuteness. Then, after some further conversation with him and my brother on the subject, I allowed them to depart, sending a message to Drake to visit me early in the morning.

Soon after they were gone, Dr Gordon said, "It was an incumbent duty on him to take care of Lady Seaward and myself : that rest of mind and of body were essential to the re-establishment of our health : that for the present he would not decide on the medical treatment to be pursued ; but he was inclined to think we had taken too much jesuit's bark, or it had been given injudiciously ; by which error the hepatic functions, as he expressed it, had been partially suspended ; and he feared that, in consequence, the spleen had begun to enlarge, if he might judge by the peculiar aspect of countenance which that disease uniformly produced." Poor Diego (who, with Rota, had remained as near to us as possible ever since our arrival,) now ventured to say, "Master Diego hopes Master Doctor will allow him to take Governor Sir Edward and his lady every morning for ride on mules, or for row them about in barge, before breakfast." On this dear old Rota, stepping forward, put in her word, saying, "And I will have nice chicken, boiled in milk, with little mace, for my lady, and good master, Sir Edward, when they come back : and that better than doctor physic for them."—"We will discuss your proposals by-and-by, dame,"

replied Dr Gordon ; " for the present they must be kept very quiet ; and, if you please, Mr Diego and Mistress Rota, I am the responsible person."

A hostile feeling was getting up between the parties, when dear Mr Rowley interposed ; and after having said what was necessary for peace, our conscientious doctor took leave of us for the evening ; on which both my dear wife and myself thanked our kind and early negro friends for their solicitude ; assuring them that, as soon as it appeared advisable, we would profit by their attentions. But Mistress Rota was not to be put off so. She had provided a warm bath for her lady, at her own house ; of which she and Rosalie soon apprised my dear wife, who communicated the matter to me : and as I could see no objection to its use, but rather the contrary, she accordingly went : returning in less than an hour, much refreshed and invigorated by its application.

On the morrow, Dr Gordon paid us an early visit. He was immediately informed of what had been done ; on which he said,—as it had been done, he would refrain from any observations, further than, " it was unadvised : it might have been positively wrong, although it happened not to be so. He, after due consideration, would have recommended it ; but as a few degrees of temperature made all the difference between its being wrong or right, even after the thing itself was determined on as appropriate to the case, the temperature and other points connected with its administration required some deliberation." The doctor now proceeded, *secundum artem*, first with me, and then with Lady Seaward. The pulse was counted, the tongue examined, the liver and spleen pressed upon by his hand ; sometimes we were desired to make a deep inspiration, sometimes to sneeze. This being done, he sat down for half-an-hour without speaking a word. As he looked more grave than usual, my dear wife at last addressed him :—" Dr Gordon, if you think Sir Edward's case serious, I insist on your telling me so, unequivocally, that he may immediately return to England."—" Indeed no, madam," he replied ; " I think, by small doses of sweet mercury and Turkey rhubarb, and the warm salt-water bath, at a temperature of ninety-six degrees, with gentle exercise on the beasts you have here, taking a sail or a row now and then upon the water, observing a milk diet chiefly, and relaxation of mind—on the part of Sir Edward—you both may very soon be pretty well again. But I cannot say," continued he, after pausing a minute, " that either the one or the other of you will be just so well as before you had the fever at Porto Bello."

When the doctor left us, Master Diego and our kind Rota were overjoyed to find how much there was for them to do. The old lady prepared a bath for me, without loss of time, which appeared the shorter, as Drake was with me during the interval. The business of our interview related to the going of our merchant vessels to Porto Bello. It was determined that Drake should accompany them in the Porghee, and take with him fifteen of his prisoners. This measure was called for, to afford our traders some protection, and also to give Drake an opportunity of making known his good fortune to the Admiral, whose share of it was not inconsiderable; and to learn his pleasure as to what port or place he would desire the prize to be sent, which had been ascertained to be of considerable value, not less than eighty thousand dollars. Drake now went on his business, and I repaired to the bath.

On my return I was met by my dear sister, with her baby. The sight of the little child, cooing and springing in its mother's arms, gave me inexpressible pleasure. I thought its eyes so like those of my Eliza, that I felt as if I could gaze on them for ever. "You will call it Eliza, my dear sister," said I, as I looked wistfully upon the sweet angel.—"Yes, brother," she replied, "most willingly; it was Drake's wish that I should do so, and I am now doubly happy in knowing that it is yours also. Besides, it is the wish of my own heart," continued she, going over to my dear wife, and kissing her as she spoke; "it will make me happy to call my child Eliza, for you know how much I love you: and I will teach the babe to be sensible of your great kindnesses, both to me and to her father."

My brother and Van Kempen were so busy in loading their vessels, that I did not see them till the evening; so I suppose they either dined with Van Kempen's vrow, or took a pork sausage with Gortz, hot from the coals. Mrs Seaward, however, was with us: and we were happy in being able to sit down with her, and my sister, and Drake, and our other kind and worthy guests, to dinner. The warm bath had been of essential service to both of us, so that we were able to eat comfortably.

Doctor Gordon came in, accompanied by my brother and Van Kempen, in the evening, bringing with him a *bolus* for each of us, which we were to take at night. After handing these bullets to me, he said, "I should not break in upon my own rules; but I cannot help submitting to you, Sir Edward, a question that stands between these gentlemen here and myself, as fiscal for the colony. They are shipping goods that never paid the *ad valorem* duty, having been in store before the impost. But

I say it was an oversight that they were not rated; and now they are going to market, it is but fair those goods should pay as well as the others. They object to this."—"Why do you object to it, Mr Van Kempen?" said I.—"Because," he replied, "such a measure would be unlawful. We have no duty on exports, and the goods in question were landed before the regulation was made; and to make those goods pay, would be making laws retrospective, which would be admitting a principle destructive of all commercial confidence. Yet I do not deny," continued he, "that it was an oversight not to include the goods in store; but such oversights are common, both in England and Holland, and there is no remedy in strict justice. The Government may profit by the mistake in making its future enactments, and that may be some compensation—I know no other. But, Sir Edward," added he, after a moment's pause, "I am not personally interested. The point in question is entirely with Mr Seaward; all my goods have paid the impost."—"Well," exclaimed my brother, "Doctor Gordon has said more about it than the thing is worth. The whole value of the goods in question does not amount to above one hundred dollars: and I would rather pay the fiscal the one dollar demanded than hear any more about it."—"Your pardon, I hope, Mr Seaward," replied the honest fiscal, "all I said was in the line of my duty. If Sir Edward Seaward thinks Mr Van Kempen's view of the case right, it would not be honest to take your money, sir: I am but the fiscal." A smile rose on my lip at the earnestness of these three men upon a point that never could occur again; which consideration, together with the smallness of the sum in question, rendered it a matter of no moment; but the subject had been brought before me as important. I therefore gravely gave my decision, "That there could be no impost levied on goods imported prior to the laying on of the duty, but that the fiscal was right to look sharp after the revenue of the colony, even to a fraction."

This subject being set at rest, I told our merchants that Captain Drake would convoy their vessels to Porto Bello, as soon as they could be got ready. Then, pleading indisposition, I left them, and joined my Eliza in her own room, to which she had already retired. There I found her with Rosalie, and our dear little dog, playing on a fine large palm-leafed mat, that had been made for us by Ximenes in our absence. I was not ashamed to join the innocent party, but sat down among them, till Fidele by his kisses and caresses drove me from my position, to the great amusement of Rosalie, and delight of my

Eliza. But we had now to take Dr Gordon's *boluses*. They were little less than a musket ball : it was impossible to swallow them. After some deliberation, we proposed to chew them, as they were principally rhubarb, and wash them down with a cup of coffee, which we both effected tolerably well ; and in this way we contrived to take the medicine, as long as the Doctor thought necessary to prescribe it, which might be about three weeks. I often spoke to him, to put it in some other form ; but he uniformly objected, saying, " It is the *deobstruent bolus*, and therefore cannot be other than a bolus." To this pharmaceutical dogma we were obliged to submit, although the folly of it was evident ; for, had we not fallen on the expedient of the coffee, by which it was no longer *a bolus*, we either must have been choked by the remedy, or deprived altogether of its benefit.

In a few days the vessels sailed for Porto Bello. It was on the 4th of December. I seized on the opportunity to send half-a-dozen of my best sheep to the Admiral, with a handsome private letter, in addition to the public one on the subject of our two vessels going to his port. Van Kempen accompanied the expedition in his galliot, as supercargo both of his own and my brother's merchandise, with full power to sell and buy as he might think proper. I was glad to see in this that James had got over those narrow views of trade which fasten naturally on the minds, not only of individuals, but of nations. It is the selfish principle which never fails ultimately to miss its object, as well in commerce as in every other branch of human intercourse.

After the departure of the vessels, I was glad to find myself able to attend at intervals to the details of what had happened, and to what had been doing during my long absence from the settlement ; but my recovery to anything like active health was slow ; and my dear Eliza continued not only weak, but still experienced some ague fits, generally every fourth day. Doctor Gordon now thought it expedient in her case to resume the inhibition of the jesuit's bark. However, our recovery, though tardy, was progressive ; so that in less than a month we were able to attend divine service under the hallowed canopy of the great tree ; and we soon not only enjoyed the morning row upon the lake, in Diego's barge, and the afternoon's sail in the Avon, beyond the headlands out to sea, but we again took a morning bath of refreshing sea water, and immediately after a bowl of new milk from the goats, followed by a ride. And thus we gradually acquired something of our former elasticity of mind and body.

As my strength increased, my spirits improved ; and the former deep interest I had taken in everybody and everything at this place returned unimpaired. I again felt my heart warm in the business ; so that every detail, even respecting an ass's foal, was listened to by me with pleasure. But it necessarily fell out that there were things unpleasant, as well as things pleasant, to hear. It were, however, ungrateful to Providence not to acknowledge that the evils were few, considering the many to which man is exposed, as well in his collective as in his individual station of life.

Sickness had certainly been more prevalent during my absence than usual ; in consequence of which, one of the women from Carolina had died, and two of the German children. But Diego had a serious visitation to impart to me, worse than the plague of the small-pox. The place was over-run with *rats* ; and he could not imagine whence they came. They destroyed the corn, and had completely ruined the little patches of sugar-cane below the cotton tree ; but, happily, they had not appeared either on Edward's Island, or at Peccary Field. Unfortunately there were not any cats in the settlement. Hitherto I had not allowed any to be brought to it, as there was no natural prey for them, neither rats nor mice ; and I did not desire to see the native doves and nightingales driven by grimalkin from our doors. But I now wished that some adventurous *Whittington* might come to the port with a cargo of *tabbies* ; and in the humour I was in when Diego imparted the information to me, I think I should have given him his own price for the investment, although I might know my conscientious fiscal would not remit one fraction on the *ad valorem* duty, if it were to save his own nose from being gnawed off by the vermin.

There were, however, some small dogs at German Town and Allwood's Bay ; and as Fidele had already killed a few of the intruders, we might expect a similar service from his humbler fellows. "When we get in crop, sir," said Diego, "you give me dogs ; and Jammy Purdy, he famous rat-catcher, sir ; we then dig all them out, and kill every one. *Donna Rata* always live under cane roots, sir, and about in holes." When the time for taking up the crops came, which soon arrived, Diego marshalled his forces ; but the matter was of too much importance to be left to Purdy and the dogs. A levy *en masse* was required, by which we formed a *cordon* round our little plantation. As the rats were dug out, or started, the dogs generally caught hold of them, but the creatures were very large and powerful, and bit sharply, so that sometimes the dogs let them go. Purdy,

however, always killed his rat: he caught it adroitly, and grasped it fearlessly, throwing it with great force into the air, never failing to strike it as it came down, with a short stick he held in his left hand, which he suddenly shifted over to the right. "Hit him at once, with your stick, while he is on the ground, Purdy," said I, "instead of killing him as you do."—"Can't, sir," he replied; "he stop for me to put hand on him; won't stop to hit him with stick: and if I hit him with stick when I catch him, if I don't kill him dead he will bite me to the bone." And this was true enough; for although the people were armed with sticks, and the rats passed closely among them, not above two were struck and killed; and one negro was bit severely, who had caught a rat with the hand and then struck it with his stick while he had hold of it. When the enterprise was finished, although the dogs and Purdy had killed nearly thirty, I was convinced as many more had escaped: a formidable horde of barbarians, sufficient to procreate a host equal to the destruction of everything belonging to us, if not ourselves also.

This great evil still hung over the colony. The sickness had passed away, and the deaths in consequence of the sickness had been few, and of importance only to their immediate connections; but I was thankful that it ended here, for our good and useful pastor had been spared, who with his whole family had been in great danger not long after our departure for Porto Bello.

An accession of five families from Kingston, Jamaica, had been made in my absence. They were all people of colour, that is, Mulattoes, and had been induced to come through the representations of the elder Allwood, who had made a trip in my brother's schooner. Being all poor, and only two of the men having trades, they were at present subsisted, as all the others formerly had been, by the produce of the silk cotton-tree plantation, and from the stores at my expense. But I was glad, nevertheless, to hear of this accession to our numbers, which in my mind was always important to the ultimate well-being and security of the settlement. Allwood had taken one of the families to live with him; my brother had located another on his own lands near to the German Town Pass. Two families were lodged in the village in separate houses, there being now eighteen houses completed. One of the men was a tailor; the other I do not know what to call him; he said he was a millwright, but he was also a tolerably good smith; and there was reason to suspect he had been a slave on some plantation in Jamaica, brought up to the anvil, under his master's white work-

men. In consequence, I instituted an inquiry, but as I never could get at the truth of the matter, I chose rather to run the risk of letting him remain quietly where he was than send him back to Kingston. Still I felt, that although I did not encourage slavery, nor allow it at Seaward Islands, yet it was not for me to permit Mr Allwood, nor any one else among us, to believe that I would connive at the desertion of slaves from their masters in Jamaica, whose legal property I was bound to consider them, how repugnant soever it might be to my feelings as a man and a Christian to do so. The fifth family had gone to German Town. Matthew Hinklemann, the husband of the Flemish woman, having wished to reside in the village, and to keep shop under the auspices of Van Kempen, he therefore let his house and lot at German Town to this man, for a consideration, and engaged to pay rent for the house he had taken in the village. This is the outline respecting these five families, which altogether amount to twenty-one persons. No time had been lost in sending their children to the school-house, where they were now, in common with others, learning to read, to sew, and to make plait for hats. Mr Rowley had baptized them all, and married the heads of the families, who, hitherto, had lived together merely by consent, as is the custom with all negroes and people of colour in Jamaica.

About a month previous to my return, a discovery of some consequence had been made at German Town, by Adrian Wor and William Schwartz. In process of time, the few pipes brought by the Germans had become quite useless, being either worn out, or broke entirely. And this to them was a great privation, as they found but puny comfort in a cigar. Adrian Wor, by accident, found some good clay below the rocky face of the hill east of the town, with which he contrived to make a few short, shapeless pipes. These, with the assistance of Schwartz, he managed to burn tolerably well, and gave them as he made them to his friends and countrymen. The two men having accomplished this great matter, tried their hand at fabricating some brown dishes, which, after a few failures and further perseverance, and a lesson from Hart the bricklayer, as to the necessity of mixing sand with the clay, they succeeded so well, that when the business was mentioned to me by Dr Gordon, I desired that Hart should go over to German Town, with a load of bricks in the Avon, and erect a spacious kiln for these men, which he did, and finished it before the end of the month. After the kiln was completed, they contrived to burn a considerable quantity of coarse ware; not very well shaped, I must

confess, but the specimens I received gave me so much satisfaction, that for their encouragement, I made them a present of the kiln, and two tons of coals, part of our stock imported for burning lime.

On Saturday the 22d of December, there was a grand field-day. We mustered seventy-two rank and file, including Sergeant Craig, the two corporals, the drillman and drummers ; besides three artillery-men, who attended muster with one of the field-pieces. The newcomers were well dressed and equipped, and having belonged to the militia at Jamaica, did not disgrace the squad. My brother acquitted himself well, as captain of the band. Both great guns and small arms were exercised ; the business finishing with firing ball at a target.

On the following day, which was the Sabbath, I had the pleasure to see a full attendance at divine worship. The people were all remarkably clean and neatly dressed, every one wearing straw hats, the manufacture of the island. Many persons, black as well as white, joined in the hymns : and a joyous feeling seemed to be imparted to the whole congregation by the discourse of our excellent pastor, who took his text from the second chapter of St Matthew :—" *Where is he that is born King of the Jews? for we have seen His star in the East, and are come to worship Him.*" He represented the Saviour's coming, as the morning star, ushering in the light of day, before which the long night of darkness was dispelled, that for so many ages had hung upon the nations. The blessed Gospel, he said, was as the *sea breeze*, with healing on its wings, that comes in from the portals of the East, breathing life and comfort to all who feel its influence. He then dwelt on the holy precepts of our blessed Redeemer, and on the righteous example He had set before us, and desired us, if we would call Him Lord, to adorn His Gospel by the sanctity of our lives. In concluding his most excellent discourse, he said,—“ In a few days we shall have the happiness to commemorate the anniversary of the *Messiah's* coming, as foretold by the wise men, who saw *His star in the East*, a day of rejoicing to all men ; for in the end His Gospel shall cover the earth as the waters cover the sea.”

The Tuesday following was Christmas day. The dawn was awakened by the drum and fife playing the “ *The Reveillez.*” Everything had been provided for the *Isthmean games*, and a festival enjoyment prepared for the people and ourselves, as on the preceding year. It was delightful to me—to my dear Eliza it was the same—to be present at their sports ; and to witness both men, women, and children enjoying themselves with the

various refreshments and pastimes that had been provided for their recreation and amusement. The St George's flag, which has a white field with a red cross, was hoisted at sunrise, on a flag-staff lately erected at the fort ; but as I now thought it necessary to husband our gunpowder, no salute was fired, as on the former anniversary of this blessed day.

All our friends banqueted with us at the mansion : we assembled in our best attire, and my dear wife wore the diamond cross which our much lamented Queen had placed upon her breast. All our plate and best dinner equipage were displayed. Mistress Rota covered the table sumptuously with three courses in succession, followed by a dessert of delicious fruits, all the product of this late desolate island. Master Diego stood behind my chair, in state, dressed in his blue and gold, being more superbly attired, but equal in self-importance to *King Cudjoe* of the *Maroons*. His six bargemen, in white jackets and petticoat trowsers, with a new bandana handkerchief tied loosely in a bowling knot round the shirt collar, were also in attendance ; besides my two habitual men-servants, Rowland Dick and Raymond Price (the mulatto drummers sent to me by Governor Trelawney), now dressed in the king's livery. Mistress Rota took post in the second hall, where she received the maid-servants in a train with the supplies from the kitchen, whence they were forwarded to the dinner-table in due order, without bustle or confusion.

I confess I felt proud, as I sat opposite my beloved wife, in gazing on her, and on the cross she wore ; and in the recollection of the love and friendship the royal bestower of it had on all occasions manifested for her who wore it. I felt proud, also, in seeing myself surrounded by affectionate relations and kind friends ; and in being so sumptuously served by the produce of our own settlement. In this latter consideration my satisfaction was complete ; it could not be increased, even by the wines of the finest quality, from Madeira, the Rhine, and the Garonne, that now associated themselves with our native dessert, nor by the brave appearance of my men in waiting.

After dinner, Rosalie came in with Mr Rowley's children. She, as well as they, was desired to take a seat at the table. This matter had been talked over by my dear wife, not only with me, but with Mr and Mrs Rowley ; and it had been determined that, considering her uniform good conduct, her excellent education, and respectable descent, she might be admitted to the rank of companion to Lady Seaward with strict propriety, and treated as one of the family. Rosalie was modest, though

a Frenchwoman : she hesitated to take the chair offered to her—"Mademoiselle Filibert," said my dear Eliza, "I seize on the opportunity this day affords me of seating you among my friends, and by the side of those dear children whom we love. Their father, and your father, and my father,—ministers of the same Lord, whose day we now celebrate,—presents a bond of union I am not disposed to reject. I therefore desire you to be seated among us ; and because I esteem you for your own sake, I wish henceforth to rank you among my friends, and to treat you as my companion, and as one of the family."—Rosalie expressed her thanks, with much good feeling and courtesy, as she sat down ; on which I drank her health, all our friends following my example. Then she sung, and played to us on her guitar ; and the day was made to resound with decent joy throughout the settlement.

On the 27th, we had the pleasure to receive intelligence from the look-out on the promontory that the Porghee was in sight, but alone ; and in the afternoon she made her way into the harbour, with baffling winds and squally weather, coming to an anchor on the starboard bow of the Spanish prize. I was rejoiced to see Drake again, for I had not been without some uneasiness for his timely return ; knowing too well how to appreciate the dangerous tempests which visit these seas soon after the winter solstice, not to wish anxiously for his safe arrival before the weather became unsettled.

He brought me a letter from the Admiral, which was short, but quite satisfactory :—"Dear Sir,—All you wish shall be done—thank you for the sheep. Yours, Edward Vernon."—"Laconic enough, Drake," said I, folding up the letter, after having cast my eye over its contents : "however, it says all I should desire ; so I have no reason to complain. The Admiral, we know, is a man of deeds, and not of words ; I therefore excuse his apparent want of courtesy."—"I assure you, Sir Edward," replied Drake, "he was not so hard up for words in speech as on paper : he said you were 'a fine fellow, dirtily used ;' and he had great pleasure in serving you. The manner in which he behaved showed his sincerity : he ordered every facility to be given to the vessels to dispose of their cargoes ; the greater part of which was sold before I came away, and for which hard dollars had been received by Van Kempen." Then turning to my brother, who stood by eager to hear more,—"*Mr Seaward,*" continued Drake, "I have a letter for you, from Mynheer Van Kempen, and a remittance on board on account of sales, up to the day of my departure, to the tune of 6000 dollars."

Drake then resumed his discourse to me. He had arrived at Porto Bello on the 8th; and he sailed thence again, in company with a squadron of men-of-war, on the 13th; and proceeded with the Admiral off Carthagera, where, from his local knowledge, he was employed a few days to reconnoitre the Spanish force: but finally received orders, on the 24th, to make the best of his way to Seaward Islands, and thence go on to Jamaica with the prize. "Well, Captain Drake," said I, affecting an austere tone, "and what is your intention as to the time of your sailing for Jamaica?"—"To obey the Admiral's order promptly, Sir Edward," he replied, "I will sail to-morrow, if you have no objection."—"To-morrow, Drake!—are you mad? look at the weather," was my reply.—"The weather must not prevent me, Sir Edward: it ought not. The Admiral is at sea, and I dare not skulk in harbour," answered my gallant friend.—"But you must stay for the christening," said Mr Rowley; "we mean to christen your little girl on Sunday."—"My public duty is my first consideration, Mr Rowley," replied Drake: "if it did not stand in the way, nothing could be so great a happiness to me as that you propose."—"Then, Captain Drake, for the good of his Majesty's service, the Governor of Seaward Islands will prevent you," said I, "from drowning yourself and crew, because you think it your duty to obey the Admiral's orders, in the face of an approaching tempest! Although the Admiral is now at sea, before many days are over his head he will be of my mind, and wish himself, and every ship under his command, in any nook or harbour that would shelter them. Get your schooner into Peccary Creek; tow your prize in there also. Do it without loss of time; and you shall have my written order for all I now command to be done."—"Sir, I obey," said Drake, gravely; then, taking a glass of wine, good-humouredly drank my health, and quitted the hall to put my orders into execution.

The bad weather did not come on so instantaneously as I expected, yet it continued to lower and threaten daily; being sometimes calm, sometimes blowing sharply all round the compass; which reminded my dear Eliza and myself of the coming of the dreadful tempest by which we were cast on these islands. The warning this season was long and unremitted, so that we had plenty of time to secure all our boats and canoes; and to make such dispositions for the security of our buildings and ourselves as the experience of former years had taught us would be necessary.

On Tuesday the 1st of January, it was calm during the

greater part of the day. At sunset the clouds gathered and broke, sending forth awful shoots of forked lightning, closely followed by heavy peals of thunder, like the firing of the ships at Porto Bello on the Hierro fort. It then blew a tremendous gale, mostly from the westward. We were up at the mansion all night. The storm continued with little interruption for three days, blowing a hurricane, and pouring down sheets of water at intervals, like the cascade of a great river.

At Allwood's Bay, they were under the lee of the hills; and I was happy in reflecting that my dear sister was well sheltered from the violence of the wind, at Spring Hill, and also that she had her husband safe at home with her. The vessels were safe in Peccary Creek; but the German settlement, and ourselves, were quite exposed: and nothing but the heavy rains could preserve Soldiers' Town from being buried by the drift sand from the isthmus. The western face of the promontory neutralised the force of the wind at the village, which lay immediately beneath it; and with respect to the storehouses within the cavern stoccado, they were secure against the utmost efforts of the hurricane, unless a stroke of lightning should pass into the magazine and blow the whole up together.

Early on Saturday morning our three *look-outs* were on the alert, one on the promontory, another at the flag-staff on the height above German Town, and the third on the summit of the Sugar-Loaf Hill on Edward's Island; where Drake had planted a flag-staff also, and up to which an indifferent cork-screw walk had been cut in my absence.—From this last post, a vessel was seen in distress to the north-west, evidently stranded. Although the weather continued still boisterous, and a heavy sea was rolling in upon the reefs to the westward, breaking furiously over them, Drake lost no time in manning my barge and his own boat with some of his best men; and taking the Avon also with him, manned by the blacks (his former crew and present townsmen), attended by two canoes, which were paddled by Diego's men, he made the best of his way round the south headland of Edward's Island, keeping between the innermost range of breakers and the shore.

No small devastation had been committed on the island. At my own place, the plantation storehouse was blown down; Sergeant Craig's house nearly unroofed. Many shingles were blown off the mansion; and the whole of the poultry house, stoccadoes and all, were carried away, and blown up against the stone kitchen, and even back to the very face of the hill, by which some of the stock was killed. Much damage also

had been sustained at German Town ; so that the exertion of all hands not gone in the boats was immediately called for, and no delay allowed in making the necessary arrangements for repairing the various sorts of damage sustained.

A little before noon one of the boats returned to say that the vessel was a Kingston privateer ; that all the people would be saved ; and that the vessel was lying on a sand bank within the reef, with her side beat in, where nothing but a most tremendous heave of the sea could have carried her. Four of the privateer's men, who had been hurt, were brought on shore in the boat, and placed immediately under the care of Dr Gordon. Before night the whole of the crew, thirty-five men and the captain, were safely landed at the village, and every comfort afforded them that our present situation would admit.

In consultation with Mr Rowley, I determined to borrow the Lord's day, and work, as our need was pressing ; and dedicate an early day, in lieu, to fasting and prayer, which we might hope in mercy would be accepted. This I made known at night to the people ; and we proceeded on Sunday morning, at daylight, the day being fine and the weather settled, to repair our most urgent damages. The captain of the privateer at the same time being supplied with boats, attended by Martin, Purdy, and the two New Englanders, was sent off to endeavour to save what stores he could from his vessel ; with directions to land them on the north-west end of Edward's Island, and there make an encampment with spars and sails for their reception, and the accommodation of his men. I gave orders that provisions should be sent off daily from the village, by boat, to a little bay within a hundred yards of the place intended for their encampment, but on the hither side, opposite German Town.

During the greater part of the week, every person in the settlement was actively employed one way or other in repairing the injuries sustained from the hurricane, and in furnishing supplies to the privateer's crew. As I knew Drake must soon sail for Jamaica, I was under the necessity of engaging part of my time in writing official despatches to the Secretary of State, descriptive of my late unpleasant mission to Porto Bello. And I did not omit writing a private letter to Lord Harrington on the subject, who had always manifested a feeling towards me separate from his official situation. Letters were also got ready by my dear wife, and my sister, for Awbury ; and I wrote, besides, some to Jamaica, also one to my banker in London, and another to my uncle at Bristol.

On Friday we held a solemn fast ; and on the following

Sunday, divine service was observed with due solemnity ; after which, Mr Rowley christened Drake's dear little girl "Eliza." The privateer's men remained at their work as usual ; but I sent a message to the captain, requesting him to come to prayers. This he treated with derision, only laughing at the messenger, by whom he sent back rather a profane, and therefore a rude answer.

Drake sailed with his prize on Tuesday the 15th, and my brother accompanied him, taking with him the 6000 dollars that Van Kempen had sent from Porto Bello, and about 14,000 more, which he had lately amassed by commerce. Drake told me I must not expect his return under a month, for the schooner required new sheathing, and many other repairs. On his taking leave, I gave him a memorandum of some things required for our private use. Diego, who then stood by at the time, eagerly said,—“And 100 cats, Captain Drake.”—“Thank you, Master Diego,” I exclaimed, “I had forgot that most important commission. Bring us a good complement of rat killers, but not quite 100.”—“Not one too much, sir,” resumed Diego : “the rats very powerful, sir.”—“Very well,” replied Drake, “I'll see to it, Master Diego.”

The captain of the privateer would neither send anyone to Jamaica in the Porghee, nor write by Captain Drake, nor give any clue to whom his vessel belonged ; which induced us to suspect there was something wrong about him and his vessel ; but I could not guess what. He himself was an Anglo-American, named Barnes ; his crew, whites, mulattoes, and blacks ; some of all nations ; something like ourselves in that respect. The Porghee was not two days gone before this fellow and his people began to manifest not only ungrateful, but insubordinate and rebellious conduct. Although they were well supplied with provisions every morning, a strong party of them went over to German Town, where they took away fowls, and behaved, moreover, with great indecency to some of the women. On hearing this, I sent Dr Gordon to them, with a threat of stopping their supplies if they did not conduct themselves properly. The threat appeared to have the desired effect, with regard to their manners on shore ; but a few days after, having learnt that they had ceased to attempt the removal of anything more from the wreck, I sent a message to Martin, ordering him to return with the Avon and the other boats, but to leave one canoe. The captain, on being told this, absolutely refused to send his men round with the boats, or to suffer Martin and Purdy to get under sail with the Avon ; but obliged them to return in a canoe,

which I despatched with my message, and which was intended to be left for the accommodation of the strangers. I was not a little astonished when Martin re-appeared without the boats, and described to me what had passed; but I was doubly astonished when he said, "They take away the boat from German Town, sir,—privateer, no English privateer at all, sir, no more than buccaneer; rob, plunder, and kill everybody."

This was a very unpleasant business. The villain had all the boats, excepting my barge and two canoes; and I now had sufficient reasons for considering him an arrant pirate, and for believing that his intention might be to put to sea in the Avon, with his most valuable effects, and rob and plunder the settlement for sea stock; and perhaps take all the other boats with him, for his better accommodation. I, however, dissembled my displeasure, which induced him to think we were afraid of him. Provisions were forwarded the next morning as usual, with a civil message, requesting the boats, to which he returned a surly answer, saying—"He was not done with them;" at the same time making requisition of certain things to be sent the next day, in addition to the customary supply. When I received his message, I could scarcely suppress the anger I felt rising in my breast at his insolence and ingratitude; and from this moment I lost no time in making the best dispositions in my power, to get our whole band together, so as to transport them to Allwood's Bay by ten o'clock that night, which was very quickly and quietly accomplished.

Sergeant Craig supplied every man's cartouche box with twelve rounds of ball cartridge: and, that we might not look quite like ragamuffins, he made the men dress. And this was the more necessary, as I learned from Martin that the fellows had saved both half-pikes and cutlasses from the wreck, and also fire-arms, though he believed no gunpowder.

By eleven o'clock our men were formed in double rank in front of Allwood's house. At the same time I despatched the barge round with Diego and his own crew, accompanied by Martin and Purdy, all well armed, with directions to seize the Avon and the other boats, or to prevent their escape, should any of the pirates be embarked in them. I gave the barge time to get round the headland, calculating she would afterwards keep way with us, and I then marched with the whole body, about sixty men, through the narrow pass below Spring Hill. In an hour we arrived at the further end of Long Bay, where we halted and fixed bayonets; and in ten minutes more I surrounded the canvas sheds of the pirates, by five divisions of

twelve men each. I immediately detached one party to the western beach, under Sergeant Craig; my object there being to possess myself of the Avon and the other boats. In an instant the fellows were on the alert, but evidently in great consternation; the captain hallooing out "Cutlasses!" On which I said, in a loud voice, "That every man of his should instantly be shot who appeared with a pike or cutlass." I spoke loud enough to be heard by the whole party. But some of his fellows made an instant rush, with cutlasses in their hands, towards the beach. These desperadoes were immediately fired on by our men nearest to them, who had given way to let them pass. On which, or in a few minutes after, they were attacked by Sergeant Craig's party, and by Diego and his crew, who had just landed; to whom they instantly surrendered. But the captain still was not disposed to yield, although some of his men had already fallen. I was therefore obliged to order the people to charge the villains. Young Allwood was cut down at the onset, and another man of ours also: but our bold fellows pushed forward on them, like brave soldiers, at once overpowering them. But even then we found much difficulty in completely subduing and securing them, they being desperate ruffians, and their captain fighting like a badger in a corner of the rock. As fast, however, as we could do it, they were tied, two and two together, with their own ropes; and I took special care to have the captain pinioned, and otherwise well bound, and placed alone. The whole crew, except two killed and five wounded, were now made to sit together on the sand for the present, with a guard round them. Diego's barge party, which had landed just after the volley was fired, having done their parts, were now sent back to the boats, with some additional hands, to get the craft round by the north end of the island as quickly as possible.

My thoughts soon turned on those left at home; and in consequence I despatched two messengers, to make all speed by the way we came, to inform Mrs Drake and the women at Allwood's Bay that the pirates were secured; and thence to proceed over to the mansion by a canoe, with the like intelligence to Lady Seaward: then go forward to Peccary Field, and send on some of the negro women to German Town, and to the Doctor's house, and to Soldiers' Town, with the news. For I felt that my own dear wife, and every other man's dear wife, besides our kind-hearted minister, might not be without great anxiety on the occasion; although no one could have expected that fellows almost unarmed would have offered resistance to a body of well-appointed men, double their numbers.

Doctor Gordon took charge of the wounded men on the field; and at dawn of day the two men killed were buried where they fell. The Avon and the other boats arrived from the opposite side of the island soonafter morning broke: and as it was my intention to put all the secured prisoners into this large boat, and tow her over to the black rock below the village, I thought it right first to examine their pockets; to take away knives, or any other destructive instrument they might have about them. In doing this, I discovered a little bag in the captain's pocket, which contained emeralds of some value; likewise some Portuguese Johannas, and moidores, in his purse. The men, also, were despoiled of some gold, a good deal of silver, and a few knives: and although it was a tedious process, I noted down with my pencil every man's name, and what had been taken from him.

The captain remained perfectly sullen: he was an ugly black-whiskered fellow, looking like a wild boar tied for the slaughter. But some of the men were conciliatory, saying a good deal; enough to let us know there were plenty of pieces of eight, and some smaller money, in bags under the canvas sheds. My first object, after the arrival of the boats, was to despatch the barge with the Doctor and wounded men, to be lodged with their comrades, the four hurt in the shipwreck. Young Allwood, and the other wounded man of ours, who was a negro of my brother's household, were sent to their respective homes, their wounds not being dangerous; and there were also some slight hurts on both sides, of still less consequence, not worth mentioning. The barge being gone with the wounded, I was in no hurry to send the other iellows off; but made them remain on the strand until I wrote an inventory of everything taken in their presence. There was not any article of value besides the coin; of which there were 9000 pieces of eight, in bags, and four bags of piastres, amounting to 4300 pieces of eight more. There were thirty-six cutlasses, as many half pikes, twenty old muskets, five hangers, one of which was very handsome, a parcel of damaged sails and spars, some bales of silk, and other things. It came out, before we had done, that it had been their intention to have built a small vessel out of the remains of the wreck; with which they intended to depart; but as the Captain thought the Avon might do just as well, he said it would save a great deal of time and trouble, if they would seize her; and they confessed that they did intend to put his plan into immediate execution: but where he was to sail with her they did not know, or would not tell.

By nine o'clock, Diego returned with the barge. The good old man had made a point of seeing Lady Seaward, to assure her that I was well, and that I would soon appear with the prisoners. All the bullion and arms were put into his boat, and the prisoners into the Avon. The other boats took the Avon in tow. The non-commissioned officers, and the three artillery-men, were the only persons reserved for a guard. The other people were sent off to their respective habitations. Indeed, I was anxious to despatch them to their homes; for this was the season for getting in the crops, and they had been much hindered by various incidental circumstances.

My dear wife, with Mr and Mrs Rowley, and Rosalie, with kind-hearted Mistress Rota, were all upon the beach to greet me on my landing. My beloved Eliza caught my hand, as I stepped from the boat. "Welcome, my Edward," she said; "is all well?"—"All is well, my love," I replied; "by the mercy of God, we have been rescued from the perfidy of those villains."—"You look pale and fatigued, Sir Edward," said Mr Rowley; "come up, and take breakfast, which is ready waiting for you." He would have given me his arm, but that my dear Eliza would not concede to any human being: so, ordering Diego and his men to bring up the bullion and the arms, I leaned on one who was born to lean on me; and we walked up quietly together, followed by our friends. On entering the hall, when I took off my hat my dear wife perceived my hair matted with blood. "You are wounded, Edward," she exclaimed; "do you know it?"—"No, love," I replied, "I am not wounded; why do you think so?" She then put my hand on my head, where I found, sure enough, that I had received a slight cut; but on taking away the hair, it was seen to be of no importance.

At breakfast, I detailed to our friends all that had occurred. To many, such a recital would have occasioned no emotions but such as might arise from sentiments of indignation, at the ungrateful perfidy of the pirate and his crew: but Mr Rowley lamented over their lost condition, as sinful men; and my tender Eliza dropped a tear, when I said, "Two of them were killed, and buried on the spot where they fell."

After breakfast, I took Mr Rowley with me to the village, to visit the wounded men. We found Dr Gordon with them. He had placed them comfortably on mattresses, and had dressed their wounds; and he now requested of me two persons to attend on them: which I immediately granted; and gave orders for everything he might want to be supplied from the mansion for their convenience. We now walked to the plank-house;

before which all the prisoners were standing. I desired Sergeant Craig to unpinion the captain, but to keep his legs fettered, and then confine him in the plank-house ; where a sentry must always be kept over him. All the other fellows, who amounted to twenty-four, were marched within the cave stoc-house stoccado. I told them I knew they were pirates, without letter of marque or commission ; and that as such every one of them was liable to be hung ; but now was the time for any who chose to save themselves, to come forward and depose to the facts of their captain's conduct ; and that within an hour, I would send to see who were disposed to speak the truth. This was declared in English, in French, in Spanish, and in Dutch, by different persons I had provided for that purpose. Mr Rowley and myself now returned home, leaving an artillery sentinel at the gate.

Within the hour two men came forward, and were brought to the mansion. They were an Englishman and a Cornishman from Mivigissey. They stated, that they had entered with the pirate to save their lives ; that the vessel they first belonged to had been plundered and burned by the pirate ; and all the rest of the crew, with their captain, been made to *walk the plank*. They detailed enormities I will not repeat : but stated that the pirate had a rendezvous, where another like himself resorted to, on a small island near the Mosquito shore. I took the depositions of these men before Mr Rowley ; and then placed them again in confinement, but separate from the others, in a house of the village. I desired two more witnesses, of a different nation, which I soon found in a Frenchman and a Spaniard, who, on being examined, substantiated what the Englishmen had said ; adding some other circumstances that had happened prior to their capture. I took depositions from these men also ; and this was enough. I then sent them to the same place where I had lodged the Englishmen.

I was determined not to allow the great body of villains to eat the bread of idleness ; and as our people had been much interrupted by them in the field labour, now so pressing, I ordered the twenty that were confined within the stoccado to be divided among the settlers, and set to work to-morrow morning, tied by the leg, two and two : Diego being instructed to employ the four *King's evidences* on our own grounds, at the silk-cotton-tree plantation.

Early the next morning, twenty cutlasses were distributed among the most discreet men of our different settlements, and the pirates divided among them. But before they were marched

off from the stoccado, they were given to understand that if any of them attempted to run away from their work, or from the place they were sent to, they should be shot. Indeed, all this precaution seemed necessary; for rope-chains were but pack-thread fastenings to such daring renegadoes. I, however, ventured to trust to the precautions I had taken with respect to the men; but the smith was ordered to make substantial irons for the legs of the pirate captain, at which he worked night and day till they were finished. And I was glad when they were put on; for this ruffian breathed nothing but vengeance and defiance. I, however, kept him on biscuit and water, and obliged him to pick oakum for his pastime and maintenance.

The Avon had been much injured during her late employment: it was therefore necessary that she should be repaired: and as I could well spare Derrick, my bondman and ship-carpenter, the boat was hauled up, and he and his apprentice set to work to put her in thorough order. I was the more disposed to do this at the present time, as by taking part of a plank out of her bottom, until everything else but the caulking and painting were done, I should be relieved of apprehension as to the pirates putting into effect any conspiracy they might form to carry her off, and make their escape.

The agricultural operations now went on apace; every one being employed, and the additional piratical hands giving great assistance. The wounded men were gradually recovering, and everything proceeded orderly and well. There was, however, no muster-day on the following Saturday. But we observed the Sabbath as usual, and brought the delinquents up to the hallowed spot, as possibly some good might come of it. On the following Saturday, the 2nd of February, the labours of the field being nearly finished, I felt myself at liberty to resume our military muster; the pirates now being within the cave stoccado, before which we paraded.

When our men were drawn up, I addressed them on the subject of the late encounter on Edward's Island. I told them that the persons we had made prisoners were pirates,—miscreants that plundered all nations; who, not having the fear of God before their eyes, ran forward in a career of wickedness, carrying death and destruction in its path to every one they could overcome; but now ending, as all wickedness does end, in their own destruction. "But," added I, turning round to the piratical crew, who stood close up to the bars of the stoccado, "evil as has been your conduct to us, it shall be my endeavour to save your lives; and I hope the law will be satis-

fied with taking that of your captain only. Turn, therefore, to the God of Mercy, who has put this lenity into my heart, but whom you have long forgotten, or perhaps never knew, and pray to Him that he may influence the minds of men in power to desire to save you, as I do." Then again addressing our own people, I said—"My brave fellows! you are all entitled to my best thanks, for you all did your duty cheerfully and unostentatiously. Considerable booty, in silver, has been taken; and I shall lose no time in petitioning the King of England to allow me to divide it among you, in such proportions as he may direct." I then left them to go through their evolutions; which they commenced by giving me three hearty cheers.

In the evening, when Sergeant Craig came to me for orders, he told me that Barnes, the pirate captain, said he did not think, when the King's schooner sailed, there were above seven men-at-arms left on the island;—that he was thunderstruck when he and his party were surrounded by soldiers—he could scarcely believe his eyes, and for a few minutes thought he must be dreaming;—that if he had known how it was, he would have put our pipe out the night before,—he would have given the Governor promotion! "The rascal had the hardihood to tell you this, Craig?" said I.—"Yes, sir," he replied; "and seemed to have no other regret than his not having done it."

On the next day, which was the Sabbath, our good minister preached expressly to the deluded men; but I did not admit their captain. He was kept in close confinement at the plank-house, with a sentry over him. However, in the course of the week, Mr Rowley desired permission to visit him in his clerical capacity; which I readily granted.

On Monday morning, I turned out the pirate crew in a body, and told them that their fate, perhaps, depended on their orderly behaviour: that I was about to try them, by sending them altogether to complete a road on the opposite island. They promised fairly; and as soon as arrangements were made, I sent the whole gang, excepting the King's evidences, and the wounded men, to Allwood's Bay; placing over them as a guard the three artillerymen, with orders to see them finish the spiral road. It was to be made five feet in width, up to the summit of the Sugar-Loaf Hill, agreeably to the plan Drake had once explained to me; and which he had attempted to begin, by cutting a kind of footpath in the direction he meant the road to be formed.

The hurry of our agricultural operations being over, I

ordered a canvas shed to be erected at the foot of the hill for the pirates, well stoccadoed round; and for greater security, fire-arms were deposited with the settlers at the bay. All this was necessary; for the work to be done required that the fellows should have pickaxes, and shovels, and spades,—arms of no despicable quality in such hands. But they went on during the week, and afterwards, quietly and orderly in their labour.

CHAPTER XXVIII.

ON the 26th of February, Van Kempen returned with the galliot and schooner from Porto Bello. His expedition had been successful beyond expectation. He had brought the merchandize to a market at his own price, and had purchased the cargo of a prize for a mere song, because she was not seaworthy to send to Jamaica. On Wednesday the 5th of March, Drake made his appearance, and came to anchor in the afternoon. He brought a schooner with him under convoy, which my brother had chartered at Kingston to take in goods purposely for the Spanish market. But the Mary, my uncle's brig, also came in with him; that vessel having arrived at Jamaica while he was there. We were all glad to see Taylor's vessel in company with the Porghee. I expected some commissions by him of no ordinary kind; besides, we all were looking anxiously for letters from England. Drake brought an officer of engineers with him. This officer had been sent from England to join Admiral Vernon, but arrived too late by a few days, the Admiral having sailed from Jamaica on the 25th of February; to which place he had gone after the great January storm, by which he had suffered severely. The Porghee, too, had been obliged to wait for repair until all the large ships received their outfit; so that she had not been able to sail for Seaward Islands before the first of the present month.

I greeted my brave fellow with a hearty welcome on his landing, for I was heartily glad to see him again; but being impatient to see his Maria, he hastily introduced Captain Frazer to me, and then was about to make his escape to the other side of the water. "I must go to Maria," said he; "but will come again before sunset."—"Not so fast, my dear friend," I exclaimed; "I cannot allow you to go to Spring Hill, without first telling you that it is occupied by pirates." Drake stared at me; and then smiled, rather questionably, directing an enquiring eye to Mr and Mrs Rowley. "True enough,"

answered the reverend gentleman. Drake now rested his somewhat agitated look on my dear Eliza. "This mystery is not well!" she said: "go, Captain Drake; perhaps your dear wife, with her baby, is anxiously expecting you. It is true, there are pirates at Spring Hill; but they are prisoners."—"But what am I to make of this, Sir Edward?" exclaimed Drake.—"The fact is," returned I, "we have been under the necessity of seizing those fellows you saved from the wreck. I have discovered them to be pirates; and there are now twenty of them, under a guard, employed in making the corkscrew road you projected, from the base to the summit of Sugar-Loaf Hill."—"I should like to see it," exclaimed the engineer. "We shall have the pleasure of showing it to you to-morrow, Captain Frazer," I replied. "Now, my dear Drake," continued I, "speed home, and do not let me see your face here again to-night; but to-morrow, as early as you please. There are many questions I wish to ask you, and some things I desire to tell you. Now be off; Captain Frazer shall be my guest the while." Drake did not wait another bidding; but was making his escape in right earnest, when Master Diego, like a black genius, seized on the unlucky wight, exclaiming—"Los Gatos, *Capitan nobile!*"—"What the devil do you want, Diego?" replied Drake, hastening away, with my zealous *major domo* at his heels.—"The cats, Captain Drake!" vociferated he.—"O, there are two sacks full of them," rejoined Drake.—"Your pardon, *Capitan nobile,*" replied Diego, making a dead stand, and bowing profoundly; "I ask pardon for great bad manners, sir." Drake was the best tempered fellow in the world; so, turning round, he took off his hat, and having returned Master Diego's low bow, made a precipitate retreat to the boat, and rowed off, with all expedition, for his *château*.

After coffee, Captain Frazer and myself walked out to see the lions of the place. I was desirous to show him the great silk-cotton-tree, and some other things. But he directed himself immediately to the battery. I therefore bent my course with him at once from the mansion to that point. He surveyed it for some time without making any observation, but asked me what other batteries I had on the island. I told him we had only one gun on the height above us. He said he would like to go up and see it. I wished him to have a mule, but he preferred climbing the ascent on foot; and as I now thought myself quite strong enough; and as the cool of the evening was approaching, I offered to accompany him on foot also. Sergeant Craig was in attendance; so we ascended the

promontory all together. From the flag-staff, Captain Frazer had a bird's-eye view of the islands, their channels, and harbour. He asked many questions respecting all these points, on which I was able to satisfy him tolerably well. We then returned to the mansion, the stars appearing as we descended the hill. Captain Taylor of the *Mary* was waiting to see me; I therefore turned our military guest over to the ladies, and went apart with Taylor, to talk over matters of a different interest to that which had just occupied my attention.

Next morning I laid the chart of the islands before Captain Frazer, by his desire. He entered on the subject of our defensive arrangement, as Drake came in; and he soon made it clear to me that the ten guns were placed in a worse than useless position. He said, where they now were they could make no defence against the entrance of ships; and that the battery was too weak to do anything, after a force had got in: in fact, it would only serve to draw a destructive fire upon my own residence. He thought the rock below the conical hill was the best place for a battery; there the southern passage was open to its fire, and by such a situation it would command the harbour in every direction. "And," continued he, "if you were to place a large gun, with a depressing carriage, on the summit of the hill above the rock (which you can do easily, as you are making a spiral road to the top of it), that gun would command the fort below. So that even if the fort were taken, you could beat the enemy out of it again in a trice."—"You are right, sir," said I, "and your ideas shall be put into immediate execution."—"Well," he replied, "we will visit the opposite side, and I shall then be able to speak more positively on the subject."

After breakfast, we went to Allwood's Bay, and reconnoitred the rock opposite the great conical hill. Here Captain Frazer now expressed himself as being quite certain of the eligibility of the plan he had suggested. We then inspected the working gang, under the artillery guard; who, by this time, had got half way to the hill's summit, and therefore had made more than two-thirds of the road. Many large trees had been felled during this operation; and, now stripped of their branches, they lay for timber on the grounds below. Drake was delighted with what had been done, and by the plan in contemplation.

When we had wended up the spiral road, until it brought us immediately opposite to the black rock on which the new fort was to be constructed, Captain Frazer suddenly stood still, and said—"We will throw a drawbridge over the narrow pass, from

this point to our intended fort. I think we stand twenty-four feet above the pass. This must be the only entrance to the fort. Such a position will add much to its security." I was much pleased with the idea: and admired the sagacity which, in a moment, saw its application to the situation of our proposed new battery. On our return down the hill, I spoke some encouraging things to the miserable men; whom I sent for from their work above, to hear what I had to say to them. I expressed to them my satisfaction in what they had done; and said, I had little doubt but that the happiest consequences would result from a steady perseverance in their present orderly and industrious conduct.

After paying our respects to Mrs Drake, we proceeded in my barge to reconnoitre the positions at the northern entrance of the harbour. After some time, Captain Frazer fixed on the steep rocky eminence situated towards the N.E. point of Edward's Island for two guns; which would at once command the northern channel, cover Peccary Field Bay, and co-operate with the fort to be built opposite Spring Hill in scouring the whole harbour; also at the same time be within long range of a forty-two pounder, if one could be got and placed on the summit of that conical hill; by which, this second new fort, as well as the other, would be untenable by an enemy. "And," said he, "fifty men ought to defend that conical hill against a thousand. Nothing but mortars can touch the position."

Having completed the object of our survey, and being near the spot where the pirates' vacant encampment yet stood, I could not resist the desire I had to show it to Captain Frazer, and to Drake. When on the ground, I told them the story of the conspiracy, and fought the battle over again. "The scoundrels!" exclaimed Frazer.—"Ah, but brave fellows, Sir Edward!" cried Drake; "fine fellows in a good cause! See how they laid about them with their cutlasses! if the King of Spain's guards had been opposed to them, it would have been the same."—"That's all very fine," observed Captain Frazer, "but their cause was a bad one, and that is the present question; and if they get their deserts, every man of them must be hung."—"I own that; but I have promised to save them all, if I can," said I, "except the captain. And it is my intention to send him, by-and-by, in the Porghee, to Jamaica to be tried. Four of his crew have impeached him with plundering vessels of different nations, and forcing their captains, passengers, and crews to *walk the plank*."—"Walk the plank!" enquired Captain Frazer; "what is that?"—"It is," I replied, "nothing

more nor less than forcing them to walk overboard into the sea."

Having finished our conversation, we took a peep at the wreck with the glass. "I would advise you, Sir Edward," said Drake, "to order all the things saved from the wreck to be sold in lots, and the hull of the vessel also, and let it be done by vendue; by which you will close your responsible account to whomsoever the things may belong, if they don't fetch five dollars." I thanked Drake for this piece of sound counsel; and as I was aware that the Porghee must proceed forthwith to Porto Bello, I made it my first business, on returning home, to order proclamation to be made, fixing the very next morning for the public sale, that it might not take place after Drake's departure; in which case it might give an evil opportunity to the pirates to take advantage of the absence of the people from their homes.

After dinner, Captain Frazer was so kind as to draw out plans for the two forts he had suggested; and made the model of a depressing carriage for the large gun to be mounted on the summit of the Sugar-Loaf Hill; which sort of gun, he said, he had no doubt could be easily obtained at Porto Bello; as most likely it was in contemplation to demolish the fortifications of that place entirely.

On the following day many of the people attended the auction; but my brother and Van Kempen were too much pressed for time to go, having matters of much greater importance to attend to. The clerk of the Porghee was appointed vendue master, and got his per centage on the sale accordingly. The hull and spars were bought by Allwood and his son Manus. The torn sails, the cordage, some boxes of damaged cochineal, a few bales of damaged silk, and some other articles, valuable before they had been drenched by the sea, together with some smaller things of little note, were purchased chiefly by the people of the village, and others. The whole only netting 432 dollars.

By Saturday the 8th, the shipping arrangements were completed. I had advised Captain Taylor to go to Porto Bello with the Mary, and sell on my uncle's account, instead of disposing of any part of his cargo here: and much to Van Kempen's credit, he strongly urged the same; although, he owned, it was against his own immediate interest to do so. But Taylor demurred; saying, "Mr William Seaward was a strict and straightforward man; and so particular, in not allowing any deviation from his orders, that he could not

venture to do as we suggested." He therefore sold to Van Kempen and my brother whatever they pleased to select, at the prices affixed by my uncle to the invoice; taking bills on England for the amount. The galliot was loaded with the goods purchased from the Mary, and the chartered schooner was full of the merchandise brought in her from Kingston. With these vessels, Van Kempen sailed under convoy of the Porghee, for Porto Bello; and the Mary went out at the same time for Honduras, to take advantage of the escort for a short distance. I wrote a letter to Admiral Vernon, by Captain Drake, requesting two forty-eight, and fourteen eighteen-pound guns, with fifty or a hundred rounds of shot for each. And I desired Drake to procure for me two or three competent stone-masons, if possible; offering them good wages, and a safe return, should they desire to go back. On receiving my letter, and last instructions, he and Captain Frazer took their leave; my best thanks being returned to the engineer, for his very valuable services in pointing out to me the proper way of defending our harbour.

We had no military muster to-day, but Diego mustered his cats, whose rank and file fell short of a hundred by fourscore and ten; however, he was rejoiced to see even the few that had been brought. And having spoken to Van Kempen on the subject, he hoped in time to be master of an ample supply. But indeed we had all reason to be glad of the present importation, if it were only to keep the rats out of the dwelling-houses; which they had already begun to infest, as well as the storehouses, although not in great numbers.

In a few days the Tom Cod sailed for Jamaica, with her loading of the merchandise brought from Porto Bello, but my brother remained with us. After the departure of all the vessels, I looked closely into everything at the settlement, seeing that every one was industriously occupied in their calling, even to the children. I visited every place, and saw that the damage done by the hurricane had been repaired, as far as the power of man could do it. I had my own stoccadoed pen, with the fowls' house and other buildings for the stock, rebuilt substantially in two separate enclosures, behind the houses of Diego and Derrick; leaving the ground at the back of the mansion clear and open. By this alteration we were relieved from much inharmonious noise, and other nuisances. And in a little time I caused the central point of the open space to be occupied by a beautiful little *jet d'eau*, conveyed through a small leaden pipe from the spring above the silk-cotton-tree, and made to play into a stone

basin, which had been brought out to me in my uncle's brig. This *jet d'eau* was a delightful object, as looked at from the dining hall, through the great door to the east; especially when the sun rose high enough above the promontory to shine upon it; a rainbow was then seen in the air quite close to it. And now that the pen and poultry houses were removed, the finely-wooded hill appeared through the shining spray.

On the 26th, Drake came back from Porto Bello, *well laden*; and had left Van Kempen behind, with the two merchant vessels. The Porghee had arrived there with her convoy, on the very day the Admiral returned from bombarding Carthagea, and Drake lost no time in waiting on him with my letter, and to introduce Captain Frazer. "I am glad to see you, sir," said the Admiral to Drake. "But what are *you* sent here to do?" was his salutation to the Captain of Engineers, who bowed, and presented his letters. The Admiral went aside, until he had read them and mine; then returning, said—"Mr Drake, you may take away as many iron guns and as much shot from the batteries of Porto Bello as you please. Captain Frazer, I have no doubt you are a very clever fellow in your way; but the Captain of the Diamond is also a very clever fellow, a capital engineer, both ashore and afloat: so, if you please, you may take the command of Gloria Castle, or any other fort, or place here; but I will not embark you in my ship."

Drake, having got a *carte blanche* for iron cannon, and shot, helped himself in the course of the week to sixteen large guns; two of which were calibered for shot of forty-six pounds' weight; the others for just half that weight of metal. These sized guns are awkward for an English fortress, there not being any English shot that will fit them; but Drake had taken pretty good care to provide against that circumstance; for he not only brought away their carriages complete, rammers and all, but also above fifty tons of shot, and several bales of unfilled paper and woollen cartridges. He helped himself also to some iron crow-bars, and a few wimple-jennies, that were of great service. He was also fortunate enough to succeed in procuring four regular stone-masons, natives of Old Spain, at 3 dollars per week each; their provisions and safe return being also promised.

The Admiral sent for Drake after some days; it was on the 21st. He then talked to him about the prize, saying there should be £5 a man, head-money. He was, however, so well pleased when he heard that his share was at least 10,000 dollars upon the cargo, that he said—"What can I do to serve

you, Mr Drake?"—"If you will send Sir Edward Seaward some gunpowder with the cannon," replied Drake, "I know it will be acceptable. And although it is for the public service, nothing could gratify him, or myself, more."—"Sit down, sir," said the Admiral. He then wrote an order for forty barrels of Spanish gunpowder; which he gave to Drake, with a letter for myself; ordering him to be ready to put to sea with the squadron on the morrow. Drake took in the gunpowder for me, and a few cats for Diego; and sailed with the Admiral in the morning: but when out of port, was ordered to proceed direct for Seaward Islands; the squadron at the same time shaping its course for Punta Toro, to make an attack on the Castle of Chagre, at the embouchure of that river. The Admiral's letter to me was in the usual style, short and pithy:—"I have sent you some Spanish guns, and, at Mr Drake's request, something to cram them with. He says you have taken some pirates; send them to me, as they are *men at arms*, I will find work for them. Yours, E.V.—P.S. I'll send you some sick, and a vessel to repair now and then; Mr Drake says you have brave means and good will. Some day or other I may take a look at you. E.V."

When I had read this letter, which was after Drake had finished his recital of what had occurred, I said—"Your zeal is great, my dear friend; thank you for what you have accomplished. Bring the masons on shore, and let them be comfortably lodged in the village for the present. But I fear we shall disappoint the Admiral's expectations, as to refitting any of his vessels as he would wish, or in giving a competent asylum to his sick; we will, however, do our best. Now speed you to the other side, and bring your wife over to dinner. We will then make some arrangements for future operations." I walked with him down to the beach, and on our way we met Master Diego, who had been on the look-out for the needful. His boat's crew were at his heels, every one with a fine cat under his arm; Diego carrying a monster beast as black as himself. "Thank you, Captain Drake," he said; "will shake rats now, sir, out of their skins."

My dear sister came over with her husband to dinner, as I had desired; after which, he and I made arrangements over a cigar, for putting Captain Frazer's plan into immediate effect. In discussing the business, we found the cigars very handy in helping us through some of the intricacies of our subject. By arranging a given number of them on the table, the sides and angles of the fort to be built at Spring Hill were delineated

agreeable to Captain Frazer's plan : a couple of them, placed parallel to each other, separated about an inch, represented the drawbridge ; and a dozen of the ends of those that had been smoked, served to represent the guns when mounted. Thus, by help of the cigars, having the advantage of both fire and smoke, to assist our contemplations in the formation of the battery, we at length concluded on all that was to be done ; our dear friends the while looking on, and listening to us, not a little amused by the tobacco fortification.

On the following morning, I went over to Allwood's Bay ; and being joined by Drake, it delighted me to witness the complete manner in which the spiral road to the summit of the Sugar-Loaf Hill had been finished : but it was necessary to make a platform on the top. This we now marked out, twenty-four feet in diameter ; informing the artillery-men that a forty-six pound gun was to be mounted on it. With this piece of intelligence they were highly delighted. The four Spanish masons now came over from the village, and were lodged with honest Xavier. I met them at the house where they were, and laid Captain Frazer's plan before them on the table. One of these men was remarkably intelligent ; and I was also happy in finding a competent interpreter, in my old negro friend Xavier. I told the masons they should have twelve labourers, who must quarry the stone on the spot, or near it ; and that the work must be set about without loss of time ; and that I would take care to provide plenty of lime before they could want it. Twelve of the pirate labourers, attended by two of the artillery-men, were then appointed to work at the fort ; leaving one with the remaining fellows to complete the platform.

The next day the Porghee discharged her powder, which was conveyed to the magazine. She then went over to Spring Hill rock, where she put on shore one forty-six pound gun, with twelve of the others, and a large portion of the shot ; returning in the evening to her anchorage. On the morning after, a forty-six pound gun, with a proportion of shot, were landed upon the rocks below Fort George, by hauling alongside : and the same day she disembarked the other two guns, and the remainder of the shot, on the rock where the other battery was to be built.

While Drake was thus employed, I wrote my letters to the Governor of Jamaica, in which I enclosed the depositions regarding the pirates ; and on the 29th the Porghee sailed for Kingston, with the pirate captain, Bartholemey Barnes, and the four men of his crew that impeached him. Before Drake took

his leave, I gave him an abstract from the list I had made of the things taken from the pockets of the pirate's crew the morning they were seized. This abstract related to the four men he was about to convey to Jamaica, as witnesses; and with it I gave him their things also, directing him to restore them if the men should be liberated. I told the Governor in my letter, that Admiral Vernon would find use for the pirate's crew; and, indeed, it might be just as well to suffer them to be killed by the Spaniards, as to take the trouble of trying them, and hanging them ourselves. In my opinion, an example was all that should be desired; and the proper one would be the captain, Bartholemy Barnes.

Drake returned to us again on the 14th of April; after having delivered the culprit into the hands of justice, and witnessed the termination of the affair. Barnes was tried, condemned, and hung in chains on Port Royal Point. The four King's evidences were sent on board men-of-war, on which their money and knives were restored to them by Captain Drake. But there was a strong sensation at Jamaica against the rest of the crew that remained with me; of which latter circumstance the people there were ignorant; and nothing saved the men but an idea of their being already sent to the Spanish main, and in actual offensive operations against the enemy. This business, therefore, was well settled.

Drake brought me letters from England, truly afflicting. My dear and worthy Mr Goldsmith wrote to me a most distressing account of the condition of the peasantry about him; indeed, of the whole country. The frost had been so severe from Christmas-day to the time at which he wrote, that all the wheats had been destroyed in the ground; and he said, if it were to continue much longer, a famine must be the consequence. The Severn was frozen for many miles beyond Bristol harbour; and he had heard that a fair was holding on the Thames. The village elm had been riven by the frost to its very root; and the main trunk of the great oak at Shellard's Lane had been split, if not destroyed. But it was the probable suffering of the poor people that engaged his attention, and called for his commiseration and ours. My dear wife took this subject under her peculiar protection; making it, indeed, the daily and almost hourly topic of conversation. The result was that I wrote to our friend and father, authorising him to remit half the year's rent to my tenants, and to distribute £100 among the poor of Awbury and Hartfield (in addition to the money already allowed), in such sums and at such times as he

might see necessary. To this I most sincerely added our regrets that it was not in our power to send them a supply of flour and other provisions. However, I suggested to Drake, and my brother, the idea of ordering a cargo from Virginia for Bristol ; but the war, and other difficulties, soon obliged me to give up the scheme.

Meanwhile Van Kempen had arrived with his vessels ; which were sent off direct with their cargoes to Jamaica, consigned to Mr Green. But the *Tom Cod* did not return to Seaward Islands with Drake ; that vessel having gone to Virginia, under a homeward-bound convoy through the Gulf, to carry flour and biscuit to Porto Bello, at Van Kempen's suggestion—the English ships there being much in want of those articles : indeed, all their provision was bad, both beef and biscuit. I wished she could have taken her cargo to England.

For very many months there was not a foreign arrival in our harbour ; which I attributed to the war with Spain. But on the 23rd, a French brig made its appearance off, and was piloted in. She was bound to the Spanish main, but had struck on a reef of rocks somewhere to the south-west of us ; and being very leaky, was glad to get shelter anywhere. I received the Captain with great civility, telling him his vessel should be repaired. Preparations were accordingly made, the cargo landed, and the vessel hove down. However, in the meantime, Van Kempen and my brother bought all the cargo, and sold him cacao, and other South-American produce, cheaper than he could buy it on the main. In a fortnight he put again to sea ; having made a better voyage, he said, than if no accident had happened to him ; and our merchants, and honest fiscal, had also good reason to be satisfied with the reef that sent him to our port, for they also had made a good thing of it.

Drake had been employed, since his last arrival, in getting one of the largest guns up to the flag-staff on the promontory ; whence he then moved the twelve-pounder already there to the face of the precipice that overlooks the isthmus. And he now set the millwright, smith, and Derrick, to work, to make a depressing carriage on Captain Frazer's plan, for the large gun now at the flag-staff on the promontory ; and also one for the other large gun to be mounted on the summit of Sugar-Loaf Hill. He was indefatigable at Spring Hill, while the platform was finishing ; and also in forwarding the building of the fort, which went on with great spirit. On the 1st of May, he got the other large gun up to the platform, and on the succeeding

day carried up the shot, and fixed the gun for service. A new flag-staff was erected on the centre of the platform, and a tent pitched round it, the flag-staff serving for the pole. A parapet-wall, of three feet in height, had been built round the platform, upon the circular edge of the steep summit; and a strong gate, nearly seven feet high, with a small tower on each side of it. As the piece of ordnance stationed here was to be lord and master over all the rest, three gates, similar to the one on the summit, were placed for additional security to the post, in the course of the spiral road: the cutting away of the rock rendering it difficult, if not impossible, to ascend the hill on either side of them.

By the middle of May, I felt that I could dispense with the labour of some of the pirates, although a busy time of the year: indeed, I was glad to do so; for many of them had become unruly, and, strange to say, more especially those who had been wounded. I therefore picked out ten of the best behaved, to retain with us, and sent off all the others to Porto Bello, giving to each man the money that had been taken from him. The Admiral was not in port when the Porghee arrived, but the gang of pirates sent was delivered over with my letter to the senior officer.

Drake had the good fortune, on his return, to fall in with a Spanish privateer of fourteen guns, and capture her, after a severe action, in which seven of his men were killed and eight wounded,—nearly half his number; but, happily, he himself escaped without a scratch. It was a moment of exultation, to see the little Porghee coming round the point, with her prize, a vessel more like a sloop of war than a privateer! but a deep anxiety for the safety of our gallant friend somewhat repressed the exultation, till we saw him leap on shore with his hat in one hand, and a sheathed cutlass in the other, calling out to me, as I stood on the rocks below Fort George ready to receive him—“There she is, Sir Edward!!!”

This affair made work for Dr Gordon; and he lost no time in attending to it. No distinction was made between our own wounded seamen and the prisoners: they were all lodged in the village, and equally well taken care of. The privateer carried seventy men, thirteen of whom had been killed, and twenty-three wounded: more than the whole number of Drake's crew. There was some valuable merchandise discovered to be on board the prize; cambrics, silks, cloves, and other articles of consideration. These the rascal had plundered out of a Dutchman; and after doing so, he scuttled poor *Mynheer*, and then

put the crew on shore upon a small island. But he had also taken an English ship, the *William and Mary*, which he sent into La Guira; but as he could not spare many hands to send with her, he had only trusted the captain and mate to remain on board, the crew having been transferred to the privateer. These were released by the noble achievement of the Porghee; making a welcome addition to Drake's strength, at the moment of the capture.

This event incommoded us greatly. Both vessels required much repair, to enable them to proceed to Jamaica; but the wounded men were the cause of greatest anxiety, especially to my dear wife. The prisoners, too, required a guard; and that was very inconvenient: but I had, however, the consolation to consider how much worse it would have been had we not got rid of the greater and worse part of the piratical body, before these unpleasant guests arrived. I therefore quietly and thankfully entered on the arrangements required for the occasion; and had the happiness to command those who faithfully and cheerfully carried them into execution: so that all that was needful was done, and our works, and ordinary business, too, proceeded with little interruption.

Towards the end of June, Drake sailed with his prize for Jamaica; the English seamen taken in her, except two, having entered on board the Porghee. The story of the rich prize she made some months before had no small weight in determining them to this step: besides, they had seen their new commander was a brave fellow; and, perhaps, they apprehended they might be pressed into some king's ship they would not like so well, on their arrival at Port Royal, if they went there without being provided already. Thus the Porghee had her complement of men again; without which she could not have proceeded; as it required at least twelve men to navigate the prize. Four of the privateer's crew, who were Dutchmen, and two of the English sailors, that did not enter with Drake, he having filled up his complement, remained at the settlement; and I was glad at their volunteering to do so.

We seized this occasion of writing to England: not only to our friends, but I wrote an official letter to the Secretary of State, with an account of the capture of the piratical band; of the condemnation and execution of the captain at Jamaica; requesting, in the sequel, that I might be allowed to divide the money and proceeds among the captors, and to know in what proportions the different persons were to share. By the same opportunity I made a requisition for an artillery sergeant, and

nine more artillery-men, from Jamaica ; stating reasons which I deemed sufficient. Before Drake left us, he took the liberty of helping himself to a box of cambrics, and another of silks, from the prize ; the contents of which he distributed among the ladies, saying, "they should be charged to his account : " and on his departure, he very handsomely made Doctor Gordon a present of 100 dollars, out of his own pocket, for his attendance on the wounded men.

In July, Drake returned, bringing the artillery-men with him ; and it rejoiced us all to hear that he had received 22,000 dollars for his own share of the Spanish ship he took in November ; and that the privateer was likely to prove a good prize also ; as many persons seemed eager to buy her ; and the goods she had on board, although not of much bulk, were of great value. The crew of the *Porghee* were now all flush of money, which they literally threw away among the people at the settlement. Drake remained with us for six weeks ; indeed, it was by my particular desire that he did so. The *Avon*, meanwhile, was fitted with swivel stocks for four musketoons ; and, with twelve men and a midshipman, well armed, was sent to cruise off the small Spanish islands to the southward ; the weather being quite settled enough for a boat of her description to go to sea. This was done to satisfy Drake's men, for their money had made them restless. The midshipman put in command of the *Avon* had orders to return in ten days, that another officer and other men might take their turn. This was done ; and no accident happened to the boat on this service, during all its trips. But although she was nearly thirty days at sea, at different times, she took nothing, only a small black sloop with dye-woods, from the Magdalena River. This vessel I thought too insignificant to send to Jamaica for condemnation, especially as the crew had been landed on St Andreas. I therefore sold both her and the cargo by auction, and divided the proceeds among the captors. Martin and Purdy bought the sloop, with money they had made by turtling ; and my brother and Van Kempen purchased the dye-woods.

By the middle of August, the battery below Spring Hill* was completed, twelve twenty-three pounders mounted, and a flag-staff put up. Then, with some ceremony, I named it, after the gallant Admiral who had sent us the guns, "*Fort Vernon*." The workmen were now despatched to the other end of Edward's Island, to erect the projected two-gun battery there ; and

* It appears that Spring Hill, Sugar-loaf Hill, and the Conical Hill, are only different names for the same hill.—Ed.

Xavier and Derrick were employed in building a barrack, for eight artillery-men, at Fort Vernon.

As there was no specific duty at present for the Porghee to do, besides cruising, Van Kempen asked me to let her take the galliot and the prize sloop (which Purdy, very good-naturedly had named the *Jack Martin*), under convoy to the Bay of Honduras, and try what could be done there, as the Porto Bello market was now glutted by English traders. I agreed to his request. He, in consequence, chartered the black sloop; and on Wednesday the 3rd of September they sailed for Belize River, taking letters for my cousin at St George's Key. As Martin and Purdy were now become ship-owners, and went in their own vessel, I put the turtling business into the hands of John Stone and Harry Rock, my two sailor boys, whose term of bondage in a very short time would expire.

Ever since the sale of the pirate's hull, Allwood had been busy at intervals breaking her up; by which he had collected her planks and timbers, and a good deal of other timber besides, all brought to the small bay opposite, where the pirates' provisions used to be landed directly under the rock to the north, where the two-gun battery was now erecting. He proposed, with these materials, to build a small schooner at this place; and having consulted me on the subject, I promised him every facility. "As soon as the artillery barrack is finished," said I, "you shall have Allan Derrick and his apprentice; and I will do this for you because I have on all occasions been well satisfied with your conduct: but I now feel something due to the man who lays down the first keel on Seaward Islands. Besides, I wish to show you, Manus Allwood, that I have not forgotten your gallant conduct on the night we attacked the pirates; and for these considerations, I shall make no charge against you for the labour of my bondmen." Manus was gratified every way by what I had said; not only thanking me, but looking vastly pleased, a tulip blush having risen on his dingy cheek before I was done speaking to him. "Then, sir, if you please," observed the elder Allwood, "I will hire Xavier, with his apprentice, when they have done the work they are upon; and with these men, and ourselves and our apprentices, we shall make good speed. And may I hope your honour will have no objection for the smith to work for us?"—"Every man who is not a bondman is free here, Mr Allwood," I replied, "to do anything he pleases that is lawful: you have as much right to employ the smith as I have."

By the middle of October the two-gun battery was finished;

and by the help of the carpenters now at work on Allwood's vessel, the sergeant of artillery succeeded in getting up the two guns ; and on the evening of the 15th he reported the battery complete, and fit for service. Orders were now given to have all the gun-carriages and guns painted at all the forts ; and the persons employed on this business were afterwards directed to paint the great storehouse at the cave, and also the mansion, and all the houses belonging to it, to preserve the wood. This was an expensive and tedious operation, but so necessary that it could not be dispensed with.

The wages to the Spanish masons now amounted to 348 dollars ; and as I had engaged to go on paying them, until I could send them home, I set them about building a handsome stone fountain of coral freestone at the village ; to be in direct communication with the rock whence the water first gushes forth. It was to be done, and was done, on a plan of their own, the Spaniards being well acquainted with such erections. This fountain was made to pour itself through the beautiful mouths of twelve large conchs, into a great reservoir below ; the shells being cut across with a saw, so as to separate the spiral end, leaving the opening to the mouth unobstructed. The water was made to flow from the reservoir by conduits, as formerly filling our cistern, and thus irrigating our grounds below the silk-cotton-tree, and supplying Van Kempen's people with an ample stream to wash the grated roots of the Indian arrow-root. By this beautiful structure, the charms of the fountain were again displayed in all the elegance of an artful arrangement : but being robbed of their native simplicity, they failed to enchant us as in former days. The villagers, however, now received their water pure and cool from the mouths of the gushing shells ; and I regarded it altogether as a fine achievement.

Before the end of the month the Tom Cod made his appearance, after rather a disastrous voyage, having run ashore with his cargo of flour and biscuit, near Cape Henry, one of the headlands of the Chesapeake. After being got off, unloaded, repaired, and reloaded, he again sailed, and put into Jamaica, being still rather leaky. There, fortunately, he found the English squadron from the Spanish Main ; and at last sold his cargo well. He came down full of other merchandise ; and, in a few days after, Drake came in with the galliot and sloop from the Bay of Honduras, having also had a very unpleasant and tedious voyage, although tolerably profitable to the merchants : but my cousin had left St George's Key ; therefore my letters to him were brought back.

As the 30th would be the anniversary of the birthday of our august sovereign, I resolved to make it a festival. At sunrise all the colours on the islands were hoisted ; and as it was necessary to scale the Spanish guns, the forty-six pounders were fired from the promontory and Sugar-Loaf Hill, at the moment their flags went up. We had a grand field-day on the open ground between the mansion and the fort ; and all the people, including the crews of the vessels, the Spanish masons, and the ten remaining pirates, were regaled under the canopy of the great silk-cotton tree. I gave a fine dinner also at the mansion ; and when the King's health was drank, a salute of twenty-one guns was fired from the batteries ; beginning at Fort George below us, where the St George's flag displayed itself ; the salute being then taken up and finished by Fort Vernon. The people, still assembled, now cheered ; a twenty-gallon cask of Spanish wine having been just served out among them, neither Spaniards nor pirates making any objection to drink to the health of the King of England. At nine o'clock the drums beat ; and, to show a good example, all my guests at the mansion went away. The people, observing the movement, of course separated, and retired cheerfully to their respective homes.

Early in November, I settled with the Spanish masons, I hope to their satisfaction ; and sent them off in the Porghee to Porto Bello, accompanied by Van Kempen, and the three merchant vessels, to try that market once more. I still retained the ten pirates, finding them not only useful, but orderly ; and I had released them from their state of slavery on the King's birthday. I then restored to them the money and other things that had been found in their pockets at the time of their being made prisoners, and told them they should have wages henceforth for their labour. These men eventually proved themselves regenerate, in the ordinary acceptance of the word, some of them serving in our vessels as sailors, and two of them settling in the village, and plying as ferrymen between St George's and Allwood's Bay.

Our numbers were now very much increased, not only by the accession of adult persons, but by births, which had been numerous ; and the young generation was springing up around us, almost beyond knowledge ; but the most agreeable reflection was in knowing that they were growing up in industry, and in the fear of God.

"Ah, dear Edward !" said my beloved Eliza, as she and I sat one evening retired together on the parapet of the fort, to

enjoy the sight of the descending sun ; " how delightful is this goodly scene ; how smooth the lake ; how beautiful the surrounding shores ! And how happy the people of these islands, under your protection ; how happy I, at this moment, too, in being so near to you, and alone ! My heart now dilates with gratitude to our God. I always feel His presence most when we are separated from every earthly being but ourselves. How gracious He has been to me ! how He has preserved you in moments of great peril ; how He has blessed you in everything ! No human power nor foresight could have made this place what it is, without His special favour. Oh, may the people praise Him ! may we ever be grateful to Him, my Edward ! " As she finished speaking, her fair head gradually sunk upon my bosom, shedding such tears as holy angels would love to gather ; but which a holier one preserves unseen, as germs of future joy.

Early in December, Drake returned from Porto Bello with his three vessels under convoy ; and in a few days after he proceeded to Jamaica, taking my brother's schooner with him deeply laden. He did not delay on this voyage, but made haste to return home, on account of the approaching stormy season ; and came to anchor again, with the Tom Cod in company, on the 18th. He brought us letters, one of which was from the Secretary of State, on the subject of the money taken from the pirates. It stated that an objection had been raised to my request, on the score of its being *droit of admiralty* : but on referring to my *grant*, the objection was over-ruled ; and he had it in command from his Majesty to allow the money and proceeds of the wreck to be shared by myself and the people who had attacked the pirates in their camp, and made them prisoners ; saying that I had a right to three-eighths of the whole ; and that I had permission to divide and distribute the remainder among the persons actually engaged, in such proportions as, in strict justice, I might think them respectively entitled to.

On the 20th, which was Saturday, the muster took place as usual ; and I took the occasion to read the Secretary of State's letter ; the troops (if I may so call them,—and why not, for they are all brave musketeers ?) being drawn up round me in a hollow square. When I finished the letter, they gave me three cheers, and I then appointed Monday to pay the money.

On Monday the people assembled on the open ground before the mansion. I stated to them, that there were nine bags with 1000 *pieces of eight* hammered *cobs* in each ; the *cob* being

in value 3s 4d English money, but in Jamaica currency, 5s; and there were four bags, containing 17,200 *piastres*; each *piastre* being two *ryals*, viz., the fourth of one *cobbed piece of eight*. "That is," continued I, "the fourth of one piece of eight *ryals*. I wish you to understand the value of the coin you are to receive. These sums together make 13,300 *pieces of eight*. Besides which, the wreck, and other things, sold for 432 dollars. Now each dollar may be estimated at 4s 6d English money, or 6s 6d or 6s 8d Jamaica currency, which may be equal to ten *ryals* and a half; but 12 of the dollars have been paid to the vendue master, so that there remains of them only 420. If the money were all in *pieces of eight*," said I, "it would be easily divided; however, if I give three dollars as a part of every hundred *cobs*, it will come right, I think; so, with this understanding, I take 5145 *pieces* to myself, which includes 153 hard dollars." I added, "This is my share as Governor and Commandant of the island; and as such, I cannot refuse it; for, in fact, by taking it, I do very little more than reimburse myself for the expense I have been at in feeding the pirates and the Spanish masons for so many months, while they were engaged in making batteries for the general security." And I added to this fair statement, that I had paid the Spanish masons and Hart upwards of 500 dollars in wages; and it had cost me a considerable sum of money in erecting the barracks for the artillerymen: and much still remained to be done; so that I hoped the people would see that I should put very little or perhaps none of the money into my own pocket in the end. The explanation was perfectly satisfactory. Every man now received 150 *pieces* each; the three corporals, 200 each; and Sergeant Craig, 300; and Dr Gordon, 1000.

The money being thus distributed, I said, taking from my pocket the small bag of emeralds I had found on the pirate captain,—“Here are some emeralds: I do not know what they are worth; nor can I know, until they are sent to England; but if you will confide them to me, I will take care that you shall have their value among you when they can be sold.” They all cried out with one voice,—“Keep them!—give them to our honoured lady.” They then called for Lady Seaward; on which I sent Diego to tell her the people desired to see her. Mr Rowley followed Diego; and soon after my dear wife appeared, leaning on Mr Rowley’s arm; the people cheering, and making way for her to pass. In a few minutes, I took her by the hand. For a moment there was a dead silence. Master Diego, who had followed from the mansion, now stepped for-

ward ; and, taking off his hat, spoke as follows :—" Brave and good men, I speak because I am old man. My good master, your Governor and mine, took me from canoe, with Xavier and our wives, nearly starved and perished : my kind mistress, your lady and mine, fed us and our wives ; she caught the fish with her own hand that fed us ; for this, I ask to be the one to give the emeralds to our lady, as a token of our love and duty." As Diego finished, the people cheered him. I then put the little bag into his hand ; on which, kissing the ground, he laid it at Lady Seaward's feet, saying,—" Diego's heart is with it." My dear wife gently took the bag from the ground, when Diego laid it down ; and also taking up his last sentence, she said in an undertone—" I value your own gift, my honest and faithful Diego, not less than these jewels." She then would have addressed the people, but her voice failed : but she wrapped the little bag in her cambric handkerchief, and put it in her bosom,—" Tell them, my Edward," said she, " that I accept the jewels, and will wear them as I would do their affections—at once my pride and ornament." I repeated her words aloud : and after a little more cheering, the people retired ; and my dear Eliza, leaning on my arm, walked with a slow and pensive step up to our residence.

When we sat down, she trembled, and changed colour.—" You are ill, love," I said.—" I am overcome, Edward," she replied : " this is too much for me ! An injury or an injustice I know how to bear ; it is my duty : but this mark of honour, this almost devotion from the people ! and then our faithful Diego, how he showed himself on the occasion ! it is all too much." A tear, that natural solace of strong feeling, came to her relief, and restored her to herself : then smiling, she took the hands of Mrs Rowley and Rosalie, who stood over her, saying, " My kind friends !"

In the evening my brother James and his wife came to see us, when I took the opportunity to speak to him about Jacob his bondman, who had been wounded in the affair with the pirates. I said it was my wish that the year and a half he had to serve should be remitted ; and as I found that I had 175 pieces of eight in hand by mistake, belonging to the captors, I would give it for the man's manumission, if the men it belonged to did not object, which I was sure they would not do.—" The man is very useful to me," said my brother ; he is my right hand man ; I cannot replace him ; the money is no object compared to his services. I do not wish to let him go ; but at anyrate I will not take any money for it, if I do : and I cer-

tainly dare not refuse, if you desire it, because I had him from you as a gift on my first coming to the island."—"Then do the thing handsomely, brother," I replied, "next muster day; and what you lose by the man's services, you will gain by the people's good will and mine."—"I will do it," he said; "but now we are on the subject," continued he, "I must tell you, that I think both Van Kempen and myself not well treated as *officers* of the *Train Band*; that we did not share with others in the distribution of the money found with the pirates." In reply to this, I showed him the Secretary of State's letter, in which it said, "*Among the persons actually engaged.*"—"If any one has a right to complain," cried I, "it is Drake, who saved the wreck from complete destruction, and may be said to have taken possession of her on the strand. But you are not wronged, brother," continued I, "you are the last man I would defraud of his right: and I hope I would not defraud any man." Here the subject rested. We now lighted a cigar, and finished the evening in talking over his success in trade, and quickly accumulating wealth, which acted on him like a cordial, so that we parted in great good humour and brotherly love.

The Thursday following being Christmas-day, large preparations were made for its celebration; and I thought this a fine opportunity for James to release his bondman Jacob; who had been one of Diego's patriarchs, mentioned often in the early part of this diary. When all the settlement was gathered together, I formed the people round me in a ring, with our revered pastor, my brother, and Jacob, standing by me. I then addressed the people in these words:—"By some mistake there remained 175 pieces of eight of the pirates' money unappropriated, and also some gold pieces found in the captain's pocket. It was my intention to propose to you that it should be paid to Mr Seaward to purchase the remainder of the bondage of this brave man (pointing to Jacob), who was wounded in the service of the public; but Mr Seaward will not accept of it; he stands here to give the man his freedom, on this day, and at this place, as a reward of bravery." The people cheered. My brother then took Jacob by the hand, saying, "*You are free*: go where you please." They cheered again.—"I think, good Master Seaward," said Jacob, as soon as he could be heard, "I am *free*; and now, if Master Seaward please, I will go back to Peccary Field to-night, and *free Jacob* and *bondman Jacob* will be just the same."—"I will divide the money among you," resumed I to the people.—"No! no!" was the reply from many; then, after a little pause, and some stir among

them, John Reynolds, one of the settlers from Carolina, came forward and said,—“It is the people’s wish that the money be made an offering to our worthy clergyman.—We desire you will accept of it, Mr Rowley. We owe you much on our own accounts, and on behalf of our children, and we know how little you get for all you do.” Mr Rowley bowed, saying, “In the same spirit you give, so I receive. Good people, I return you my thanks for this mark of your esteem.”

We now left them to their amusements ; and as the Porghee and all the other vessels were in port, the sailors contributed not a little to the jollity and drollery of the scene. The flags were flying on all the heights, and at all the forts, and the vessels displayed their colours. At twelve o’clock the people sat down to a plenteous feast—turtle, mutton, pigs, and poultry ; and when they were all seated, having now a good store of gun-powder, a salute of twenty-one guns was fired from Fort George ; and they then set to in the true English style of rejoicing. The day went off well and soberly ; which I was glad to see, for I knew there was a great deal of wine on the island belonging to different persons. I had prohibited spirits as contraband ; but as the people were becoming rich, I felt I must concede something ; I therefore had allowed wine to be bought and sold ; still no intemperance, even among the Germans or sailors, took place.

On the following day all the vessels were moved into Peccary Creek, for safety against the storms, which we now might expect to visit us. The muster on Saturday was dispensed with, the people being desired to remain at their homes, and secure everything against the breaking up of the weather. It, however, still remained fine ; the people assembling as usual to prayers on the Sabbath. At night, however, the rains began, but unattended by anything like a hurricane, or even a gale of wind ; and so they continued with little intermission for five days, pouring down in torrents.

On the evening of the 2nd of January the sky brightened up ; and on the next day the people throughout the island began the important operation of putting in their crops.

CHAPTER XXIX.

WHEN our agricultural labours were accomplished, all the vessels put to sea on a commercial errand, under convoy of Captain Drake. The Avon was now our guardship, having been

painted and refitted, with two pattereras mounted on the bow, and two musketoons abaft." I was pleased to have this clever little boat so well equipped, lying at anchor off the fort, ready for any service that might be required.

I now made a point of seeing that all the artillery-men were properly accommodated, and completed every arrangement connected with them and their department. The sergeant and men stationed at Fort Vernon were comfortably lodged, and their provision grounds put in good order. Two of the artillery-men were appointed to reside at the two-gun battery on the northern extremity of Edward's Island, which we called Pirates' Fort. A snug house had been built for them, and some ground, not far from the rock, allotted to it, and a negro, with a small canoe, directed to attend at the station. The three artillery-men that first arrived continued to do duty at Fort St George; and all these persons were allowed island pay, in addition to the King's. I took care that all our people, both of the Train Band and vessels, were exercised by the artillery-men at great guns in the fort when occasion offered; that is, the Train Band always on muster days; and the crews of the vessels when in port, and their ordinary duties would permit.

It may not be improper to mention in this place, that ever since John Reynolds made the speech to Mr Rowley, in the name of the people, I regarded him with some attention; for I was much struck at the time by the propriety, if not elegance, of his manner and diction on that occasion. It now happened, that in a conversation I held with him, he confessed to me that he was the son of a squire in the West of England; that he had been wild and unmanageable from his boyhood, often running away from school, and afterwards not settling to any profession or business; that at the age of twenty-one he married a poor girl, his present wife, whose person he could not otherwise obtain; and that by this act, in addition to many others of greater delinquency, he had exposed himself to the just reproaches of his father, and to the alienation of his countenance and support. Finding himself in this merited situation, covered with shame, and penniless, he took advantage of the Government offer, to send persons free of expense to Georgia, whither he went, to bury himself from his family and his friends; but, as I already knew, he never reached that place, having sailed from Carolina to settle here. "And I am very glad," continued he, "that I did so."—"It will be your own fault sir," said I to the poor fellow, "if you have not reason to be glad; for if you prove yourself worthy of my confidence and

friendship, I will endeavour to serve you. But if I take you by the hand, do not venture to try me, as you did your father : an accumulation of disobedience was even too much for him to bear ; and what he could not overlook it is not to be expected that a stranger would forgive." I then invited him to quit Allwood's Bay, where he was submissively living with another family in one house, and take up his residence in the village, where I would give him a house rent free, and recommend him to the attention of my brother and Van Kempen, who, I rather thought, would be glad to employ him as a clerk, until something better turned up for him. I then assured him I would take care he and his wife, and little child, should not starve. After this conversation, Mr Reynolds removed to George Town ; where he conducted himself well, in a short time becoming highly respected by Mr Rowley and myself, and by every one on the islands. Nature had done a great deal for him : he was a man of quick parts, and of humane disposition, highly sensible now of every kindness shown to him.

In the advanced state of our settlement, minor matters are no longer objects for record ; but, during the early part of this year, little has occurred of greater importance. It may, however, be stated, that Drake took two prizes of some value ; our industry, and commerce, and wealth increased ; some marriages and some births took place ; and among the latter I was again an uncle. Allwood launched his schooner in May, which he called the *Lady Seaward* ; and having discovered a number of fine cedar trees, on the western acclivity of Allwood's Ridge, I sent the sawyers there, and in July laid down a schooner of a hundred tons, on the slope of the creek, where my dear wife and myself found shelter and safety, at the close of the memorable year 1733.

About this time I received a letter from Captain Knight, my fellow-sufferer at Porto Bello. He had arrived in England last August, in the *Torrington*, in company with the *Diamond*, Captain Knowles. My friend Frazer's *evil genius*, Knight, had paid the money to my banker I lent him at Porto Bello ; and his letter was merely to say so, besides thanking me. By the same opportunity I received also letters from my bankers, and one from Gloucestershire, with a long account of the destructive consequences of the severe and continued frost of January and February of last year ; accompanied, however, by pleasing details of the great good our dear and revered Mr Goldsmith had done, and was still doing, by the means I had afforded him ; for which not only the poor, but my tenantry, were sensibly

grateful. Well, notwithstanding all this, my banker's account had continued to improve; and I bless God that he never suffered my bowels of compassion to be shut up, or my hand to close, against my fellow-creatures, and still He increased my wealth: my riches multiplied, without my bestowing a thought or a care about them; but I was neither extravagant nor improvident. Our forts were built with the pirates' money, and there yet remained of it more than 2000 dollars for other purposes.

The accounts I received of the ill success of the grand expedition made against Carthagera in the spring vexed me a good deal. I was hurt, because of the failure of his Majesty's arms; but I was sorry that the gallant Admiral had in some degree sacrificed the interests of his country to his dislike or contempt of military men. He had evinced that contempt last year, in his reception of Captain Frazer; and he was accused of it in conducting the attack on Carthagera. However, it cannot be denied that General Wentworth wanted either zeal or knowledge; however much Vernon may be blamed, for seeing, and feeling, and acting on the conviction. But be all this as it may, I had great reason, in consequence, to be very uneasy on our own account; having received intimation that Don Blas de Leso had declared "the English should not now be allowed to hold a hawk's nest in their seas," alluding to our settlement.

Towards the autumn, several Kingston privateers rendezvoused here; and some prizes were brought in. They petitioned me to apply for a regular Admiralty Court, that we might have power to try and condemn the prizes, but I would not do it. They were a great nuisance to the place, so that although they spent some money in it, I heartily desired never to see any of them come into the harbour. Unfortunately I had felt myself compelled to license a house in the village to sell wine and punch; but as I had found it impossible to prevent the ingress of spirits, I put the high duty of one dollar a gallon on it, whether rum, brandy, or Hollands; while I permitted wine of every description to be landed duty free, the *ad valorem* import excepted.

I found it now no easy matter to keep that good order we hitherto had done, especially in the village. Mr Rowley preached, and I was vigilant; but something more was requisite. I appointed Craig town-major, and ordered everyone to repair to their vessels when the drum beat off at nine o'clock. Money became so abundant towards the end of the year, that my dear

wife and Mrs Rowley, as well as myself, trembled for the consequences. I saw no remedy but directing its expenditure into channels the least injurious ; I therefore encouraged the people to dress well, to improve the appearance of their houses and furniture, and to enjoy the comforts of tea and coffee, and wine, at their own homes ; all of which I effected to a certain extent, and thereby kept the greater part of the men from idling and drinking at the village. Every Saturday we held our military parade and muster, and that day was appointed also for a market at the Black Rock. Money was now the medium in all transactions, so that things were bought or sold with great facility.

But all my efforts to preserve the orderly conduct that had previously existed were unavailing ; so that at last I was compelled to tell the people, that if they did not keep apart from the privateer's men, I should be obliged either to make them do military duty continually, or to apply to Jamaica for a company of soldiers, who could not be paid without laying a heavy poll-tax on everyone of them. This was a most unpleasant state of things. A profusion of money, the introduction of wine and spirits, and the presence of our profligate visitors, were the principal, if not the sole causes of all this disorder. My dear wife, in anguish of spirit at what she saw, often said to me, "O my Edward, if we do not take great care, the fate of Port Royal must be ours !" After much perplexity, and frequent counsel with those I loved and esteemed, I resolved (at hazard of proceeding illegally), to forbid any privateers entering the harbour unless in distress. And I took the earliest opportunity of informing those in port of my determination. Accordingly, henceforward, I did not suffer one of them to come in, but warned them off when they approached : and, if they persisted, gave them a hint from the forty-six pounder on the promontory that I was in earnest.

By this measure, I eventually got rid of them ; and in a short time after, it was my great happiness to see the people to a man return to their industrious and sober habits. Of late I had made it a rule to visit one or more of the settlements every day, and always the village, attended by my orderly ; and since the disorder in the island, I found it necessary to observe more state in my appearance. I dressed well every day, and caused all the principal persons connected with me to do the same. I wished to rule by love only, but circumstances had obliged me to make the people feel they must also stand in awe of my authority ; and this could not be done without

having recourse to appearances, as well as to vigilant circum-spection. Prevention of crime was my object. I trembled at the idea of having recourse to punishment.

By the end of the year, perhaps some good, and I hope not much evil, had remained, as the result of our intercourse with the privateer's men. The characters of individuals had been somewhat developed ; and most happy am I to remember that all my early friends and associates, negroes as they are, never were contaminated. We had improved in all the arrangements of social life ; uses were found for money in this way, by which a salutary emulation was excited ; an emulation for something beyond a hut, a garment, and a meal ; and evidences of it were to be seen at every habitation within and without, and in the dress of the inhabitants.

By a strict observance of divine worship, by the blessing of God, by precept, and by example, and by strict and impartial justice, and a due vigilance, I had the satisfaction, when our Christmas came round, to see and to feel that we were again what we before had been : and I took the occasion which that sacred day afforded me, to address the people at some length. I endeavoured to show them how narrowly they had escaped destruction, and how thankful I was to Almighty God to see them again restored to His favour : and I trusted in future that no bad example, nor any other motive, should induce a single individual of them to desert the path of duty ; but that they would all live orderly, industriously, and soberly ; as many present had done hitherto without wavering, through all the temptations which the licentious strangers had thrown in their way. I concluded with recommending them to the protection of Almighty God, for the sake of Him whose incarnation we were about to commemorate with thanksgivings and rejoicings. And I desired them now to enjoy themselves in all mirth with sobriety. They did not cheer me—I was glad they did not—but a more grateful sound reached my ears—"We are sorry that any should have offended. We have no complaint to make. The Governor has done well."—"I am satisfied," I replied ; "I am your friend as well as your Governor." They now cried, "Long live Sir Edward !" as I left the ground, accompanied by Drake and Mr Rowley. My dear wife anxiously awaited my arrival at the mansion, to know the result of my address to the people. For this year had been a year of great anxiety and uneasiness to us on their account ; and it was gratifying to her kind heart to hear how well they had received my admonition.

We commenced the year very well : the people were not

only rich, but industrious ; and the public coffers also in good case. Our produce for export was of some value, especially hats, Indian arrow-root, cigars, and stockings ; besides now above twenty bags of cotton had been picked and cleaned. In the spring my schooner was launched, which I called the *Francis Drake*, in compliment to my friend. When she was rigged and fitted for sea, I sold her to Mr Reynolds at a remunerating price ; and took his bond for the amount. We had now five merchant vessels ; and the genius of Van Kempen found employment for them all. Some settlers in the meanwhile had come from Jamaica ; several houses were built in the village at private expense ; and the whole ground became occupied, so that I found it necessary to devise a plan for dividing the woodland regions, by which I proposed to keep about two thirds of it, next to the silk-cotton-tree plantation, as a park for the deer ; and to cut down all the trees in the other part to make room for extending the village.

At the suggestion of Mr Rowley, I now raised a square shed on four pillars at each horn of Fort George, large enough to receive fifty persons in each. These sheds or open halls were pleasant places to sit down in at any time of the day, and promised to be useful for men on duty, or others, to retire to from the scorching rays of the sun. The roofs were boarded, and painted a lead colour ; the pillars green ; looking well from the lake, being not only useful but ornamental.

This was the first year of jubilee on the island ; and, in consequence, some of my brother's bond-servants, but more of my own, would receive their freedom. To be prepared for this event, we made an accession of twelve male and nine female young negroes from Kingston, placing them under the same conditions of bondage with those that had preceded them. On the 9th of April, John Stone and Harry Rock, the two sailor boys, and Allan Derrick, the ship carpenter, and Priscilla his wife, and three other negro women, received their freedom in form ; proclamation having been made on the spot, for any man to come forward and say *why the person whose name was now called should not be free*. In July, Abel, Noah, and David, Diego's patriarchs, had their manumission ; Jacob, their fellow, having been freed by my brother before, as has already been related. And in December, Harold and Marcus, the sawyers, with seven other men, five of whom were the artificers' apprentices, and four women also, received their freedom from bondage. The law of the settlement was thus established : the act done would be referred to as a *precedent*.

CHAPTER XXX.

IN September, the Sea Horse, Captain Limeburner, arrived from Jamaica, with despatches for me, on his way to the Spanish Main. Being afraid to approach the island, he hove to at a great distance from the promontory, and fired a gun, making the usual signal for a pilot, the Union Jack at the fore-top-gallant-mast head. This was answered by the great gun at the flag-staff, our colours being already up. A boat was instantly despatched to pilot him in. I ordered the bugle to sound, and all the men to be put under arms. He saluted us with thirteen guns, as he approached Fort Vernon; and, as he hauled up for the anchorage at Fort George, we returned his salute from the battery. The flags were flying on Sugar-Loaf Hill, on the height above German Town, and at the three forts. Drake waited on him directly after he dropped anchor; and they came on shore together. He was received with a sergeant's guard; and the two sentinels, placed for the occasion before the mansion, presented arms to him as he put his foot on the step of the piazza. I met him there with all due courtesy.

After the moment of ceremony was over—"Here are despatches for you, sir," he said; adding, almost in the same breath, "what a thundering piece of ordnance you have got on the height above us here! we were all surprised by its report, so many leagues off. What a place this is!" continued he, with an air of great surprise. "I see nothing around me but flags and forts, and soldiers. I expected to find a miserable, blackguard hole, like the Caymanas; but this is another Gibraltar!" I smiled as he spoke, making no other reply than "I am happy to see you here, sir," and then begged permission to read the despatches he had brought me, and went aside for that purpose.

Without much preamble, they set forth grievous complaints, as made by the owners and captains of privateers; followed by a remonstrance, and something like a rap over the knuckles, for denying them rendezvous at Seaward Islands. The next matter was relative to making a settlement at the island of Rattan, near Cape Honduras; requesting I would send Lieutenant Drake to the Mosquito shore, to co-operate with Lieutenant Hodgson, about supplies for the troops, and workmen now employed on the forts and town already in progress on that island; and to do everything in my power to forward or succour the undertaking. The despatch concluded by observ-

ing that, of course, I was aware of the Spaniards having taken possession of Porto Bello, and that a large naval force of the enemy was at this time collected at that port.

After reading the packet, I put it in my pocket, and desired to know how long we should have the honour of Captain Limeburner's company, hoping he would not sail very soon. "I will stay a few days," he replied, "if I may get any fresh provisions for the ship's company. I had but just dropped the anchor at Port Royal, after a long cruise, when I received orders to put to sea for the Spanish Main, and with your despatches. All hands on board will soon be eat up with the scurvy, if I don't look sharp. Can we buy any fresh *prog* here, such as turtle and vegetables? I should like the lads to refresh a little, before we go on active service again." Instead of making him any reply, I addressed myself to Diego, who stood, full dressed, under the arch that separates the two halls. "Let a supply of turtle, and yams, and plantains, and pumpkins, and melons for one hundred and twenty men, be sent on board the frigate immediately; and to-morrow morning, at sunrise, let them have a full supply of fish; and every day while his Majesty's ship remains here let them have the same." Diego bowed profoundly and retired. Captain Limeburner stared, and being an ugly fellow with a cast in his eye, it was difficult to guess whom he looked at. Drake was ridiculously moved, either by Master Diego's bow, or by the naval captain's astonishment; and finding it impossible to preserve his gravity, he walked away into the back hall. "You don't mean this as a present, Sir Edward," said the Captain.—"I do," I replied.—"I did not fish for that," he rejoined: "my crew are flush of money; let them buy what they want. I could give the purser an order to purchase, if there was need of that; but I wish to see the fellows eased of their cash; it's as bad to them as the nightmare; they are never easy till they get clear of it." In consequence of this declaration, I requested Drake to call back Diego, and countermand the order.

Mr and Mrs Rowley, with Mademoiselle Filibert, now made their appearance, and soon after Lady Seaward came in; on which the stranger was introduced. He endeavoured to be very agreeable, appearing to be mightily taken with the ladies, and soon got into conversation with them; but it was all about this wonderful place. "He had made the land at the risk of his ship; he never saw a place so beset with shoals and breakers. If the directions he got from the Master Attendant at Jamaica had not been very clear, he could not have done

it."—"What marks did he give you, sir?" said Drake, interrupting him.—"To keep well to the eastward of the Seranillas," he replied; "and when I got into $14^{\circ} 30'$ north, to steer due west, and keep a good look-out ahead."—"I am happy no accident happened to you, Captain Limeburner!" said my dear wife; "for these shores are so dangerous of approach, that I should have trembled had I known so large a vessel as yours was endeavouring last night to make her way to the land."—"As to the matter of that, madam," replied he, "we are but a *cock-boat* where there is plenty of water; but no seaman likes your reefs and breakers, running twelve or fourteen leagues off shore; and I hope you don't laugh at me." This was an unexpected and unmerited retort to my gentle Eliza's kind and sincere assurance of the interest she took in his safety; but at once she made him this reply:—"You are accustomed to rough and brave companions, Captain Limeburner; we are not brave enough to jest with another's feelings, or to laugh when the question at issue is life or death. As I felt, so I spoke; and I am happy to see you here in safety."—"I ask your Ladyship's pardon," said the honest tar: "I thought you might please to be witty at my expense; ladies do so sometimes. An admiral's wife made me look very foolish, not long ago, by a joke; but I won't repeat it; none but sailors and sailors' wives are up to it." Our visitor was now again in good humour, and began to expatiate on the amazement everything he saw here had produced in his mind. He had looked for nothing but reefs without and rocks within,—a few fishermen's huts, and some negroes,—a poor miserable place; but all was truly wonderful! "Why," said he, directing one of his eyes through the open doors to the east, while the other, I think, was cast on Rosalie, "I have not seen anything like that beautiful water-spout since I was at Hampton Court." My courteous wife thanked him for deigning to compare anything here with what he had seen at the palace of our gracious King; but Rosalie, never having heard a *jet d'eau* called a *water-spout* before, or for some other reason, covered her face with her handkerchief.

In about an hour the gallant Captain left us; and shortly after I prepared to return his visit, not forgetting to give immediate directions for apprising the shopkeepers at the village, and the settlers generally, that the frigate's crew would purchase from them articles of merchandise and produce. "Tell the German women, Diego," said I, "they will now find a good market for their stockings."

I went on board in state, accompanied by Drake, and was

received with military honours. Although the ship had not been three hours at anchor, she was moored, the sails were furled, the yards squared, the decks clear, and the awnings spread, the ship's company clean and the marines dressed. There was no clamour nor noise, everything bore testimony that a ship was Captain Limeburner's proper station in life. The officers were introduced to me one by one; I spoke to each of them, on whatever happened to strike my mind at the time. I was shown round the ship; on the appearance of which I endeavoured to pass suitable compliments; and on my return to the quarter-deck, I requested the pleasure of seeing Captain Limeburner with his officers at dinner; which invitation they readily accepted.

Having thus finished my visit of ceremony to the frigate, I returned to the mansion, attended by my friend Drake. As soon as seated I gave him my despatches to read; after which we had a long conference on the subject of the settlement making at the Island of Rattan. But the dinner-hour being near at hand, he was obliged to leave me to bring Mrs Drake from Spring Hill, before we could finish the conference.

At the appointed time our guests from the frigate arrived, and we sat down to fare as sumptuous as the island could produce. Here again was matter of astonishment, and agreeable surprise to our wondering friend.—“What! and mutton too!” cried he.—“Yes; I replied, “and I shall have the pleasure of sending some of it alive for you and your officers to take to sea.”—The officers thanked me: Limeburner said nothing. The dinner went off very well: it could not be otherwise; the table was covered with delicacies, the cooking capital, and the servants in attendance numerous and handy; my wines also were excellent, but our naval guests hinted that a bowl of punch would be preferred; so, accordingly, a royal bowl of lime-punch was produced, having one of my elegant punch-ladles, with a doubloon in the bottom, to serve it. The officers did justice to the beverage, and became very merry; but on coffee being announced, we all joined the ladies in the other hall; having made an arrangement to visit Allwood's Bay next morning, and dine with Captain Drake, at an early hour.

After my guests were gone, I sent for Town-Major Craig, and gave him particular directions as to the guard, the sentinels, the wine-house in the village, and every other matter that I thought required vigilance during the stay of the frigate; my policy being always to guard against mischief.

The next morning early, Lady Seaward, and Mr and Mrs Rowley, with Mademoiselle Filibert (Fidele, who had now grown both fat and lazy, being left behind, to keep the little girls company), went to Spring Hill in the barge, and breakfasted with my sister. Drake was up before the sun, and on board the Porghee, getting her ready for sea; but he returned to the château with Captain Limeburner, and three of his officers and a young midshipman, about noon. The whole party instantly set forward to see the fort, and explore the corkscrew road to the summit of the hill. We proceeded directly through the first gate; the road winding from thence to the westward, our backs being turned on the fort.—“I should like to see the fort first,” said Captain Limeburner.—“We are going there now, sir,” replied Drake.—“A rum way to get to a place,” cried the Captain—“to make sail from it.” I smiled, and we kept on our course, following the gradual ascent of the road, from east to west, from west to north, from north to east; at which point we found ourselves at the draw-bridge. “Well, this is capital!” exclaimed our companion, as we passed over into the fort. The artillery-men were all at their post; and he showed great pleasure in examining the guns, and in talking to the men about the weight of metal, and some other points. “This fort is well placed,” he observed, “for giving a raking fire to any ship coming in from the southward.” I told him to whom I was indebted for the plan. We now left the fort, and proceeded to ascend the hill in the same direction. On coming round, so as to be over the gate by which we entered, we came to the grotto that had given Drake the first motive for making a winding path up this ascent. Much pains had been taken since its first discovery, to adorn it. Coralines and sea fans, and large beautiful shells, were placed around in great profusion; but all so disposed as not to produce an idea of confusion or superabundance. Having admired this enchanting cavern awhile, we continued our route; for although we were ascending, yet so gradual was the slope (being only an elevation of one foot in twenty), that an acclivity was scarcely perceptible. The effects this spiral road gave to the eye of the spectator, with respect to the surrounding scenery, were truly astonishing: at every step something was seen and something lost sight of; and although we came round and round again and again, upon every object that is in view of the hill, yet by constantly varying the ascent we varied the aspect of the prospect. At length we arrived on the platform, from whence the *coup-d’œil* was truly delightful; but the large

gun rivetted the attention of our companion. "I suppose," said he, "it is the fellow to this you have got on the other height." I told him it was. "And the Spaniards," exclaimed he, "allowed Porto Bello to be taken, with guns such as these to defend it! the lubbers!—With this gun, in this place, Sir Edward," continued he, "you should beat the devil out of the bay, if he were to come in." Saying this, he put his hand in his pocket, and gave the sergeant of artillery a dollar, to drink the King's health. We then retraced our steps; and having, of course, to wind back in an opposite direction, the scenery became so changed, in the succession of objects to the eye, that it scarcely appeared the same landscape.

We had just time to put off our coats to cool, so as to dress for dinner, after the fashion of old Commodore Gunman, when dinner was announced. Drake gave us a complete course of fish and shellfish, followed by a boiled turkey and a fine Dutch ham, a roast kid, a raised pie, and a brace of Mrs Allwood's gallenos. After dinner he showed what the island could produce for a dessert: pine-apples, melons, shaddocks, oranges, and bananas, all surrounding a royal bowl of punch, made with our own limes, were placed on the table. Some odd things were said at dinner by our nautical visitors, which made our ladies smile; but I will only repeat one of them. When the roast kid was brought on table entire, and with his head erect, a young midshipman present mistook it for a dog; and the moment it was set down, and he gave it a glance, he cried out,—"Bow wow!"—"O no," said Rosalie, who sat next him; "*c'est un chevreau*."—"He *is* a queer shaver, sure enough," replied the boy; "but you must not gull me with an outlandish name; may be you called him Pompey."

After dinner the conversation turned on the uniform worn by the navy. "I have heard," said I, "that his present Majesty, having determined on giving a uniform to the navy, was led to make choice of that you wear from seeing a blue riding dress, with white lappelles, on an elegant and beautiful lady of high rank, at a hunting party."—"That's Betty Martin!" replied Captain Limeburner.—"Who?" I rejoined.—"Oh, *it's all my eye*, that," he exclaimed: "nothing but a cram for land lubbers." After pausing a moment, and looking a good deal vexed, one eye resting on me, the other directed to the harbour, he resumed:—"Why, our uniform was worn by *Admiral Noah*: ay, and before his time: *Old Ocean* himself wore it time out of mind. You have noticed *his blue jacket*, I suppose, and have seen *his white lappelles*, when he puts on

his full-dress uniform: and he always wears that, d'ye see, in a gale of wind."—"Thank you, noble Captain," I replied; "I shall not forget to note that down, as a brave attempt to reflect honour on the coat you wear." Before nine o'clock we all left the château, having previously invited our naval friends to visit us on the morrow, it being muster-day.

On returning to our own home, my Eliza asked me what Captain Limeburner could mean by saying "*That's Betty Martin*." I told her, in reply, I was as much at a loss to know his meaning, as she could be, at the time he spoke it; but I now recollected having heard the expression at school, where it was a common joke with the Latin scholars. Its origin I believed to be in a Romish prayer to *Saint Martin*, which begins,—"*O mihi! Beate Martini!*" and as far as that goes, may literally be translated,—"*O to me, blessed Martin;*" but which jocosely may be read,—"*Oh, my eye, Betty Martin!*" and this I believe to be the origin of Limeburner's exclamation.

On the following day there was a grand market at the village. Boat-loads of sailors came on shore from the frigate, and bought largely; chiefly stockings and hats, and plait for hats; also some shopkeepers' goods; no small quantity of tobacco and vegetables; and having taken a great liking to Gortz's sausages, he supplied them abundantly. Captain Limeburner landed his marines a little before noon. Our train band then fell in; and we mustered nearly one hundred rank and file, exclusive of the strangers. The marines beat us in exercise; but our men beat them hollow in firing at the target. Captain Limeburner was very angry at this, threatening to flog the marines if they did not do better. "Don't blame the men, sir," said Craig, respectfully, who stood by us: "give them practice, and they will fire well;—no man can do anything well that he does not do often." The naval captain, with one eye still fixed on the marines, cast a piercing glance on poor Craig with the other, saying in reply, "Who the d—l are you, to prevent me flogging my marines, if I like it?" On which Craig again respectfully put his hand to his hat, and walked away to the left.

After the business of the day was over, we all dined on board the frigate. The dinner was rude, but hearty. There was some excellent pea-soup; a great pilau of three boiled fowls, stuck full of cloves, and smothered in a pile of rice; a double piece of ship's pork; a calipee of turtle, baked in the oven; a baked plum-pudding; and a dish of pancakes, half a foot high. A horn-blower stood under the half deck, just

before the cabin door, playing on his instrument all the time we were at dinner. His notes were most incongruous, and some of his blasts almost ridiculous; but our unsophisticated host often praised the music, declaring "he was the best horn in the fleet." In the course of conversation, Captain Limeburner proposed sailing the next day; saying, "the fellows had now plenty of *fresh grub*, and he must see what the *Dons* were about *on the main*." I, however, succeeded in persuading him to remain till Monday, and attend on divine service to-morrow with his officers and crew. "Man does not live by bread alone," observed Mr Rowley, opportunely, "but by every word that proceedeth from the mouth of God."—"I approve of that," replied Captain Limeburner: "although a sailor, I hope I am not quite a *Turk*, though they say I am a *bit of a Tartar*." This remark drew a smile from his officers; the allusion seemed not to be lost on them; and it could not but bring to my mind his reply to honest Craig—" *Who the devil are you, to prevent me flogging my marines, if I like it?* "

On Sunday we were much crowded, even under the canopy of the great tree; but it was a most gracious sight to my dear wife and myself—so large a congregation: namely, our now numerous people, and all the frigate's crew, assembled to worship on the very same spot where, in time past, she and I alone, with our dear little dog at our feet, lay waiting patiently on that gracious God, who had not only answered our prayers in mercy to ourselves, when we alone were the inhabitants of the island, but who had now almost miraculously raised in this spot a consecrated temple to Himself, and brought to it even a multitude of grateful worshippers. "I am like Jacob," said I, "who had crossed Jordan with his scrip and staff only; and, behold, he returned over it at the head of *two bands*!" A celestial tear stood in my sweet wife's eye when I said this to her; and I thought Rachel, the beloved of the patriarch, must have looked like her.

Early on Monday morning, half a dozen sheep, a few turtle, some poultry, and a large supply of vegetables, were sent on board the frigate with my compliments. The boat brought back the thanks of Captain Limeburner and his officers, with a present of two casks of vinegar—an article we much wanted. The Porghee was getting in readiness to sail out of the harbour with the frigate, while Drake was at the mansion receiving his instructions how to proceed as to the business to be done at the Mosquito shore with respect to the settlement making at the Island of Rattan. After finishing what I had to say to him

relative to his public duty, I desired him to procure three stone-masons; as I saw clearly that the village must be extended, and a church built for the accommodation of our increasing population. As soon as the sea breeze set in, the two vessels weighed and stood out to sea.

During Drake's absence, about one-third of the woodland region was cut down for the site of the new buildings; a street being marked out in a continuous line from that already built, but intersected at right angles by a broader street, opposite to the anchorage, and running back nearly to the face of the hill. At this upper extremity it was intended to place the church: and at the crossing of the streets, in the square of their intersection, a fountain was to be made by means of a leaden pipe leading from the spring at its source. Drake brought the masons on his return, and gave a flaming account of what was doing at Rattan. There were engineers, and a battalion of King's troops, and plenty of Government money, but they were in want of almost every necessary. Van Kempen pricked up his ears at this information, and lost no time in sending off two vessels with supplies; some part of which was our own island produce and manufacture, even to brown pans and dishes, made by the Germans, which now they had learned to glaze, by throwing salt into the kiln before they took out the ware. The masons, and bricklayer, and carpenters, and a suitable number of labourers, were quickly set to work upon the church—a plain building, with a turret for only one bell.

By one of our vessels from Jamaica in October, I received a gracious letter from my friend Lord Harrington, in which he told me the King had raised Sir Robert Walpole to the peerage; and had given himself also a step or two in the same way. But he added, whatever situation he might fill, he hoped I would ever count on his services on all occasions. I read the letter after dinner to my domestic friends; and then laying it down for a moment, observed that "Lady Seaward would have been burned for a witch seven years ago."—"How so, Edward?" she exclaimed.—"On a memorable occasion, my love," said I, "you predicted that the King would either dismiss Sir Robert Walpole with a fool's cap or a coronet."—"May the Lord now guide him!" she replied. "I forgive him; but his country and posterity, I fear, will not. *History* seeks justice, without mercy." At this remark, Mr Rowley shrugged up his shoulders; and while I folded up the letter, and put it in my pocket, I proposed the health of my noble friend by his new

titles of Viscount Petersham, Earl of Harrington. Here this short conversation ended, soon turning to the ever-interesting subject of our own settlement.

CHAPTER XXXI.

ON Tuesday, December 7, 1742, early in the morning, the *look-out* at the flag-staff on the promontory reported several large ships in sight, but could not make out what they were : he hoisted our colours, and then came down. I immediately sent for Drake, but lost not a moment myself in hastening to the height, to reconnoitre them. In about half an hour I made two of them out to be large frigates, and three others armed brigs : they were then becalmed. I was observing them attentively with the glass when Drake arrived ; and at that instant I saw an English ensign blow out from the mizen peak of one of them, the first of the sea breeze having just reached her. "O, they are English," said I, giving Drake the glass. He had scarcely put it to his eye when he exclaimed, "*All Spanish !* Sir Edward."—"Not so !" I replied ; "are you sure of that ?" He took another look at them. "The sooner we are at quarters," he cried, "the better ; they are all Spanish men-of-war." Van Kempen had joined us just as Drake spoke. "Let them fire the *big gun* then," he said. I desired that the gun should not be fired without my orders ; and instantly proceeded to descend, taking Drake and Van Kempen along with me. "They certainly meditate an attack on us," said Drake, as we turned away from the flag-staff.—"And it is my business," I replied, "to give them a warm reception."—"Allow me, then," he rejoined, "to go out with the Porghee, and reconnoitre." I made him no reply ; but stopping for a moment, called Price, the fifer, and bade him run down before us, and say I desired the bugle to be sounded *to assemble*, and then return to the signal-post, to bring messages from thence to the mansion. I then addressed Drake : "I shall lose no time in making my dispositions ; but I do not think I will allow you to stir from the harbour."

After this not a word was spoken during our return. A thousand things to be done, and which *should have been already done*, crowded into my mind. I had but just time to give them anything like an arrangement, before I sat down in my own hall. In a minute I was on my legs again, strong in a feeling of collectedness for the occasion.—"Captain Drake," said I, "let

the Porghee be towed round, and moored athwart the mouth of the cove, under the precipice on the east side of the isthmus, ready to slip, if necessary. Let the merchant vessels be immediately run close up into Peccary Creek. The Avon and boats to be kept ready for any service that may be required." He went to put the orders into execution, not making any remonstrance or reply, beyond saying, "It shall be done."—"Mr Van Kempen, I charge you to get some water-tight casks up to the promontory, and employ people, and asses, to carry up water to fill them; and convey provisions to the same place in sufficient quantity, lest we should be driven to make a stand there, with all our women, and their children." He began to talk. "Take example from Captain Drake," I said, hastily, "and do you as you are desired!"—"I will make the women carry," he replied.—"Do so, if you please," I bawled out, with some vehemence; "only let it be done, and that speedily. Craig," said I, lowering my voice as I spoke to him, who at the time was standing very near to me, "I believe we shall have to fight; see that everything is ready for the small-arm men; sixty rounds in their cartouch boxes, with a spare flint. And take care to deposit kegs of ball cartridges in such places as you think may be safe and right, in case of being hard pressed by the enemy should he land. I intend thirty of our men to be detached to Sugar-Loaf Hill, besides twenty sailors to the battery. Send appointments there for that number, with three kegs of ball cartridges, and some spare flints: and have the accoutrements for all the rest arranged under the sheds at Fort George. But there is so much to do the men cannot be allowed to fall in till the last moment."

By this time the people had collected, among whom was the sergeant of artillery from Fort Vernon, and one of the artillerymen from Pirates' Fort. But we had been guilty of great negligence: there were no cartridges filled for the Spanish guns. The artillerymen at hand were immediately sent to the magazine; from whence ten barrels of gunpowder, and a bale of paper and woollen cartridges, and some slow match, were taken and conveyed to Fort Vernon. And I was glad to get this ammunition over, even unfilled; for I expected every moment, now the sea breeze was freshening, to see Price come down from the height with the intelligence that the Spanish squadron was crowding sail for the port; but as yet he did not make his appearance. Two barrels of gunpowder and cartridges were quickly sent to Pirates' Fort by the canoe that brought the artilleryman at the blowing of the bugle; and the same

quantity was now got up to the promontory ; also a supply of filled cartridges brought to Fort George. Every boat was in requisition, everybody was employed.

My brother and the Doctor waited for orders. I took my brother aside : "James," said I, "go home immediately, and let your wife and children be removed to German Town, with all your money. And remember, in case of an attack, it is my wish that they, and all the German women, take refuge on the height where the flag-staff is. But when they are there, take care that no person hoists the colours, for by so doing the place of their refuge would be shown. Meanwhile, order the women to take water and provisions to the height ; and you return to me as soon as you can."—"I don't like this business, brother," he replied ; "but at anyrate I think it right to place the women in safety ; and I will see to it immediately."—"Doctor Gordon," said I, "let your wife accompany Mrs Seaward to the height above German Town, to be out of the way. I fear there will be work to-day for you."—"In that case," he replied, "I can't spare my wife ; she must come to the hospital." But his wife thought otherwise, and went off with the rest of the women on that side of the settlement to the height above German Town.

Ten o'clock had arrived without any decided report from the flag-staff. I sent up orderly Corporal M'Nabb, to try his sagacity ; he returned, saying, "that all the vessels were laying to, except one of the brigs, which he supposed was seeking to find the channel ; but she was looking for it off the Turtle Islands." Drake now rejoined me ; having stationed the Porghée across the cove, our haven of safety not to be forgotten. Having done this, he had only to walk across the isthmus, and come through the village and woodland region, to reach the mansion. I told him my arrangements in a few words, and desired him now to go with all speed to Spring Hill, for Mrs Drake and the dear children, and to send all the women and children from Allwood's Bay to take refuge "on your head, my dear friend !" said I, "on *Drake's Head*: you know we must now call everybody and everything by their proper names." I spoke this with relaxed features ; for I wished that he should feel, as I had been a little austere in the line of duty, that we were nevertheless the same dear and familiar friends.—"They will be safe enough at Spring Hill, Sir Edward," he replied.—"They may not, sir," was my answer, rather sternly ; "if the Spaniards do attack us in right earnest, they will put out all their strength against Fort Vernon and the hill that commands

it. Let me see your family here directly." Drake smiled, and bowed, and went off; and within an hour returned with his precious charge in my barge; and all the other women and children from Allwood's Bay in the Avon.

Our people were every one in motion: like ants whose hill had been suddenly invaded by the rude kick of some country clown or wicked schoolboy. Some were going, some were coming, some laden, some empty. The Avon was now despatched to Fort Vernon with a detachment of twenty seamen (the merchant vessels being all safe in Peccary Creek), to reinforce the artillery corps stationed there. And thirty of the train-band were sent to defend Sugar-Loaf Hill. At the same time a boat was sent to Pirates' Fort, with six sailors, carrying along with them provisions and small-arms for themselves and for the artillery-men and negro boatman that belonged to the fort. This boat brought over all the women from the settlement at Pirates' Land; their husbands, our late emancipated negroes, having already come to us on the sounding of the bugle. I deputed Corporal Andrews and Lance-Corporal Finlayson to go with the detachments to Spring Hill; and offered my brother the command. But he said he did not think himself equal to it; and thought I should give it to Captain Drake. "I cannot spare him," I replied. Then instantly taking hold of a piece of paper, I wrote a commission for Craig, styling him Lieutenant James Craig, and appointing him to the command of Edward's Island, and of all the forts thereon, *pro tempore*; also commanding every person to obey him in all things, &c. "Here, Craig," said I, "go and take the command of Fort Vernon, and defend Sugar-Loaf Hill to the last. Here is your commission."—"I thank your Honour," he replied; "I hope I shall do my duty." He then added, "Have you any further orders?"—"Go to your post," I replied, "and see that there is a supply of water and provisions at the fort. Also be careful of the boats and canoes; keep them snug behind the rock, under the fort, for communicating with me, or for any other service that may be required." Craig took his leave; and as on his arrival at Sugar-Loaf Hill the dispositions would be completed, my anxiety for our safety now became much lessened. For if the enemy had pushed in with the first of the sea-breeze, Fort Vernon, and every other place after it, must have fallen in half an hour: we were not prepared, and, to my shame I confess it, from sheer negligence. How many places and ships have fallen an easy prey to an enterprising enemy, from the same cause, though, perhaps, for ever concealed from the public eye or ear!

"I cannot spare *you*, Drake," said I, addressing myself to him, as Craig left the hall; "all your own seamen are with us. I have sent none but the crews of our merchant vessels to assist the artillery-men at Fort Vernon and Pirates' Fort. You must take charge of Fort George here, with the Porghee's crew: you will then be ready to embark in the Avon, or go round to your own vessel; either of which you can do in twenty minutes; or act here, as circumstances may require." One of my old artillery-men remained on the promontory: the other two were in attendance at Fort George.

While all this was going forward, my dear Eliza walked to and fro with much earnestness, but great composure; evidently engaged in giving directions to people without, at the back of the mansion. She never spoke to me from the moment I left her to go to the promontory early in the morning, till about ten o'clock, when she brought me a cup of coffee with her own hand. I then sat down; and as she gave it to me, she kissed my forehead, saying, "They may strike at the *Dolphin* to-day, but they shall not kill him. *Mon Dieu et mon Roi*, dear Edward, is your motto, and your defence." I looked up, and blessed her. She continued to walk to and fro without speaking, but catching every word I said; and doing her part, in the spirit of the instructions she heard me giving to the heads of different departments.

It was twelve o'clock. I sent Drake to the promontory to observe the enemy. Every man and every woman continued actively at work, accomplishing various arrangements. So I now sat quietly, for a few minutes, reconsidering all I had done, and contemplating what remained to do. At this moment, Doctor Gordon came in, asking Miss Rosalie to give him some silk thread, and a bit of wax, which she did. He then very coolly sat down at the table opposite to me, and proceeded to double and wax the silk; and having done this, he took some curved needles from his pocket, and began threading them. Mr Rowley, who stood by, enquired what he was about. "*Just getting ready a few ligatures for amputations*," he replied.—"What!" exclaimed our kind but faint-hearted minister, evidently not under the impression of ignorance, but of horror.—"A few ligatures, I tell you, sir; just to be in readiness, you see," answered the Doctor. My dear wife, who was passing while this dialogue took place, said very quietly,—"Doctor Gordon, I think you might have spared us the anticipation of having our legs and arms cut off, by the exhibition of those *ligatures*, as you call them, on that table."—"They are nothing

but a little waxed thread, madam," he replied ; " they can do nobody any harm." But he was not insensible of the rebuke he had received ; for he wrapped up his ligatures, with their needles, in a piece of paper, and walked away, no doubt to the village, to put his hospital in order. For he was a conscientious man, though often getting into scrapes through what he considered " acting in strict conformity to his duty."

Drake soon returned from the promontory, saying that two of the brigs were now off the Turtle Islands ; and, he thought, with the intention of landing troops, and making a diversion. For they appeared full of men, and had several boats towing astern. The two frigates, he said, continued to lay to in the fair way between the reefs, with the channel open ; the other brig being a little within them, but out of shot. " I think, Sir Edward," added he, " now that you have finished your dispositions, the height is your proper station ; from whence you can see everything, and send people down with orders, from time to time, as you judge necessary. And if I may be allowed to give an opinion, I think the Porghee and Avon should run up within the reef, to prevent a landing by boats at Eastfield. The brigs cannot get in ; the Turtle Islands are reef-bound, except for boats or small craft, so there is nothing to fear from the large vessels."—" But if you beat up with the Porghee," I replied, " it will show there is deep water between the reef and the land ; which may be a hint to them to work in with the large vessels behind the promontory and destroy you, and attack us from the isthmus with their whole force by land."—" They cannot work in, Sir Edward," he replied ; " the wind is right ahead, where there is any, and so baffling withal between the promontory and great rock off the cove, that any square-rigged vessel would certainly miss stays, and fall out again to leeward."—" Very well, then," I said, " take your old crew, Martin, Purdy, and the four others ; and also the ten pirates, if you think them trustworthy ; you once said they were fine fellows ; and with these people man the Avon. She has patteraras and musketoons already mounted ; send her round immediately, and have muskets and cutlasses ready for the men, when they get to the cove, where the Porghee lies. By the time they arrive you will be under sail ; and be sure to take your own boats with you, lest you should be becalmed, and want them." This matter being settled, Drake manned the Avon as I had proposed, and marched off with all his own men across the isthmus, to his vessel : thus taking with him on his expedition forty-six men.

It was now nearly two o'clock. All the carrying that remained to be done could easily be effected by the negro women ; therefore the train-band fell in on the open ground. We mustered sixty-eight rank and file, after having sent off the detachment to Fort Vernon. From this body I picked out thirty-eight best calculated to work the great guns at Fort George, and placed them under the direction of the artillery-men. My brother was now ordered to march the remaining thirty round by the woodland region, and take post within the stoccado of the cave storehouses, with the two field-pieces in his front, ready to act as might be required.

Mr and Mrs Rowley, with Mrs Drake and their children, and Rosalie, and poor old Rota, had been sent forward to the height. My dear Eliza alone remained with me, if I may except faithful Master Diego and Fidele. Nothing more was left to do here but to return God thanks that these Spaniards did not pounce upon us, and destroy us at once, as they might have done. I helped my guardian angel on her mule ; I then mounted the other ; and taking our way to the fort, I encouraged the men as we passed along, telling them my post was at the height to observe the enemy ; but if my presence should be required with them, or at any other point, I would soon be down. They gave me three cheers, and I then proceeded as fast as the mule would carry me, accompanied by my beloved wife, and our early and much-loved friends and companions, honest Diego and faithful Fidele. "God will not forsake you, my honoured and dear husband, in this day of trial," said my dear Eliza as we passed on : "I am proud," continued she, "to see you so collected and assured ; it delighted my heart all this morning to hear you give your orders."—"Thank you, my sweet comforter," I replied ; but I said no more, for my mind was full of our present portentous situation.

Just as we came to the brow of the summit, I heard a gun, the first that had been fired to-day. I hastened to alight. It was from one of the Spanish frigates without shot ; that vessel hoisting at the same time a Union Jack at the main-top-gallant-mast-head,—our signal for a pilot. They, perhaps, had just determined on the stratagem, but it was hoisted at the wrong mast-head ; and, therefore, if anything were wanting to confirm Drake's opinion, we now had it. No notice was taken of this signal. The frigates were now standing in ; I kept my eye on them with the glass, desiring the artillery-man, as soon as they came within shot, to make the fifer sound the bugle three times, (a signal I had agreed on with the officers below, for the serious

approach of the enemy,) and then to give him a shot from time to time, as opportunity might serve, but not to fire without good aim. Saying this, I mounted the mule again; and with Eliza by my side, and Diego at our heels, rode a little way to get sight of the Porghee and Avon, which I soon perceived stretching up between the isthmus and the reef. There were signals flying at the mast-heads of the two brigs, and boats full of men trying to get in round the reef close to the Turtle Islands, just at the place where we were shipwrecked nine years ago. From the spot where I halted, I could see all the Spanish squadron, but I was most intent on the operations to the northward. The two frigates and brig had again hove to, with main-top sails to the mast, distant about three miles east of the promontory, just clear of the southernmost point of the inner reefs. But it appeared to me that they knew their way in, and that they were only waiting the landing to be effected and the consequent junction of the other two brigs.

In a little time I perceived the boats with the troops, endeavouring to get back to the brigs, on seeing the approach of our vessels. But some of them were too far advanced to succeed against the surf. The Porghee soon got her bow guns to bear upon three of the boats, and in five minutes after, both she and the Avon with her patterarars and musketoons were firing briskly. The Spanish boats returned the fire with musketry, but their shot could not reach our vessels. One of the boats was quickly sunk. The brigs now hoisted their proper colours and fired; but their shot fell short. Something at this moment decided the Spanish Commodore. He hoisted the Spanish flag, and hauled down the English colours, before flying as a *ruse de guerre*; filled his main-top sail; and stood in for the harbour, with the other frigate and brig in his wake. When I saw this, I hastened to the flag-staff. By the time I got there, the Spanish squadron was within long range of our gun. The bugle then sounded three times, and in about a minute after, the artillery-man gave the enemy a shot. It was well hove and strong, passing over their mast-heads. "Less powder and better aim next time, Robins," I cried, addressing myself to the artillery-man. He made no reply, but loaded again as fast as he could. I turned round the while with my glass. And it was a gracious, though awful sight to me, to look down upon the forts, and see all our men at quarters, and the artillery-men with lighted matches, ready to give the invaders a warm reception. Robins fired again, and, by good fortune almost unprecedented, struck the head of the foremast of the second frigate.

Down came her top, with all above it, and all her head-sails. In an instant she came athwart the brig that was in her wake, and they lay foul of each other. Soon, however, the brig disentangled herself, the Commodore heaving to the while. Robins tried to hit him, but could not succeed. The disabled frigate now drifted with the wind and current, round the bluff of Edward's Island (which placed her out of the way of our gun), and she there, as we afterwards learnt, let go an anchor.

The Commodore, notwithstanding this accident to his other frigate, entered the passage to the harbour in the most undaunted manner, supported only by the one brig. As yet he had nothing to fire at. Guns from the sea could not be elevated sufficiently to reach the promontory. But as soon as he got fairly within the passage, between the two islands, he and the brig commenced firing away from both sides at anything and everything that presented itself. In a few minutes Fort Vernon opened upon him, when distant about three quarters of a mile; and soon after, the guns from Fort George were brought to bear upon him. He now had to encounter the fire of both batteries. He did not close with either fort, but lay to, midway between them; firing both sides at long range, one at the one fort, the other side at the other. I thought he saw his error, but he did not seem to like to close with Fort Vernon: and Fort George being to windward of him, he could not reach it without making a tack; which was not very convenient in his present situation, being already a good deal cut up in his sails and rigging: however, I thought he intended to do so, for he soon hauled close to the wind, laying up for the cocoa-nut grove on the isthmus; still keeping up an irregular fire, but much slackened. I saw great confusion on his decks, whenever the smoke cleared away; but our fire continued steady; from which I augured well for the safety of our people. After being thus engaged about an hour, the brig stood away for the northern channel, the frigate following her; both a good deal damaged. As they came abreast of Pirates' Fort, the frigate received the contents of the two guns there, which the artillery-men very wisely had reserved. A trifling fire was returned, but they seemed not in a condition to keep it up; or perhaps, only intent on making their way out by the northern passage, they gave up the idea of more fighting. There certainly was some one on board who knew the island well; however, before they could get fairly out, the raking fire of the two guns followed them with sufficient execution to knock away a topmast from

the frigate, and add otherwise materially to the damage they already had sustained.

I thought it was now all over ; but I soon perceived that Sugar-Loaf Hill was attacked from the land side. It immediately occurred to me that the force came from the frigate, which had dropped anchor at the back of Edward's Island. The great gun on the platform was directing its fire to one point on Allwood's range, from whence I could see, by help of my glass, the Spaniards descending. "This is the consequence of cutting down the cedar trees on the other side of the range," thought I to myself ; "at which time a footpath must have been made over it, that I am not aware of." I confess I was amazed and disconcerted. I called Price, and wrote an order in pencil for Captain Seaward to draw off a guard of seamen from Fort George, for the stoccado ; and send off his thirty men of the train band to Fort Vernon, without delay, in such boats as were at hand ; and to direct them to take off their hats on landing upon Allwood's beach, and carry up as many large pebble stones in them as possible to the fort, and order the gunners to use them as grape shot against the assailants.

In ten minutes after Price was gone, Drake made his appearance at the flag-staff, covered with sweat and gunpowder. I had just time before his arrival to move from my position, and make a sweep with the glass of the reef and Turtle Islands, when I saw the two Spanish brigs still there, but one of them on her beam ends, and the other at anchor outside of her, sending boats to and fro. I thanked God for this ; but was uneasy, because I could not discover either of our vessels, and had just returned when Drake mounted the rising ground. "We have destroyed three of their boats, Sir Edward," said my gallant friend, "and have taken fifteen prisoners. One of the brigs is on her beam ends, and the other at anchor outside of her, trying to get her off or save the crew. But where is the rest of the squadron," continued he.—"Our brave fellows," I replied, "have beaten the Commodore and one brig out of the bay. But there is a frigate, whose foremast Robins shot away at the second fire, now at anchor on the other side of the opposite bluff ; and I suspect she has landed a great part of her crew ; for they are at this moment attacking Sugar-Loaf Hill from the land side. Take the glass, and you will see the business."—"I thought there was something the matter there, by the occasional cannonading," he observed, as he put the glass to his eye. "They appear to be in force on the range at this moment," he said, as he held the glass up to its object.

"What is to be done, sir."—"I have ordered them a reinforcement," I replied."—"If they take Sugar-Loaf Hill," he exclaimed, "the place is lost! Allow me to run down on the frigate with my own crew, and all the sailor-men I can collect below from the fort and from the Avon; perhaps I may surprise the frigate, with most of her crew on shore, and capture her."—"The emergency of the case, my dear Drake," I replied, "induces me to accept your gallant but daring enterprise. Go; and God be with you!"

In forty minutes after he left me, I saw the Porghee, with her decks full of men, passing the promontory from the cove, into which he had run after destroying the brig's boats. I again turned my eyes anxiously to Sugar-Loaf Hill. Two of Fort Vernon's guns had now been brought to bear on the assailants; but there was a brisk fire of musketry on both sides. Our boats with the reinforcement were landing, and as yet there was no enemy near enough the beach to dispute the way to the entrance gate of the corkscrew road. I was glad to see all the empty boats coming back, in tow of my barge—including those which had been left in the boat harbour under the fort; and I began to hope the important post was safe, there being now ninety men there—nearly double the number Frazer allowed me to defend it against a thousand. Robins thought he might help to frighten the Spaniards on the ridge, if he could do nothing else; he was sure he could reach the spot, where he saw a considerable body collected; and who, he said, no doubt were making a platform to mount guns on. This suggestion I thought very probable; I therefore desired him to try a shot, though the distance was perhaps rather more than two miles. There was great difficulty in getting the gun round; but by the help of the negro women on the height, who were numerous and accustomed to labour, we effected it. Then giving it the greatest elevation, to ascertain its power, he threw a shot clear over the range. The angle was lessened until he struck the place just below where the Spaniards were at work; and he continued to fire every now and then, whenever a number collected together on the spot. I was surprised that the gun on Sugar-Loaf Hill had not already beat them from this position; but I learned afterwards that the party we saw were not seen from the other post, there being a screen of trees between them. The fire of our gun rather disconcerted them, at least we thought so, for they soon disappeared; but it was from a different cause. Drake had laid the frigate aboard, cleared her decks, and made the captain his prisoner. The

frigate's boats, and almost all the crew, were on shore, but the instant the attack was discovered, the Spaniards that were in sight, or within hearing from the beach, crowded down to their boats to go off to the assistance of their captain and comrades. But the thing was done ; and Drake knew too well what he was about to allow any consideration under heaven to induce him to risk his object—viz., the preservation of Sugar-Loaf Hill, and consequently of the settlement. He therefore, after striking the frigate's colours, cut her cable, and allowed her to drift, taking with him the colours and the captain on board the Porghee. Having thus disencumbered himself, he kept under sail, firing into the boats as they approached him, or endeavoured to gain the frigate. Drake had seventy men on board the Porghee ; therefore had little fear of being boarded by the boats, the whole of which did not contain more than his number. There were five boats, of which he sunk two, one cried for quarter and had it, one made its way alongside of the frigate, the other returned to the shore. The frigate was drifting fast upon the reef, and as Drake knew a boat's crew could not prevent her doing so, he left her for the present to her fate, and proceeded to cannonade the boat and people returned to the beach, who were now joined by several others from the ridge. For a while they replied to his fire with musketry ; but laid down their arms when they saw their captain a prisoner, who was made to stand up in the rigging for that purpose.

A midshipman was now sent on shore from the Porghee, who received the arms of the Spaniards into his boat ; then making the prisoners, to the number of forty, get into the Spanish long-boat (which was the boat that returned to the shore), he took her in tow, and rowing off, received a rope from the schooner. Drake now very wisely proceeded on his return with the two boats in tow ; leaving the frigate to her fate. Before I knew what had taken place at the back of Edward's Island, I perceived the fire of the assailants slacken, and ultimately cease ; which was immediately followed up by a flag of truce, displayed on Allwood's ridge. It was an officer's shirt, tied by the sleeves to a pole. On seeing this, I sent Price as fast as he could run to the further extremity of the promontory, to call down to Captain Seaward (who was posted below, within the cave avenue stoccado with fourteen seamen, the remnant of our force here), to man my barge, and also the Avon, and despatch them immediately to Fort Vernon. This result of the contest was most grateful to my feelings, for my anxiety had been more than I chose to express.

The sun was going down as my gallant friend, with his prisoners in tow, appeared round the opposite headland ; and I now thought I might with safety allow the people to descend. I gave my beloved Eliza my arm, our hearts being lifted up to God for this wonderful deliverance from a powerful enemy ; and we left the height, followed by Master Diego (leading the two mules), and by all our household. Our first inquiry to the artillery-men on our return was for the wounded. There were none as yet reported. No one at Fort George had been touched, but some of the Spaniards taken in the boats by Drake in the morning were in hospital with Dr Gordon ; where good dear Mr Rowley was now rendering every assistance in his power, notwithstanding his timidity and natural horror even of the idea of wounds and bloodshed. The mansion, however, and all the outhouses, and the sheds at the horns of the fort were marked, and in some places much damaged, by the shot that passed over the curtain of the battery.

I was scarcely seated, when Drake came on shore with a sailor close at his heels, carrying a huge bundle on his back. As the hero advanced to the mansion, his wife ran out to embrace him ; he clasped her in his arms tenderly, and then coming up to me by a sort of leap, exclaimed, " We have done it, Sir Edward ! I have nabbed the captain of the frigate, Don Pugnacio—no, Ignacio, something, de Herrera ; he'll tell you his name by-and-bye ; he is our prisoner ; there is his sword, and there are his colours ;" turning his eye upon the honest tar who bore them on his shoulders. " Heave them down, Jack !" said he ; " and I hope she lies broadside on the reef by this time." Then resuming his discourse to me—" As soon as we cleared her decks of the some fifty or sixty men that opposed us, I cut her cable and sent her adrift."—" You should have preserved the vessel if you could, my dear Drake," I replied ; " she would have made you a full captain."—" That crossed my mind, Sir Edward, when I ordered her to be cut adrift ; but I would not risk a chance of miscarrying in the service I was sent upon, for that or any other consideration. If I had attempted to keep possession of the frigate, I might have failed in what I have accomplished, and perhaps been taken myself."—" You have done well, my gallant friend," was my reply ; " I honour you not only for your bravery, but for the nobleness of mind you have displayed on the occasion." My dear wife at this moment stretched out her hand to him, saying, " Shake hands with me, my excellent friend. How happy is my Edward in being so nobly supported !"

In the midst of these greetings, the sergeant of artillery arrived from Lieutenant Craig with a convention of capitulation, signed with El Teniente de Fregata, Don Juan Quesada ; by which seventy-eight men had laid down their arms, on condition that they might be allowed to return to Spain, or Spanish America,—“and not serve again until exchanged,” was very properly added by Craig. The arms were taken into the fort ; the prisoners placed in two of the houses at Allwood's Bay ; while a third was allotted to the wounded, who were fast bringing in, two Spanish surgeons being in attendance ; sentinels were planted, and a guard placed in an adjoining house. The sergeant of artillery, moreover, informed me, our reinforcement had arrived but just in time ; for that two guns had been got up nearly to the top of the ridge by the Spaniards ; that many of the prisoners were regular soldiers or marines ; and that, as far as he could learn, the number of killed and wounded must at least equal that of the prisoners. “Indeed, we soon saw,” continued he, “the Spanish surgeons have their hands full.” But God had been merciful to us ; there was not a man of ours killed at Fort Vernon, nor on the hill, and only three slightly wounded by musketry. “The Spanish vessels,” he said, “fired so badly, that not even the fort was hit, but several shot had struck the houses in the bay.” I now countersigned the convention ; then taking the artillery sergeant aside, I whispered in his ear the parole and countersign for the night, desiring him to communicate them privately to the commanding officer at Edward's Island. Having done this, I put the ratified paper into his hands, desiring him to give it to Lieutenant Craig, with my thanks not only to himself, but to the men under his command for their steady defence of the post intrusted to them. I then desired that our wounded might be sent over immediately ; and as there was no longer occasion for so large a force at Edward's Island, I requested that fifty of the train band might return to me in the Avon. “You may tell Don Juan Quesada,” said Drake to the sergeant of artillery, as he was about to depart, “that I have got his friend, Captain Don Ignacio, snug enough.”—“I am glad to hear that, sir,” replied the sergeant ; “he was likely to give us some trouble.”—“But here is his Donship's sword, Sir Edward,” said Drake, stooping and taking it up from among the colours where the sailor had thrown them : “I should have presented it to you in form, when I first came in, but somehow it slipped my memory at the moment.” I received it from his hand with a feeling of some exultation, but it was that I might return it to him again.”—“Let him that won it

wear it, my brave fellow," I exclaimed: "you are worthy not only of his sword, but his frigate."

As soon as the detachment arrived from the other side, the prisoners were landed from the Spanish ship's long boat, and marched up with a guard to the stoccadoed recess; where the other prisoners already were, with no other sentinels than my brother, Van Kempen, and two artillerymen. But the Spanish Captain was detained on board the *Porghee*, for the present, by my order; as I did not wish him to see the hurly-burly condition into which he and his comrades in arms had thrown us.

It was now thought right, although it was no longer daylight, to reconnoitre not only the frigate, but the brigs. Honest Diego, who stood by me, and who never had been five yards from me all day, volunteered to go with his men in the barge to carry Captain Drake round to the back of Edward's Island, to ease the white sailors a little, who had had no rest since morning. Diego's proposal was immediately accepted; and he was told to send Martin or Purdy here, or both if he could find them. While Diego was gone to get his crew together, poor Drake took some refreshment, the first he had put within his lips this day; yet he found time to speak between his mouthfuls.—"I told you those pirates were fine fellows, Sir Edward," said he, "my eye! how they laid about them when we boarded the frigate. I popped upon him round the headland, and was athwart his starboard bow before he saw us. I don't know how many of his crew my fellows drove overboard; however, the decks were soon cleared one way or other; but three of the pirates were killed, and two of my own brave men also; and I have ordered seven more of them who are wounded to be sent on shore to the hospital." As he said this, he took a glass of wine somewhat hastily, jumping up at the same time from his chair, and wiping his eye with the back of his hand, to brush away a tear that had sprung forth in spite of him.—"But they only did their duty," said he, "to die for their country." He then sat down again saying, "I am done," and pushed aside his plate. I endeavoured, and we all endeavoured, to conceal our emotions, but some vainly: the feeling he had evinced was too powerful not to carry along with it the sympathy of all present.—"Come, my dear fellow," said I, striving to put aside what I felt, "let us fill another glass of wine, and drink the King's health, and the health of all his brave men-at-arms." As we filled our wine, Diego returned with Martin and Purdy, telling Captain Drake that the

barge was ready.—“Go you,” said I, addressing myself to the two Bermudians, “in a canoe to the Turtle Islands, and bring me word what the two Spanish brigs are about. Look narrowly at the one on the reef, but have a care that you are not taken.”—“Can’t catch canoe, sir,” replied Purdy, laughing, and looking, perhaps, something like Master Diego’s black cat. Drake caught a little of Purdy’s happy humour, his native spirits returned, and he laughed too. I desired him to give each of the men a glass of grog, which he did, and they all walked down to the beach together.

There was no sleep for many of us this night. I sent for my brother, gave him the parole and countersign, and disposed of the guard. I then sent for Van Kempen, and requested him to victual the prisoners, and keep an account of the issues. The women were engaged in bringing back things from the promontory, and neither man, woman, nor child were idle; all happy to be so employed. Between two and three o’clock in the morning, Drake returned from visiting the frigate. He found her aground on the inner edge of the reef. Diego hailed her in Spanish, and spoke to the men on board, before he carried Captain Drake alongside. He told them all their companions, as well as captain, were prisoners, and that he would advise them to surrender quietly on the same terms as the others had done; but if they refused, every man would be put to the sword. An officer answered from the deck of the frigate, “I surrender on the terms granted to our companions, now your prisoners.” The barge was instantly rowed up to the side of the frigate, and no time lost in getting the remainder of the crew and the wounded men (who had fought with the boarding party) into her, and into the Spanish boat that had made good their ship after that encounter. There were eleven wounded men, and only twenty-two others, a great part of these latter having belonged to the boat that reached the frigate after her capture; so that almost the whole body that had defended her when the captain was taken were either killed or driven overboard in the contest. The two boats being thus crammed full of men, pulled away as well as they could round the bluff, and made for Allwood’s Bay, where the prisoners were delivered to the guard, and the wounded to the Spanish surgeons. While they were conveying the wounded to the house appropriated for them, Drake took a walk by the bright star-light up to his own house to see how matters stood there, and found things in a sorry plight; for the enemy had taken post in his château, when attacking Sugar-Loaf Hill: the house, in consequence,

was much damaged by our own shot; and, besides, the Spaniards had made free with whatever came in their way.

Not one of our family had as yet retired from the hall to take rest when Drake returned. His recital was listened to by every one with interest; but my poor dear sister could not hear without vexation the account he gave of the condition in which he found their residence. She, however, quickly consoled herself and him, by saying, "Well, I should be thankful to God that I and the children were not there; and that the Almighty has preserved you through the perils of this awful day."

We now endeavoured to persuade the ladies to go to bed, but they desired to be permitted to remain. "It is a beautiful night," said Mrs Rowley, "so calm and cool; and I like to hear the sentinels calling out 'All's well!' which is so delightful a sound, after the toil and peril of this anxious day." She had scarcely done speaking, when Purdy entered abruptly, out of breath, and all in a flutter. I could only make out "Spanish officer, sir! Guard, sir!" Drake jumped up, and ran to the door. "A file of men are marching some one up," he exclaimed; and presently Martin and a Spanish naval lieutenant made their appearance. The ladies now withdrew—Martin and Purdy fell back towards the door, where the guard stood while the officer entered. I rose to receive him. He said, "He had been sent by his captain, Don Blasco del Camino, to inquire into the truth of the information he had received from our canoe, that one of the Spanish frigates was captured by us, and that the Commodore had made a retreat. Don Blasco wished to know this, to order his conduct accordingly; and he trusted I would receive his officer as if he came with a flag of truce." I partly understood him; but I made Diego interpret for fear of mistake. I then replied through the same medium, desiring Master Diego to tell him, "That what he heard was true." And to ask him, whether his captain entertained any hope of getting the brig off the reef. He replied, "he did not."—"Well, then," said I, "would his vessel receive from us 157 Spanish prisoners, besides forty-five wounded?" He stared at this question, which Diego repeated twice. "Valame Dios!" he exclaimed, "is this possible?" Drake had left Captain Ignacio's sword upon the table, and the Spanish colours were lying on the floor. Diego, pointing to them, said "Mira Señor Capitan!" On which he raised his hands, and seemed much affected, stepping aside evidently to avoid treading on the Spanish flag. I liked him for this, and desired him

to be seated ; at the same time ordering some wine and refreshment. While he took it, I inquired of him how he got into the canoe. He said, "They saw it from the brig approach the wreck ; and made a man who spoke English call to it, and say they wanted to send a letter to the Governor of the island ; and if the canoe would wait and take the letter, no harm should happen to them." The people in it replied, "Then send only two men in the boat, and we will wait."—"Well done, my old shipmates !" exclaimed Drake." After this account, I put my question to him again, about receiving the wounded men and prisoners. He said, "It was impossible, his vessel being already too full, having all the people that belonged to the other brig on board, excepting what had been sunk in the boats and taken in the affair of the morning."—"Well, then, sir," I replied, "go back to your ship, and tell your captain, Don Blasco del Camino, to make sail as soon as possible with all the men he has on board, and land them either at Santa Caterina or Saint Andreas, and return with a flag of truce flying ; he shall then have his countrymen, our prisoners ; but it must be understood that he abandons the brig on the reef to me. If he agrees to this, let us see the white flag at your mast-head early to-morrow morning, which I shall acknowledge by hoisting a white flag also. I would send you back, sir," continued I, "in a large boat ; but nothing larger than a canoe could take you with safety through the reefs." He wished to see Capitan Don Ignacio Pasqual de Herera. I told him "that was inadmissible : Don Ignacio was my prisoner, and could have no voice in the business." Here ended the conference. I then gave directions that Martin and Purdy should return him to his ship ; adding my expectation, that they would act with the same caution in delivering him as they had done in receiving him.

As the Spaniard stood up to withdraw, he said, with much feeling, "I believe there is a young officer, a son of Don Blasco del Camino, among the prisoners taken this morning ; it would be gracious in your Excellency to give me the pleasure of taking him back with me to his father."—"Certainly," I replied ; "you are a fine fellow ; you have won my respect." When Diego interpreted this, the Spaniard with the warm manner of his climate, bent forward and kissed my hand. Tired as my dear friend Drake was, he would not lose the opportunity of participating in this gracious act, as the Spanish lieutenant very properly had designated it ; so he walked down with him, escorted by the corporal's guard, to the place where

we had deposited our prisoners, and brought the lad forth and delivered him to his friend. Their meeting was affecting and impassioned: the youth was overjoyed at his unexpected freedom and the immediate prospect of being restored to his father.

At daylight in the morning, just as the *réveille* beat, a large table-cloth was sent off to the promontory, to be bent on to the signal-halliards, in place of the ensign. At sunrise we fired our gun. The Spanish brig then hoisted the flag of truce; and the moment it was perceived, ours went up also. As soon as the breeze reached her, she was seen under all sail, steering to the southward. Drake had thrown himself on the Spanish colours, soon after his return from delivering the youth to the lieutenant, and I was happy in seeing the poor fellow sleeping soundly. But he awoke at daylight, just as the drum beat, and dear old Rota brought in some coffee for our refreshment, of which he gladly partook; saying, "Now I am fresh as a lark—what's the order of the day, Sir Edward?"—"No rest for the wicked, Drake!" I replied jocosely; "I place every sailor-man in the settlement, excepting Diego and his crew, under your command. See if it be possible to get off the frigate."

Rota had called Mrs Drake, and my dear wife, agreeable to their request. They came out in their *deshabille*, and joined us at our early breakfast. Very soon after their appearance, my brother came in. He was anxious to return to Peccary Field, and my dear Eliza and myself were equally anxious that he should do so, as it was probable Mrs Seaward had not as yet descended from the heights. While James was refreshing himself with tea and coffee, I arranged with Drake that he should go on board the *Porghee* immediately, taking Diego as interpreter, and inform the Spanish captain that in the course of half an hour a boat would be sent to remove him to the country-house of a gentleman on the island, where he was to remain while a prisoner with every indulgence, except going beyond its immediate grounds. I also desired Drake to say, that whatever private property he had on board the frigate should be got at and conveyed to him. Drake now left us, to apprise Don Ignacio Pasqual de Herera of all this, and then to set about the more arduous task I had imposed on him. By the time my brother had quite finished breakfast, Diego returned from his first commission to the *Porghee*, and I now ordered him to see that his men were clean, and properly equipped to attend Captain Seaward back to her.

As soon as Master Diego left us, to get the crew of his boat ready, I told my brother my reasons for desiring him to take the Spanish captain to his house. "He could not remain on board the *Porghee*, while Drake was employed in recovering the frigate—I had no room for him at the mansion—there were plenty of spare rooms at Peccary Field House—besides, it was prudent to take him at some distance from the fortifications and the prisoners, neither of which I wished him to see familiarly." James had made no objection when I first mentioned it; but I thought it right to show him my motive for sending this man to his house. My brother seemed satisfied; but said, he hoped I would allow three or four of his servants to quit military duty at the stoccado, and return to the house before him; for now there was not a man at Peccary Field; and if the women were not yet come from the heights, by the time he got home with the Spanish captain, there would be nobody there at all, and everything of course in disorder. "You shall have the men," said I; "send four of them off from the Black Rock in a canoe immediately; they will arrive at Peccary Field before you embark in the barge." He now left the mansion, and the ladies retired again to their rooms, my dear wife taking me by the arm, and leading me to her bed-side, where she made me sit down. "Let me help you off with your coat, my Edward," she said, "and lay yourself down to take some rest, and your Eliza shall watch you as you sleep." I kissed the kind hand that helped me off with my coat, and laid me down on the mattress, wearied enough, in honest truth. She threw a sheet over me, and I soon fell asleep.

In about two hours I opened my eyes, met by the blissful smile of my guardian angel, who had sat by me all the time, watching every respiration, and enjoying the sight of her much loved husband sleeping safely, sweetly, and soundly, as she turned over in her mind the terrors and anxieties of the preceding day. I arose, and took a bath, by which I was much refreshed. Everything was again in place in the house; a regular though late breakfast was now laid, and all the female servants were in attendance.

Dr Gordon came up, accompanied by Mr Rowley, and gave us rather a satisfactory account of our wounded men. On the Doctor's return to the hospital, my dear wife sent a woman with him, carrying a bundle of old linen, and some tea and sugar, with a few other comforts, for the sick, which he had requested. Diego came back from landing my brother, and

the Spanish captain, at Peccary Field; and he was now despatched to Allwood's Bay, at the suggestion of my kind Eliza, with a similar present of old linen, and some wine, for the wounded Spaniards, with directions to enquire of their surgeons what else they were in need of. He took over some of Mrs Drake's women, but she chose to remain with us for the present.

A little before noon the Avon came from the frigate, with a note from Drake to me, in which he said, "I send you seventy-three barrels of gunpowder; this will replenish our magazine; it is quite dry. I don't think she leaks; but I know you will say I have done well to secure the powder. I have laid out an anchor ready to heave on, as soon as we have lightened her enough. Ask Van Kempen to send me his galliot by return of the Avon; the one can tow the other."—"Well done, Drake!" thought I to myself; "but what am I to do with the powder? the avenue to the magazine is full of prisoners." The moment the gunpowder was landed, the Avon stood over to Peccary Creek, and returned, in tow of the galliot, on her way to rejoin Drake.

I mentioned to my Eliza the dilemma in which the arrival of the gunpowder placed me.—"March the prisoners to the cocoa-nut grove," said she; "it will be a recreation to them, and they will be out of the way."—"That will do," I replied; and I forthwith sent my orderly to direct that all the prisoners within the stoccado should be marched under a sergeant's guard to the cocoa-nut grove for the day, their dinner to be sent round in a canoe; and they were to be allowed to eat of the cocoa-nuts, and otherwise amuse themselves, but not to break the trees. This was done; the powder the while being placed in the magazine, and the avenue cleaned out, and some fresh sand thrown into it, all before the party returned.

Van Kempen came to me, after sending rations to the prisoners, and some supplies to Fort Vernon. He said he was sorry to inform me that no mullet had been taken the preceding night, and that the fish-pots were not sufficiently numerous to collect any quantity of other fish worth naming. The fact was, the mullet had gradually forsaken the Black Rock, and now they were gone entirely. I wished it had been the rats he was speaking of. I told him I would order more fish-pots to be made immediately; and for the present he must serve turtle and hog's flesh, chocolate-nuts, and Indian-corn flour, to the prisoners; and that I intended, without loss of time, to bring all those now at Allwood's Bay over to the isthmus, and place them with the rest, within the stoccado. Diego and his men

were now sent to Peccary Creek for the Jack Martin, which I despatched to Allwood's Bay, with a note to Lieutenant Craig, desiring him to send all the prisoners, excepting the officers and wounded men, over to the isthmus; also to return himself with our people, leaving the settlers belonging to the bay, with their arms, now to take care of themselves, and to place the Fort and Hill again in charge of the sergeant of artillery and his men; leaving orders to plant an artillery sentinel at the door of the house where the Spanish officers were, and to keep a good look out. About five o'clock Craig arrived with his detachment, and ninety-nine prisoners, who were marched up to the stoccado just as the others were coming back from the cocoa-nut grove. The whole number being now mustered, amounted to one hundred and fifty-four; not many less than our whole population put together, including the sailors belonging to the Porghee and other vessels. But extraordinary as it may seem, it is a fact, that the enemy lost more than this number in killed, drowned, and wounded. I think when we were attacked, our force was thirteen artillery men; train band, ninety-eight; Porghee's crew; King's sailors, thirty; crews of the merchant vessels, including the ten pirates, forty-five, exclusive of officers;—total, one hundred and eighty-six.

When Craig had disposed of his prisoners, he waited on me. We talked over a little the trying business of yesterday, and I then desired him to put half the train band on duty, day and day about, until we got rid of the Spaniards. Then, after thanking him for his gallant conduct, I told him he should retain his commission as lieutenant, with the addition of that of adjutant of the island force; also remain town major; and that I hoped I should be able to raise his pay equal to his new rank. He expressed his gratitude, and went away to perform the duties of his office.

A little after sunset I received a note from Drake, written in pencil, to say, "he could not return to-night; that he meant to work, watch and watch, in lightening the frigate, and that he hoped to heave her off the reef in the morning; that he understood there was a Panama pearl-diver among the prisoners, his name Vicente Guecco; that he wished I would find him out and send him to the Porghee, as they could see the frigate's cable and anchor, where it had been cut away, lying in about five fathoms water; that he had in vain endeavoured to lay hold of it by grapnel, but he knew the pearl-diver could pass the bight of a rope round the end of the cable in an instant, and recover it." In consequence I sent Diego to the stoccado,

who soon found the man. He stipulated for a small reward, and a permanent asylum with us ; to which I agreed most willingly, and then sent him to Drake. He did the business adroitly on the following morning, and received a piece of gold.

On Thursday forenoon the Avon arrived, with various matters from the frigate, bringing the satisfactory information of her being afloat, and that she did not leak ; the captain's trunks, or rather boxes, with some other things belonging to him and the officers, were among the things brought in the Avon, and immediately forwarded to their respective owners by Diego. The galliot soon followed the Avon, pretty well filled with stores and provisions. The frigate being thus lightened, and all the water started, she was hove off, and with the assistance of some additional boats towed round into the bay.

"L'Invariado," her name, appeared half as big again as the Sea Horse. She mounted thirty large guns, and at the time of the attack had on board three hundred men. Drake put his senior midshipman on board, with half his crew, ordering them to unbend the sails, and make a speedy and careful clearance of the wreck forward.

Everything being now pretty well to rights, excepting the damage done by the shot, I was no longer ashamed of our condition ; so I thought in courtesy to invite Don Ignacio Pasqual de Herera to dine with me ; and accordingly I fixed on the following day, Saturday,—giving Adjutant Craig orders to see the whole body of men well dressed and appointed.

The Spanish captain came agreeable to the invitation, and also two of his officers from the other side, whom I had invited to meet him. We had an elegant dinner, and all our family were present, including the only hero that belongs to it, gallant Drake. After dinner the conversation turned on Porto Bello. Don Ignacio now became a little more communicative. He had heard how Don Francisco Martinez de Retez had behaved to the English Captain Knight and to myself ; desiring me to believe him when he assured me, that Spanish officers generally, and he among the number, blamed the Governor very much for his conduct. "But," said he, "that hidalgo is now tasting the sweets of a prison himself ; having been disgraced, and sent to a dungeon, on his arrival in old Spain, after surrendering the place to Vernon." My dear wife now asked him how the Spaniards came to give the name of Porto Bello to that horrible place. "It means Bel Havre, does it not ?" said Lady Seaward. "Oui, Madame," he replied, "as you English speak it and write it ; but we Spaniards call it Porto Velo,—

is, 'Havre Caché,' the Veiled Port." I was rather pleased to learn this from the mouth of a Spaniard, and therefore have noted it down in my journal. Coffee and cigars were served soon after dinner, and at an early hour my Spanish guests took leave, and returned to their respective quarters.

On the following day, which was the Sabbath, I made a point of having as full an attendance at divine service as the nature of our present circumstances would admit. Our heavenly-minded pastor on this occasion returned thanks to Almighty God, in an appropriate prayer, for our great deliverance from a powerful enemy.

On Monday the Spanish brig of war made her re-appearance, with a white flag flying at the fore; on which I sent out a boat to pilot her into our harbour,—first taking the precaution to man the batteries, and place the train band under arms. An English ensign was hoisted on board the frigate; but I did not make a vain-glorious display of the Spanish colours under it. The prisoners and wounded were now embarked as quickly as possible, for whom I took a receipt, under the joint signatures of the two Spanish captains, by which they engaged that the persons named therein should not serve against England during the present war, until exchanged. The brig being ready to put to sea, I ordered them a supply of fruit and vegetables; and we thus parted as good friends as persons could well do who were national enemies.

CHAPTER XXXII.

THE final departure of the Spaniards was a matter of general congratulation; for although the events incident to their invasion furnished matter for proud exultation, yet they had left us something more to do than sit down in idleness and fight the battles over again. On the very day the brig sailed out of the harbour I made arrangements for the morrow. The people were then set to work, to repair in various ways, and at different places, the damages sustained by shot during the encounter with the enemy. We had plenty of hands and plenty of wood, and no lack of money. Drake had been the greatest sufferer, at his château; but he made light of it, saying—"I can plaster it over with some of their own dollars." The masons and other workmen now proceeded with the church, and Drake used all diligence to repair the damaged foremast of the frigate, hiring Derrick and Xavier to

assist his own carpenter. I employed a large party of men with boats, to save what they could from the Spanish brig, still lying broadside on the reef. I hired them at regular wages, to be paid out of the proceeds, which were to be sold when the business was completed, for the benefit of the island treasury. The wreck, I believe, was my right, if I chose to make it so : but the frigate was Drake's prize ; and, perhaps, according to the law of the case, none but they who boarded her and took her could claim to share for the capture, as she was not taken under any battery, nor within sight of any. But Drake was already rich in money, and always so in spirit ; he therefore wished the prize to go among the garrison generally ; and handsomely furnished an argument against his own exclusive claim, by saying, "It was a shot from the promontory that disabled her ; and he would therefore tell his crew that he thought every one should share." The result was, that the brave seamen made no demur ; and the people were told, at the first muster-day, of the liberal conduct of Captain Drake and his men, respecting the prize. The train band gave the gallant tars three cheers ; and this cordial generosity was not without its happy consequences.

The month of December was too far advanced before the frigate could be got ready, to be safe for Drake to proceed with her to Jamaica : besides, he could not do it without borrowing all the merchant sailors of the colony ; and my brother and Mr Reynolds were anxious to despatch their two vessels to Kingston with Spanish goods. The Cedar schooner, which was built here, sailed remarkably fast ; but the Tom Cod was a sort of dray-horse. I therefore begged of my brother not to send his vessel at present, but to allow the schooner to go alone, in which I meant to forward my despatches to the Governor and to the Admiral at Jamaica. "The schooner need not wait for my vessel," he replied ; "they can each make the best of their way."—"O, very well, brother," I rejoined, "let it be so ; but when two are together, one may escape should an enemy's vessel see them : if the Tom Cod be espied alone, she is gone for a certainty."—"I will take my chance," he said ; so accordingly the vessels sailed.

My despatches detailed the action we had sustained, in which I gave great praise to all our people, but more especially to Drake and the seamen, and to Craig ; requesting promotion for Drake ; and praying that the Governor would send me thirty regulars ; and if a lieutenancy could be purchased for Mr James Craig, who was now lieutenant and adjutant of the

island force, I would pay for it, provided he might command the detachment; and I would give £25 over the usual price to the lieutenant who might be in command of the men, to resign in favour of Mr Craig. I fully expected all I requested would be granted; and making sure in my own mind that there were officers always desirous of quitting the West Indies for England, I should have no difficulty in purchasing a commission for Craig, and, by the proposed measure, obtain for him the command of the detachment.

When the stormy season approached, all the vessels in port were laid up in safety within Peccary Creek, and Drake contrived to get the frigate in there also, mooring her head and stern to the shore and to the rock. We kept our Christmas as usual. The year finished without seeing either of our vessels return from Jamaica; and although the sky sometimes lowered, we were as yet without any visitation from the storm.

1743.—On Sunday, the 2nd of January, a storm of a different kind, and to us more terrible, threatened the settlement with immediate destruction. At noon several large ships were descried not only from the promontory to the southward and westward, but also from the heights above German Town, to the northward of the island. As soon as the alarm was given we were on the alert; Drake betaking himself to the promontory, and one of his officers to the German Town height; signals being agreed on. I issued some orders, and joined Drake with all possible speed. By the time I got up to the flag-staff, he had clearly made out three Spanish men-of-war of two decks, two frigates, and two brigs. There were others in the distance, no doubt with troops; we could not make out distinctly; but we saw enough,—and for a moment my heart sunk within me. I turned to Drake. “We will do our duty, Sir Edward,” said my gallant friend, “and must leave the event to God.” I turned to God. “We are in Thy hand,” I exclaimed, raising my whole soul to the throne of mercy; “Thou only now canst save us.” My courage seeming to come again with this appeal, I hastened to return to the mansion, with a stout heart and collected mind, prepared to do my duty.

But He, in whose hands are life and death, cut the matter short. Before I could reach the mansion, the sky was darkened, the lightning glared, and the thunder pealed. Instead of cannon, the hurricane blew all round the compass; and I blessed God in the storm. Full of joy, buffeted, and wet, we entered my dwelling. Here my beloved wife, and our revered pastor, and all our friends, met us in awful expectation. As I entered the

hall amidst the rain and the whirlwind, I lifted up my hands, saying—"Our God has delivered us."

We now had to barricade ourselves against the blessed tempest, leaving the enemy in the hands of Him who can break them as a reed, and scatter them like chaff. The storm raged, and the torrents poured down upon the earth and sea, with little intermission for three days: on Thursday, the sky became clear at intervals, and the winds lulled. Wrecks were then discovered from the heights in several directions; but no sail was to be seen on the face of the waters. When this report was brought to me, dear Mr Rowley stood up and exclaimed—"We may now indeed say with Queen Elizabeth, on a like memorable occasion, '*Afflavit Deus, et dissipantur!*'"

The next day was appointed as a solemn fast to the Lord; which I hope was not only observed, but deeply felt by all His people, whom He had just delivered from an overwhelming force, which, according to human calculation, had it attacked us, must have extirpated the whole colony.

Our boats and canoes were sent out as soon as the weather would permit. Seven wrecks were soon discovered among the reefs and shoals that surround the islands, among which were two of the largest ships, but every soul had perished; spars, and casks, and dead bodies, continually floating ashore.

This was an awful event; but the contemplation of our own imminent peril from them kept down every strong feeling of pity for those that had perished: and I ventured to entertain a further consolation, that the fate of this expedition, which I now had no doubt had sailed promptly from Porto Bello, to revenge the cause of the former, would prevent any further attempt at our destruction. For the seasons there are no guides as to the seasons here; generally speaking, they have bad weather on the main from July to October, which is our fine season. Then, with occasional deviations, the weather becomes fine, when the islands suffer from hurricanes, not felt on the main land; and this is one reason among others why the cacao or chocolate tree (a very weakly plant) thrives and bears so much better on the main than in any of the islands. It is true, Vernon got a dusting at this season, off Carthagera; but I understand such weather seldom occurs at this time of the year, anywhere along the coast.

To prevent our agricultural pursuits from being neglected at this important season, I was under the necessity of issuing an order as to the number of persons each day that could be permitted to despoil the wrecks; desiring them to arrange

among themselves who were to go, and who were to remain, and as to dividing the proceeds obtained : and I was happy enough thus to secure the interest of the settlement, without exciting murmurs among the people ; not at present an easy task, for they were daily obtaining articles of considerable value from the Spanish ships. But all that floated on shore of itself, became my property in right of my grant ; which my servants collected from time to time, and either brought home, or piled up in appropriate places. I believe the wrecks also, as they lay upon the reefs, were droits to me ; but I rather chose to waive the question, and give them up to the people, insisting only on the drift that came on shore.

About the middle of the month, the Francis Drake returned from Jamaica. This vessel had been detained by the bad weather, which set in there before Christmas-day, and we were sorry to learn that the Tom Cod had not reached Kingston when she sailed. The schooner brought letters in answer to my despatches ; in which some compliments were paid to us on our gallant defence, and a sort of promise made, that Lieutenant Drake should have promotion on the arrival of the frigate. But no soldiers could be sent ; General Wentworth having taken all the disposable troops with him. Neither could anything be done at Jamaica, relative to getting a commission for Craig in the King's service.—“Well ! well !” I said, when I read these letters, “it matters not. Our God has been our deliverer ! I will confide our destinies to Him ; and I feel assured the Spaniards will never try their fortune here again.” Mr Rowley and my dear wife both applauded my feeling, and the resolution I had expressed on the occasion ; and I can honestly say I suffered no disappointment from the tenor of my letters from the authorities in Jamaica, except in my failure with respect to Craig.

In consequence of the wrecking business still going on, Drake was not able to navigate the prize to Jamaica, till late in February, and then he could only manage it by a condition of taking a great load of merchandise in her belonging to our merchants ; all of whose sailors were, on those terms, lent to him. The frigate having been put in seaworthy condition, Drake presented me with her long-boat and pinnace ; and on the 26th of February sailed with her for Jamaica, under convoy of the Porghée.

He arrived in about ten days at Port Royal, without any accident. The naval officers there had been long looking out for this Spanish frigate, as an object for promotion. Drake

says they crowded round the Porghee in their boats, as he came in with his prize, casting an eye on the large Spanish ensign as it blew out under a St George's Jack; and as he passed under the stern of the ship that had *the guard* that day, the Captain hailed him—"What do you mean, sir, by hoisting a St George's flag on board the prize?"—"They are our island colours, sir," he replied. When he told me this, I wished to have witnessed a sight so honourable to my most esteemed friend and to myself. The circumstances under which the frigate had been captured were well known; and therefore his answer as to the St George's Jack was understood and received. But when he went on board the flag-ship to report his arrival officially, he was under the necessity of explaining the manner in which he had been able to man the prize; and that in consequence he must be permitted to move her up to Kingston, to discharge the cargo belonging to the merchants, who had on that condition lent their men to navigate her. On the following day the prize was ordered to proceed to Kingston to put out the cargo; and when this was done, the frigate was moved down to Greenwich. After some days a survey took place. She was valued at £16,000, and purchased for his Majesty's service; her name not only being changed, but reversed; being now called "The Inconstant." Prophetic, no doubt; for she was wrecked soon after on the Grand Caymans.

Drake received £14,000 in treasury bills, on behalf of the captors; the head-money being yet forthcoming; £2,000 of the purchase-money having been deducted as the eighth alleged to be the right of the Commander-in-Chief at Jamaica. This would have been a small matter to complain of; but my gallant friend was juggled out of the promotion he had so well earned, and therefore so justly claimed. "Sir Chaloner Ogle was sorry he was obliged to give it to certain officers sent out from England by the Admiralty; but he would recommend Lieutenant Drake to Lord Winchelsea, the first Lord of the Admiralty, for a sloop of war at some future period."

I was much vexed by the treatment our brave defender met with at Jamaica; but it gave me some consolation to perceive that he did not take it deeply to heart. When speaking on this subject, he made this reflection:—"If I had got the promotion I desired, I must have been removed from Seaward Islands, which contain everything dear to me on earth. Besides," added he, "I have made an ample fortune by prize money: so by and by, perhaps, we may all go to Old England

together ; where I will hoist my pendant on the chimney top of some good house, with you for my neighbours, and dear Maria for my first lieutenant."

My brother and Van Kempen purchased £8,000 worth of the Government bills, which enabled me to distribute four-eighths of the prize money immediately : viz., three-eighths among the seamen and privates of the train band, which gave $159\frac{1}{2}$ dollars to each man ; one-eighth among eight non-commissioned and petty officers and twelve artillery-men ; the former having a double share, 600 dollars each, the latter 300 dollars each. The remaining £6,000 in bills, was just equal to pay the other three-eighths ; but we could not convert them into dollars : one-eighth among Lieutenant Craig, and Van Kempen, Dr Gordon, and the chaplain, Mr Rowley, gave them each an interest of £500 or 2100 dollars each, in the bills ; and one-eighth between Captain Seaward and Lieutenant Drake—the latter sharing as a land captain—£1,000, or 4200 dollars each : and I, who perhaps deserved least, had the most in right of my situation—which, however, is quite in unison with the general tenor of human affairs—my share being one entire eighth, viz., £2,000, or 8,400 dollars. It was agreed among the parties concerned, that the bills should be sent to my bankers in London, with instructions to place the sums respectively to the credits of the individuals, according to the amounts endorsed on a paper accompanying them. I was glad of this arrangement, as it would secure a little something in England for those I wished well, and might prove an inducement to them—I mean Craig, the Doctor, and dear Mr Rowley—to add something from time to time to the amount of this investment.

The great quantity of spars, and every kind of timber, and iron bolts, and canvas, and ropes, with a thousand other things that had been recovered from the wrecks of the Spanish ships, induced Allwood and some others to go to Jamaica, and bring back with them half-a-dozen ship carpenters ; so that in a little time there were two fine vessels on the stocks, and one smaller one, and several boats. The smaller vessel was the speculation of Xavier and Derrick, who were much attached to each other, and in whose welfare I took a lively interest ; the former, Diego's compeer—the latter, once my honest and faithful bondman.

In the course of this year, four negro men and four negro women, whom I had brought from Kingston in bondage seven years ago, were emancipated. It also occurred, that seventeen white families, amounting to fifty-three souls, arrived here in

the Mary, from Bristol—driven from England by the pressure of the times incident to the severe winter of 1739-40, and which was still felt among the small farmers and peasantry, and many others. Every exertion was made to locate these people ; and as many houses had been completed before their arrival, in the street crossing the woodland region, I found little difficulty in providing them with present habitations in the village. But, eventually, some of them were sent to German Town, and some to Allwood's Bay, to occupy allotments laid out for them, where buildings for their dwellings are now well advanced ; it being intended that four families only remain at St George's.

Among the refugees there happened to be a man and his wife of the name of Simmonds, who had kept school in Worcestershire. I was happy in profiting by this circumstance, to release Mr Rowley from the fatigue he kindly had imposed on himself in teaching the children. I therefore set about erecting a house for the schoolmaster, adjoining the school, at the further end of the isthmus ; and soon placed him and his wife there, with an understanding that the people were now to pay for the education of their families, every one having become rich enough to do so.

In addition to these my country people, we also had a gradual accession of thirty-nine sailors to our strength ; several individuals of the former crews having married and fixed themselves on shore. Our vessels were constantly going or coming ; and sometimes a stranger brought in and took away a cargo ; so that activity and prosperity seemed to pervade the settlement, by increasing numbers and by increasing industry. The village, the while, was progressively extending, and the workmen getting on rapidly towards completing the church.

The May rains came heavily this year, and continued for nearly two weeks. In June several persons fell sick, and my beloved wife was among the number : she suffered a severe attack of remittent fever, from which she recovered slowly and imperfectly. There were some deaths, among whom we had to register Mrs Margaret Reynolds and her child, and five individuals from among those lately arrived. But we had to lament the loss of our faithful and much loved Rota, whose death much affected both Lady Seaward and myself. Poor Diego took it much to heart : he never held up his head for many weeks after this painful event, but sat silently on the seat before his door, with his eyes fixed on the ground. We all did our best to divert or console him under his affliction ; but time only succeeded in doing so ; little by little he came forth,

gradually and almost imperceptibly resuming his former occupations.

Before the end of the year the church was finished ; my uncle's brig having brought out 20,000 Welsh slates, with her other investments for the settlement, at the time the seventeen refugee families arrived. When the building was completed, the accounts were made up. It appeared there was a sum of 3450 dollars to be provided for, although the 2000 that remained of my share of the pirates' booty had been expended on it. I addressed the people on this subject after divine service, under the sacred canopy of the venerable tree, where we were now assembled for the last time.

After making the statement, I proposed that each male person should contribute according to his means. On which the boatswain of the Porghee stood forward, and spoke for the rest, saying—"Our people, sir, would like to have it said they built a church, and so we are ready to pay for it." I thanked him ; but requested Mr Reynolds to take a pencil, and a list of the adult male population, got ready for the occasion, and call us over by name, adding—"What shall I put down for you?"—I, Edward Seaward, stood first on the list—put down 1000 dollars ; then followed Captain Seaward, 500 ; Captain Drake, 500 ; Mr Van Kempen, 500 ; Doctor Gordon, 100 ; poor dear Mr Rowley, 100 ;—and this subscription was followed up by a spirit and liberality in every individual so great, that I was obliged to restrain many, who could not afford to give what they desired ; no one offering less than 10 dollars. 4000 dollars were now subscribed, and the money paid down the next day. I thanked the people for their liberality, and especially the Porghee's crew, for their most generous offer, saying I was quite satisfied with what they had done in a general way. I now stated to the assembly, that the church would be consecrated and opened on the following Sunday, by the name of St George's Church, and that it would be expedient to provide comfortably for the minister. I therefore proposed, to that end, that every male person exceeding twenty years of age should annually make him an offering of 3 dollars, and as much more as he might think fit, according to his circumstances, not exceeding one doubloon ; the time for doing which, I thought, would be in the week immediately after Easter-day ; and this annual offering was to be received in lieu of tithes, baptism, marriage, and burial fees. The people gave their assent, one by one, as their names were called over ; which act was transferred to the Island Register. Mr Rowley and myself now

returned home, much pleased with the people and our success.

We observed Christmas-day this year with an important improvement. At nine o'clock all the boats in the settlement assembled at the landing place below Fort George, each having a flag in the bow. I then embarked in my barge, with the St George's flag, and led the procession to Woodland Bay, where we landed precisely at the foot of George Street, at the upper extremity of which the church is built. The tower, surmounted by a cross (I hope my Protestant brethren will take no offence), directly faced us; the altar being to the east. As we left the beach, the newly-made fountain, seen playing at the intersection of the streets, added much to the impression imparted by the view of our holy edifice. In a hot climate, water, pure water, may be esteemed an emblem even of heavenly enjoyment—and so it is represented both in our holy Scriptures and in the Alcoran. The people were all well dressed, and the procession advanced, the St George's flag foremost, every township or family, as might be, carrying the flag of their boat before them. I foresaw, in this institution, a splendid annual pageant, perfectly innocent, and likely to do much good, by exciting a spirit of honest emulation in making a fine appearance; and, in some measure, superseding the revels of former years, which I had found to be productive of some evil. However, they were not deprived of their amusements. The isthmean games were intended to be permanent: but no feast was given by me; justly alleging as a reason that the settlement had become too populous to continue it. Some, therefore, went home before the evening closed in, and some remained in the village, until the drum beat off at nine o'clock.

CHAPTER XXXIII.

BEFORE the year closed I began to think seriously of returning to England, as my beloved wife did not regain either her strength or her spirits. Besides, I could evidently perceive she no longer desired that we should remain here. Sometimes she would say—"The child is grown up; we may now leave it to itself:" sometimes—"I think, dear Edward, you may confide the government of the settlement safely to Captain Drake:" and sometimes, when her spirits were very low, she would say—"Let us go home to Hartland, Edward, and finish our days in peace; there is now nothing here but bustle and

anxiety." These and corresponding considerations induced me to make up my mind for quitting the colony early in February of next year, and leave Drake my lieutenant-governor and captain-commandant.

With this object in view, various arrangements were entered on. The first, and perhaps not least important of which, was to have a clear settlement in money matters with every person on the island. This in some cases was extremely perplexing ; and most frequently I was under the necessity of conceding much, both in bondsmen's labour, timber, provisions, and other matters, before I could close the account at all to the satisfaction of the opposite party ; thus generally making a considerable sacrifice. But this state of things arose out of our peculiar situation : I was always doing something for the advancement of the settlement ; taking my chance of being at the whole expense, or of receiving a partial remuneration in some way or other at a future time. I, therefore, in settling with many persons, gave up large portions of my right. However, before the 31st of December, 1743, balances were struck and paid, and receipts passed, between myself and every individual on the island.

In looking into public affairs, I was happy to find at the expiration of the year (the salaries and other charges on our revenue being paid up), that the sum of 2520 dollars remained in the hands of the fiscal. In consequence of this easy state of our finances, and taking into consideration the prosperous condition of our trade and the riches of the people, I issued a warrant, by which "the clergyman should still receive his £50 a-year, besides the Easter offering ; and that Doctor Gordon might be at liberty to charge moderately for his medicine and attendance, in addition to his salary, still receiving as heretofore his pay as fiscal ; also that Town-major, Lieutenant, and Adjutant Craig should have 1 dollar *per diem*, as pay in full for all his offices ; and that M'Nabb, Andrews, and Finlayson (Lieutenant Craig's former comrades), should have a halberd each, with $2\frac{1}{2}$ pistarines, viz., 5 ryals, as their daily pay : the artillery-men to have their island pay continued for one year more ; their sergeant's, permanently : and labourer's wages, viz., 2 ryals a day, to be paid to the negro canoe-man at Pirates' Fort, now "Frazer's Fort ;" which name it received after the defeat of the Spaniards, in honour of the skilful engineer, to whose good advice, under Heaven, we owed the preservation of the island on that occasion.

I now turned my attention to my own revenues, beginning

with my cotton plantation at Long Bay ; which yielded so well that I received an offer of 300 dollars a-year from the settlers at Pirates' Land for its produce, which I accepted. I next let Eastfield to Gortz, with all the sheep thereon, viz., 220, at a rent of 440 dollars a-year ; he being required to keep the same number of sheep always on that place and the adjoining hills. The turtle fisheries were let to Rock and Stone, at 500 dollars a-year : and it appeared that I was likely to get a handsome revenue by Vicente, the Panama pearl-diver ; who already had taken some very large oysters from the rocks in deep water ; affording a few fine pearls, specimens of what we might expect : of the produce of this fishery I laid claim to one-third. These rents, and some others of less value, I placed at the disposal of Captain Drake, to be expended, if absolutely required, in the public service ; but to be remitted to me if he could get on without them.

1744.—The annual tempest passed away this season with little more evidence of its presence than an abundance of rain. We often reflected during this period on the kind providence of our God, who had so ordered all things, that it was not now the Spaniards should come to destroy us. After the rains ceased, and the weather became settled, I proposed to my dear Eliza, for us to visit every individual settler on the islands leisurely, day after day, to ascertain their condition ere we bade them farewell. We did this, and had ample reason to be gratified by observing the cleanliness, satisfaction, and abundance that everywhere appeared.

The month of February arrived. I now arranged definitely with my friend Drake, as to the terms on which he was to assume the government. I desired that he should occupy the mansion as I had done, and give up his house and grounds to Mr Rowley ; appointing his senior officer to the ordinary command of the yacht. "There is a fine herd of deer in the Woodland Park, my dear friend," said I ; "*we* have not as yet tasted the venison : but I do not desire you to abstain from doing so ; only preserve the breed. I will endeavour to take two pairs of them with me to Hartland."

When my dear wife talked to Rosalie about making preparations for departure, she simpered and hesitated ; and after a little more nonsense, acknowledged that she had engaged herself in marriage to Mr Reynolds. On the matter being mentioned to me, I sent for him, and he avowed the truth. "Well, sir," I said, "it may be indelicate in me to press the matter, as you have not lost your wife quite twelve months ; but I must

either take Miss Filibert back with us, or leave her here your wife. In short, unless she is your wife before we sail, I must take her along with us." He answered respectfully, he would speak to the lady on the subject, and let me know. Much time was not required to settle the business; so on that day week Mr Rowley tied the indissoluble knot. Reynolds had been steady, and had made some money; besides, he had received gracious letters from his father, to whose estate he was heir. I therefore could make no objection to the match on behalf of Rosalie. When settling the business of the nuptials, he offered to pay me a moiety of his bond; but I desired him to defer it another year, as otherwise he might cramp his means of trade. On the day of the marriage, Lady Seaward gave the bride 500 dollars, as a compensation for her services during the seven years she had been with us; and she afterwards added to this some little valuables, as a mark of her esteem.

One morning, just as we came into the hall to breakfast, Diego, who had been anxiously standing there to see us, put the palm of his hand upon his head, looking at us with an unusual vacancy, like one bereaved of hope. He said—"Lady mine, and honoured master, I hear soon you leave us. Diego then glad, for go rest with Rota." My Eliza did not give me time to answer him;—"We will never leave you, nor forsake you, faithful Diego," she replied; "if you will choose to go with us, our home shall be your home; but England is a cold climate." Diego looked at me. "Come with us to England, Master Diego," said I, "and I will do all in my power to make you comfortable."—"Thank you, Sir Edward! thank you too, my Lady!" exclaimed Diego: then lowering his voice, he said—"Rota loved my Lady;" and then the old man wept—"but Rota," continued he, "is gone to Heaven, and Diego will go anywhere with his kind lady, and Master, Sir Edward.

When it was known that Mademoiselle was to be married, there were many persons, both black and white, desirous of accompanying my wife to England as her maid; but she declined taking any one. Having expressed her opinion to me, that a female attendant, unaccustomed to be at sea, was worse than useless on board ship, and that on her arrival in England any woman brought from the settlement would only be an encumbrance; "I think you are right, dear," I replied; "besides, women are already rather deficient here in numbers, and it would not be well, unnecessarily, to take even one away."

A few days before the time fixed on for our departure, Mr Rowley gave me 1500 dollars, which he had saved since his arrival in the island; being nearly the amount of his entire salary for the whole period: but he had received some gifts, and had not been at any expense worth mentioning. He requested me to send the dollars to my banker in London; and desire him to invest the amount thereof, together with the £500, his interest in the large Government bill, in such public securities as might be deemed advisable. I met his request with much pleasure; and was most happy in seeing this little investment likely to be made, as a something in reserve for himself or family.

On the same day Doctor Gordon called on me with a similar request, but propounded in a very different manner;—"He would like to send some money to England, to be invested in the public funds, if I would see the business done at an advantageous time, so as not to lose the possibility of a fall by any inconsiderate precipitancy." He then went into the merits and demerits of the different stocks; about which he had a great deal to say, having seen "The Chronicle" lately sent out to us; making so many *pros*, and *cons*, and *contras*, about the determinate mode of investing the money, that notwithstanding the great respect I entertained for him, I felt myself obliged to decline having anything to do with it. "Well, then, Sir Edward," he said, "if you will not meddle with the money,—and here it is in four bags, out by, in the piazza, just 3000 dollars, and 1000 pieces of eight,—I suppose you will have no objection to my putting it into business here, if I like."—"O, none at all," I replied.—"Well," he rejoined, "I'll see about it;" moving away at the same time to the great door, where his man, William Wallace, stood guarding the bags. "Give me twa o' the bags, Wully," said he, "and you tak' the other twa; so we'll e'en go back wi' them again." Finding that Wallace was there, I took the opportunity of reminding the Doctor, in the presence of his bondman, that this was the year of his jubilee. "I know that right well, sir," he replied, a little testily; "but I think the man may choose to stay where he is just, if he knows when he is well off." Saying this, he departed with his bags under his arms, followed by William Wallace similarly laden; evidently not in very good humour, but talking to the fellow in broad Scotch, which he always did; and to say the truth, he had taught his man Wully to speak so much like himself, that if it were not for his colour, you might mistake him for a descendant of the patriot whose name he bore.

Before my departure, I had several conferences with Van Kempen ; the chief object of which was, to know how the additional vessels now building could find employment. He said, "If there were to be as many more, they could be employed ; there was scarcely any bounds to the trade of an *entrepôt*."—"Then tell me, Mr Van Kempen," asked I, "what is required of me towards fostering this commerce?"—"In ordinary cases," he replied, "it might be necessary to take off the *ad valorem* duty ; but where the profits are so large, and the facilities of trade so great, it will not be felt."—"Then, is there anything whatever for me to do?" I rejoined.—"Yes ; to let us alone," he replied, significantly : "that is all we require of the Governor." I allowed this reply to be conclusive ; believing I saw in it the secret of that commercial ascendancy which, at different times, had obtained in places of not much greater territorial extent than Seaward Islands.

My brother and his wife saw us often, both at their own house and at the mansion, ever since I had made up my mind to return to England. At one time, they had some thoughts of accompanying us ; and my brother said he certainly would have done so, "but the loss of the Tom Cod was £3000 out of his pocket ; yet as soon as he could make up that loss, and perhaps realise a very little more, he assuredly would retire from business, as he had now got together nearly £20,000. Mrs Seaward, of late, evinced more feeling and affection for her sister, than I had before witnessed in her ; but my sister Maria (Mrs Drake), not only now, but on all occasions, was the kindest and most affectionate of friends. Mr and Mrs Rowley, too, were ever ready to cheer or amuse her. But it was on me she leaned for every earthly comfort. "You are all to me, dear Edward," she would say—"you are all I desire on earth, to solace or to cheer me."

A few days before I sailed, Drake and I were closeted all the forenoon, making final arrangements. We wrote out a memorial, from him, to the Lords Commissioners of the Admiralty, and another to the King ; setting forth what he had done for his Majesty's service, at Porto Bello, and in the capture of vessels of superior force, and in the defence of these islands ; praying for a promotion in the navy to the rank of Master and Commander. The memorial to the King was not to be presented, unless the other should fail in its object. He then received from my hand an outline of our laws, or rather regulations ; also a body of instructions for his conduct in all public matters, conceived and written down rather in the spirit

than in the letter of what I should require. I then gave him some memoranda as to my private interests in the island; especially with respect to the timber, which was not to be cut down without leave, and then to be paid for, at a valuation, by those who wanted it. I then presented to him his commission as Lieutenant-Governor and Captain-Commandant of Seaward Islands.

On this day all our friends dined with us; and, before they took their leave, all of them confided to my care numerous letters for England. Among the rest, Doctor Gordon, having "thought about it," pulled a large packet from his waistcoat pocket, saying—"Sir Edward, I know I am a little *fasheous*; but I hope you will not impute it to any disrespectful intention to yourself, who I am free to acknowledge to be a most honourable and trustworthy man. And so, to make a long business short, if you will just be good enough to take charge of this letter for your bankers in London, with my four bags of money—which I will duly send you to-morrow morning, and which have been sealed, and nailed up in a double case, in the presence of Mr Van Kempen—I cannot but say, you will lay me under a great obligation." I held out my hand to receive the packet; then taking a part of the Doctor's speech for the greater part of my reply, I said—"To make a long business short, I will do it." The Doctor seemed now as much pleased as he had been otherwise on the former occasion. And it afforded me no less pleasure, to think I should, by this act, not leave an unpleasant feeling behind me in the breast of this eccentric, but truly honest man.

Drake employed our few remaining days in making accommodation for the deer, and a large supply of sea-stock for our ultimate voyage, to be put on board the schooner; all the other things we intended to take with us being packed and ready. On Saturday afternoon the whole was embarked.

On Sunday, the 12th of February, after coming out of church, we took a general and affectionate leave of all the people; myself addressing a few parting words, I may say, of parental exhortation to them: which were answered by the tears of many, and bows of reverence from all. My dear wife wept too; and as she passed, every lip blessed her: sobs now became audible around us: then waving my hand kindly to them, I pulled my hat over my own eyes, and hastened forward. Early the next morning, our household were all assembled in the hall: we distributed some appropriate presents among them; and then we tenderly kissed the children. Our nearest

and dearest friends next appeared ; and accompanied by them, and attended by Diego, we left the mansion. Eliza leaned on my arm, and grasped it hard as we walked along. She looked down, with an agitated colour on her cheek ; but a sweet smile was on her mouth, which told me, though she felt a natural emotion at quitting the place—perhaps for ever—yet happiness was in her heart. Diego carried Fidele in his arms ; the dear little animal having grown too fat, in his old age, to run beside us. When arrived at the shore, we bade an affectionate but firm adieu to the attached friends and relations we were about to leave behind us, and embarked without any difficulty. The beach was lined with our late servants, and the people, standing at various distances in groups, to see the last of us.

In compliment to me and to our islands, Drake hoisted the St George's flag at the fore ; and all the boats of the settlement, with their flags flying, escorted us out of the harbour. When fairly out, we set our top-gallant-sails, and hauled down our colours, which was the signal for the boats to return ; they did so, but without a cheer. Their silence was a better compliment ; it evinced their sorrowful feeling on the occasion.

When our vessel had proceeded some distance, and the islands had receded far, my beloved looked steadily and mournfully on the shadowy land :—"Farewell !" she said, and sighed deeply. "You sigh, love," I exclaimed : "we leave the people rich and happy ; and our dear friend here," alluding to Drake, "will take good care of them."—"It was the recollection of former days," she replied, "that drew forth that sigh—the recollection of the time when that land was to me an earthly paradise."

On the fifth day we came in sight of Port Royal, just as a convoy for England, with three ships of war, were standing out of the harbour. Drake instantly suspected what they were ; and after conferring with me for a few minutes, made a whiff in his ensign ; the signal to speak the Commodore, who was distinguished by a broad pendant. On the signal being answered, the Porghee ran up on his quarter. Drake then hailed him—"This is Sir Edward Seaward's yacht. He is on board, and on his way to Kingston, to take a passage in a merchant ship to England." The Commodore very politely hove to, and sent a boat on board, offering me a passage in his ship ; at the same time informing me that the fleet would anchor in Blue Fields' Bay, at the west end of the island, and remain there a few days. I returned the Commodore my best thanks, saying, "In that case, we would keep company with the convoy ; and I would,

on arriving at Blue Fields, be able to make further arrangements."

It was a fine sight, to see so many ships together. We ran down before the wind, between the Pedro Shoals and the land; and next day came to in Blue Field's Bay. As soon as the fleet anchored, I went with Drake, to pay my respects to the Commodore, who, on meeting me, cordially repeated his invitation; which I politely declined, on account of the delicate state of Lady Seaward's health. Before evening, Drake contrived to secure a passage for me in the *Severn*, one of the finest ships out of Bristol; and before night he had put all our packages on board, which were numerous, large, and heavy. He agreeably surprised the Captain, with our good supply of sheep and poultry, and other sea-stores; but there was some demur about taking the deer; which at last he consented to do; contriving a place for them in the long-boat on deck. Diego bought some fine fresh shaddocks and other fruits, on shore, while these matters were transacting; also some provender for the sheep and deer.

As I wished the *Porghee* to return as quickly as possible to Seaward Islands, I explained our situation to the Commodore; to whom, as Drake's commanding officer, the compliment was due. And on the following day our inestimable friend bade my dear wife and myself an affectionate adieu: shaking Master Diego cordially by the hand, and not forgetting to say—"Good-by, Fidele!" he left us on board the *Severn*; and with an emotion not to be described, we saw our dear little vessel fill her sails and go.

On the next day the whole fleet got under weigh, steering to the westward. Our faithful Diego had already shown how useful he would prove to us, by the care he had taken to see all our packages stowed away, and those we might want placed in our state room. My dear wife and myself thought it would be expedient, now, to call him by the English equivalent for Diego, viz., James, to prevent the possibility of his Spanish name exposing him to jests or even affronts; and we took the earliest opportunity of imparting this to him. He had sense enough to comprehend the matter, and expressed himself obliged by our forethought. "Then, Master Sir Edward," said he, "if you please, my name is Diego James."—"Just so, Master Diego," I replied; "but Mr James for the mouths of strangers.—"And for their ears too," added my considerate Eliza, "when we speak of you to them." It was not our intention to treat this worthy man as a menial, although he

was quite disposed to do all that could be required of one ; therefore I stipulated that he should mess with the second mate, and I allowed him a supply from my own sea-stores and stock, to make him a welcome messmate.

The breeze was steady, and the weather continued fine, until we got into the Gulf of Florida. It then became hazy, and even foggy, which made it not only disagreeable but dangerous ; the convoy being obliged to keep close together for fear of the Spanish cruisers, or row-boats, cutting off vessels, as they always do from a straggling fleet. Yet, in spite of this caution, one or two of our merchantmen were taken ; the men-of-war being kept constantly on the alert, every now and then having a brush with the enemy.

After clearing the Gulf, and passing Cape Canaveral, the
 fleet * * * * *

The Editor has to lament, that, from this point, seventy-three pages of the original manuscript are missing ; that is, from page 630 to page 704 in the old MS. Only four subsequent pages have been found, and they appear to have been intended to close the Journal. It seems so, not only from the numbering figures in the pages, but from the dates of the years, which uniformly are added at the top of every page. The 704th page is headed 1749, and bears so satisfactorily on the former most interesting subjects of the narrative, that the Editor ventures to hope the additional chapter will prevent any actual disappointment in the reader's mind, concerning the safe arrival of the homeward-bound party in England ; and it also shows their subsequent happy domestic residence at Sir Edward's seat in Gloucestershire, from the year of his return—namely, 1744—until his being called to London on public business, five years after—that is, in the year 1749—when the narrative here recommences, and finishes with the fate of Seaward Islands.

LAST CHAPTER.

"It will answer no good purpose, sir," he replied ; "but the contrary. Mr Pelham has been perfectly explicit, and I can have nothing more to say on the subject."—"It is not my wish, my Lord Duke," I observed, "to create any unnecessary vexa-

tion to his Majesty's Government ; but I have a duty to perform in another quarter. I cannot suffer the people to be treated in this manner, abandoned like dogs, without seeking that redress to which they are entitled ; and I do feel that it is my duty to have this business brought before Parliament, if we are to be thus sacrificed."—"I tell you, Sir Edward Seaward," he replied, "that the thing is done. Mr Pelham has already told you so. Those islands, or rocks, or whatever they are, must be delivered up immediately to the Crown of Spain."

On hearing this, I determined to make one effort more to impress his Grace with the importance of my request. "The court of Spain, my Lord Duke," said I, "knows the importance of the place, though perhaps you may not. During the war, the commanders both at Carthagen and Porto Bello were ordered to take those islands, and they tried to do so ; but we defeated their first expedition,—some of their ships being captured, some destroyed, and those that escaped were roughly handled. The next expedition, which was sufficiently formidable to attack the best of our West India Islands, suffered shipwreck on our shores ; and with their remains we built vessels, and pursued a lucrative commerce already established. Whether we contemplate Seaward Islands in a naval or commercial point of view, they are of no small importance ; and the Spaniard knows it. The place is close to the track of his homeward-bound galleons. It is an *entrepôt* by which his sullen commercial policy is neutralised : flags of all nations, including his own, resort there. Our merchants dispense millions of the produce of British industry and commerce, from that spot, to foreigners ; they have sent their gains to England,—much of which, perhaps one hundred thousand pounds altogether, derived from those islands, has been invested in the public funds. Messrs Perry and Co., sir," continued I, "can vouch for the truth of this last statement." The Duke bit his lip : but not speaking, I went on. "But there is another point, sir ;—the claims of the people. They have made the place what it is. It is respectably fortified : it never cost the English Government one shilling to do it. Can you tell me, my Lord Duke, where I can find another spot under the Crown that can put in the same claim ? They have brought the land into a garden-like cultivation ; they have built a little town, with a fine church in it ; they are formed into a community ; and they are ready to defend themselves against all invaders. Leave us to ourselves, my Lord Duke ; do not interfere. Say that you will not interfere, and I will go and raise one thousand

men, at my own expense, and I will put the Spaniards at defiance."

All the compliment I can pay to the Duke on the occasion is, that he kept silence while I spoke, and that he changed colour two or three times while I made this strong appeal; but it ended in his cool reply—"Sir Edward Seaward, I tell you again the thing is done, and the place must forthwith be delivered up to the crown of Spain. There will be £10,000 forthcoming for your indemnification, as I told you before; and that is £8000 more than we dare charge on the business. Why will you be so troublesome?—the island of Rattan has been already given up, and every other place, agreeable to the convention, excepting these abominable rocks of yours."—"This being your determination, my Lord Duke," I replied, "with your permission I take my leave." He rose and bowed: I took my hat, bowing in return, but as a cavalier would do when he would give his antagonist to understand—"Sir, we meet again."

After I left the Secretary of State, my mind was so absent from the present, that I saw nothing in passing until I arrived at my lodgings in Bruton Street. My ever dear and affectionate wife anxiously awaited my return. In a moment she read in my countenance that things still went on counter. She did not speak to me, but led me to a chair, and sat down by me, still holding my hand in hers. In less than a minute she arose; taking her cambric pocket-handkerchief from her pocket, and seating herself on my knee, began to rub my forehead; and having done this a little while, during which I found my blood circulate more freely, she kissed both my eyes, one after the other, saying—"My dear Edward, if it were in your Eliza's power to make you happy in all things, you should not thus suffer."—"O, my love, it is too much," I replied, "to see our people treated like dogs, and turned over to the Spaniards, without security, or even stipulation."—"Yes, my honoured husband," she softly answered, "it is indeed grievous; and I am not surprised to see you thus oppressed, and even indignant; but, my dear Edward," continued she, pressing my hand, "let us look at the foundation of your grief in detail. I admit that, taking it altogether, it cannot do otherwise than vex and distress you; but let us examine it more closely. As to the loss the Crown may sustain in giving up the place, that is their business, my Edward: as to the loss you yourself will suffer, I am sure you care nothing about it. Now, as to the people; your brother is in England with his family; Drake is rich, and I

should think would be happy to retire from a situation now full of anxiety ; Van Kempen, you know, has said in a late letter, he intended to go to Amsterdam ; Doctor Gordon has saved plenty of money ; Mr Rowley has remitted a good deal ; Mr Reynolds has returned to England to enjoy his paternal estate ; all the new merchants are personal strangers to us ; and as to the other people, those whom you found slaves, you ultimately made free ; and every one who came there under your auspices is rich in money, even if the Government should persist in taking from them their lands and place of habitation. All these people, my dear Edward," continued she, "are in a condition to shift for themselves ; and not one of them, I believe, will grieve half so much at the change that is awaiting them, as you now are doing for their sakes. The time was when I would have grieved with you,—when the settlement was our nursing-child ; but that is no longer the case ; every one is wealthy, and if scattered abroad they are as able to take care of themselves as we are. They have not that attachment to the place that you have ; they will soon find another home, and be satisfied. Drake will return, with his dear wife and family ; most likely Mr Rowley will come to England also ; poor dear Rota is no more ; Diego is with us ; Xavier and his family, wherever they go, will make it out very well." Then putting her arms round my neck, she finished by saying—"Besides, it is God's will, my dear Edward, in the dispensations of His providence, that our islands should again become a desert :"—as she said this she wept ;—"and it is His will," continued she, "I hope, that we shall be resigned ; and your own Eliza will endeavour to be your earthly paradise."

I was overpowered and confounded ; her kindness overpowered me, her reasonings confounded me ; but it was always in this way that my guardian angel delivered me from perplexity and vexation.

My perturbed mind, and agitated feelings, soon felt the smoothing influence of my Eliza's consolations, which, like oil cast upon the sea, breaks the power of the wind that would stir it into surge and billows. Thus softened down, and while enjoying something like a return of holy peace within, I had a visit from the Earl of Harrington. He smiled as he shook hands with me, and as usual said some fine things to Lady Seaward ; but I perceived he was not quite at ease. In a few minutes he said—"My dear Sir Edward, I have called on you, as your friend, to advise you to make the best you can of it with the minister ; conceding the point. The fact is, the Government is pledged to the Crown of Spain to

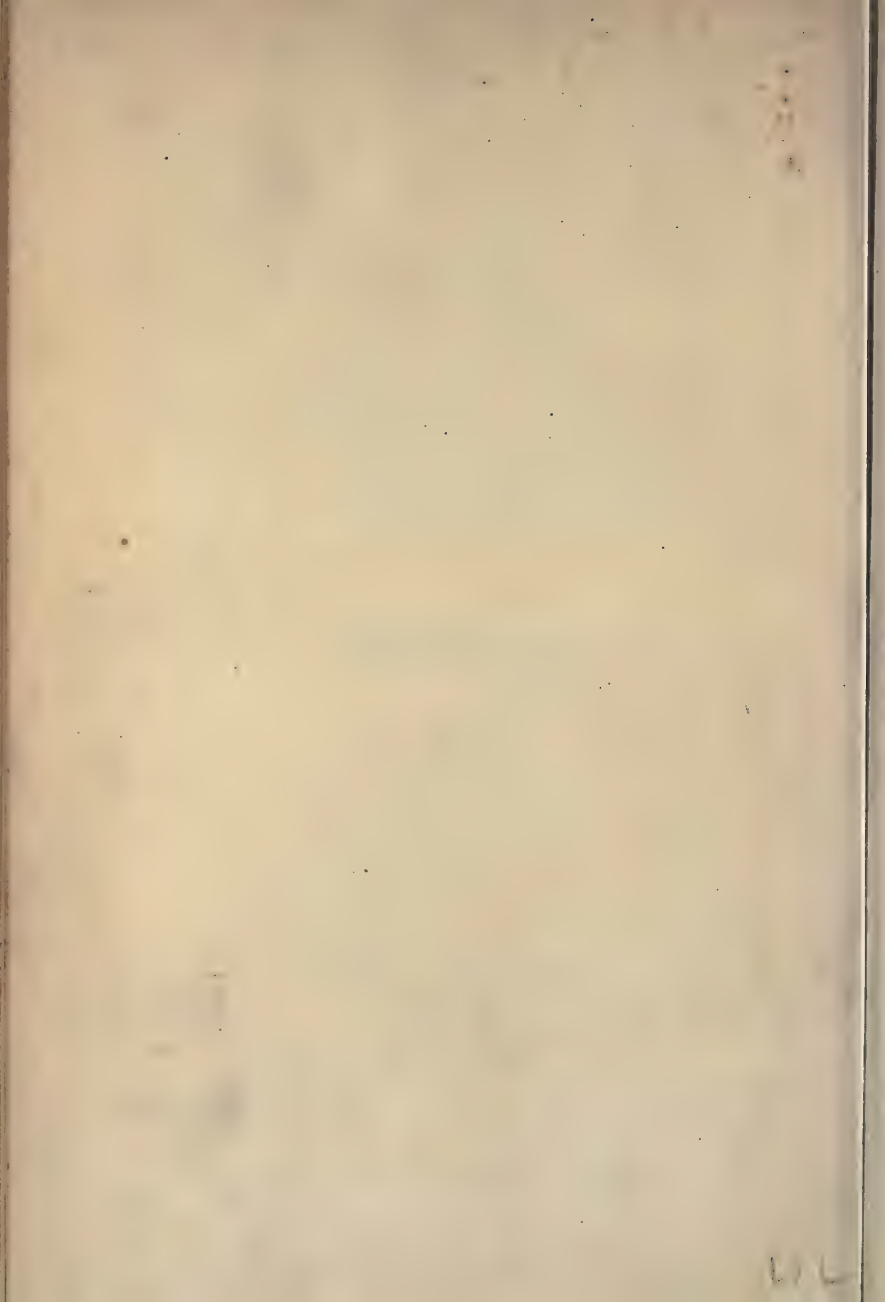
deliver up the islands ; and it must be done. I have even spoken to the King on the subject ; but, I am sorry to say, he showed some displeasure at my interference. 'Tell Sir Edward Seaward,' said his Majesty, 'the place must be given up immediately ; and he may consider it a mark of favour to himself, that I prevent his deputy-governor, Captain Drake, from being brought to a court-martial for resisting the authorities that have been sent to take possession of it for the King of Spain.'"—"Indeed, I am sorry," returned I, "the King has been brought to see the case in this light ; but I will be guided by you, my Lord. I have pointed out the situation and value of the place to his Majesty's ministers, and yet they persist in their decision : however, I am not surprised that men, who did not know that Cape Breton was an island, should be so ignorant as to think that Seaward Islands lay off the harbour of Porto Bello. But the thing is done, I am told, and I must submit ; will you, therefore, my dear friend, see the minister, and tell him that I submit to the order of Government, but that I expect he will appoint a commissioner to carry the business into execution, and that he will order him to confer with me on its details ? My only wish now is, that the people should be removed with that degree of consideration which is due to the sacrifice they are called upon to make for the honour of those who signed or ratified the treaty that expels them. I expect that a settlement will be obtained for such as may choose to go to the Mosquito shore, on the terms proposed to me by Mr Pelham. Likewise say, that I shall accept the £10,000 offered to me, which I will place at the disposal of Captain Drake, for the necessities of the people ; and after that, if there should remain any part of it unappropriated, I will receive it as a small compensation for all the money I have laid out in making those islands what they are."—"I think this will be acceded to, Sir Edward," replied Lord Harrington ; then, after a little explanatory conversation, he took his leave.

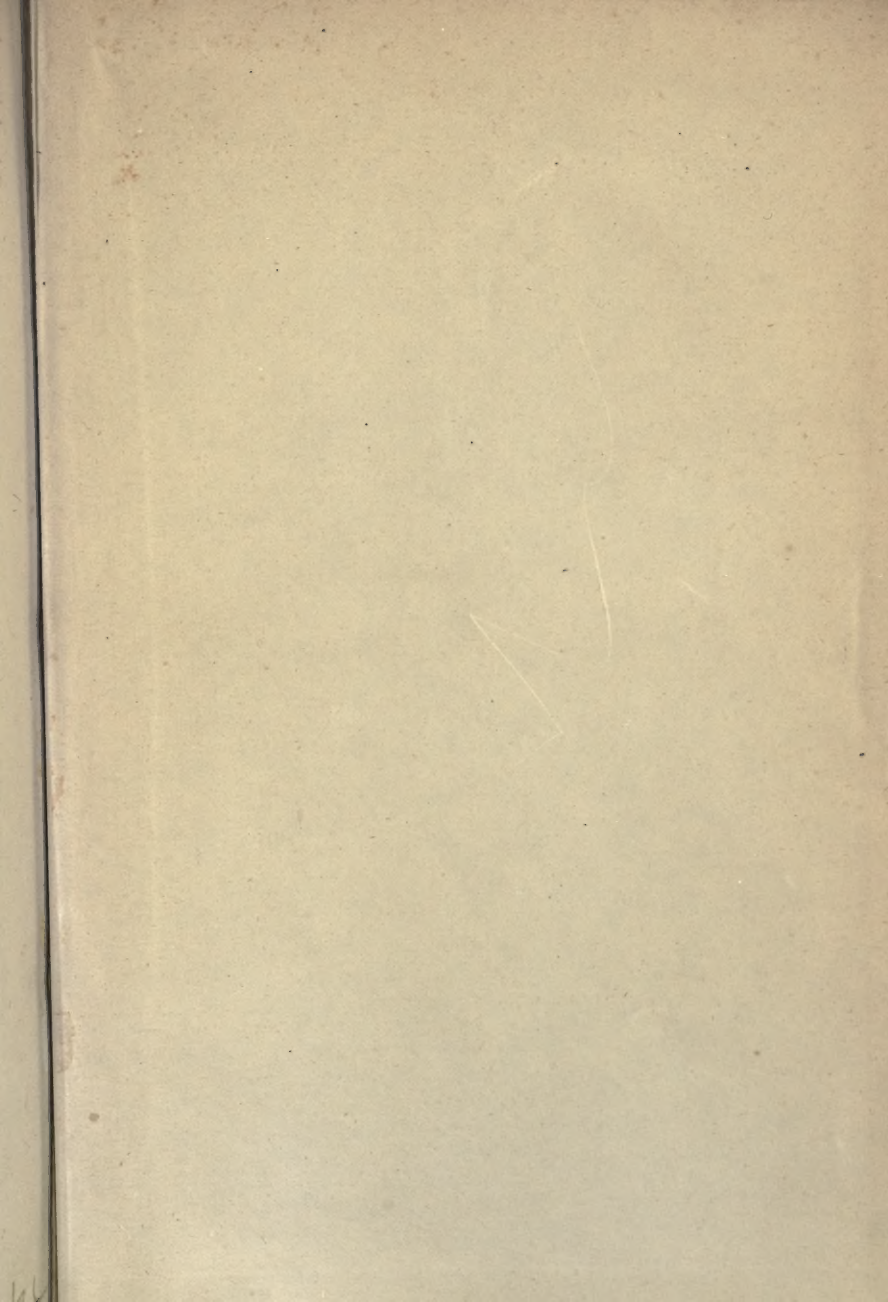
On the morrow, Mr Pitts, who had been Governor of Rattan, waited on me from the minister, with full powers to arrange everything for the evacuation of Seaward Islands. The forts were to be demolished, and the place then given up. Such, he said, had been the fate of Rattan, after the Government had expended £15,000 on its establishment. Mr Pitts was a liberal and kind-hearted man, entering warmly into my feelings. He had been much among the Mosquito-shore Indians, and cordially undertook to procure a good settlement among them for the Seaward Island colony. We met three successive

days, occupied entirely in completing our arrangements; by which it was stipulated, that the people should have three months to remove from the islands with their stock and goods, and that Government should pay the island vessels for transporting them; that Government should satisfy the Indians for six square miles of land, such as might be fixed on for their residence; and also grant a commission of Superintendent to Lieutenant James Craig, with a subaltern's pay as such. All this being ratified, I sat down and wrote a long letter to my dear and inestimable friend, Captain Drake, with all necessary details. Mr Pitts received my letter, and last instructions, with much feeling and great courtesy; he saw the struggle in my breast when I gave it to him. He took his leave, and posted off for Plymouth, to sail instantly for the islands in a sloop of war. Our business in London being thus brought to a close,

"Now, my own Edward," said my beloved Eliza, "let us return to Hartland, and finish our days in peace."

MURRAY AND GIBB, EDINBURGH,
PRINTERS TO HER MAJESTY'S STATIONERY OFFICE.







PR
5189
P5S5

Porter, Jane
Sir Edward Seaward's
narrative of his shipwreck
and discovery of certain
islands in the Carribbean Sea

PLEASE DO NOT REMOVE
CARDS OR SLIPS FROM THIS POCKET

UNIVERSITY OF TORONTO LIBRARY
